BANCROFT
LIBRARY

✧

THE LIBRARY
OF
THE UNIVERSITY
OF CALIFORNIA

UPS AND DOWNS

. . . OF AN . . .

ARMY OFFICER.

BY

COL. GEORGE A. ARMES, U. S. A.

1844-1919

WASHINGTON, D. C.:

1900.

E181
A72

Entered according to act of Congress, in the year 1900, by
Col. GEORGE A. ARMES, U. S. A.,
In the office of the Librarian of Congress at Washington, D. C.

59515
BANCROFT LIBRARY

Portraits and Illustrations.

PAGE

Geo. A. Armes, U. S. A. ..... *Frontispiece.*
General Grierson Entertaining His Friends 2
Just Landing at Castle Garden 3
The Army Lawyer Blowing His Own Horn 4
Calls on President in New Uniform of Brigadier General 4
C. H. Burgess 6
The Deerfield Home 14
Receiving Orders from General Washington 15
My Childhood Home 16
"Charlie" 17
The Jackson Tournament 23
Arrest No. 1, by Confederates 30
Cassius M. Clay's First Prisoner 31
Capt. Ball's Surrender at the Slave Pen 37
Tompkins' Charge through Fairfax Court House 45
Gen. Winfield Scott 48
Arrest No. 4, by Blenker's Soldiers 53
Stampede from Bull Run 55
Rescued from Amputating Table 56
The Watermelon Enterprise 58
Hon. Wm. H. Seward 62
Gov. Woodbury and Family 79
Delivering Dispatches to Gen. Grant 87
Unhorsed While Delivering Messages 90
Delivering Dispatches to Barlow 95
Prof. J. O. Armes 107
Gen. Hancock and Staff 108
Inspecting Line in Front of Masked Battery 109
Charge at Hatcher's Run, Va., 1864 125
Gen. Robert E. Lee 139
Ex-Gov. Thomas, of Va 146
Arresting Benham 176
Reporting to Norwood 184
Crossing Platte River 185
Greatest Cavalry Feat on Record 186
Return to Fort Sedgwick 187
Rescuing the Woodchoppers 206
Return from the Rescue 207
General U. S. Grant 222
Fred Grant in 1867 225
Wm. E. Armes 232
Major-General W. S. Hancock 234
Wounded and Lifted on Horse 238
C. H. Armes 268
Cody Killing Buffalo for Supper 272
The March 290
Feeding Indians 311
Powder Face 314
Custer to My Rescue 325
Governor and Mrs. Kirkwood 335
Commodore Vanderbilt 359
Armes' Knights 361

Awaiting My Antagonist 364
Blaine's Attack of Vertigo 411
Watterson Entertaining Garfield 417
Senator Wallace 432
Col. Levi P. Maish 440
The Potato Lady 458
Trying to Procure Evidence 468
Gen. W. S. Rosecrans 538
Dr. Loring 546
John Van Dyke 548
Mrs. Van Dyke 549
Gen. Berdan 557
Oxford Military Academy 564
Gen. George Stoneman 578
My Four-in-Hand 580
The Assault 587
Resenting Gen. Beaver's Insult 589
The Beaver Court-Martial 591
The Beaver Medal 593
W. Hector Gale 595
Senator Stewart 606
Discussing Plans with Senator Stewart 612
Cecily Armes 614
My Children 619
My Family 623
Geo. Kerr Armes 636
Oscar St. John Armes 636
Hon. C. J. Faulkner 637
Mrs. Faulkner 637
Gen. Richard N. Batchelder 639
Herbert Claude 644
Cecily 645
Fairfield—My Residence 649
The Arrest 662
The Author at Various Ages 664
Henry Oliver 668
Major-General Nelson A. Miles 679
John Chamberlin 680
Gov. W. P. Kellogg 689
Mrs. Geo. A. Armes 691
Grover Cleveland Armes 691
Col. O. F. Hulser 701
Jos. A. Buckholtz 743
Albion H. Droun 743
Col. Ochiltree Leading "Sibley's" Brigade at the Battle of Val Verde ... 745
Asking the President to Appoint Me a Brigadier-General of Volunteers 749
Secretary of War Asking Advice 750
Queen Lilioukalani 751
Mr. Parker 751
Prince David Kawanakoa, of Hawaii 752
My Daughter Ethel in Amateur Theatricals 753
Senator C. K. Davis 754
Senator John W. Daniel 754
Wm. St. John 754
Wm. Lyman and wife 754

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

CHAPTER I.

1861.

Parentage and early life, from first settlement of ancestors in Massachusetts, who distinguished themselves in Indian wars at that time—Great-grandfather selected by Washington to guard chain across the Hudson—Boyhood at Annandale, Va.—Riding at Secesh Tournament without saddle or bridle—Arrest No. 1, on way to Washington—Calling on Secretary Seward—Arrested and threatened to be hung by Cassius M. Clay (Arrest No. 2)—Ordered released by Secretary Seward and appointed his private messenger—Led the advance into Alexandria, Va., with Gen. O. B. Wilcox, and with one hundred men of the First Michigan capture Captain Ball at slave pen—Shot in right breast while leading a charge with Lieutenant Tompkins at Fairfax Court House, Va., May, 1861—Arrested by order of General McDowell and General Scott (Arrest No. 3)—Imprisoned in the Marshall House and afterwards released by Secretary Seward—Ellsworth killed by Jackson.

CHAPTER II.

1861-2.

Save a few dollars and obtain permission to sell necessities to soldiers, clearing over $1200 in three weeks—Stock my store and place it in charge of a clerk, who sells building and stock, disappearing with everything—By permission of Secretary Seward, go as scout to General Heintzelman—Arrested by twenty Dutchmen of General Blenker's command and thrust into an icehouse (Arrest No. 4)—Wounded in First Bull Run—Second commercial enterprise in life—Buy a wagon load of watermelons and undertake to sell them to the Twelfth New York Volunteers; robbed of every melon—Start stage line from Alexandria to Manassas, and run the Union Hotel at Fairfax Court House—Charter a vessel and transport supplies to the Army of the Potomac—Invest $3000 in horses and wagons and contract to haul supplies to the camps around Washington—Stables catch fire and everything destroyed—Resign position at $50 per month and enlist as a private soldier at $13—Promoted to the first vacancy as Second Lieutenant in the Regiment.

CHAPTER III.

1863.

Appointed Second Lieutenant in Invalid Corps—Missing roll-call while on duty at Hartford, am placed in arrest (Arrest No. 5)—Detained while on an excursion, and arrested when I return (Arrest No. 6)—Placed in arrest while taking a detachment of substitutes to the front, for receiving a testimonial of gratitude (Arrest No. 7)—Recommended for a commission in the First New Hampshire Cavalry by Colonel Fearing and Maj. George H. Chandler and ten other officers—Served with Lieut. U. A. Woodbury (since Governor of Vermont) in conducting substitutes to the front—Detailed by Secretary

of War Stanton to deliver in person to General Grant private dispatches and important documents—Request General Grant to assign me to duty in the field—General Grant gives orders to General Rawlins to assign me to duty as an aide to General Hancock—General Grant remarks, "He will give him his fill of fighting, if that's what he's after"—Report to General Hancock—Striker Shaw called in to see "what the gentleman would have"—Specially complimented by General Hancock for promptness in carrying an order to General Barlow under heavy fire, and advancing the First Division at Cold Harbor—Events daily from "Wilderness" to Petersburg—Make mistake in borrowing Vermont Brigade Band to serenade General Hancock while he is asleep—Hancock troubled by old wound—Assigned temporarily to duty with General Birney—While examining the lines with Capt. Clayton McMichael of the Ninth Infantry, of General Birney's staff, ride in front of a masked battery—Captain McMichael wisely declines to follow—Narrowly escape the shells from the fusilades—Apply to be relieved from duty on General Hancock's staff—Arrive in time to take an active part in the fight with Early in the suburbs of Washington—Endorsed by President Lincoln for captain in the Regular Army—Appointed by Governor Seymour of New York as Captain of the Second New York Heavy Artillery on recommendation of Hancock and others—Report to regiment—Commanding officers and others look upon me as an intruder—Complimented by inspecting officers and others for having one of the best disciplined and cleanest companies in the regiment—My company ordered to be excused from all fatigue and police duty for one week—Mentioned in general orders by Maj. Gen. Nelson A. Miles for leading a charge and capturing the works at Hatcher's Run.

CHAPTER IV.

1865.

Recommended for a commission in the Regular Army by General Hancock, C. H. Tompkins, Col. James T. Close and Senator Joseph Segar—Recommended for a commission as major in One Hundred and Twenty-fifth New York Volunteer Infantry by General McDougall—Induced to decline, being recommended and endorsed by every officer of the Second New York Artillery for a commission as major in my own regiment—While in command of left wing of Second Corps, ordered to keep connection with the Fifth Corps, being furnished but 25 of 500 additional men applied for by General Scott—Highly complimented for holding the line with such a small number of men—False charges preferred by Lieutenant-Colonel Hogg, in command of regiment—Placed in arrest (Arrest No. 8)—Ordered before first court-martial—Found guilty—Upon unanimous recommendation of court restored to duty—Prefer charges against Colonel Hogg—The colonel sentenced to be dismissed, cashiered and disqualified from holding an office of trust—On the march through Richmond, returning from Appomattox, meet D. M. Lee—Invited to call on Gen. Robert E. Lee—Accept and spend a pleasant hour, overtaking command at Yellow Tavern that night—Placed in command of Fort Whipple, Va., with four companies of artillery—Ordered to appear before Secretary of War—Report to Mr. Stanton and ordered to accompany General Townsend to the Arsenal to identify Dan. Lee among the prisoners in arrest for conspiracy in the assassination of

Mr. Lincoln—Report that he is not among them—Contradicted by Colonel Baker, the secret service detective—Assigned to the First District of Eastern Virginia under Gen. O. O. Howard, of the Freedman's Bureau—Establish headquarters at Fairfax Court House, Va. —Give grand Union Tournament as an offset to Jackson's tournament in 1861—Invite ex-Confederates to participate—Upon proof of ownership order property in possession of negroes returned to rightful owners—Sustained in my action by the War Department—Mustered out and return to civil life—Commence farming at my old homestead in Virginia—Dressed as a farmer, accidently meet General Hancock, who is delighted to see me—Advised by the General to give up farming and enter the regular cavalry.

CHAPTER V.

1866.

Take advice and accept commission in Second United States Cavalry—Obtain interesting letters from Secretary Seward, General Howard, Gen. C. C. Augur, Col. M. I. Ludington (now Quartermaster-General)—Report to Col. I. N. Palmer, Second Cavalry, at Fort Ellsworth—Ordered to Pond Creek—Lieut. A. E. Bates (now Paymaster-General) and I select the site and commence Fort Wallace—Made Post Adjutant at Fort Wallace—Placed in command of Troop M—Take possession of stage horses while in pursuit of deserters and continue search—Arrest General Superintendent, placing him in the guard house for finding fault—March command from Fort Wallace to Fort Sedgwick, through country never before crossed by white man—Swim two rivers and destroy a village of Indians—Complimented in general orders for "Performing the greatest cavalry feat ever before recorded"—Specially promoted by General Grant over the heads of several hundreds of Army officers—Placed in arrest for adopting methods of exercising horses not found in established tactics (Arrest No. 9)—Required to stay over night during buffalo hunt on account of being lost—Placed in arrest on my return (Arrest No. 10).

CHAPTER VI.

1867.

Captain Mix assumes command of the Post, making me Post Adjutant—Orders me to place Colonel Neil in close arrest—Complimented by General Dodge for successful management of my command through a blizzard, where twenty-seven of my men were frozen after rescuing a party of wood choppers from the Indians in Lawrence Canon—Highly complimented by Capt. John Mix for care and attention given my command while on scout after Indians—Report to Cavalry Board for examination—Recommended thirty days for preparation for examination—Pass satisfactorily—Give farewell party to friends in Washington—Leave for the frontier—Report at Leavenworth and organize a company—Assigned to duty with Gen. A. J. Smith at Fort Harker, Kans.—Cholera—Bury four or five men per day in the prairie—Loss of brother—Sent on scout duty up the Smoky Hill River—Ordered to Fort Hays and assigned to duty with Capt. H. C. Corbin —Desperate fight on the Saline River with overwhelming force of Indians—Thirty-five men killed and wounded out of 70—Shot in hip

and lifted on my horse—Complimented for saving command—Recommended for brevet lieutenant-colonel by Captain Corbin, General Smith, General Hancock and General Sherman—Severe Indian fight, where I command two companies of Kansas cavalry in addition to my regulars—Corralled for three days—Lose large number of men and horses—Complimented by my commanding officer and by special letter of General Hancock—Placed in arrest by Captain Ovenshine, who acts on false statement (Arrest No. 11)—No explanation of act—Released next day—Upon my recommendation Governor Crawford of Kansas mentions volunteers in general orders for part taken in Indian fight—Placed in arrest for assaulting Post-Quartermaster and resenting insult (Arrest No. 12)—Many complimentary letters on account of part taken in Indian campaign of 1867.

CHAPTER VII.

1868.

Ordered to Leavenworth, Kans., to appear before court-martial No. 2—Tried before court-martial at Leavenworth for assault on quartermaster—Court composed of gentlemen—Honorably acquitted—Social life at Leavenworth—Capture several deserters near Topeka, Kans.—Governor Crawford's guest—Request Court of Inquiry—Pleasure trip to Jefferson City—March with command to Fort Hays, Kans.—Entertain Governor Price, General Crittenden and several railroad directors on a buffalo hunt—Mischief-making officers prefer charges, seeking trouble for me—Major Kidd placed in command of battalion—Officers conspire to fix up another set of false charges—Placed in arrest (Arrest No. 13)—Turn command over to mischief-making sneak posing as an army officer—Well-trained chickens—Incident of Indian campaign in Kansas—Ordered to Fort Hays to report for trial (court-martial No. 3)—Lieutenant Brownell, who shot Jackson, the slayer of Ellsworth, Judge Advocate of Court—Charge of "conduct prejudicial to good order and military discipline"—Appear before court-martial composed of honorable and just men—Honorably acquitted—Sentence of court approved by Department Commander—Reprimanded and released from arrest without explanation of cause (Arrest No. 14)—General Sully investigates and orders release—Ordered to relieve Major Kidd and take command of the battalion—Ordered after a band of Indians near Fort Dodge, Kans.—March to Fort Lyon, C. T.—Gen. William Penrose relieves me of command, and we start in Indian campaign without forage for animals—General Penrose orders horses shot in rear of command as fast as they give out—Placed in arrest by Captain Byrne (Arrest No. 15)—Prefer charges against Captain Byrne, who was also placed in arrest by General Penrose.

CHAPTER VIII.

1869.

Several months of scouting—Return of command to Fort Lyon, mostly on foot, and in a terribly demoralized condition—Garrison life at Fort Lyon—Complimented by Generals Carr and Penrose—Released from arrest and placed in command of four companies of Cavalry—Ordered to Fort Dodge, Kans.—Place Major Cox in arrest—Arrival at Fort Dodge—Order a Board of Survey in relation to horses—

Prefer charges against Major Graham for selling Government horses and mules—Investigation by General Schofield's brother—Place Major Graham in arrest—Ordered to Fort Leavenworth—Court-martial convenes at Fort Harker for my trial (Court-martial No. 4)—Placed in arrest and ordered befor it by General Schofield (Arrest No. 16)—Order of arrest suspended after investigation—Ordered to Camp Supply, Ind. T.—Correspondence through Major Page in relation to Captain Graham—Lieut.-Col. A. D. Nelson takes command of Camp Supply—Arbitrary act and brutal treatment by Colonel Nelson—Colonel Carpenter assists me in bringing charges against Colonel Nelson and Captain Graham—Defense of Major Graham by General Schofield and Colonel Nelson—Indian entertainment at Camp Supply—False charges connived by Major Cox, Major Graham and Colonel Nelson—Major Page, in the absence of Colonel Nelson, places me in arrest (Arrest No. 17)—Lieutenant Williams, Third Infantry, places me in arrest by order of Colonel Nelson, with ten miles' limit (Arrest No. 18)—Prefer charges against Col. A. D. Nelson—Placed in arrest and ordered for trial at Fort Leavenworth, Kans., by General Schofield (Arrest No. 19; Court-martial No. 5).

CHAPTER IX.

1870.

Ordered before a picked court of army loafers—Maj. Lewis Merrill, Judge Advocate—Desperate effort of General Schofield and his conspirators to force me out of the Army—Sent to common guard house in full uniform by General Sturgis, president of court—General Schofield declines to try Colonel Nelson and denounces me in violent terms—Inform a member of court I would not believe him under oath—General Custer comes to my defense—Purpose to force me out of the service—Bring civil action against court-martial, and have court arrested for false imprisonment—Court reassembles—Dismissed from the service—Ordered several hundred miles out on the frontier by General Schofield—General Miles and many other officers testify in my defense—Arbitrary and brutal action of General Schofield and his picked court—Sacrifice $10,000 worth of property and life-long savings to defend my commission—Borrow money to pay my way to Washington—Arrival at Washington penniless—Interesting letters from Governor Kirkwood and others of note to Secretary of War in my behalf—Judge Moore and Justice Bright take me into their office free of rent and back me up in my expenses—Employ Judge T. W. Bartley, bother-in-law of General Sherman, and Hon. F. P. Stanton and Judge Joseph Casey as counsel and attorneys-at-law to present my case—Call on Secretary of War Belknap with letter from Governor Kirkwood—Insulted and harshly treated—Meet with financial success in the real-estate business.

CHAPTER X.

1871.

Take in social features of the season—Appeal to Members, Senators and officials in my behalf—Correspondence with many sympathizing friends—Agreement made with Secretary of War to restore me to Army on condition civil suit against court at Leavenworth is withdrawn—Belknap demands resignation in blank, which is given, but recalled—Petition to Congress, President and the Secretary of War.

CHAPTER XI.

1872.

Social features of the early part of the year—Captain Carpenter, now brigadier-general, turns traitor and sends a false and disgraceful petition to Congress to try to prevent my restoration—Endorse notes, loan money and lose it—Social features in the city of Washington and at watering places—Purchase newspaper and enter into politics—Active interest of Senators and Members in my behalf—At Saratoga—Challenged by Governor Hoffman of New York to produce any Southern gentleman who was a better horseman than he could produce from the North—Challenge accepted—Commodore Vanderbilt becomes interested with Governor Hoffman—Select tournament given and the North challenged—Southern knights carry off the prize—Duel—Newspaper quotes "a fiery young colonel from the impetuous South challenges to mortal combat an inoffensive citizen from the frigid North."

CHAPTER XII.

1873.

Committee on Military Affairs makes a favorable report in my behalf—Secretary Belknap writes a private letter to General Logan, Chairman of Military Committee in the Senate, to defeat me—General Logan acts on advice of letter—Makes adverse report without investigation—General Coburn writes letter to Senator Morton requesting him to take my part—Successful real-estate transactions—Profit of $24,662.50—Request authority of the President to organize a command to avenge the death of General Ryan and his unfortunate men who were butchered by the Spaniards—Two of the officers who preferred charges against me convicted, cashiered, dismissed, fined $500 and sentenced to the penitentiary for a term of years—$63,000 net profit in real-estate transactions.

CHAPTER XIII.

1874.

Social features of the season—Letter of Secretary of War Belknap to Senator Clayton aiming to defeat my restoration—Petition of prominent officials and citizens to Congress in my behalf—Many letters of recommendation from prominent men—Senator Clayton makes a strong report, which is agreed to by the Senate Military Committee—Bill passes both Houses granting an honorable discharge—Secretary Belknap tries to defeat it with the President—Major Graham tries to murder United States Paymaster Brookes—Success in real-estate business—Wed daughter of Hon. John Bozman Kerr of Maryland.

CHAPTER XIV.

1875.

Social features of the New Year—Introduce a bill for restoration to full rank—Many large transaction in real estate—Belknap's continued attacks—Reply to petition of officers of the regiment and others sent to Congress to prevent my restoration—Popularity of Speaker Blaine—Correspondence with Fred. Grant and Gen. James O'Bierne—Help

to defeat Secretary Belknap for his Senatorship—Secure evidence of crooked transactions of Secretary Belknap—Prosperous year financially—Fail to secure passage of bill for restoration to rank.

CHAPTER XV.

1876.

Social features during the year—Generals Palmer, Penrose and many other officers take an active part in assisting me to my restoration—*St. Louis Times* publishes charges against Belknap—Bring charges before Speaker Randall, who orders investigation, with Hon. B. B. Lewis of Alabama to assist in carrying them through—General Glover of Missouri makes a favorable report in relation to my restoration—Write letter of warning to Secretary Belknap not to protest against my restoration—Threaten to force him out of his office if he does—Mr. Clymer tries to save Belknap from impeachment and advises him to resign—Exciting accounts of the downfall of Secretary Belknap and "how it came about"—Get passes to the floor of the House—Secretary of War Taft takes special interest in my behalf.

CHAPTER XVI.

1877.

Social features—Hon. Henry W. Watterson entertains General Garfield while my bill passes—Report of the Judge Advocate, General Dunn, in opposition to my restoration—Petition and letters from many prominent officials in my behalf—Bill having passed both Houses to restore me to my former rank, President Grant fails to sign it.

CHAPTER XVII.

1878.

Customary social features of the season—Have bill introduced in both Houses—Colonel Maish makes strong report—Bill passes through the Military Committee of the House—Senator Edmunds tries to defeat it in the Senate—Senator Blaine takes my part against Senator Edmunds—Carries bill with yeas and nays—Senator Edmunds has only six supporters—Given commission by President Hayes—Ordered to regiment in Texas—Received invitation from Hon. Charles J. Faulkner, together with President and friends, to be entertained at his house in West Virginia—Meet Col. B. H. Grierson—Obstacles thrown in my way by him to make life unpleasant—Brutal action of Major McLaughlin, my commanding officer at Fort Stockton—Placed in arrest by Major McLaughlin on account of the misspelling of a soldier's name by a sergeant of the guard (Arrest No. 20)—General Grierson and his conspirators determine I shall not remain in the regiment—Ordered before court-martial No. 6, convened at San Antonio, Texas—Over 400 miles by stage with witnesses—Dutchman ——— Judge Advocate—Decision by Department Commander, after careful examination, charges do not warrant trial—Released from arrest and returned to duty—Complimentary congratulations upon my restoration—Palmer's opinion of me.

CHAPTER XVIII.

1879.

Social features at Fort Stockton—Lieut.-Col. M. M. Blunt, Twenty-fifth Infantry, a boot-lick of Grierson, takes command at Fort Stockton—Makes contract surgeon out of a spy and mischief-maker and assigns him to duty in my command—Scout after Indians—Lieutenant Esterly and Dr. Price connive and fix up set of false charges—Ordered to San Antonio as witness on trial of Major Geddes, who was being tried under false charges by the Dutchman ——— —Testify in his behalf—Lieut. O. J. Sweet plays the part of spy, and examines the slops in order to try and find ground for charges—Several ignorant negroes induced to agree to swear to malicious and false charges fixed up by Blunt and his conspirators, and on recommendation of the Dutchman, General Ord is induced to order a court (Arrest No. 21; Court-martial No. 7)—Court ordered to meet at Fort Stockton for my trial—Specially selected to do the dirty work of those interested in my overthrow—The Dutchman Judge Advocate—President of the court and one of the members so drunk no justice to be expected of either—Sentenced to dismissal by the court—Dishonorable and tricky transaction by the Judge Advocate—Sentence of court commuted to one year's confinement at post or station—Brutal, disgraceful and arbitrary treatment of Colonel Grierson—Forced into a bare room and refused privilege of calling on any officer, soldier or citizen—Kept forty-eight hours without food—No apparent attention given by the court to witnesses in my behalf—Colonel Blunt deceives Department Commander in his wilful misrepresentations in my case.

CHAPTER XIX.

1880.

In arrest—Social functions of the New Year not agreeable—Second Lieutenant Esterly—Sympathy of the citizens of the whole country—Expressed disapproval of my harsh treatment—Another set of charges by Grierson and Clous on account of refusal to give up copy of Morning Report Book—Court ordered to meet at McKavett (Court-martial No. 8)—The old "fossil," Neil, President—Several "boot-licks," under the control of the Dutchman ———, compose the rest of the members—Forcibly brought before the court in weak and nervous condition—Sentenced to dismissal in accordance with the purpose for which court was organized—No evidence of grounds to warrant such sentence—Sentence commuted to six months' suspension and confinement at the post with half pay—Col. H. C. Corbin writes letter in my behalf.

CHAPTER XX.

1881.

Serving sentence at Fort McKavett, Texas—Colonel Shafter, First Infantry, in command—Indulgent commanding officer—Colonel Pennypacker, Sixteenth Infantry, also commands McKavett—Shows his sympathy—Officers of the First and Sixteenth Infantry very friendly—Paymaster and Mrs. Robison prove their true friendship—Newspapers comment favorably—Several real-estate transactions—Mali-

cious charge questioning sanity—Ordered before medical board for examination—Comments of the press—Arbitrary proceeding—Paymaster-General Terrell proves his friendship—Medical board disappoints my persecutors in their finding—Ordered to serve sentence at Concho—Colonel Grierson forbids me from accepting invitation to dine with Lieutenant Davis—General Vincent refuses transportation for family from San Antonio—Appears to be in collusion with the conspirators—Post Chaplain Weaver sends meals to prevent starvation—Grierson issues orders forbidding me to visit any building, officer or citizen at post—Apply for transfer from regiment—Insomnia—Change headquarters from Concho to Stockton—Indignant comments of friends on persecution of Generals Grierson, Ord, Vincent and Blunt—A miracle that I survive through it—Colonel Shafter forwards, approved and recommended my application affecting pay—Lieut.-Col. James F. Wade succeeds Blunt in command of post—Correspondence with General Hazen—Letters from prominent officials and friends submitted to board.

CHAPTER XXI.

1882.

Allowed the limits of the post at Fort Stockton—Sentence expires—Assume command of my company—Colonel Wade shows hostility—Orders me on drill and tries to detect mistake—Colonel Wade reprimands me for associating and entertaining citizens—Real-estate transaction—Granted leave of absence and visit Washington—Enter into a large transaction with General Swaim and Colonel Ingersoll—Commence building two fine houses—Secretary of War Lincoln shows his hostility—Adjutant-General Drum pretends to be an intimate friend—Ordered back to Texas, leaving family in Washington—Lieutenant Bullis proves his friendship—Major McClellan a just commanding officer—Colonel Wade doing all he can to find some excuse for charges—Colonel Wade disapproves application for a sick leave—Letter of Lieutenant Flipper—Form a stock company consisting of General Hazen, Colonel Rockwell, Governor Davis, Hon. C. B. Farwell, Col. H. C. Corbin and Governor John C. Brown.

CHAPTER XXII.

1883.

Colonel Wade continues effort to find grounds for charges—General Vincent pursues course of hostility—Forced to perform full duty when physically unable—General Drum proves "tricky"—Ordered on scout after Indians—Colonel Wade encourages insubordination of men in my company—He makes false representations to Department Commander—Medical board convenes, and three officers from the court-martial which sentenced dismissal made members—Scurrilous charges and false report fixed up by Dr. Carter and Colonel Wade—Board recommends retirement—Leave of absence given for six months—Revoked—Forcibly and arbitrarily retired as senior captain—Apply for order of retirement to be revoked—Colonel Wade placed in false light by written statement of officers at post—Call on President in person and protest against action of board—Engage in real-estate business, making several large transactions.

CHAPTER XXIII.

1884.

Secure appropriation by Congress for the adoption of a pneumatic gun carriage—Take an active part as a member of Military Committee at Inauguration of Mr. Cleveland—Controversy with Secretary of War Lincoln in regard to retirement—Bill introduced into the Senate—Recalled through representations of Col. John Bacon of General Sherman's staff—Correspondence with Senator Williams—Memorial furnished Congress explaining retirement—Letter to President Aurthur denouncing his Secretary of War Robert T. Lincoln's unjust act—Gen. James A. Denver my counsel.

CHAPTER XXIV.

1885.

Attend President's reception in full uniform—Large amount of property put into my hands exclusively to sell—Real-estate transaction with Hon. Washington McLean—Protest against Major Merrill's promotion—Sell Secretary Whitney of the Navy a country resort—List of the many sales of property during the year—Real-estate transaction with Hon. Levi P. Morton—Correspondence with General Reno in relation to Colonel Merrill submitted to the Secretary of War—Beautify and improve my country resort—Entertain many guests.

CHAPTER XXV.

1886.

Call on General Sheridan and march with the rest of officers to call on the President—Spicy correspondence in relation to Major Merrill—Appointed full colonel and Superintendent of Military Academy at Oxford by the Governor of Maryland—Take possession as General Superintendent of the Academy, and purchase all the property—Correspondence in relation to the Dutchman ——— —Capt. L. T. Eades' interest in business transactions—Cause Major Merrill's nomination for Lieutenant-Colonel to be withdrawn from the Senate—Invitations to receptions at the Executive Mansion—Secure large subscription for purchase of home for Mrs. General Hancock—Transaction with Senator McPherson and Chief Justice H. E. Jackson—Select a country residence for President Cleveland—A train chartered for thirty-five days—Visit California and many Western States—Entertained by President Callahan of the First National Bank of San Francisco—Invited on excursion by Governor Stoneman—For lack of time drop retirement controversy.

CHAPTER XXVI.

1887.

Social features of the New Year—General Drum's pretended friendship in securing an Army officer as inspector of cadets, afterwards discovered treacherous—Assistant Superintendent Burgess proves defaulter and disappears with a large amount of funds, breaking up the school—Letters from members of Congress and others in relation to their sons at the Military Academy—Arrange with St. John's Academy to take charge of all cadets who had paid their tuition in advance

—Sacrifice thousands of dollars' worth of property to satisfy obligations—Took active part in ovation given Governor Shepherd—Assist in getting up riding club and build Academy—President Cleveland and Cabinet take an active part.

CHAPTER XXVII.

1888.

Social features—Take active part in convention at St. Louis in the nomination of President Cleveland—Entertain Governor Stoneman of California, and assist him in getting on the retired list—Important letter of Mr. Lincoln in regard to saving the Union without reference to freeing any slaves—Write several letters in the interests of politics—Net profit of $14,600 over living expenses during the year.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

1889.

Call on President Cleveland—Social features of the season—Visit and interview with Congressman Kilgore of Texas—Governor James A. Beaver, a comrade whom I had served with and known for years, appoints me colonel and aide on his staff—Take an active part in making parade successful—Insulted by General Hastings—Several large real-estate transactions—Notified by General Hastings that Governor Beaver had telegraphed him I was not to ride on his staff—Assigned to duty as a special escort to President Harrison at the Inauguration—Assaulted on the parade by two drunken Army officers by order of Governor Beaver (Arrest No. 22)—Demand apology of Governor Beaver—Demand refused—Governor Beaver throws off his position as Governor of Pennsylvania while in Washington and defies me to resent his insult as a private citizen—Not wishing to strike him, I tweak his nose as my only course—General Schofield and his conspirators make capital and pick a court of Army loafers to force me out of the service (Court-martial No. 9; Arrest No. 23)—Sentenced to dismissal by the court—Commuted to suspension for five years and deprived of uniform—Washington city selected for confinement, with fifty miles limit for exercise—One hundred prominent citizens of Pennsylvania sign set of resolutions and present me with a gold medal costing $300 in approval of my act in resenting the insult of Governor Beaver—Ordered by General Schofield to refuse medal, which I decline to do—Return answer, "I propose to accept medal, and $10,000 would not be an inducement to return it"—General Schofield orders charges preferred, but finds my reply of use as a real-estate advertisement—Anxious to vent his spite, secretly orders medical board for the purpose of adjudging me insane—Discovers his mistake—Comments of press on court-martial affair.

CHAPTER XXIX.

1890.

Interview with Senator Stewart, who enters into one of the largest real-estate transactions that ever took place in Washington—Present plan for extending Connecticut avenue, and require $3,500,000 in cash to carry it out—Lease office and fill it with stenographers, clerks, etc.,

invest $10,000 in horses and vehicles, hire a lawyer at $20 per day, and purchase hundreds of thousands of dollars' worth of property to carry out plan of extending the only avenue of the city that has ever been carried outside the boundary to the District line—Donate ground through my country property for this purpose—Letters of General Spinner and others—Thousands of dollars cleared during the year's transactions.

CHAPTER XXX.

1891.

Under sentence of court—Unable to engage in official social features of the New Year—Complete my part in connection with purchasing land, extending avenue and building railroad—Associating with Senator Stanford, Senator Hearst and many other officials, who interest themselves in transactions—Deliver address in relation to the present and future of the city of Washington—Correspondence with the President in relation to unjust sentence being remitted—President remits sentence of five years' suspension, placing my status as before trial.

CHAPTER XXXI.

1892.

Attend President's reception on New Year's Day for first time since court-martial—Take in all social features of the season—List of property accumulated in business transactions since retirement, with original cost and present value—Entertain fifty men of the Second New York Artillery at my residence during the G. A. R. Encampment—Reception given to full regiment—Several large transactions negotiated during the year.

CHAPTER XXXII.

1893.

Take active part in social features of the year—Aide on Chief Marshal McMahon's staff at President's Inauguration—How General Grant got his Arabian stallion to this country—Letter from Governor Beaver—Reunion of the Second Army Corps.

CHAPTER XXXIII.

1894.

March with the General of the Army and other officers to call on the President—Other social features of the New Year—Attend brilliant wedding of Senator Charles J. Faulkner at Hampton, Va.—Take active part in meetings of the Sons of the American Revolution and Second Army Corps Association—Entertain several hundred prominent guests at birthday anniversary—Catholic priest interferes with family affairs—Sisters of the Holy Cross Convent connive with priest in secreting daughter—Letters of Senator Redfield Proctor—Correspondence with General Shafter—Correspondence with Cardinal Gibbons in connection with the dishonorable acts of Fathers Barry and Stafford and Sister Angelica—Catholic lawyers employed to secure separation—Case compromised outside of court.

CHAPTER XXXIV.

1895.

March with General Schofield for the last time to call on President Cleveland—Take in customary social features of the New Year—Request General Schofield to concur in act authorizing brevet—Special request made to General Schofield by the following-named Senators to make me brevet lieutenant-colonel as a personal favor: Charles H. Gibson, Charles J. Faulkner, J. R. McPherson, J. N. Camden, A. P. Gorman, W. C. Squire, W. N. Roach, Eppa Hunton, H. M. Teller, Charles F. Henderson, John H. Mitchell, C. K. Davis, William M. Stewart, William P. Frye, O. H. Platt, E. O. Walcott, D. W. Voorhees, Nelson W. Aldrich, W. B. Allison, Justin S. Morrill, J. B. Gordon, Joseph M. Carey, J. C. Burrows, John P. Jones, S. M. Cullom, John W. Daniels, H. C. Hansbrough, N. C. Blanchard, T. C. Power, R. Proctor, John T. Morgan, Francis E. Warren, Stephen M. White, Edward Murphy, Calvin S. Brice, George C. Perkins—Also the following Members: J. E. Washington, W. M. Springer, W. S. English, T. J. Campbell, John J. O'Neill, S. B. Cooper, S. J. Schermerhorn, Joseph H. O'Neill, W. S. Holman, E. N. Lockwood, C. A. Cadmus, S. A. Geissenhainer, John Van Voorhis, M. T. Stevens, Charles S. Randall, A. C. Durborow, J. W. Wadsworth, James R. McCreary, Ad. Meyer, J. M. Allen, E. J. Erdman, T. W. Philips, Jos. M. Outhwaite, Charles Tracy, W. C. P. Breckenridge, Francis G. Newlands, George D. Wise, C. B. Kilgore, T. M. Pachel, Jason B. Brown, Henry H. Bingham, A. B. Wright, H. D. Money, Lewis Sperry, George F. Huff, E. E. Meredith, J. H. Walker, C. H. Grosvener, Charles E. Hooker, Thomas J. Henderson, Walter I. Hayes, J. C. Kennon, W. J. Bryan, A. S. Perry, Elijah A. Morse, Marcus A. Smith, C. B. Culberson, A. C. Harmer, J. S. W. Marshall, Seth L. Milliken, J. S. Sherman, Joseph Wheeler, W. I. Wilson, Peter J. Somers, W. J. White, John T. Heard, Joseph C. Sibley, Thomas Settle, B. McMillan, William J. Cooms, Edward J. Duffy—General Schofield, having obtained his promotion as Lieutenant-General, ignores the Senators and Members who helped him to secure it—Spicy correspondence with General Schofield and the War Department—False and malicious affidavits fixed up and signed by vagabond negroes to ruin my character availed of as an excuse for ignoring recommendations—Comments of the press on Schofield's underhanded and arbitrary act—Before his retirement, remind General Schofield in a letter I had given him no cause for his persecutions and making my life a hell and trying to ruin me through my official life by misrepresentations—General Schofield sends officers and guard to private house with orders to arrest and have me confined in a guard house at Washington Barracks (Arrest No. 24)—Appear before Justice Bradley on writ of *habeas corpus*—My release, and General Schofield scored.

CHAPTER XXXV.

1896.

Large assemblage at the War Department to greet new and popular General of the Army, General Nelson A. Miles, who marched at the head of the column to call on the President, making the most brilliant display witnessed for years—Take an active part in the social features

of the year—Second Army Corps, Sons of the American Revolution and Army of the Potomac banquets—Private property seized by order of Justice Hagner—Correspondence with Gen. Daniel Butterfield and Hon. L. P. Morton—Take an active part in the dedication of the Hancock statue—March with General Miles to Seventh street and Pennsylvania avenue, where the monument of Hancock is erected—Renewal and withdrawal of divorce case—Newspaper comments in relation thereto—Purchase the famous Appomattox battlefields, where General Lee surrendered.

CHAPTER XXXVI.

1897.

March as usual with the Army officers from the War Department to the President's New Year's Day—Take in social features of the season—Turn my Appomattox battlefields into a sheep farm—Correspondence with the War Department in relation to brevet—Take an active part in Second Army Corps banquet at Hotel Shoreham, furnishing Appomattox brandy for the punch—Attend Second Army Corps at Troy, N. Y.—Invited to lunch at the President's stand at Buffalo, N. Y., during the Grand Army Review—Visit Montreal—Correspondence with the War Department.

CHAPTER XXXVII.

1898.

Attend reception at the Ebbitt House given by Queen Lilliuokalani and the Hawaiian Commission, who sang, played and entertained their guests with mandolin, guitar and piano—Colonel and Mrs. Horn give musical entertainment at their Corcoran street home—General C. H. Grosvenor appears to take a personal interest in my behalf—Gen. George B. Fielder appointed chairman of the committee in relation to the purchase of Appomattox for a National Park—Report General Schofield to the War Department in relation to his cowardice during the war—Suggest that Congress repeal act making him Lieutenant-General on account of his disgrace to the American nation—Comments of the press—Letter to President McKinley—Special request and recommendations to the President of the United States to make me a Brigadier-General by the following-named officials: Amos J. Cummings, Hugh A. Dinsmore, John S. Rhea, V. Warner, A. S. Berry, John L. Brenner, J. W. Washorth, I. A. Walker, Richard A. Wise, John Lamb, Claude S. Swanson, R. B. Hawley, G. W. Curtis, Charles T. Joy, J. Yost, William W. Sweet, Wallace T. Foote, Rufus E. Leiter, John F. Rixey, W. C. Jones, John W. Ross, John A. T. Hull, Benjamin F. Marsh, Michael Griffin, John H. Ketcham, Lucien J. Fenton, Rowland B. Mahany, Hugh R. Belknap, John McDonald, Walter P. Brownlow, William Sulzer, Charles H. Martin, Nicholas N. Cox, John J. Lentz, James Hay, Thomas M. Jett, Marcus A. Smith, Herman D. Reeve, William C. Mentzer, Lucien Baker, James D. Brady, Henry H. Bingham, T. G. Alvord, John W. Daniels, Thos. S. Martin, J. S. Sherman, J. J. Belden, Frank H. Hosford, John Russell Young, John M. Carson, D. E. McComas, A. C. Bradley, H. M. Teller, W. N. Roach, C. W. Grosvenor, J. M. Thurston—Underhand current in the War Department prevents favorable action of the President—Whitewash board appointed to investigate the case—Explanation of dishonest acts of officials in the War Department.

CHAPTER XXXVIII.

1899.

Attend reception in full dress uniform as usual, meeting many friends—Take active part in social features of the season—Most of the year spent in trying to obtain justice of the President—Senator Daniels of Virginia takes a personal interest in my behalf—Secretary of War Alger controlled in his official acts by unreliable and untrustworthy subordinates—Correspondence with the War Department and President of the United States—Business neglected at great financial sacrifice, on account of time taken to seek redress at the War Department—General Miles concurs in Generals Hancock and Sherman's recommendation for brevet lieutenant-colonel, making the record clear and ready for the President's action—President hesitates to act favorably on account of underhanded misrepresentations made to him—Copies of important documents in relation to my record denied me by Adjutant-General Corbin—The worst mixed and mystifying case ever before the War Department for investigation—Suggest that the War Department be investigated—Account of nine courts-martial and twenty-five arrests—Papers with recommendations still before the President for action.

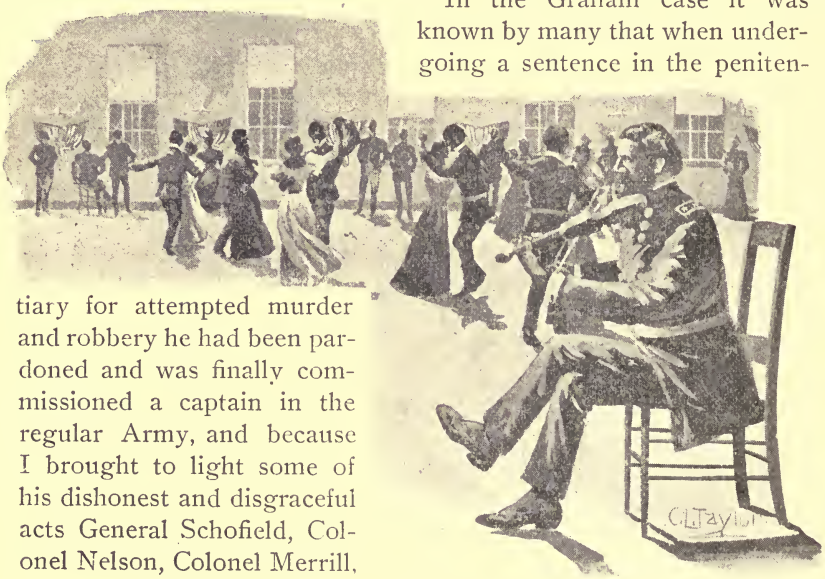
PREFACE.

The principal purpose of this book is to expose and, if possible, to correct the wrongs and injustice inflicted by unscrupulous and designing officers of the United States Army upon brave and honest junior officers, and not for self-adulation or to leave foot-prints on the sands of time in my own personal and official career, and I believe the reader can readily observe that all through my experience my only persecutors have been men whose characters would not bear investigation and whose brutal natures are such that they should not be placed in positions where they can take advantage of the authority entrusted to them. Many men are of such caliber that they cannot bear prosperity. The reader of this book who concludes that I may have drawn an unreal picture of Schofield, unfairly indicating his career, should study his life as written by himself.

Having kept a diary since 1861, I am enabled to refresh my memory from extracts, omitting many events that would prove interesting, but much too sentimental, but believe I will be upheld and sustained by all fair-minded persons.

From my past career, some may be under the impression that I have been a mischief-maker, meddling with affairs that do not concern me, but the reader can readily see that my course has been taken only in self-defence; that I have given the true caliber of my persecutors and in some cases exposed their unscrupulous dishonesty and brutal acts, showing that they should be classed more as animals than as human beings. There seems to be a determination among Army officers of a certain class that a restored officer should not remain in the Army, and all kinds of underhanded measures are resorted to to make his life unbearable or force him out.

In my case it was the determination of General Grierson and others to heap upon me all the indignities possible in order that I might be forced to resign and make room for some one else. When it is found from his record that he sprang up to the position of a Major-General from that of a common bone-rattler in a minstrel troupe you will appreciate the kind of characters that occasionally get into prominent positions.



General Grierson Entertaining His Friends.

In the Graham case it was known by many that when undergoing a sentence in the penitentiary for attempted murder and robbery he had been pardoned and was finally commissioned a captain in the regular Army, and because I brought to light some of his dishonest and disgraceful acts General Schofield, Colonel Nelson, Colonel Merrill, Major Page and others took his part against me, although they knew well that he was one of the worst villains that breathed. Being a good gambler, however, some officers were largely indebted to him, and money goes a great way in some places.

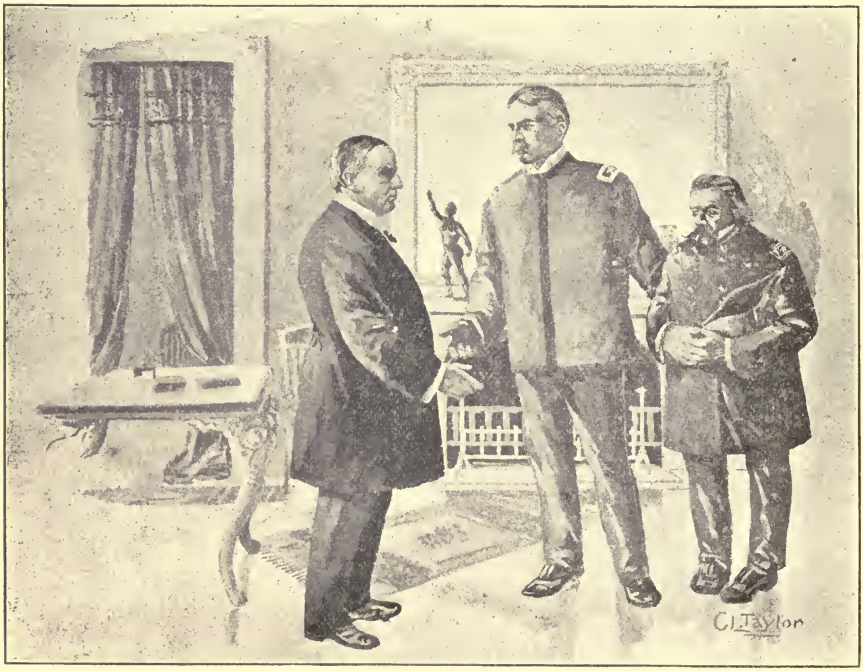
In regard to the Dutchman, ———, he has always had the "cheek" of a brass band and has succeeded in gulling many and making them believe that he is an individual of some importance.

Landing at Castle Garden, he was afterwards put in the band by reason of his blowing his own trumpet, and, taking advantage of

Just Landing at Castle Garden.

the weakness of ignorant conspirators, he finally succeeded, when his brother-in-law was in great favor with the President, in being made brigadier-general.

The Army Lawyer Blowing His Own Horn.



Calls on President in New Uniform of Brigadier General.

I mention only the foregoing as examples of those with whom I have been brought in personal contact. If there are others in the Army of the same caliber I leave it for some one else to single them out; but these individuals have been my unrelenting persecutors for many years. There is no doubt but that an investigation will show many in official life of the same stamp as those I have just mentioned.

Although their number is so great as to preclude individual mention in this place, I am proud of the stainless character of those who have ever stood by me in my trials and tribulations, and my gratitude to them shall be unfailing while life shall last. May the Giver of all good keep them, one and all, in everlasting remembrance. Among them I cannot forbear naming:

C. H. Burgess, with whom I have been associated for over thirty-five years, now a director in one of our prominent banks, and one of the leading business men of the District, who has shown his true friendship and confidence in me by his acts and deeds. Nothing that has been said or published against me by my enemies or traducers has had the least effect in shaking his confidence. There has not been an instance when I have been in need of funds but what he has come to my rescue, and when not having it to hand me in cash, has always managed to procure it in any amount that I required. Hon. M. G. Emery, a leading banker; Wheatley Bros., well-known lumber merchants; J. B. Lambie; M. C. Mitchell, stoves and tinware; Brookes & Clark, hardware merchants; Lansburgh Bros., dry goods merchants; Hahn, the shoe-dealer; Muth & Co., paints and oils; William McKnew, dry goods; Saks & Co., clothiers; King's Palace, millinery, etc.; Stinemetz & Son, hatters; Crane, Paris & Co., bankers—are among the business men who have known me personally for years and have given me unlimited credit. Their friendship has been proven by their acts.

Among others are three Waggaman brothers, whom I must not fail to mention as having done more towards the advancement, development and beautifying of the District and adding to its attractions by laying out streets and parks than any other three men here—Thomas E., treasurer of the Catholic University; H. P., in regard to the beautifying of the suburbs; John F., having been

a large real-estate owner, and through his energy, foresight and advanced ideas originated features of great attraction for the welfare of not only the residents of and visitors to Washington, but for many other cities whose citizens who desire to enjoy the advantages at "Ocean City," which he has beautified at great

C. H. BURGESS.

expense, and which is one of the most desirable summer resorts around any of the cities in the Union.

And I must not fail to mention Mr. C. C. Willard, one of the energetic and self-made business men of the District, owner of the Ebbitt, the established headquarters for the Army and Navy; also

J. W. Thompson, one of the leading bankers and one of the largest real-estate owners in the District, who came to my rescue at a time of need, advancing me several thousand dollars; T. Franklin Schneider, who has built over 3000 houses, and John Sherman, who was one of the principals in beautifying Cleveland Park.

Among the popular and successful real-estate brokers are W. H. Saunders, Heiskell & McLeran, L. P. Shoemaker and W. F. Ellis, who represent facts without color.

Among the lawyers are E. L. McClelland and C. G. Lee, with whom I have been associated for a number of years in the same office, where we have been brought in daily contact with each other in many transactions, with whom no disruption has ever occurred and who are ready to lend a helping hand if necessary in any connection where their aid would be of service to me. Gen. William Birney, one of the oldest lawyers at the bar, has been on the most friendly terms with me for years; the firms of Douglass, Mackall & Maedel, E. Thomas, Henry E. Davis, Wm. C. Prentiss, Shellabarger & Wilson, B. F. Grafton and Ralston & Siddons, who have been my main attorneys in many transactions, and are still in matters that are continually coming to the front.

Among the Senators I feel it my duty to mention by name Senator John W. Daniel of Virginia, who has given weeks of his time to looking over papers and records and keeping himself familiar with the attacks upon me and the source from which they come. Senator Cushman K. Davis is another one of the most prominent lawyers of our country who has kindly taken interest of a sympathetic nature to see that I get justice. I flatter myself that I have in them two of the most eminent lawyers this country has ever produced to aid me. As they are so well known and idolized by the country it is not necessary for me to say more. Senators H. M. Teller, F. M. Cockrell, Lucien Baker, Clarence D. Clark, Shelby M. Cullom, William P. Frye, J. B. Foraker, H. C. Hansbrough, George F. Hoar, William M. Stewart, J. P. Jones, J. McMillan, T. S. Martin, H. D. Money, J. C. Spooner, G. L. Shoup, J. M. Thurston, J. T. Morgan, E. W. Pettus, W. P. Kellogg, F. E. Warren and S. B. Elkins; the late S. B. Maxey and James G. Blaine have also shown a strong friendship for me.

Among the members of the House of Representatives who have been my true and able supporters are Hon. John C. Coburn, chairman of the Military Committee; Joseph W. Babcock, James J. Belden, Henry H. Bingham, Charles A. Boutelle, Gen. B. M. Cutcheon, Gen. J. A. T. Hull, now chairman of the Military Committee, Robert G. Cousins, Amos J. Cummings, George M. Curtis, R. C. DeGrafenreid, Hugh A. Dinsmore, James Hay, William Sulzer of New York, C. H. Grosvenor, John H. Ketcham, Benton McMillan, Benjamin F. Marsh, Edwin R. Ridgely; also the late Hon. Frank Morey, Levi P. Maish and Richard A. Wise, who took a personal interest in my behalf, as shown by their acts and deeds.

I mention the following names of newspaper men with whom I have been connected personally and who nobly defended me on the ground of justice:

John Russell Young; L. A. Coolidge, *Boston Journal, New York Commercial;* F. P. Morgan, *Boston Traveler;* F. A. Richardson, W. W. Smith, *Baltimore Sun;* A. B. Atkins, *Brooklyn Daily Eagle;* C. A. Hamilton, *Brooklyn Times;* Walter Stilson Hutchins, *Washington Times;* Julius Guthridge, *Buffalo Commercial;* Frank H. Hosford, *Anaconda Standard* and other papers; R. M. Larner, *Charleston News;* W. L. Crounse, *Detroit Free Press;* John M. Carson, *Philadelphia Ledger;* William E. Curtis, *Chicago Record;* Gen. W. H. Roberts, of the press; Smith D. Fry, *Des Moines Register;* E. B. Smith, *Washington Post;* Raymond Patterson, *Chicago Tribune;* William C. McBride, S. E. Johnson, W. K. Richardson, *Cincinnati Enquirer;* John S. Shriver, *Cincinnati Times-Star;* Charles A. Edwards, *San Antonio Express, Houston Post;* Charles C. Carlton, *New York Herald;* W. A. Edwards, *Kansas City Times;* O. O. Stealey and H. Watterson Stealey, *Louisville Courier-Journal;* H. C. Stevens, *Newburg Daily News;* J. M. Sarvis, *New York Daily News;* R. Schroeder, *New York Standard Zeitung;* E. J. Gibson, *Philadelphia Press;* William B. Shaw, *Philadelphia Inquirer;* H. B. F. McFarland, *Philadelphia Record;* W. R. Bell, *Pittsburg Leader;* A. E. Heiss, *Pittsburg Dispatch;* Charles W. Metzger, *Pittsburg Commercial Gazette, Albany Journal* and *St. Louis Globe-Democrat;* A. S. Ayres, manager of Scripps-McRae Press Association; Albert J. Stofer, C. A. Boynton, Associated

Press; G. E. Gilliland, *Toledo Bee;* H. L. West, *Washington Post;* Robert O. Bailey, *Washington Times;* Edward M. Boyd, *San Francisco Chronicle;* Gen. H. C. Boynton, Associated Press; Henry C. Hayes, *New York Sun;* J. A. Mathews, *Chicago News;* Charles T. Thompson, Associated Press; J. S. Van Antwerp, *San Francisco Examiner* and *The Wisconsin* (Milwaukee); Francis E. Leupp, *New York Evening Post;* George W. Rouzer, John C. Williams and C. O'Laughlin, *New York Herald;* E. G. Dunnell *New York Times;* Selden N. Clark, *New York Tribune;* Max F. Ihmsen and Mr. Stevens, *St. Louis Globe-Democrat;* Mr. Tighe, *New York Journal;* C. H. Ridenour and J. E. Jenks, *Army and Navy Register;* Captain Church, *New York Army and Navy Journal;* Fred Crawford, Horace J. Mock, *World;* J. A. Sarvis, *Wall Street News;* J. A. Breckon, *Denver Republican;* Fred Schade, *Washington Sentinel,* and the late J. J. Noah.

I think the reader will sustain me when I say the newspaper men on duty in Washington cannot be excelled in any city in the world for reliability, intelligence, uprightness of character, championship of justice and in representing the true state of affairs at the capital of the nation.

Among my noted entertainers I must not fail to mention my personal friend, the late John Chamberlin, who was known for his genial entertaining qualities by almost every man of note in the country, whose pictures still grace the walls of his famous hotel. It is impossible for me to say anything that will add to his popularity. Mr. Edward K. Somborn, his business associate and confidential friend, has succeeded him, and the resort is as popular and as entertaining as ever, with additional attractions to satisfy the many noted visitors who naturally congregate to enjoy the hospitalities and listen to the stories of their genial and entertaining host.

I desire to mention also a few names of my personal friends of the Army who have proved their true worth through all my ups and downs, among whom are the following:

Gen. U. S. Grant.
Maj.-Gen. W. S. Hancock.
George Meade.
Gen. W. T. Sherman.
Maj.-Gen. Nelson A. Miles,
John R. Brooke.

Gen. Mansfield.
J. S. Wadsworth.
O. O. Howard.
Horatio Wright.
F. J. Porter.
Daniel H. Rucker.
John Sedgwick.
I. N. Palmer.
E. A. Burnside.
B. P. Runkle.
William Smith.
John M. Wilson.
Edward Hinks.
J. C. Kelton.
John Moore.
Rufus Ingalls.
Seth Williams.
William H. Penrose.
William W. Averill.
J. C. Breckenridge.
Asa P. Carey.
Arthur McArthur.
Daniel E. Sickles.
William H. Nash.
William Ludlow.
Adolphus W. Greely.
Charles E. Compton.
Thomas M. Anderson.
William P. Carlin.
Col. Charles Bird, Asst. Q. M.
William H. Carter.
J. W. French.
D. S. Gordon.
Peter C. Haines.
William A. Elderkin.
William A. Forwood.
C. R. Greenleaf.

Gen. Edwin V. Sumner.
William Rosecrans.
John Gibbon.
John A. Rollins.
O. B. Willcox.
Rufus Saxton.
S. P. Heintzelman.
Francis Barlow.
Daniel Butterfield.
Philip St. George Cooke.
William R. Shafter.
Thaddeus H. Stanton.
Leonard Wood.
A. S. Divin.
M. I. Ludington.
James A. Hardie.
Robert Williams.
Ward B. Burnell.
F. C. Ainsworth.
R. N. Batchelder.
Z. P. Bliss.
Jacob F. Kent.
John P. Hawkins.
William S. Worth.
C. H. Thompkins.
Robert MacFeely.
Guy V. Henry.
William A. Hammond.

Edward M. Hayes.
H. B. Carrington.
C. B. Comstock.
B. E. Friar.
John Green.
H. C. Dunwoody.
O. D. Green.
J. P. Hatch.

James G. C. Lee.
Albert P. Morrow.
Galusha Pennypacker.
Charles Porter.
James S. Casey.
Edward M. Coates.
Charles Smart.
Rodney Smith.
Peter D. Vroom.
Frank E. Nye.
S. Van Vliet.
Andrew Geddes.
F. D. Baldwin.
Lewis R. Hare.
George W. Getty.
Maj. Edmund Rice.
Charles Bentzoni.
John D. Black of General Miles' staff during both wars.
John A. Darling.
E. W. Halford.
R. L. Hoxie.
Frederick M. Crandall.
John D. Hall.
S. H. Lincoln.
Edward G. Mathey.
George C. Penney.
Culver C. Smith.
T. E. True.
G. F. Robinson.
Edward F. Glenn.
Roland G. Hill.
John G. Balance.
H. Gardner.
F. M. H. Kendrick.
E. B. Kirk.
George A. Forsyth.
James Oakes.
John S. Poland.
A. F. Rockwell.
Henry W. Closson.
George M. Randall.
Charles H. Smith.
Thomas Whittemore.
Henry C. Wood.
R. G. Rutherford.
John F. Weston.
Edward Moale.
Charles F. Humphrey.
William P. Hall.
Daniel V. Bash.
William M. Black.
John S. Bullis.
William H. Clapp.
John L. Clem.
W. S. Edgerly.
W. F. Halleck.
Jessie M. Lee.
Edward Field.
Thomas T. Knox.
H. G. Litchfield.
William M. Manydear.
Edward L. Randall.
G. W. H. Stouch.
J. C. Muhlenberg.
W. Lyman.
George F. Cooke.
William Davis.
J. W. Hanny.
Thomas A. Buchanan.
William H. James.
William W. Taylor.

Douglass M. Scott.
Thomas H. Barry.
William V. Richards.
Samuel R. Whitehall.
Alexander Rogers.
James M. Burns.

Ezra Woodruff.
Valentine McNally.
Alexander Sharp.
George H. Palmer.
Philip Reed.

Capt. James A. Bates.
John A. Depray.
Mason M. Maxon.
Peter Leary, Jr.
Oscar F. Long.
E. O. C. Ord.
Herman Schreiner.
Edward Burr, U. S. Eng.
William H. Vinal.
Thomas W. Lord.
Edward P. Brewer.
Edward Lloyd.
John M. Carson.
John T. Morrison.
Guy L. Edie.

J. B. McDonald.
Henry H. Benham.
C. E. DeRudio.
L. W. Cook.
A. M. Fuller.
William P. Goodwin.
John W. Bean.
H. B. Lemly.
Samuel W. Fountain.
Robt. H. R. Loughborough.
Percy E. Trippe.
Edward Zalinski.
Frederick D. Sharp.
John C. Dent.
Chaplain Francis H. Weaver.

Lieut. Mervyn C. Buckeye.
V. G. Henry.
John J. O'Connell.
C. C. Cresson.

George E. Albee.
Chas. P. Faulkner.
Powell Clayton.

UPS AND DOWNS

OF AN

ARMY OFFICER.

CHAPTER I.

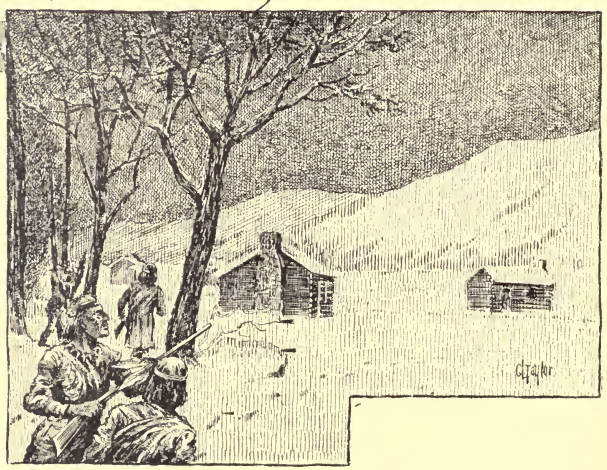
Having been requested by many friends and acquaintances to give a sketch of my past life, I have obtained the following names and dates from relatives, records and other sources as to the Armes family. William Armes, a Scotch lawyer, located with his brother among the first settlers in Deerfield, Mass. In this beautiful spot, with Deerfield mountains looming above them, with terrors of Indian warfare on every side, they established their homes and reared their children.

In the memorable massacre of 1675 several of their descendants met a dreadful fate, and again, in 1704, they passed through the horrors of Indian captivity. Several members of the Armes and Orcutt families distinguished themselves in the French and Indian war, and for their active participation in that turbulent period the family presents a creditable record.

I am also a descendant of the Lymans of Massachusetts, the families of Hudson, Van Dyck, Field, Kibbey, Wallace, Parker, Powell, Wilson, Burrell, Emerson and Orcutt. My paternal grandfather, James Orcutt of Goshen, Mass., was an officer in the Massachusetts militia. He commanded a company for a time at West Point, and served with honor in the Hudson river cam-

paign. He was a personal and trusted friend of Washington; one in whom the commander-in-chief placed great confidence, as was evidenced by the fact that, on the night after the treachery of Benedict Arnold was discovered, General Washington selected Colonel Orcutt and his command to guard the great chain across the Hudson river, one of the most important posts at that eventful time,

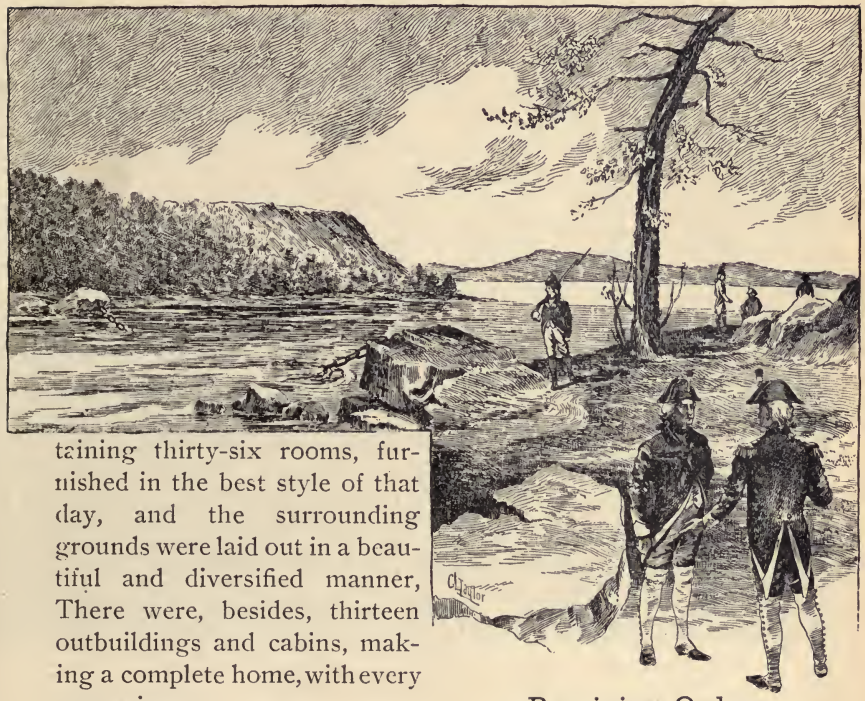
My father, Professor Josiah O. Armes, was born in Deerfield, Mass., in 1807. He was a gentleman of high literary and scientific attainments, and a distinguished, popular and successful lecturer on educational topics for many years before and after our



The Deerfield Home.

Civil War. He traveled extensively through the Union, meeting with brilliant success in his lecturing tours and becoming personally identified with the leading men or our mid-century.

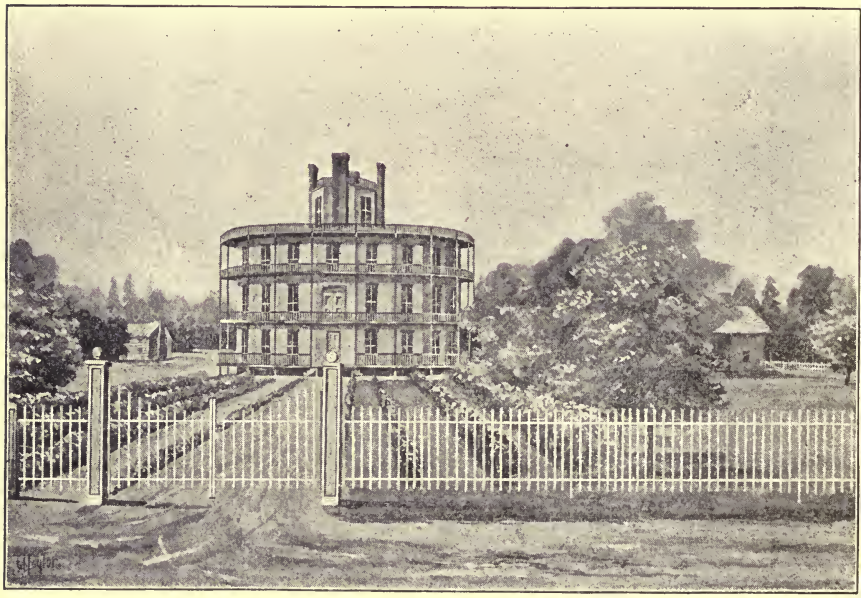
My mother, Olive Caroline Older, shortly after her marriage, located in Fairfax county, Virginia, near Annandale, purchasing an estate and erecting a magnificent stone mansion, which was known as "Hope Castle." This was a spacious structure, containing thirty-six rooms, furnished in the best style of that day, and the surrounding grounds were laid out in a beautiful and diversified manner, There were, besides, thirteen outbuildings and cabins, making a complete home, with every convenience.



Receiving Orders From General Washington.

My mother was accomplished and talented, of great musical ability, and a charming hostess. I shall never forget the good times I had at "Hope Castle," which became noted for its delightful social entertainments, its unrivaled hospitality and attractive *ensemble*. It was a resort for friends, and strangers as well. In the absence of my father my mother, with great managerial ability, looked after the various business matters conected with the estate,, in addition to looking after three boys, who naturally took a great deal of her time.

In this beautiful home we three brothers, Charles H., William Edward and myself, spent our happy days of childhood until the shadows of rebellion shrouded us in gloom, and the fiery torrent of war, sweeping as a desolating fury over the country, engulfed our lovely home in its destructive track.



My Childhood Home.

I was born on the 29th of May, 1844, and as far back as I can remember have been doing something different from the ordinary; but, while at first I have been censured by many for alleged irregularities of judgment and for exhibiting advanced ideas, I have most always proved in the end to have been right.

When I was a young boy a love for horses developed, increasing as years passed on, until in time my love became a passion. When only six or seven years of age I took a fancy for an old horse on the farm called Charlie and induced my parents to present him to me. It was not long before I had the docile animal trained to kick

and bite almost everyone but myself who approached him, and he soon refused to pull a wagon or work for anyone else. I had a great deal of amusement with the horse, going to the postoffice at Annandale, situated about a mile from my home, to which village I rode frequently after the mail, which in those days was carried by the "Whaleys and Latham stages." Often the stage would be delayed at the request of passengers, who would beg me to put "Charlie" through his many little tricks. Removing saddle and bridle, I would say "Go," and off he would gallop for a few yards, and at my command, "Come," would lay back his ears and charge

Charlie.

at me, his mouth wide open as if ready to bite viciously, and end by putting his head on my shoulder and standing perfectly still. At the motion of my hand Charlie would kneel, sit down like a dog, lie flat, stand on his hind legs, pick up a pail of water and carry it in his mouth or pull off my boots in obedience to orders.

We had in our family at this time a governess and a German tutor for the children, but I could not be induced to remain in the house, and much of the time managed to avoid my teachers in one way or another, and would be found with old "Charlie." Finally I became so neglectful of my studies and "Charlie" so dangerous, having bitten several of the darkies, the cook, the nurse, the governess and the tutor, that violent opposition devel-

oped against the poor beast; but despite this opposition I managed to retain my four-foot companion until he bit the overseer of the farm, who, prevailing with my parents, obtained their permission to dispose of the vexatious animal.

Shortly after my loss of this favorite horse I was sent to a boarding-school at Vienna in my native county, where I soon became dissatisfied, and succeeded in securing a change to a school at Centerville, Va. Here I was allowed to have a Bell Founder colt, which was named "Mary Ann," and soon trained to perform all sorts of tricks for the benefit of my schoolmates.

In these days of my boyhood I took great interest in reading all kinds of histories relating to war. I acquired a habit of sitting up until the early hours of the morning, absorbed in the campaigns of Napoleon Bonaparte and Washington. The tactics of war elicited my admiration, and I soon had all the boys in the school organized into a company, armed with sticks and cornstalks, and it seemed as natural for me to engage in this mimic warfare as it was to eat.

The following is a letter written by my mother while I was attending school at Centerville, Va.:

Annandale May 12th 1860

Dear George.

I was much gratified by your long letter although the orthography and chyrography were very defective, it is always a pleasure to hear from you. Having the mumps no doubt operates unfavourably, and you will need to be very cautious lest you take cold. Charles has had them for a week past, he took cold yesterday and his throat is swelling again I received a draft for $150. from your father with the news of his improved health. - he is very anxious for your improvement. I hope you will exert yourself to the very utmost to acquire the ability to spell Unless you study words over & over again you can not expect to remember them. This is what every good scholar has to do. and it is well worth the trouble for it is such a disgrace to spell badly that you can not do too much in order to avoid it. In writing I wish you to practice on the letter I and &. &c. Look at mine and make them still better - for you I am too sick to write very well. I write this in bed. Do not leave so large a space between your words. I can not send the rope for a swing at present as the Tinner will need it next week to roof the house - It will cost upward of $300 - so you see we shall have use for all our money. I will send a coat & cotton yarn soon. The horses dont work much There has been no planting except a part of Charlie's piece. Rhoads has not planted any - he has the field at the barn ready. but the rain has flooded it.

I have not time to write more - I fear I am too late for the mail Gos my respects to Mr Holden & to Mr and Mrs Mann. Charles & Edward return love to your friend George T. You will accept much love from me and strive to be good and industrious.

O. C. Ames

I must not fail to call attention to what was considered at the time a remarkable transaction, which gave me notoriety throughout my section of the country as doing something unheard of before. When only eight or ten years of age I was driving up the Leesburg pike near Falls Church, Va., in a sulky, and for several months had been wishing to be the owner of a buggy, watching every opportunity to obtain one. Finally a good-looking horse and buggy with a gentleman driving appeared coming towards me, I mustered up courage enough to stop him, although I had never seen him before, saying: "Excuse me, sir, but I would like to know how you would exchange your horse, harness and buggy for my horse, harness and sulky?" He got out and examined mine very carefully, and after a few questions about the pedigree of my horse, he giving that of his, and our names and addresses having been exchanged, he said he would trade even, whereupon he got into my sulky and I into his buggy, each flattering himself that he had made the better bargain. We became warm friends afterwards. During the war of the rebellion he obtained employment in the Treasury Department, and most of the time kept up his residence at Falls Church, Va. He was a well-known Union man of that section, his name being Mr. Spencer Coe.

After that transaction old horse-traders advised me always to require a "cash-to-boot" difference and never trade even with anyone. So I made up my mind to make a horse trade the first chance that offered, and as I was allowed to have my own way, I could order any horse on the place that I wanted to, although I had two of my own. I had a grudge against the overseer for harshness to me, and knew he greatly valued a large bay horse called Sam. So I ordered Sam hitched up to the buggy, and driving towards Fairfax Court House, met quite a number of six-horse teams on the way to Alexandria. In one case, spying rather a good-looking small horse in the lead, I stopped the team. The owner soon came along on horseback, when the driver of the team, a good-natured and polite old darkey, pointed him out to me, and I asked him how he would trade his little sorrel for my big bay. After looking my horse over, he said he would give me $10 to boot. I said, "Make it $25 cash and I will trade." He said, "All right,"

and had his teamster put his horse into my buggy and mine to his wagon, and we parted without even asking each other's names. I felt proud of the trade and thought I had made a big bargain, but knew the overseer would go wild when he saw the little horse, and sure enough he did. The next morning after my return home I told my mother at the breakfast table what a big trade I had made, when she smiled, stating the overseer was very much vexed, said the little horse was not fit to be on the place, and had turned him out in the road as being worthless, and let him go. Finally my mother suggested that I ought not to trade away any more horses until I grew older, and I took her advice. Sam being a $300 horse, and $25 all that was realized for him, furnished a lesson too costly for repeating.

Before the war the pride of the Old Dominion was largely in the great number and fine breed of horses which were a part of every manorial domain. It was the custom for the Southern boys to have their own racers, and naturally each boy tried to keep the best breed and fastest steed he could procure, creating quite a rivalry in blue-blooded equine pedigrees. Through woodland glade and over abounding field, with clang of horn and sweep of dogs, careened the jovial huntsmen, as did their forefathers in days of yore in "Merrie England." The coterie to which I belonged consisted of about sixty young men. Most of our time was spent in fox and deer hunting, attending fairs, getting up tournaments, horse races, etc.—generally speaking, having what was then considered a good time. Our parents indulged us to an unlimited extent in these rural pastimes, delighting in our innocent sports, into which the young people entered with the most hearty zeal, disporting themselves with that exuberance of animal spirits characteristic of the Anglo-Saxon race.

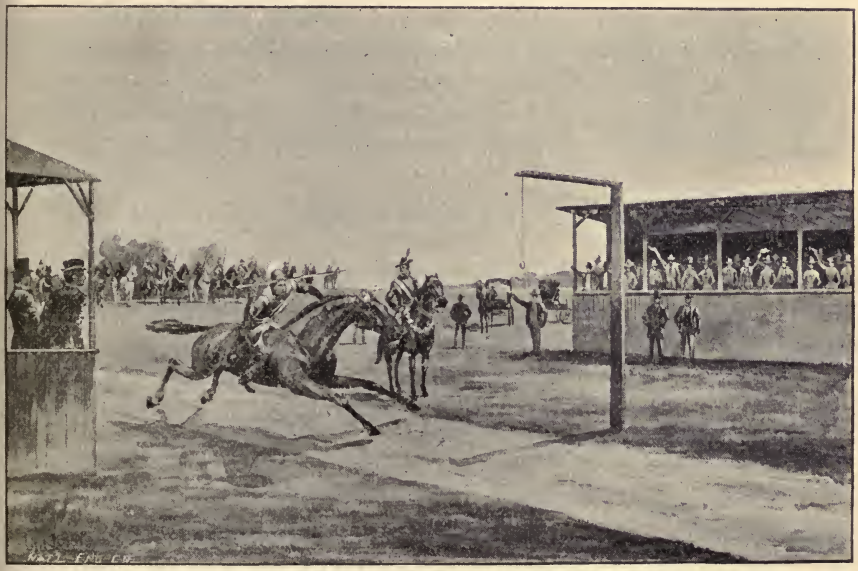
When the State of Virginia seceded, April 24, 1861, Capt. James W. Jackson (who afterwards killed Colonel Ellsworth) then kept two hotels, one in Alexandria, Va., known as the Marshall House, the other at Fairfax Court House, known as the "Union Hotel." He was very popular among the boys, being the principal in nearly all the tournaments and other entertainments. After the State seceded the "boys" were called together at Fairfax Court

House and a grand "Secesh" tournament was largely advertised by Captain Jackson. Seats were arranged to accommodate several hundred persons, a band of music was secured and extra trains were run from Alexandria. Crowds of people came from all the surrounding country to see the sixty cavaliers ride for the "ring" and the "fair one" they hoped to crown. Many drove their four-in-hand teams, others had their negroes in livery, and with their splendid, even gorgeous, equipages and fair ladies in elegant attire made a brilliant and imposing pageant. Not a few of the "first families" rode on their thoroughbreds, with their grooms and valets in attendance; country carts of the poorer people, filled with their motley occupants, and numerous pedestrians plodding along the dusty roads, all formed a scene which in its thronging intensity and noisy *ensemble* might well be likened to the great "Derby Day" in old England.

As, perhaps, a few readers may not understand how these tournaments were conducted, a description may be of interest. These happy days of the Virginia youth have passed into history with the olden days of chivalry, but many a Southerner who reads these lines will go back in memory and for a brief hour live over the days of "Auld Lang Syne."

A post fifteen or twenty feet long is firmly planted, and a bar from four to six feet long fastened securely on top, to which a piece of wire is attached to connect the "ring." Each of the contestants is named and known, for instance, as the "Knight of the Ring," "Knight of Fairfax," "Knight of Washington," as the case might be. As the name of each knight is announced he starts from a point about 300 yards from the "ring," rides at a walk for a distance of ten yards, trots twenty yards, gallops forty, runs sixty, then aims his lance, which is from seven to nine feet long, and charges it. If he is the only one who takes the ring three times in succesion he is entitled to crown the "Queen of Love and Beauty," and has the privilege of going among the spectators and choosing the prettiest girl by pointing his spear or lance at the one he selects. If he is not known to her personally he is escorted to her carriage or to the hotel by a mutual friend and properly introduced. If more than one knight takes the ring three times

in succession they ride in competition until it is settled who among them is the best man. There are generally seven maids of honor and one Queen. The first knight crowns the Queen, the next the first maid of honor, and so on throughout. The crowning takes place in the ballroom, on a stage or platform, where the Queen sits in the center with the maids of honor on either side, gay flowers and garland vines artistically blending into a bower of exquisite color and beauty. After an address appropriate to the



The Jackson Tournament.

occasion delivered by some prominent person, the ceremony of crowning the Queen and maids ensues; then sets are formed, and the music of the darkey band echoes sonorously through the hall, and dancing commences; and usually it is not until sunrise next morning that the foot-patting melodies cease and Terpischore closes her revel.

Returning to the tournament in question, after the heralds had secured the title of each knight who was to ride, sixty of the finest

young horsemen in the State, the "chivalry" of Virginia, formed in line and stood to horse to await their turn to start for the "ring."

The writer rode as the "Knight of the Planet," and just before his name was called had his groom remove the saddle and mounted his Bell-Founder colt bareback. When he was called the bridle was pulled off and the colt jumped forward like a cat. Being guided by my lance, she dashed like lightning through the course three times, her rider each time taking a ring off the hook, and then dropping the lance, reached forward to the colt's mouth, riding on her neck to the starting point, where the bridle was replaced. This was considered one of the most extraordinary feats of the kind ever known to have taken place on such an occasion. It created great excitement, and the air rang with cheers from many hundreds who had watched in breathless expectation that the rider would be killed.

When the tilting equestrian exercises were concluded the contesting "chevaliers" were brought up in line before Col. William Dulaney, the orator of the day, who delivered an address, announcing that George A. Armes of Annandale, the "Knight of the Planet," was the triumphant victor and entitled to crown the Queen of Love and Beauty. Then for a few moments saturnalia reigned, hats were thrown into the air, handkerchiefs and parasols were waved, cheer after cheer rent the air and the shrill fanfare of trumpets from the "small boy" deafened the ear. When the turmoil had in a measure subsided the youthful hero was directed to select the Queen, but in his diffidence it was impossible for him to muster up the requisite courage to undertake the honor, and he therefore deputed his rights to one of his comrades, a Mr. Philip Goodwin, who selected and crowned Miss Nannie Thomas of Fairfax Court House, daughter of Gov. Henry W. Thomas, who made a charming and beautiful Queen.

At eight o'clock that evening the grand ball at the "Union Hotel" opened, and not until the rays of the morning sun shone into the hall of merriment did the festivities close.

This was the most successful and grandest affair ever given at Fairfax either before or since the war. It was not long after this that, with the exception of the writer, every young man of this

party of sixty was engaged in active service against the Union, and their leader, Capt. James W. Jackson, was the first to give his life in a cause which he believed required him to make any sacrifice necessary for the honor of his flag.

Soon after this tournament the "boys" were called together, and their captain, Mott Delaney Ball, delivered an address on "State Rights." In 1860 Robert E. Lee had held that his primary allegiance was due to the State, and if such duties conflicted with the law and interests of the national sovereignty the State should assert its independence in the face of the disruption and disintegration of the organized whole; in other words, the standpoint of patriotism was limited to the narrow confines and local interest of a State's boundary. At the close of Captain Ball's address he announced his desire that all should enroll themselves in the Confederate service.

I declined to accept the gray equipment, shook hands with my comrades, and in spite of the most earnest entreaties to remain with them and stand by my State, bade them good-bye, stating that, in my opinion, patriotic loyalty to one's country was superior to sectional sentiment; that I had decided to uphold national unity and to devote all my energies, at whatever sacrifice to the support of the Union which had been established by the blood of our forefathers. Although a boy, I had been a passionate reader of history, especially books relating to the colonization of America and the struggle for independence, and had become deeply interested in the fearless efforts and impressive sufferings of the founders of the nation. The narratives of the Revolutionary epoch had left a vivid imprint upon my heart, and the principles of patriotism were firmly imbedded in my mind.

I believed that the throes of tribulation which had given birth to a new republic on the shores of this Western continent should not have been in vain, the new creation to be again merged in dissolution, but that it should remain intact, "one and indivisible," and with the increasing strength of maturity and close interests and reciprocal obligations, develop into one of the most powerful governments on earth. The blood of the Pilgrim Fathers was in my veins, and the voice of the Continental Congress and of

Faneuil Hall was now echoing from the soil of a Southern State, the State of Washington and of Jefferson, in protest of the agonizing principle of disunion.

Upon my arrival home that evening I informed my mother and younger brother of the stand I had taken. My brother flew into a rage, denounced me as a traitor to the State, and said he for one would do his part in repelling any attempted invasion of the State. Our father was in New York at this time, also my other brother, who was attending school in that city. Mother tried to reason with me, but without avail. She then said that it would be impossible for me to remain at home, and that I would have to make my own way in the future. I at once resolved to leave "Hope Castle," with all its pleasures and luxuries, to give up family and all its beloved surroundings, for the sake of patriotism, which imbued my entire nature. Making a few meager preparations, I started for Washington city, arriving there with merely a change of clothing and four dollars in my pocket.

As all my friends in that city were sympathizers with the South, I determined not to make my presence known to any of them; so I repaired to a hotel, where I very soon found, to my sorrow, my four dollars reduced to the small sum of twenty cents. After much consideration I finally decided to invest my remaining twenty cents in newspapers. In all exciting times the newsboys' cry strikes the chord of every heart, and with the palpitating fear and hope of him who seeks the weird fortune-teller, the anxious and waiting multitudes cross the hands of the gypsy news vendor with the silver bit as he receives the Sibylline leaves from the unkempt fingers. Repairing to the office of *The Evening Star*, then, as now, a standard journal, I invested to the extent of my small funds, and the first day of this mercantile venture I found that I had made a profit of sixty cents. But I readily saw the unsuitableness of this vagrant business for one who had been reared amid the surroundings of a luxurious Virginia home, and contact with the rough and uncouth Arabs of the streets was repugnant to my proud spirit. I therefore endeavored to devise other means of support.

Having read a great deal of Hon. William H. Seward, at that time Secretary of State, I mentally discussed the advisability of calling upon him and asking his assistance. Not being able to see him at his office, I waited on the steps of the "Kirkwood House," then located on the corner of Twelfth street and Pennsylvania avenue, one afternoon, until I saw him pass. I knew him only by the pictures I had seen of him, but walking up to him whilst he was engaged in conversation with another gentleman, I asked, "Is not this Mr. Seward?" I received an affable reply in the affirmative. The Secretary kindly requested me to come to his house, saying that he would then listen to me. I accordingly acompanied him to his home, there gave him my history and told him I desired a place as messenger in the State Department. Mr. Seward then reminded me that while I was an utter stranger the stand I had taken was highly commendable and deserved encouragement, and that if I could assure him of the facts as stated by me he would do something for me. He told me to return home and secure a line from some one whom he knew who could vouch for me, and also to report to him the condition of affairs in that section.

I therefore returned at once to Fairfax Court House and requested Gov. H. W. Thomas to give me a letter of endorsement that would be of service to me among strangers, informing him that I intended remaining out of the State until the existing troubles were settled. Governor Thomas expressed his sorrow at this decision, and regretted that he could advance no argument to alter it; then writing the following, requested the several gentlemen present to sign it, which they all readily did.

This being the first recommendation I had ever received, I naturally felt proud of it, and hastened to my home in quite jubilant spirits, only to meet with rebuff. My mother and brother, still further incensed at my insistent determination to renounce my home and all associations for what I believed to be a patriotic duty, again strongly endeavored to dissuade me from this purpose, but their attempts were fruitless.

Office of
Henry W. Thomas,
Attorney at Law,
Fairfax Court House,
Fairfax County,
Virginia.

March 10, 1861.

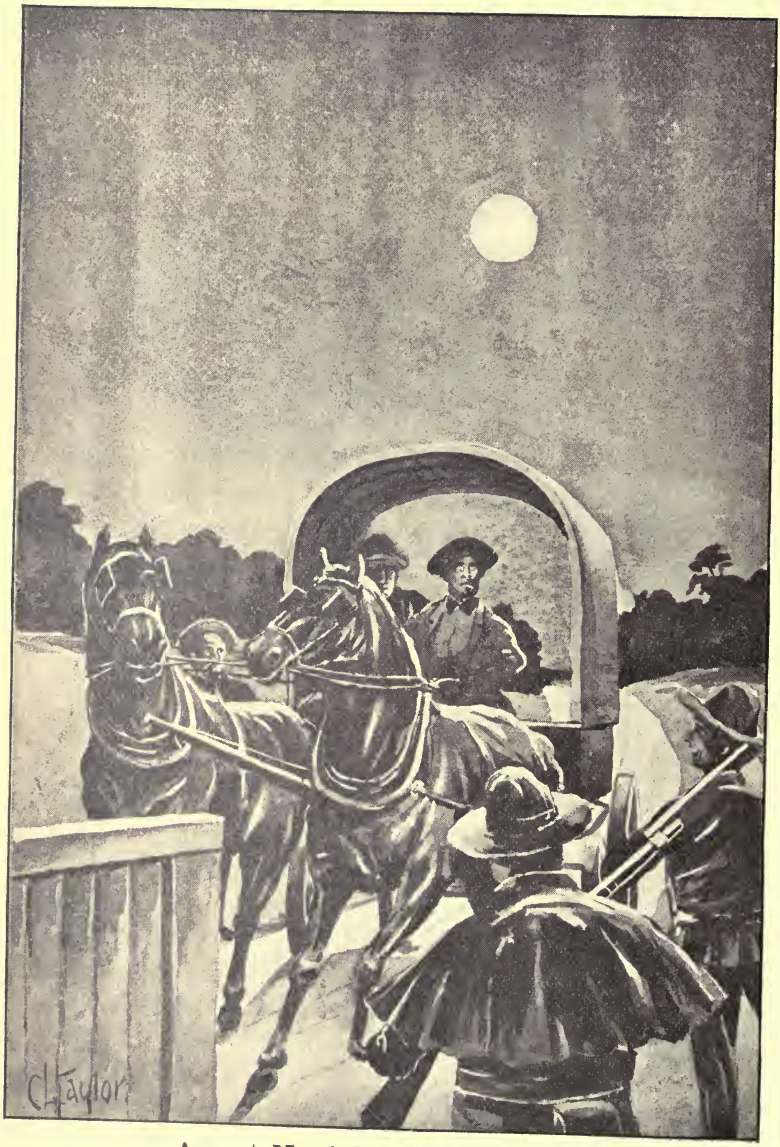
The undersigned citizens of the county of Fairfax take pleasure in recommending Mr George A. Ames.

He is a young gentleman of correct habits, upright and industrious and we do not doubt will be faithful in the discharge of any business in which he may be employed.

We hope that he may be successful in his calling.

able desires. We express
the opinion that he will be
found competent and faith-
ful.
W. L. Edwards
Henry W Thomas
J. P. Machen
O. W. Hunt
W. P. Gunnell
Lab W Jackson secessio
W. S. Ford,
F. G. Fox,
H. G. Grigsby

While passing through Alexandria on my way to Fairfax Court House, I had learned from the best of authority that plans were being perfected to capture the Arsenal and get possession of the capital. I purposed to circumvent this design, but being aware that all avenues of entrance to the city were watched, and that on my return I was liable to be taken into custody, my pronounced views being well known, I resolved upon a plausible excuse should I be questioned. Calling my colored boy, I ordered him to put into the market-wagon some butter and eggs, and drive me to the city that evening. Nothing of any moment occurred until we reached the Long Bridge, crossing the Potomac, about eleven



Arrest No. 1, by Confederates.

o'clock that night, when we were arrested (Arrest No. 1) by one of my former associates, who was on guard at that place. Telling him that our family needed groceries and that the boy had some marketing to dispose of and that he would return the next day, we were allowed to pass over the bridge, and proceeded on our way without further molestation. After having the horses put up at Burch's livery stable on Fourteenth street, I gave the boy directions to go to the market at sunrise, sell what he had, buy the groceries and return home.

Cassius M. Clay's First Prisoner.

I then started for Mr. Seward's house, although it was one o'clock at night. When I reached the corner of Fourteenth street and Pennsylvania avenue, in front of Willard's hotel, I was halted by a sentry, but refused to obey until I heard the click of his gun and the threat that he would shoot if I took another step. I was soon surrounded by six or eight men, with their guns, and all de-

manded of me the reason for being on the street at that hour of the night. I told them that I was on my way to Secretary Seward's house, and had something of importance to communicate to him. At this two men grasped hold of me, and I was put under arrest and roughly marched to the rear of Willard's Hotel and into the hall, where there were about one hundred more men drilling. This was the second of the many arrests to which I was destined to be subjected during my career. (Arrest No. 2.)

I was then taken into a side room and Gen. Cassius M. Clay summoned, who requested me to give my reasons for wishing to see Mr. Seward at this unwarrantable hour. "No one but Mr. Seward shall know my business," I replied.

I was then roughly searched and the recommendation given me by Mr. Thomas taken from me. They then crowded about me, a noisy and excited mob, threatening to hang me if I did not disclose my reason for wishing to see Mr. Seward. Some of them fixed their bayonets and swore they would run me through, but I remained firm, and refused to say anything except to Mr. Seward. Finding that I could not be moved from my determination, General Clay and some others had a conference and decided to take me to the United States Marshal, Col. Ward H. Lamon. I was therefore marched up to his room. We found him in bed, but he at once arose, dressed himself and questioned me closely. I told him that I had nothing to say except to Mr. Seward, so they decided to march me to the Secretary's house, which was done. Leaving me in charge of the guard, Colonel Lamon entered and aroused Mr. Seward, who immediately sent word that he would see me.

The guard appeared very much surprised that I should be admitted to the Secretary's presence at that hour of the night. Col. Ward H. Lamon accompanied me to Mr. Seward's room and then retired, leaving me alone with the mature man of state. I informed him that I had just returned from Virginia, and while there had learned through credible sources that an attempt would be made that night or the next to capture the Arsenal or Treasury by an organized force consisting of Southern infantry, cavalry and artillery; that most of the troops were in Alexandria or near the

Long Bridge and Chain Bridge, and that boats were in readiness for use at any moment.

The Secretary quickly summoned Marshal Lamon and told him to make haste and see Gen. Winfield Scott and to have every able-bodied man in the city armed at once and sent to the river front. Mr. Seward then thanked me heartily and ordered a room for me at Willard's Hotel, which I reached between two and three o'clock in the morning, and I immediately retired. But, weary as I was, I could not sleep, for the streets resounded with the tread of marching feet, the clashing hoof of dashing cavalry and the mighty rush of hurrying artillery. The wings of the god of war hovered over the nation's capital and the voice of impending conflict echoed from every quarter of the city.

First Lieut. Amos Beckwith of the First United States Artillery has since told me that a message was brought to him in the early morning hours to proceed with his battery to the Long Bridge at once, whereupon he sprang out of bed as though the house were on fire and ran to the stables situated near where the War Department now is, and in less than half an hour was at the Long Bridge with his battery. An accident to a train loaded with troops from Richmond caused a delay in carrying out the plans of the enemy as early in the night as was intended, and the appearance of the United States military in such large force prevented any further attempt to capture the city that night.

Immediately after breakfast I called at the hotel office to pay my bill, but was informed that it was already settled. At the same time a message was handed me from Secretary Seward requesting me to call at his office at eleven o'clock that morning. When I appeared before him the Secretary took me by the hand and said:

"Young man, your patriotism to the Union cause deserves encouragement, and you may report to me for duty tomorrow morning, as messenger in this Department."

I thanked him, and was directed to go with a young man whom he had summoned to another room, where I received my appointment, at a salary of $50 per month.

Nine o'clock the next morning found me at Secretary Seward's office, and at ten o'clock I was handed a message to deliver to President Lincoln, which was the first duty I performed in my new office.

Thenceforward I found myself, in the performance of my duties, frequently vibrating between the Department of State and the White House, and I was thus brought into close contact with President Lincoln and the many public and eminent men of that most eventful period. My employment was very agreeable and interesting, and I soon became a general favorite.

In the letter of recommendation given me by Governor Thomas the name of "James W. Jackson, secessionist," had attracted the attention of Mr. Seward, and one day, while conversing with the the President, he asked me if I had the letter with me. I replied that I did not, but would bring it to him later, which I did. It was by him exhibited to the President, who was very much amused, and showed it to others present, little thinking that the most peculiar signer of that paper would be the man to kill our then most distinguished Colonel (Ellsworth), paying for the deed the immediate penalty of his own life, as will be explained in more detail further on, but such was the fact. On still another day, at a Cabinet meeting, Mr. Lincoln and his Cabinet obtained the letter again, and became very much interested over it, laughing, talking and commenting upon the addition of *secessionist* to the signature of James W. Jackson.

My duties at the State Department generally ended between three and four o'clock P. M. After that time I was at liberty to go wherever I pleased, and took advantage of this spare time in watching and studying the military operations wherever possible. Troops were coming into the city by thousands. I went to the camp of each regiment, learning the name of every Colonel, and soon ascertained that preparations were being made to cross the river and camp on the Virginia side, which, from my knowledge of the boys on guard on the other side of the Potomac, I thought would be a very difficult thing to do. When the time was fixed to move I asked Mr. Seward for a note of introduction to the Commanding General soliciting his permission to go over with

the troops, and a three days' leave of absence was granted me. On my reporting to the General and showing him the note he said he would be pleased to allow me to accompany him, and then introduced me to Col. O. B. Willcox, commanding the First Michigan Volunteer Infantry, now Brigadier-General, U. S. A., retired; to Gen. Daniel Butterfield, commanding the Twelfth New York Infantry, and to several others.

By the 28th of April, 1861, there were 10,000 troops ready for duty, and the Military Department of Washington was founded, Gen. Joseph K. Mansfield, U. S. A., assuming command. Only two days before Gen. Winfield Scott was so alarmed that he issued an order from headquarters of the Army stating in substance that "from the known assemblage near this city of numerous hostile bodies of troops it is evident that an attack upon it may be expected any moment," and proceeding to detail measures and posts of officers to be taken for "the defense of the Government, the peaceful inhabitants of the city, the public buildings and archives."

The danger increased on all sides of the city of Washington faster than Union troops could be mustered in, until May 13, 1861, when Gen. B. F. Butler, with the Sixth Massachusetts and some other troops, seized Baltimore, fortified Federal Hill, and the city was coralled. Gen. Robert E. Lee was placed in command of the Confederate forces immediately after he had resigned from the United States Army, and adopted a defensive policy, having thorough military discipline in his command.

On May 5, 1861, Lieut.-Col. A. S. Taylor (Confederate) was in command at Alexandria, Va., and from reports made to him about a large force of Union troops being on their way to capture the city, he ordered his command to fall back, taking with him two companies of Virginia cavalry commanded by Captains Powell and Bonham. General Lee did not place him under arrest, but had him ordered back through General Cocke, and on May 10 Col. G. H. Terrett was assigned to the command of Alexandria and all troops from Fairfax, Loudoun, Prince William and Fauquier counties, Va. May 21 Gen. W. L. Bonham of the Confederate Army, was placed in command of all the forces in Alexandria and as far as Manassas Junction, where he was ordered to post

his South Carolina brigade. Colonel Terrett's command in Alexandria and General Cocke's at Culpeper Court House were included in General Bonham's department. Thus matters stood on the Virginia side of the Potomac.

On May 23, 1861, General Mansfield was ordered to advance into Virginia. The command moved in three columns, each by a separate route, namely, by the Aqueduct, by the Long Bridge and by steamer down the Potomac. The Aqueduct, an adjunct of the Chesapeake & Ohio Canal, was recognized as an important military point, and was subsequently converted into a bridge by shutting off the water and flooring it. General Heintzleman, then a Colonel on General Mansfield's staff, superintended the crossing of the Long Bridge with the First Michigan Infantry, Col. O. B. Wilcox commanding the regiment. General Stoneman, with the First Cavalry; a section of the Fourth Artillery, commanded by Lieutenant Dresser, and the Twelfth New York, Col. Daniel Butterfield commanding, accompanied General Willcox, who led the way.

The writer was with the first-mentioned command, riding his own horse, which had been purchased with the first money earned by him in the State Department. He was overjoyed by again having a mount, for he had felt lost without one, never having been without a horse for one week from the time he was four years of age until landing in Washington and there left "a-foot."

Colonel Ellsworth, with the Fire Zouaves—i. e., the Eleventh New York, went down on the steamers *Baltimore* and *Mount Vernon*. The orders to Colonels Ellsworth and Wilcox were to the effect that they should act in concert near Half-Way Creek at early daybreak the next morning, and so march on Alexandria simultaneously—Ellsworth by the river and Wilcox by the Washington pike. They were to cut off telegraph communication with the interior, attack whatever forces should oppose them, take military possession of the towns and tear up the track of the Orange & Alexandria Railroad as far out from the depot as possible. That depot had been seized by order of General Scott April 19, 1861.

General Mansfield marched to the Long Bridge with us, where he halted until eleven o'clock. Senator Zack Chandler of Michigan acompanied General Wilcox as a volunteer aid. Capt. Sam Owens of the Washington City Cavalry went with them as a guide. Capt. J. A. Smeade, Second Artillery, crossed the bridge, leading the advance guard. This force consisted of one battalion of District Volunteers, the Twenty-fifth and Seventh New York, the Third New Jersey, one troop of the Fifth Cavalry and a battery of Artillery. After crossing the bridge with General Wilcox's command they wheeled to the right towards Arlington Heights, under command of General Heintzleman, the Seventh New York going into camp on the hill, where they afterwards built Fort Runyon.

Captain Ball's Surrender at the Slave Pen.

After reaching Half-Way Run near Alexandria I requested General Wilcox to allow me to take fifty men and with them advance into the city to capture Captain Ball and his company of

cavalry, who were then quartered in a slave pen on Duke street near the depot. The General ordered Captain Butterworth to report to me with one hundred men. We then marched ahead of the command, slipped around by the depot, and were just coming to the slave pen when General Wilcox marched up another street and demanded the surrender of Captain Ball and thirty-five of his men, who had been suddenly awakened, and were in the act of mounting their horses. In the meantime Willcox had destroyed the first bridge and torn up the Orange & Alexandria Railroad, thus preventing the transfer of stores, which had been hastily loaded on cars for shipment south, and saving for our Government a large amount of supplies, which proved very useful to our Army.

When Lieutenant Dresser, U. S. A., who was in command of the artillery, unlimbered and loaded a twelve-pounder and sighted it at the little bunch of cavalry, they saw at a glance there was no chance of escape. Everyone seemed paralyzed, and no one came forward or raised a hand. Some were mounted, some with a foot in the stirrup and some standing at their horses' heads. All sat or stood as motionless as statues until Colonel Willcox rode forward and demanded their surrender, when Captain Ball drew his sword and handed it to the Colonel, who said: "You can keep your sword, sir; but who are you, and what is your command?" "Captain Ball and company of Virginia cavalry, sir," was his reply.

The prisoners were ordered into the slave pen, under a guard from the First Michigan Infantry. The regiment then went forward to the depot of the Orange & Alexandria Railroad.

It was just sunrise when Captain Ball surrendered, and he claimed that he should have until 9 A. M. to evacuate the city. This point was referred to Washington, and the following dispatch forwarded:

Alexandria, Va., May 24, 1861—5.30 A. M.

"Alexandria is ours. One company (Captain Ball), mounted, thirty-five men and thirty-five horses, captured. I regret to say that Colonel Ellsworth has been shot by a person in a house.

Yours,

(Signed) O. B. WILCOX,
Colonel."

Already the following had gone forward:

May 24, 1861—5.18 A. M.

To General Mansfield,
Alexandria, Va.:

Sir—It is my painful duty to inform you that Colonel Ellsworth, commanding officer of the First Fire Zouave Regiment, New York Militia, is no more. He was assassinated at the Marshall House after our troops had taken the city. I am ignorant of the details of the order issued to the regiment. I await further instructions. My men are posted advantageously in the streets.

(Signed) NOAH L. FARNHAM,
Commanding First Zouaves.

The news of Colonel Ellsworth's death was brought to Colonel Willcox by the Captain commanding the Zouave company. Great excitement prevailed, and matters looked serious for awhile. He then began tearing up the railroad track. He had burned the first two bridges near the city, when it was discovered that the enemy were retreating up the railroad and burning bridges also. After exchanging a few shots, Colonel Wilcox halted his men and put out pickets.

Captain Ball and his dragoons were placed under guard on a steamboat, which was anchored out in the river near the Navy-Yard, where their friends were allowed to visit them. I called the next day and found that there was nothing I could do to add to their comfort, as they were supplied with everything they could wish for and every attention being paid them. The captain and each one of his command seemed as glad to see me as if I had not taken part in their capture, which they all joked about, as if they rather enjoyed it than otherwise. Captain Jackson, who had placed the flag on his hotel in person, had remarked after doing so that the first man who attempted to take it down would have to walk over his dead body; that he would be prepared to shoot anyone who should attempt it. Colonel Ellsworth landed with his regiment at the foot of King street a little before sunrise. One shot was fired by the enemy's guard, who immediately retreated.

The following account of the untimely and tragic death of Colonel Ellsworth was furnished the writer by Col. E. M. Coats, U. S. A., who was a First Lieutenant in Colonel Ellsworth regiment at that time:

"Colonel Ellsworth passed by the regiment about 5.50 A. M. on his way to the telegraph office to communicate with the War Department, and when passing called for a couple of men to place on guard over the office.

His route to the telegraph office lay past the Marshall House, and, being on the opposite side of the street, he saw the flag floating from it. With the remark, "That must come down," he entered the house, mounted to the roof, hauled down the flag, and was on his way down when a door opened, and Jackson, leveling his double-barreled gun at him, fired, the charge of slugs entering his left breast and tearing his body to pieces.

Jackson then turned on Brownell, who had hurriedly retreated to the end of the hall, and just as he pulled the trigger of the second barrel, Brownell fired, and the bullet from his rifle struck Jackson just below the eye. The shock threw up Jackson's gun, and the contents entered the casing of the bedroom door, just high enough to clear Brownell's head. Therefore his chance shot just saved his own life. Had it been an instant later he, too, must have been a dead man.

The body of Colonel Ellsworth was placed on board a gunboat —the *Pawnee*, I think—and taken to the Navy-Yard, where it was prepared for burial, and, later, placed in the East Room at the White House. After the funeral services, which were held here, the remains were taken to Mechanicsville, N. Y., the home of his parents."

The death of Ellsworth created a storm of indignation all over the North second only to that which followed the firing on Fort Sumter. In Alexandria the feeling was divided. Most of the citizens deplored the act as uncalled for and in violation of the rules of war.

Now, on the other hand, the South considered that Colonel Jackson had fallen in defence of his flag, and in the eyes of his fellow-countrymen he, too, had become a martyr, his body being taken to Fairfax Court House, Va., and buried with all the honors possible.

This tragic event and the firing upon Fort Sumter stirred up the North and satisfied that section that coercion was necessary. It also fired the Southern heart and swept away the last vestige of "passive resistance." In Alexandria, then, and under these apparently minor happenings a spark was blown into flame which raged for four long years.

Colonel Willcox soon received the unconditional surrender of Alexandria from the Mayor, Hon. Lewis McKensie, and steps were taken to insure law and order. A military police force was established, pickets thrown out and a proclamation, headed "Order No. 2," was issued, printed by two Michigan soldiers (Galloway and McDonnell) from the type found in the office of the *Alexandria Gazette*, which had been abandoned by the editor. The *Sentinel* newspaper office was also found deserted, and its last paper ready to issue, with the large heading, "*We are able to meet our foe, eye to eye, front to front, column to column, and chase them back from our soil,*" etc., etc.

In this connection the following letter is of interest:

Soldiers' Home,
Washington, April 20, 1889.

Dear Major—In reply to your letter of the 19th inst., received this evening, I have only time to state that you rendered me an efficient assistance as guide at Alexandria, Va., at the threshold of the war, under the following circumstances:

My regiment, the First Michigan, was suddenly ordered, with a detachment of artillery and Stoneman's small troop of cavalry, to Alexandria, in conjunction with Ellsworth's Fire Zouaves. I remember you brought me a letter of commendation from Secretary Seward, owing, I think, to some previous good service of yours in a critical period, and this decided me to take you along.

While Ellsworth led his men down the river in steamers early in the morning, I marched my command across the Long Bridge, and we all arrived at Alexandria about sunrise. The gallant Ellsworth was killed at once. I was unacquainted with the suburbs, and entrusted you with the guidance of Captain Butterworth's company around in rear of the town to the railway depot tracks and nearest bridges, which I had been specially ordered to break up.

You piloted Butterworth right to the spot, and by this means enabled him to begin, under fire, the work of destruction, and thereby stop the shipping of rebel troops and stores, while I was engaged in securing the capture of the town and Ball's Cavalry, left behind to guard it by the rebels in their precipitate flight.

Your part in this little affair, which at the time was considered as one of the first bold strokes in the war, had its due weight, and certainly, considering all things, it was a loyal, zealous and patriotic, as well as valuable service.

Your obedient servant,

O. B. WILLCOX,
Brig.-Gen., U. S. A., Retired.

BVT. MAJ. GEO. A. ARMES,
Washington, D. C.

The three days' leave of absence granted me by Mr. Seward having expired, I returned to the Department. The war fever daily increased, and troops by the thousand began camping in and around Washington. I now took special pains to get the name of every Colonel and the location of his regiment, and after 4 P. M. would make occasional visits to the camps with Mr. Seward, who took great interest in walking from one camp to another after dinner or office hours. My little excursion to Alexandria only augmented my desire to take further part in the defence of my country, therefore I began to visit the camps on the Virginia side of the river, and obtained passes, of which the following are samples.

Drake DeKay was known throughout the Army by his heroic signature.

On the back of all passes the following oath was printed, which every person had to sign who obtained one:

It is understood that the within-named subscriber accepts this pass on his word of honor that he is and ever will be loyal to the United States, and if hereafter found in arms against the Union, or in any way aiding its enemies, the penalty will be death.

All approaches to the Virginia side were so closely guarded that it was impossible for anyone to cross the river without a pass.

Head Quarters,
Military Department of
Washington, June 11th 1861.

Pass Mr Arms Have friends
Over the Bridge & within the lines

By order of General Mansfield, Commanding:

Drake De Kay
Aide-de-Camp

TURN OVER

Head Quarters,
Military Department of
Washington, 5 August 5 1861.

Pass Mr Arms & family 1 month
over the Bridges & within the lines

By order of General Mansfield, Commanding:

Drake De Kay
Aide-de-Camp

TURN OVER

Gen. Irwin McDowell was placed in command of the troops in Eastern Virginia, with headquarters in Gen. R. E. Lee's mansion on Arlington Heights, which he and his family had only a few days before vacated, leaving a portion of their furniture with trusted old family servants in the house, little dreaming that never again would they have possession of it. In fact, the entire property was confiscated. Afterwards it was decided by the Gov-

ernment that the heirs of General Lee should be paid for the property, but it is retained as a National Cemetery. Since the new bridge was completed on the site of the old Aqueduct large numbers of visitors drive over there and to Fort Myer (formerly Fort Whipple), and the locality is no doubt familiar to thousands now scattered to different parts of the world, who well remember old Fort Whipple, Arlington Heights, Minor's Hill, Upton's Hill and Bailey's Cross Roads, where so many of the Union troops were encamped before the final move was made for active work.

On the afternoon of May 30, 1861, while visiting the camps on the Virginia side, I called on Lieut. Charles H. Tompkins, Second Cavalry, afterwards Assistant Quartermaster-General, U. S. A. (now retired), who was in camp near Ball's Cross Roads. After sugesting that they make a little scout, and assuring Lieutenant Tompkins that I would lead the way, knowing, as I did, nearly every foot of road and by-path in the county, we fixed the next afternoon to start. I returned to the city that night, full of excitement at the prospect of the lively time awaiting us on the next day; told Mr. Seward what I had done, and asked his permission to be absent for two days. This he granted, with a caution not to go far beyond the Union lines.

I reported to Lieutenant Tompkins a little before sundown, arrayed in my scouting suit, with two pistols, ready to go to Richmond if it was so desired. So off we started with this little force, confident that we could whip the whole Southern Army if necessary. The regulars at that time, as well as now, had a very high opinion of themselves, and never lost an opportunity in trying to impress it upon the volunteers.

We made our way in the direction of Fairfax Court House, and went along nicely, until charging up the main street, when we found most of the houses were filled with the enemy, who fired upon us from the windows. The regular order in which we had proceeded up to this time was now dispensed with, and for a time every Regular looked out for "number one," and it was some time before all got together again so as to march back to camp in regular army style. When he began to compare results Lieutenant Gorman found he had been shot in the left wrist; Lieutenant

Tompkins had one horse killed under him and another shot in the neck, which he afterwards presented to a beautiful country girl who lived near Ball's Cross Roads.

Tompkins' Charge Through Fairfax Court House.

The writer received a shot in the right breast, but managed to keep on his horse and empty his pistols, trying to hit someone, but was never able to determine whether he was successful or not. Lieutenant Tompkins was also slightly wounded in his foot, but did not allude to it in his report. Capt. J. W. Bean, now retired, took a conspicuous part in the charge through the village.

As this battle was considered such a great achievement at the time, a report of it seems worthy of reproduction, and may prove of interest, showing, as it does, the utter carelessness and recklessness of many at the beginning of the rebellion. It follows:

Camp Union, Virginia, June 1, 1861.

Sir—I have the honor to report, pursuant to verbal instructions received from the Colonel commanding, that I left camp on the eve of the 31st of May, in command of a detachment of Company B, Second Cavalry, consisting of fifty men, with Second Lieut. D. S. Gordon, Second Dragoons, temporarily attached, for the purpose of reconnoitering the country in the vicinity of Fairfax Court House. Upon approaching the town, the picket guard was surprised and captured. Several documents were found upon their persons. On entering the town of Fairfax, my command was fired upon by the rebel troops from the windows and house tops. We charged on a company of mounted rifles, and succeeded in driving them from the town. Immediately two or three additional companies came up to their relief, who at once commenced firing upon us, which fire I returned. Perceiving that I was largely outnumbered, I deemed it advisable to retreat, which I did in good order, taking five prisoners, fully armed and equipped, and two horses. Nine horses were lost during the engagement, and four wounded. The force actually engaged at the commencement of the engagement were two companies of cavalry and one rifle company, but reinforcements coming in from the camp adjacent to the Court House, which, I hear upon reliable authority, increased their force to upwards of 1000 men. Twenty-five of the enemy were killed and wounded. Captains Carey and Fearing, and Adjutant Frank, Fifth New York S. M., accompanied the command as volunteers, and did very effective service. I regret to say that Captain Carey was wounded in the foot. Lieutenant Gordon of the Second Dragoons, temporarily attached to Company B, Second Cavalry, accompanied me and rendered me valuable service. The prisoners, horses, arms and equipments taken have this day been turned over to the proper authorities.

I am, sir, very respectfully,

Your obedient servant,

(Signed) CHARLES H. TOMPKINS,

First Lieut., Second Calvary, Commanding Co. B.

COL. DAVID HUNTER,

Commanding Brigade.

The writer having received his "baptism of fire," was plastered up, and on the third day reported to Mr. Seward at the Department, who congratulated him upon his return and excused him for several days until he should have fully recovered.

Soon after my return to the Department again Secretary Seward sent for me and read the following letter:

Headquarters, N. E. Virginia,
Arlington, June 11, 1861.

Hon. William H. Seward,
Secretary of State:

Sir—Mr. Geo. A. Armes, a messenger in the State Department and a resident of these parts, can obtain valuable information for this part of the Army if he can have a short leave of absence. Can the Secretary give him one for a few days without prejudice to his situation, and order him to report here at once?

Very respectfully,
(Signed) Irwin McDowell,
Brig-Gen. Commanding.

Mr. Seward immediately granted me five days' leave of absence, and upon reporting to General McDowell at Arlington, he ordered me to report to General Heintzleman at Alexandria, who in turn ordered me to report to Col. O. B. Wilcox, with instructions for him to send about 300 men with me on a scouting expedition outside the lines. I cannot recall the name of the commanding officer at present, but we marched out the little river turnpike, passed Clouds Mills to Annandale, where we halted and made our plans to send a detachment to the right and left. One command went up as far as Accotink and one within three miles of Fairfax Court House; and the latter had a little skirmish with the "Johnnies," who were dressed in citizens' clothes. These scattered into the fields, when the Major in command immediately sent orders to take possession of all the horses that could be found, after which the command, with myself, returned the next afternoon, when I verbally reported to General Heintzleman, while the commanding officer of his detachment reported to Col. O. B. Wilcox of the First Michigan the result of his scout, and took with him all the horses that had been captured. Among those horses were two that were reported to belong to General Lee, which had been left with Mrs. Fitzhugh, a relative of his and the owner of Ravensworth.

Soon after making my report I started for Washington, and before reaching Four Mile Run was overtaken by a squad of cavalry (Arrest No. 3), while on my own horse, which I had purchased a few weeks before in the city of Washington. They ar-

rested, disarmed, carried me back to Alexandria and imprisoned me in the Marshal House with some of the men I had helped to capture, no reason being given.

Upon my reporting to the General, he had seemed to place as much confidence in me as if I were a man fifty years of age, asking my advice and plans for moving his Army to Richmond, also the condition of the roads, the size of the streams to cross, and if, in my opinion, there would be much resistance offered by the rebels when he made a display of his grand army, straightening

GENERAL WINFIELD SCOTT.

up with a most exalted opinion of himself and acting as if all he had to do was to march right through the whole country to Richmond with his army and drive everything before him. I reminded him that he would have no easy task if he expected to march to Richmond without strong opposition, as the kind of material the Confederate Army was composed of could not be bluffed. It did

not take him long to see that he was ignorant of the section of country he had to go through and the class of men he had to oppose him. He must have been severely reprimanded by General Scott in relation to Mrs. Fitzhugh's horses, and not knowing how to vent his spite on anyone else, arbitrarily pounced upon me instead of the commanding officer of the scouting expedition, who naturally was responsible for all movements, I only being a scout and guide.

Orders were strictly given to prevent me from communicating with anyone, but through the kindness of a sentry, to whom I explained my situation, he sent a little note that I had written in lead pencil to Mr. Seward personally, who immediately sent Mr. Webster with the following note to General McDowell:

Department of State,
Washington, D. C., June 20, 1861.

My Dear General—This note will be handed you by Mr. E. D. Webster, one of the clerks in the State Department, who comes over at my request to enquire into the case of Geo. A. Armes (under arrest at Alexandria), and to see whether anything can be done with propriety in his behalf. Mr. Webster will explain to you my impressions in reference to the matter.

Very truly yours,

W. H. Seward.

To General McDowell,
Arlington Heights, Va.

The following order was then issued:

Colonel Heintzleman,
Commanding Brigade,
Alexandria, Va.:

Sir—Through the intercession of Mr. Seward, Secretary of State, I am induced to order that Geo. A. Armes, now a prisoner under your guards, be returned to his place in the State Department on his own recognizance.

(Signed) I. McDowell,
Brig. Gen. Commanding.

June 21, 1861—7 A. M.

Headquarters Department Northeast Virginia,
Camp at Arlington, June 14, 1861.

Mrs. Fitzhugh,
Ravensworth, Fairfax Co., Va.:

Madam—I have the honor to transmit herewith a letter to your address from the General-in-Chief, which, together with yours to him of the 31st inst., he has sent me to read. Before receiving these letters I had heard of the outrage without knowing whose property had been taken, and had instituted measures to redress the injury.

Your letter gave me to suppose that you had been one of the sufferers, and I immediately made an investigation, confirming this supposition. I have given orders to have your horses returned, as well as those of your neighbors, and will see, so far as I can, that such things shall not again occur. I take the liberty to enclose you a copy of the order which I have just issued, and beg to assure you that I will spare no pains to protect everyone in the vicinity of the troops under my command.

I have the honor to be, madam, with great respect,
Your most obedient servant,
(Signed) IRWIN MCDOWELL,
Brig.-General.

Not having copies of this correspondence of Mr. Seward and General McDowell in my possession until lately, I addressed a letter to General Wilcox, who immediately returned a reply, which, as the reader will see, fully exonerates me from being responsible for any horses taken by the troops, I being only a scout at the time, and should not have been arrested for doing what the commanding officer ordered. The following is the correspondence:

Washington, D. C., November 10, 1898.

Gen. O. B. Wilcox,
U. S. Army, Retired:

Dear Sir—having lately received a copy of the correspondence between Hon. W. M. Seward, Secretary of State, and General McDowell, in relation to the capture of a number of horses in Fairfax county, Virginia, during the month of June, 1861, I desire a statement from you in relation to the facts, a portion of your regiment being sent with me on a scout into the Confederate lines, and during that scout, when several prisoners were taken and

quite a number of horses, two of which were said to have belonged to Gen. R. E. Lee, and left at Ravensworth in care of Mrs. Fitzhugh. All I desire is a statement showing that these horses were turned over to you, and shortly after returned to the owners, as per order of General McDowell; and the further statement that I could not have been responsible, occupying, as I did, the position of a guide and scout, as long as there were commissioned officers in command of the troops, which I was guiding into the enemy's country.

Yours, very truly,
(Signed) G. A. ARMES,
1405 F street.

2022 R street N. W., Washington, November 12, 1898.

Major Geo. A. Armes:

Dear Sir—In reply to your letter of the 10th inst., so far as my recollection and understanding of the event in question go, the scouting party which brought in the horses was guided by yourself and as scout, but commanded by an officer of the First Michigan Infantry, Vols., who, and not yourself, must have been responsible; and, further, that the horses were turned over to the Quartermaster's Department on their arrival at Alexandria, and there held until ordered to be returned.

Respectfully yours,
(Signed) O. B. WILCOX,
Late Col. First Mich. Vols., Bvt. Maj.-Gen.

NOTE.—The District of Columbia Battalion referred to on page 37 was commanded by Captain Lemuel Towers, afterward Colonel of one of the District regiments. He took a very active part in the defense of the Capital.

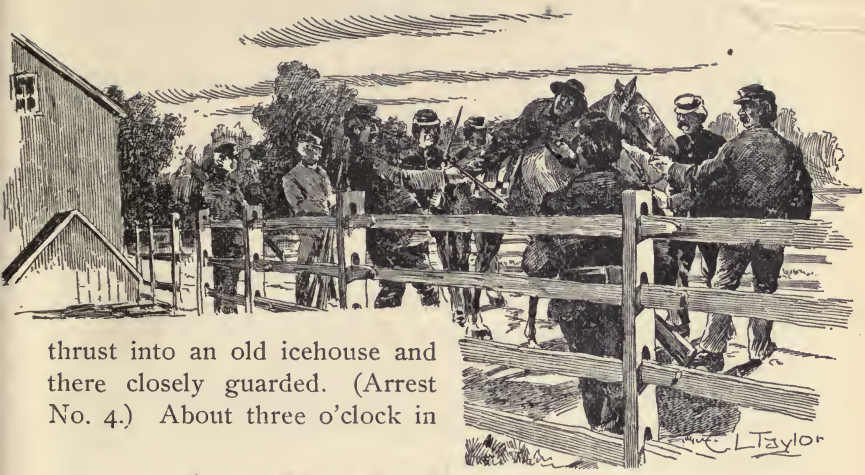
CHAPTER II.

I continued visiting the various camps, and perceived that numerous persons were making money selling edibles and necessaries to the soldiers, and thought that while the new troops were preparing themselves for active service I would try to make a few extra dollars, so long as it did not interfere with my official duties. Procuring a wagon and loading it with a variety of articles, upon an investment of $42 I made a profit of $160. This encouraged me to further ventures in the same line, and during the month of June I cleared over $1200. Investing this in a stock of goods, I established a portable store beyond the bridge near Bailey's Cross Roads, and secured a young man to take charge of my interests there.

This young man resided in Washington, and having known him for some time, I had entire confidence in him; but just before the battle of Bull Run, having occasion to ride out and see how my business was progressing, I found to my astonishment that the store, with all the stock, had been sold, and this *valued* clerk had disappeared with the proceeds.

So my little fortune having been lost, and the troops preparing to march to Richmond, I was compelled to fall back on my monthly salary of fifty dollars, and did not undertake any further speculation until after the battle of Bull Run.

Having arranged to go with General Heintzleman on his march to Richmond, I obtained ten days' leave from Mr. Seward and reported to the General two days before he broke camp. Then, as he wanted to know the best roads to take, I thought I would venture out as far as the picket line at different points in order to intelligently report concerning the shortest and best roads to Centerville. Just the night before they were to march I was halted and placed under arrest by about twenty Dutchmen of General Blenker's command, and in spite of all attempts at explanation and endeavors to find some one who could read my papers, I was



Arrest No. 4, by Blenker's Soldiers.

thrust into an old icehouse and there closely guarded. (Arrest No. 4.) About three o'clock in the morning an order came for my release, and an officer was ordered to accompany me to General Blenker's headquarters. Here wine and beer flowed freely. After the General and his staff were satisfied that they had not captured Jeff Davis or General Lee I was invited to join them, and we parted good friends. However, as I was the first prisoner the division had taken, the gallant soldiers who had, as they thought, won a great victory in surrounding a lone boy, on his own horse, on a public road, at least half a mile within their own lines, just before sundown, felt that they should all be mentioned in general orders and commissioned as officers as a reward for their alertness on guard.

When released I reported my little experience to Mr. Seward, and, instead of sympathizing with me, as I expected he would, he simply smiled and remarked to those present, among them Col. Amos Webster, that the soldiers seemed to be very watchful and should do well if they ever met the enemy.

Moving out with the command from Alexandria, up the old Braddock road most of the way, until we got near Centerville, where we met a party who informed us that the Confederates had left that town, having placed a few logs in the intrenchments to imitate cannon, and left only a few men in the works; that the

main body had fallen back to Bull Run, and were there thoroughly intrenching themselves.

I told General McDowell that by a prompt movement to the left of Centerville and over to Cub Run there would be a good chance to cut off and capture a large number of the enemy, but he pompously replied that he had force enough to accomplish what he wished and was fully posted as to the movements of the enemy.

I found myself so abruptly "sat down upon" by the *great General,* who evidently felt at that time that he could whip the world, that the wind was completely taken out of my sails, and I felt as if my patriotism was not appreciated as it should be. Possibly he perceived that I was beginning to feel myself a most important personage to the Army, and that the General was dependent upon me for advice in regard to the movements of the Army. As he did not seem to appreciate the advice and information given him, I returned to General Heintzleman, with whom I remained until after the "great battle," where the General was wounded in the arm and myself in the right knee, just about the time the retreat began, near Blackman's Ford.

It was a memorable sight to witness, carriages of all descriptions, from six to ten abreast, loaded with sightseers, starting on the top of the hill at Centerville and crashing down pellmell to the foot, where the road was only wide enough for two vehicles to pass at one time. The ford was soon so blocked with horses, mules and vehicles of every kind, smashed and pitted upon each other, that it was impossible to use the turnpike, so that thousands had to abandon their carriages and make their way through the fields, some afoot, some on mules or horseback, paying as high as fifty dollars for the privilege of riding a horse or mule, without saddle or blanket. Many of the teamsters left their wagons behind and hired out the horses or mules to sightseers, who had only a few hours before been enjoying their luncheons and had expected to have a good time at a safe distance from the scene of conflict. They had gone out to witness General McDowell in the act of driving the Confederates before him to Richmond. So great was the panic and bewilderment of the men and animals that many were killed and injured in the crash at the ford.

Thousands of men threw their guns, equipment, ammunition, blankets and clothing into the fields, which afterwards proved a rich harvest for the farmers, who had no crop to gather that season other than that abandoned by our Army and by the many citizens who had accompanied our Army as far as Centerville and Cub Run, a goodly number of them having gone even to Bull Run, the scene of that notable conflict.

Stampede from Bull Run.

As I had been shot in the knee, and the wound had become very painful, I was placed in a wagon, taken to Alexandria and placed in a hospital. Thence word was sent to Mr. Seward of my condition, and was therefore necessarily excused for some weeks. The day after reaching the hospital it was decided that amputation was necessary to save my life. I was placed on a table, and some medical students began preparations to perform the operation, whereupon I raised such lively objections that the old chaplain, Manuel J. Gonzales, later of the Ninth U. S. Cavalry, interfered, and said that I should not be forced; thereupon they de-

sisted, and I was allowed to retain my limb. With good medical attention and careful nursing, in a few weeks recovery almost entirely was made, and now, thirty-eight years later, it is only after a severe storm that any pain is felt from the wound.

Rescued from Amputating Table.

Soon after I was able to mount my horse, I learned that the picket line had been extended beyond my home at Annandale, and not having heard from my family for some time, I rode out to see them. The effects of war were visible on every side. Just before the battle of Bull Run, Gen. J. E. B. Stewart paid my mother a visit, and informed her that it would be necessary for him to take all the horses, mules and cattle back into their lines, to prevent the Yankees from getting them. He invited my younger brother to become a member of his staff, saying he could keep and ride his three-year-old Morgan colt, a beautiful animal, and that no one should take it from him. So all the stock was driven off, and my brother became a member of his staff.

The trusted overseer, who had been with our family for many years, told my mother that he did not wish "to go to the war," and that he had heard that Missouri was a good State in which to settle as a farmer. She therefore paid him $600 in gold, and he left Fairfax at once with his wife and baby boy. Soon after he had left a company of Stuart's Cavalry encamped in the yard. The Captain said it would be necessary to use the carpets for his men and horses, and to move the piano and furniture back within their lines, as the Yankees might charge in at any time and rob the house. So the beautiful carpets were made into horse blankets, and the piano and furniture in the end confiscated. Shortly after the company retired, leaving the house between the two lines, and as the firing was kept up for some days, it was dangerous for anyone to go out of the house night or day.

My father, being a Union man, found New York a more comfortable and safer place. Being compelled finally to abandon her home, my mother gathered all her portable valuables, including silverware, and putting them into the only vehicle left on the place, the old colored coachman, Ben, was ordered to take them into the Union lines to a neighbor's for safe-keeping, but before he reached the Union picket line he was captured by a scouting party of Confederates, and to this day nothing has ever been heard of driver, horses, carriage or its contents.

Becoming anxious about my mother, who had insisted upon remaining at home, and between two fires, I secured permission from Mr. Seward to be absent three days. He gave me a note to General Heintzleman, commanding at Alexandria, who allowed me 100 men as an escort. We immediately proceeded to my home, and found my mother still there. I induced her to return with me to Washington, where I rented a small house on E street, between Ninth and Tenth, to which my father soon came. He could not, in the excited condition of the country, succeed in his lecturing tours, and the burden of supporting the family fell upon my shoulders—all trying to exist upon my $50 a month.

So, hiring a wagon, in the hope of improving our condition, I bought sixty watermelons for $15, expecting to make at least $20 profit. Loading them into the wagon, I drove to the camp of the

Twelfth New York Volunteers (Thirteenth and K streets), now Franklin Square, and, having lost all confidence in clerks, felt sure of success by attending to my own affairs. As soon as I halted the wagon in camp the boys crowded around to learn the price of

The Watermelon Enterprise.

the melons. I sold one for seventy-five cents, and a $10 bill was handed me to change. Just at that moment my attention was called to a soldier slipping away with a melon. I ran after him, but he disappeared among the tents, and I failed to find him. I at once spoke to one of the officers, who said that he would go with me to the wagon, and that he would "fix" any man who dared to take a melon without paying for it. On our return to the wagon not a single melon was found. He then kindly told me to go with him and show him anyone who had taken a melon. We found 500 men eating melons, but they declared with great unanimity and superb equanimity that they had either purchased them the night before, or had just bought them from some one else. So I drove home very much disappointed, but determined to try again.

The next day I hired a man to hand them over as I received the pay, and in that way cleared $40 on three loads. Within ten days I cleared over $400, which I invested in two teams and wagons, and hired them out for $25 a day each, to haul goods for the sutlers, who made it pay by charging accordingly.

At the time of the advance on Richmond by General McClellan I again obtained a few days' leave of absence, and reported to General Heintzleman at Yorktown. In the charge at the battle of Williamsburg, where so many were stuck in the mud, I was shot in the groin. Then I was taken to Fortress Monroe, and the next day sent to Washington by way of Baltimore, where, after a few weeks of careful nursing, I resumed my duties at the State Department.

I still continued my speculations after office hours, and soon had realized over $5000 in cash.

The Union lines were now beyond Fairfax Court House, and I was advised to rent the "Union Hotel," formerly kept by James W. Jackson, and to run a stage to and from Alexandria, which I proceeded to do at once, investing $2000 in the enterprise. I employed a man to manage the hotel and another to run the stage, as I was anxious to retain my office in case of emergency.

These men sent me very encouraging reports, saying the stage was always well filled and the hotel always crowded, but that the soldiers, who constituted the bulk of travel, did not have any money until pay-day, when they would settle. As the demands upon me for horse feed and provisions were so great, and little coming in, I determined to go and see for myself just how matters were. I found that most of the travelers were soldiers who had either been discharged or who were going home, and had been imposing on the men in charge, they believing that a soldier could be fully trusted, having only taken the word of some and the note of others, to be liquidated on the next pay-day.

The night after my arrival at Fairfax four of the horses and all of the stage harnesses were stolen, so I made up my mind to sell at auction what was left, realizing only $100 upon my investment.

My patriotic and *business* friends, who had such confidence in the honor and promises of the soldier, turned over to me notes

and agreements they had taken from the soldiers to the amount of $2600, settlements to be made on the first pay-day, which, so far as my interests are concerned, has not yet arrived. Capt. Samuel B. M. Young of one of the Pennsylvania regiments promised to return and see that I was compensated for transportation and hotel bills, but he did not keep his word.

One of my next experiences on a large scale was to charter a vessel and arrange to load it with supplies for the front. And as no goods could be shipped without special permission of the Secretary of the Treasury, I obtained a letter to him from Mr. Seward, and after an interview with Secretary Chase he gave me the following letter:

Treasury Department, April 29, 1862.

Sir—you are hereby authorized to grant a clearance to George A. Armes for his vessel to Cheeseman Landing, with the following sutlers' supplies needed for the Army near that place, viz.: Apples, dried apples, oranges, figs, lemons, butter, cheese, milk, syrup, molasses, raisins, candles, crackers, wallets, brooms, comforters, boots, pocket looking-glasses, pins, gloves, leather, tin washbasins, shirt buttons, horn and brass buttons, newspapers, books, tobacco, cigars, pipes, matches, blacking, blacking brushes, clothes brushes, tooth brushes, hair brushes, coarse and fine combs, emery, crocus, pocket handkerchiefs, stationery, armor oil, sweet oil, rotten stone, razor strops, razors, soap, shaving soap, suspenders, scissors, shoestrings, needles, thread, knives, pencils and Bristol brick.

You will insert the following condition in the clearance: "The vessel and all her cargo to be forfeited to the United States if any other goods are found on board of her than those specified above, on examination by the custom-house officers, or by the military or naval authorities after clearing for Cheeseman Landing." You will also require a suitable bond that none of the articles so conveyed shall be used to give aid or comfort to the insurgents.

I am, very respectfully,

S. P. Chase,
Secretary of the Treasury.

Judson Mitchell, Esq.,
Collector, Georgetown, D. C.

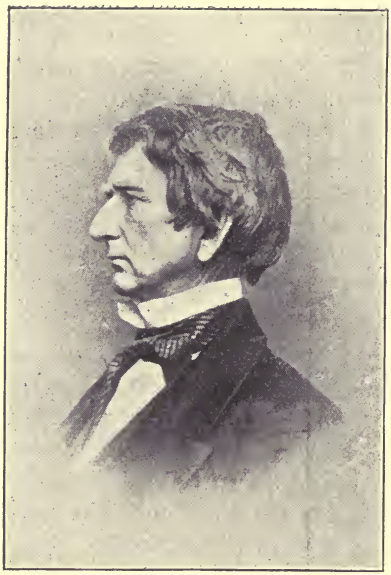
Mentioning only part of what I was allowed to take in the vessel, and that it had to be inspected by the Collector of George-

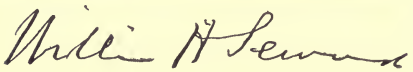
town, D. C., resulted in further disappointments for me. I employed six good men to carry out my directions, and I made a net profit of $4700 on that one trip to the Army.

As my hotel and stage business had ceased to exist, I rented the southeast corner of Tenth and H streets N. W. in the city of Washington, investing $3000 in horses and wagons, and entered into contracts with sutlers to haul their goods to the camps in and around the city. I put six teams to work at $10 each per day, which returned me a net profit of about $50 per day. But my prosperity was not destined to be of long duration. One morning, not long after, about 2 o'clock, I was aroused from bed by the alarm of fire, and springing up, found, to my dismay, that all my property was being rapidly destroyed by the flames, and that all I had owned was lost. My mother was heartbroken over this new misfortune, for she was very proud of the business success of her young son, and to see him lose everything in this pitiless manner, following so closely the banishment from her own home and the giving up of all her possessions, seemed more than she could endure.

I did not undertake any further speculation, but attended strictly to my duties at the Department as if nothing had happened, little thinking that added, and even more, bitter misfortunes were in store for me, for soon the news came that our elegant residence, together with the thirteen outbuildings, had been burned and entirely destroyed by the Union troops. Going out there, I found that the reports were indeed only too true. The property had been ordered to be burnt by Colonel Hart of one of the New York regiments, to prevent the Confederates from using it. This shock was more than my poor mother could bear; she became prostrated under this additional affliction, and soon after died of the sorrows of her rapidly accumulating misfortunes.

After the loss of my mother, I secured leave of absence from the Department to visit relatives residing in Iowa, then quite a





Western State. While there (although only a boy) I was asked to drill the men who were being enlisted for the war, and found that my little experience at a military school in Virginia was of great service, and I became a very popular drill-master. I helped organize and drill a company, which we were unable to get in the State service, the State of Iowa having already filled its quota, and after receiving the following from Mr. Seward, I called on Captain Marsh to see if he would be willing to join the regiment which Colonel Close was organizing in Alexandria, Va. He gave me a letter, which I presented to Colonel Close, who failed to get transportation from the Government for this company from Cedar Rapids, but it all shows the interest I took as a boy in the cause of the Union.

The military fever now began to grow on me, and I thought I would like to enter the army as a private soldier; so wrote Mr. Seward asking his advice, and received the following reply:

Washington, Aug. 6th 1862.

My dear Sir,

I have received your letter of the 30th of July, asking my advice in regard to entering the military service, and I am much pleased with the patriotic sentiments which it expresses.

This is a period in which there can be no divided duty. The duty of aiding to save our imperiled Union, is the one which has the first and paramount claim upon all

good citizens. I would counsel you by all means to enter the Army in any capacity in which you find that you can be useful and acceptable.

Very truly your friend

Wm H Seward

George A. Ames, Esq.,
Cedar Rapids,
Iowa.

Immediately upon receipt of this letter, I returned to Washington and called upon Mr. Seward, and requested him to let my brother, who was at a school in New York, have my place in the Department. He agreeing to this, I resigned in his favor, and enlisted as a private soldier in A. C. Widdecomb's Company B, Sixteenth Virginia Volunteers.

Shortly after I was on duty shooting at a target, which I failed to hit. This seemed to anger the Captain, and the first sergeant was ordered to relieve me of my equipment, and I was detailed as an orderly at company headquarters, being too delicate and not strong enough to handle my gun. The Captain being generally busy, I did not see very much of him, and therefore had a great

part of the time to myself, which I employed reading, Army books being the chief object of interest with me. A few weeks passed, when one day Lieutenant Poynton threw a pair of dirty boots at me, under the fly of the tent, where I was standing, ordering me to clean and black them. I informed him that I did not enlist for that kind of service. He then threatened to tie me up if I did not obey at once, when I started on the run for the Colonel's tent, a sergeant after me. The Colonel listened to my complaint, and just then the Lieutenant coming up, the Colonel asked him how he dared to order a soldier of his regiment to perform such menial duty, at the same time notifying him that if he ever heard of his being guilty of such an act again he would take official notice of it.

The next morning I received an order to report to the Adjutant's office, and was made a mounted orderly, my principal duty being to carry reports to Brigade and Division Headquarters.

I shall never forget my first meeting with General Abercrombie, who was then in command at Arlington Heights. The General was sitting at his desk writing, when I walked up to him, with my cap on, without my belt or anything to indicate that I was on duty, and said, "Good morning, General," in a familiar way. He at once flew into a rage, and exclaimed, "Who are you? Take off your cap! Stand at attention!"

I handed him a dispatch; he acknowledged its receipt on the envelope, and then informed me that whenever I entered an officer's quarters again, unless I had my side-arms or belt on, to show that I was on duty, to uncover and stand at attention until recognized. His words and manner made an impression upon me that I shall never forget, and it proved of value, as I had not then discovered the relation between enlisted men and officers.

Having, when not on duty, spent most of my time in studying military tactics, reading Army regulations, etc., in a few weeks I requested that I be returned to my company. There I was made a lance-corporal, then sergeant, and daily drilled the company, when not on picket duty, around Fall's Church and Munson's Hill, where quite a number of skirmishes took place. I had served about four months as an enlisted man, when our Colonel, with some ladies, came out to where we were drilling. After watching the maneuvers awhile, he ordered me to report to him. Leaving my men at "Place, rest," I appeared before the Colonel. Drawing

from his pocket a large envelope, he said, as he handed it to me: "Sergeant, the officer who ordered you to clean his boots has been found guilty of drunkenness on picket duty, and dismissed the service; it being the first vacancy in the regiment, I have decided to fill it by handing you this commission as Second Lieutenant. You may have four days' leave in which to visit Washington, in order to procure your uniform."

I was so surprised that I hardly knew how to reply, and at last declined the honor, on the ground that I was not old enough to accept such a commission, but the Colonel advised its acceptance, saying that he was the best judge of that.

I thanked him, and returned to my company, and was heartily greeted by the boys, who seemed even more delighted than myself. The fact that I was now an Army officer, and would have command of men old enough to be my father or grandfather was certainly enough to inflate the vanity of any youth.

Going to Washington, I had a full-dress uniform made by Wall & Stevens, on Pennsylvania avenue, and dressed up in it and strutted around the hotels and up to the State Department, exhibiting myself to my friends, who had not heard from me for months. I attended President Lincoln's reception. He halted me, shook hands, and asked when I had entered the Army, my rank, etc.

Returning to my regiment, I served a few weeks on picket duty, and was then ordered on patrol duty at Alexandria. There I was obliged to stop every soldier I met, and require him to show his pass if he had one, and if he had none, place him under arrest, and take him to the old slave pen, which, before the war, was used as an enclosure for negroes, where they were bought and sold like animals. After we had gathered in a large number, an examination would be held, when those found to be deserters would be returned to their regiments, to be court-martialed, and likely shot.

Sixteenth Virginia Regiment, October 22, 1862.
Headquarters Camp Close,

Lieut. Geo. A. Armes, Company F, has authority to arrest and bring to camp any man belonging to this regiment.

By order of
JAMES T. CLOSE,
Col. Commanding.

In addition to my duties as Assistant Provost Marshal, I was assigned to duty as a recruiting officer, and furnished the following pass:

Alexandria, Va., September 23, 1862.
Headquarters Mil. Gov.

Guards and Patrols:

Pass Lieut. Geo. A. Armes of Company B, Sixteenth Virginia Vols., freely in and out of Alexandria for recruiting purposes.

(Signed) JNO. P. CLOUGH,
Brig.-Gen., Mil. Gov., Alexandria, Va.

While on recruiting service I asked my Lieutenant-Colonel for a letter of recommendation, as I desired to be transferred to the cavalry, and the following is a copy of the letter he gave me in support of my application, the original being still in my possession:

Washington Nov 11th 1862

Col Swayne.
Scotts 900

Col.

Lieut Armes has for some time been attached to the 16th Va Vols. He has always proved himself active and efficient as an officer. He is desirous of entering the Cavalry Service in which tactics he comes well recommended as a good Officer. I hope that you may have it in your power to forward his views.

I have the honor to be
Your Obt Servt
H. Cay. Cooper.
Lieut Col 16th Va Vols.

Soon after, my regiment being required to perform outpost duty, I returned to it, and for several days thereafter had some lively experiences. It was a difficult matter for an officer to get away, even for a few hours, but I procured a pass, which I still have in my possession. The following is a copy:

Headquarters Sixteenth Virginia Vols.,
December 29, 1862.

Guards and Patrols:

Pass Lieut. George A. Armes to Washington and return at 2 o'clock, December 30, 1862.

CAPT. F. M. MALONE,
Commanding Co. A.
S. W. SNYDER, Lieut.-Col.

As the original orders will be of interest to look over as the years roll on, we reproduce a few of them to remind our soldier readers of the days of old on the tented field. The following is a copy, in my possession, of a privileged pass just before going on outpost duty with my regiment:

Headquarters Sumner's Division,
Camp California, December 1, 1862.

Lieut. George A. Armes, the bearer of this, is acting under the authority of the General Commanding the "Division." He is not to be molested by anyone or interfered with.

By order of
GENERAL HEINTZLEMAN.
J. W. TAYLOR, Capt., U. S. A., A. Adg.

CHAPTER III.

To those on duty there during the winter of 1863 it is not necessary to describe the way soldiers lived in and around the city of Washington, but as thirty-eight years have rolled by, the new generation will no doubt read with interest a brief description of the soldier boys, who, ragged and dirty, grew fat and hearty and appeared to enjoy life.

Every day there were detailed from each company from four to fifteen men, according to the numerical strength fitted for duty. These were provided with from one to three days' rations, and marched to Brigade or Division headquarters, inspected, then marched to the front line, and placed from six to ten yards apart, where they dug holes in the ground in which to remain for protection. Some fifty or 100 yards in front of this line would be the vidette line of pickets, hid behind anything that would afford shelter from the enemies' bullets, and the "Johnnies" were always looking for a chance to slip between the pickets and surprise those in camp, who were resting and waiting their turn to go to the front.

There was a reserve detachment of from fifty to 100 men between the camp and picket line, ready to deploy to the right or left, if necessary, in case the two lines in front were driven back; so those in camp were not liable to be surprised. While on this duty neither officers nor men were allowed to close their eyes day or night, the penalty being death if caught asleep.

Hard tack, a little coffee and fat bacon constituted the rations. As the men on this duty were compelled to stand, walk or sit, often in the mud or snow, for twenty-four hours, and as each one had to perform this duty every two or three days, the reader will perceive that there was not much fun in doing outpost duty.

Soon after the Sixteenth Virginia was mustered out, and July 1, 1863, I was appointed Second Lieutenant in the Invalid Corps. This Corps was composed of men who had been wounded or par-

tially disabled and incapacitated for active service in the field. They were put on duty in cities and in the interior, taking the places of able-bodied soldiers, who were sent to the front for active service.

The following is a copy of the first order I received after being transferred to the Invalid Corps, enclosing my commission as Second Lieutenant:

Provost Marshal General's Office,
Washington, D. C., July 2, 1863.

Second Lieut. Geo. A. Armes,
Invalid Corps:

Sir—Enclosed you will see your appointment in the Invalid Corps. You will immediately acknowledge the receipt of this communication to me. If you accept the appointment, send your acceptance, with the oath, etc., to the Adjutant-General, U. S. A., Washington, D. C., as your appointment requires. You will put yourself in uniform as quickly as possible, and hold yourself in readiness to obey special orders from the War Department, which will be sent you in a few days.

Upon receiving your orders, you will acknowledge their receipt, and will report to me, in writing, your arrival at your station. I am, very respectfully,

Your obedient servant,
(Signed) Rich. H. Rush,
Col. and Asst. to Prov. Marshal Gen.

I at once reported to Captain Anderson [now Brigadier-General, U. S. A., who so distinguished himself in the Philippine war] for duty at the new camp on Meridian Hill, between Fourteenth and Fifteenth streets, about one mile north of the White House. The Captain's command then consisted of six privates and one Lieutenant, besides myself. Our camp was composed of three tents, but the next day the men began to report, and we soon made a fine appearance, having a regular Army officer to command us.

Orders were freely issued, which we had to obey to the letter. Within ten days after I reported we were strictly complying with them.

A few of the old soldiers who were fond of their "bitters" would occasionally be caught out of camp, unable to perform their duties.

It is hardly necessary to explain to the soldier readers of this book that they would get drunk, because such a charge against an old soldier is only of the past, but Captain Anderson was obliged to issue the following order, which had a good effect:

Special Orders,
No. 3.

A Regimental Garrison Court-Martial, to consist of Capt. Geo. P. Sherwood, Eleventh Company, First Batt., I. C.; Second Lieut. William R. Tillotson, Fourth Company, First Batt., I. C.; Second Lieut. Geo. A. Armes, First Company, First Batt., I. C. Lieut. George A. Armes will be Recorder of the Court, which will convene at 9 o'clock A. M., July 15, 1863, or as soon thereafter as practical, for the trial of Privates Edward Herman and Frederick Spintie, both of Third Company, Second Battalion, Invalid Corps, and such other prisoners as may be properly brought before it.

By order of
CAPT. T. M. ANDERSON,
Twelfth U. S. Inf., Com'd'g I. C.

(Signed) F. R. RICE, Acting Adjutant Invalid Corps.

On July 18, 1863, four companies were ordered to Philadelphia, under command of Major Sewell, and we had not been established in camp in one of the beautiful parks of the "Quaker City" but a short time before we were ordered to Hartford, Conn., where we went into camp with several other companies. We then furnished men to guard the substitutes, and gave the soldiers who had not been to the field an opportunity to have a little active life.

On the eve of July 25, 1863, I attended a party given by Miss Davis, and was so highly entertained that I did not reach my tent until after 12 o'clock, and then forgot to notify my sergeant to call me in the morning in time to attend reveille, which I missed, and at 10 A. M. received the following order:

Headquarters Invalid Corps,
Hartford, Conn., July 26, 1863.

Second Lieut. Geo. A. Armes,
Ninth Company, First Battalion:

Sir—You are ordered to report yourself in arrest in your quarters for disobedience of orders. You will send your sword to these

headquarters immediately. By order of

MAJ. F. D. SEWALL,
Commanding.

(Signed) JAMES A. WEEKS,
First Lieut. and A. A. Adj.

(Arrest No. 5.)

Note.—As this was my first arrest as an officer, it left quite an impression upon my mind.

After two days' close arrest I was released and reprimanded by my new commanding officer, who put on the airs of a Second Lieutenant in the absence of his General. I reported for duty in time to comply with an order, and was glad to get away from such a martinet as Sewell. He was superseded by Maj. D. K. Wardwell, and we broke camp under orders, Maj. Wardwell assuming command of our battalion.

After reporting at Boston, we were ordered to go into camp at Wendham, about twenty miles from Boston, where Major Wardwell took command, First Lieut. Urbon A. Woodbury commanding my company, there not being any Captain assigned.

The following is a list of the officers of the First Battalion, Invalid Corps, commanded by Maj. D. K. Wardwell, stationed at Portsmouth, N. H., during the month of August, 1863:

David K. Wardwell (Major), July 23, 1863, commanding Camp Fry; David T. Corbin (Captain), June 3, 1863, commanding Seventh Company; Geo. P. Sherwood (Captain), July 3, 1863, commanding Eleventh Company; Harry W. Benton (First Lieutenant), June 13, 1863, A. A. Q. M. and A. A. C. S.; Urbon Woodbury (First Lieutenant), June 17, 1863, commanding Ninth Company since organization; Geo. A. Armes (Second Lieutenant), July 1, 1863, Acting Adjt., assigned to Eleventh Company.

Headquarters A. A. P. M. General's Office,
State of New Hampshire,
Concord, N. H., August 27, 1863.

I certify that the within-named officers are officers of the First Battalion Invalid Corps, and stationed at Portsmouth, N. H.

(Signed) O. A. MACK,
Major, U. S. Army,
A. D. C. and A. A. P. M. G.
Station A, N. H.

A copy of the above order was furnished each officer of the battalion for the purpose of showing authority on the part of the Paymaster to pay him.

While in Portsmouth our duties were principally to guard the substitutes, who were furnished by the drafted citizens of that part of the State, and who received from $500 to $2000 each for taking the places of the party drafted, and released from being sent to the field as soon as his substitute was accepted.

From the moment the substitute was uniformed, or received his money from the party whose place he had taken, he was at once made a prisoner, in one sense of the word, as he was placed under guard in some secure building or camp, with a sentry over him with loaded musket, and orders to shoot or kill anyone who attempted to escape.

After twenty-five or fifty substitutes had been collected, they were bunched together, a strong guard put around them, and sent to their regiments in the field. So it was an impossibility for one to escape, unless through the treachery of the guard or a non-commissioned officer, who would possibly, but very rarely, accept from $100 to $500 as a bribe and let a man go.

After being assigned to their companies and regiments, and mixed in with the volunteers, who carefully watched all their movements, it was next to an impossibility for them to get away, unless by deserting to the enemy from the advanced guard, which often occurred. Such men were of little or no use, as they could not be trusted anywhere, and it required much of the time of good soldiers, taken from important duties, to watch them.

Camp Fry was a beautiful place in summer, terraced on three sides with large shade trees, and on the fourth by a lake or pond, full of fish and good row or sailboats. As I ranked Lieutenant Reeder, I felt that he could not assume authority over me in the absence of the Major, although he was Acting Adjutant of the battalion. So, as Officer of the Day, I obtained a larger tent from the Quartermaster for the guard than they had been in the habit of using, and fixed it up. When Lieutenant Reeder found out that I had taken such a liberty without first consulting him, he ordered me to take it back. I asked his reason. He replied

the order was sufficient without any reason. I then demanded the order in writing, which he furnished at once as follows:

Headquarters Invalid Corps,
Camp Fry, August 11, 1863.

Lieutenant:

You will assemble your police guard at once and have them take the guard tent back to the Q. M. The Major Commanding desires me to say that hereafter you will obey all orders coming through me without replying back or asking for their reason. The tent will be taken down under your own superintendence.

Very respectfully,
(Signed) F. W. Reeder,
Lt. and Asst. Adj.

To Lieut. Armes,
Officer of the Day.

The order was at once carried into effect by me, but upon the return of the Major, I appealed to him to know if his Adjutant had a right to use his name and issue such an order without any cause during his absence. He sustained his Adjutant, and told me that a soldier should never question or disobey an order when given by order of his commanding officer through his Adjutant. I accepted it as good advice, and as Lieutenant Reeder was older than I, and had been in service in the German Army, I copied after his ways to a great extent, but as he was a good and strict soldier, we were always friends after that.

While on duty in Portsmouth I made quite a number of warm friends of the best class, having preferred from childhood no associates at all unless of good standing. Among the most pleasant families were the Wendals, Thompsons and General Whipple and J. R. Stanwood, the latter having kept up a correspondence with me for years.

Having been one of the military escort at the funeral of Major-General Whipple, and not meeting his family until ordered to Portsmouth, I took a great interest in the two boys, Willie and David, who used to go boating and fishing with me. Willie, or Chas. W., as he was called by some, went to West Point the next year, and was afterward assigned to the artillery and latterly to

the ordnance. David I met in Washington occasionally after he became a Lieutenant in the Marine Corps. He married a Miss Colgate of Washington, who has since died, and was greatly affected by her death, as they were very devoted. A better-hearted or more popular officer did not belong to the Corps.

Miss Lizzie, their sister, was one of the most cultivated young ladies I met in the State of New Hampshire. She accompanied us on one of our excursions around to old Fort Constitution, towards Rye Beach, in a sailboat, where we fished for mackerel, or, at least, I attempted to; but as I became so seasick, I did not make much headway. On our return the tide was going out, and we boys had to take turns at rowing. As I had only obtained permission to be absent until retreat, I was more than doubly anxious to reach shore, and worked until my hands were in a terribly blistered condition; but, in spite of my exertions to be on time, I did not reach camp until one hour after retreat. Of course, I had been reported absent to my commanding officer, and upon arrival I at once reported to the Major. He said, "Go to your quarters in arrest, and I'll teach you a lesson about shirking your duty."

"Major," I began, but he interrupted me with, "Not a word, sir."

"Will you let me explain?" I insisted.

"No," he answered; "obey my orders at once," which I did, though the pain of my blistered hands, and suspense for my second military arrest (arrest No. 6) for what I could not help, kept me awake all night. As soon as I thought he was up, I applied for an interview, which he approved, to take place at 2 o'clock P. M., and every hour of that time seemed a day. When we met I explained how the tide went out, and that instead of our boat sailing back, we had to row it, and that I used every endeavor possible to return on time, showing him my hands as evidence of my truthfulness.

He let me off with a reprimand, saying that by right no excuse should be taken, but as this was the first offense he would indulge me this time; I must be careful in the future, however. I thanked him, and went to my quarters, and I do not believe I ever asked permission to go out of camp again, feeling ashamed to call on

any of my friends or go to General Whipple's house. After that the boys came to my camp to see me, seemed to have a great sympathy for my misfortune, and wanted to take the blame upon themselves, but as the matter had been settled, I did not attempt to bring it up again.

I afterwards found my Major to be one of the best-hearted men in the service, and when I left him he explained that what he did was for my own good, and that if I had been his own son he could not have taken a greater interest in me.

Young Stanwood I have not heard from for years.

During the month of September, 1863, Lieutenant Woodbury and our company were ordered to West Lebanon, N. H., where a drafting station was established, and Captain Pike placed on duty as Provost Marshal. We fixed a nice little camp near the depot, and our duties were to place substitutes under immediate guard after being brought to our camp, where they were held until we would get a squad of forty or fifty, which were put in a car, under close guard, and taken to Concord, N. H. There they were to be uniformed and drilled and prepared for the field. My principal duties were to take them through, and it required extra vigilance on my part to manage these desperate characters, for whom I was held responsible. Many tried to bribe the guard, paying from $500 to $1000 to be allowed to slip by, but in most every instance I got the sentry, though not always the bounty-jumper. We punished the bribe-takers so severely when caught that very few dared to run the risk of being bought off by substitutes. As my company was composed of intelligent and trusty men, and Lieutenant Woodbury (a married man) preferred to remain in camp most of the time and attend to the sending off and the taking care of the substitutes, it gave me all the time I wished to ride and drive over the country, going to the White Mountains and every place of interest, drawing my pay every month being one of my most important duties.

I became very much attached to Lieutenant Woodbury, who has since been Governor of Vermont, and we got along nicely. He was a splendid officer, whom I respected and obeyed to the letter. And he indulged me in every way reasonable. While at

West Lebanon I made many acquaintances, and was invited to parties and sociables continuously. I became very much attracted by Miss Julia, daughter of Richard B. Kimball, who was visiting her aunt, Mrs. Haddock. Among other families who made me feel at home were Dr. Crosby's, at Hanover; Mrs. Lyman's, near White River Junction; Colonel Hosley's and Captain Pyke's.

Lieutenant Woodbury being promoted to a Captaincy, and the quota of the district of which we had charge having been furnished, our company was ordered, during the month of November, to Concord, N. H., where the rest of the regiment were on duty, under the command of Colonel Wardwell, who had been promoted to Lieutenant-Colonel, our battalion numbering the Thirteenth Regiment, and my company F, and my duties and work commenced in earnest. My first detail for a large and responsible command took me away from the regiment to the front, as per following order:

Headquarters Supt. Volunteer Recruiting Service,
Special Orders, Concord, N. H., November 23, 1863.
No. 87.

A party of one hundred and seventy-six (176) volunteer recruits will proceed at 9 o'clock A. M. tomorrow to Long Island, Boston harbor, thence by vessel to join the Second Regiment N. H. Volunteers at Point Lookout, Md., or wherever else the regiment may be.

Geo. A. Armes, Second Lieutenant "F" Company, Thirteenth Regiment, Invalid Corps; Amos B. Holden, Second Lieutenant "D" Company, First Battalion, Heavy Artillery; Corporal John Fowler, Company "D," First Battalion; Private A. H. Jacobs, Heavy Artillery; Private E. R. Preston, Massachusetts Volunteers, will accompany the party to its destination, and will return to rendezvous when they have been delivered to the commanding officer of the regiment.

One day's cooked rations will be issued to the party at this depot, and rations for the remainder of the journey will be drawn at Long Island, Boston harbor, by the commanding officer.

Transportation will be furnished by Captain Holmes, Asst. Quartermaster at this post.

The attention of the officer commanding the party is called to 982-3-4 revised regulations, edition of 1861, the provisions of which will be strictly complied with, report to be made to the commanding officer of this rendezvous.

By order of
BRIG.-GEN. EDWARD HINKS.
SOLON A. CARTER,
Capt. and Asst. Adj.-Gen.

While I was complying with the above order the detachment raised a subscription of $50, with the request that with it I purchase a sword in remembrance of the Twelfth N. H. I felt very proud of my popularity with the men, but it was considered a breach of Army discipline by my commanding officer, Colonel Wardwell, who thought it would be a feather in his cap to take official notice of it. I was therefore placed in close arrest (arrest No. 7) and charged with conduct prejudicial to good order and military discipline, but after a thorough investigation I was released without a trial by order of General Hinks.

Lieutenant Woodbury, after being mustered out, returned to his home at Burlington, Vt., where he became manager of the Booth Lumber Co., was elected mayor of his city during several terms, then Lieutenant-Governor, and finally Governor. We have kept up a correspondence for years and visited and revisited each other's families.

I present the reader with a few extracts from some of his private letters, having obtained his consent to my making them public:

Concord, N. H., March 24, 1864.

Friend Armes:

Yours of the 21st received today. I was glad to hear from you and to learn that you had arrived safely at home. You seem to think that you would rather be here than in Washington. I do not wonder, for of all the places this side of that "abode of wickedness" I detest Washington.

But we are soldiers, and shall go cheerfully where we are ordered. * * *

I am as much pleased with the change of the designation of the Corps as you are. We are progressing finely here; expect to be examined every day. The board is in Boston.

All send regards to you. Write again when convenient.

Yours, truly,
(Signed) U. A. WOODBURY,
Captain, etc.

GOV. WOODBURY AND FAMILY.

Concord, N. H., May 26, 1864.

Friend Armes:

I received your welcome letter last week, and was glad to hear from you and to learn that you had passed the examination unscathed. Sergeant McKillipp got back last night.

He does not know whether he will be commissioned or not. I hope he will, for he is a good fellow. Henderson, Wallace and Schregot's time will soon be up.

Barnard is at Philadelphia school applying for a commission in a colored regiment. Quite a number of the old men have been discharged by reason of expiration of term.

* * * * * * * * * *

I am in command of the camp now, and am having quite a *soft* thing of it. I have had quite a number of inquiries for you from the *softer* (?) sex. They send their regards to you generally. * * * * *

Yours truly,

(Signed) U. A. Woodbury,
Captain, etc.

Upon arriving at Long Island, General Diven gave us a close inspection, and after three days' preparations, we embarked on a vessel, which landed us at Point Lookout, Md., where these substitutes were immediately assigned to companies in the regiment, where the old soldiers watched them so closely it was impossible for them to escape, but were forced into the front ranks and taught their duties.

Men were treated very much as horses and cattle; they were gathered up from all over the country wherever they could be found, put on cars or vessels and hurried to the Army of the Potomac. The death of a soldier was so common that no one seemed to give any more thought to it than if he were an animal, and as fast as one died others supplied their places; but such is war.

While stationed in Concord, N. H., I not only met a great many acquaintances socially, but made myself very popular with the pastors, who professed to be very much gratified with my bringing my soldiers to the churches. The following is a sample of the passes which had to be approved by my commanding officer before I could attend church:

Headquarters Co. F, Thirteenth Regiment, Invalid Corps,
February 7, 1864.

Pass the bearer, Geo. A. Armes, Company F, Thirteenth Regiment, I. C., to church and back to camp, till 7 o'clock P. M., for the purpose of going to church with thirty-six men.

(Signed) GEO. A. ARMES,
Commanding Company.

Approved:
D. T. CORBIN,
Capt. Commanding Thirteenth Regt., I. C.,
Commanding Camp.

Being on such friendly terms with all the officers on duty at Concord, and being anxious to go in the cavalry arm of the service, I procured the following recommendation, but was ordered to another station, however, before an opportunity was offered to use it, but it shows my standing among the officers with whom I served: .

Headquarters General Rendezvous,
Concord, N. H., February 20, 1864.

To His Excellency,
Joseph A. Gilmore,
Governor of the State of New Hampshire:

We, the undersigned officers, do cheerfully recommend Lieut. Geo. A. Armes, Company F, Thirteenth Regiment, U. S. Invalid Corps, as an officer of good habits, and industrious in any capacity in which he may be employed, as an officer.

He wishes a commission in New Hampshire cavalry. We would be most happy if you can grant his request, he being well acquainted with the country of Virginia and other States in the South, would prove himself very useful.

H. FEARING, Col. 1st Regt., N. H. Cav.
SOLON A. CARTER, Capt. and A. A. A. G.
WM. S. RYAN, Capt. 13th Regt., I. C.
A. G. CUMMINGS, Capt. 13th Regt., N. H. Vols. Inf.
GEO. H. CHANDLER, Maj. 9th N. H. Vols.
JNO. A. CUMMINGS, Capt. 6th N. H. Vols.
L. P. WILSON, 1st Lieut. 13th N. H. Vols.
J. B. FAY, 1st Lieut. 5th N. H. Vols.
T. A. RIPLEY, Capt. 14th N. H. Vols.
C. H. CARTER, 1st Lieut. N. H. Vols.
J. S. DUGIN, Capt. Com. 7th Regt. N. H. Vols.

Lieutenant Armes has been well spoken of and highly recommended by Gen. S. P. Heintzleman, U. S. A., under whose notice he has performed meritorious service.

EDW. W. HINKS,
Brig.-Gen. N. H. Vols.

Lieutenant Armes is well acquainted with the cavalry drill and service, and, in my opinion, ought to have a situation in the First N. H. Cavalry.

M. CARR,
Lieut.-Col. Second Regt. N. H. Vols.

I am acquainted with Lieutenant Armes, and have no doubt that he is competent to fill a position as Captain or Lieutenant in the cavalry.

W. H. DONOHUE,
Col. Tenth N. H. Vols.

Upon my return from Boston and other places where I had visited I received orders relieving me from duty at Concord and directing me to report for duty at Washington.

I immediately packed up, bade friends good-bye and landed in Washington, where I was assigned to duty with the Nineteenth V. R. C. Regiment, Colonel Dayton commanding.

A letter received in those days of interest now is the following:

Headquarters, Camp for Drafted Men,
Concord, N. H., March 27, 1864.

Dear Lieutenant:

I received your letter yesterday, and was very much pleased to hear from you. I suppose you often thought I was strict with my duties, but you will find that I have been more lenient here than I would be in Washington.

You can tell Colonel Wisewell that General Hinks says that our battalion is the best in the service, and was never in finer condition than at present. We are waiting anxiously to receive the order to proceed to Washington. The Board of Examination has convened at Boston, and I expect that our officers will be ordered before it for examination before long. Lieutenant Benton has returned to duty as Post Adjutant. General Hinks has been relieved and ordered to General Butler's Department, and Colonel Fering of the Eighth N. H. is Superintendent of Volunteer Recruiting Service.

I do not fear the duty that we would be compelled to do if we got to Washington, for I think that I have a battalion that is fully able to do it. They may talk about General McClellan holding secret communication with General Lee, but I do not believe it. He is as loyal a man and as good a General as there is on the continent, and if he is nominated for the Presidency there is no man in the field that can beat him. I saw several of your lady friends today, and they send you their kind regards. I think you will find it more difficult to get back to Concord than to get away. We have enough cavalrymen here now to make five companies. Major Wyman leaves for Washington tomorrow, to be gone a few days. We are getting along very well, and our men are improving in doing guard duty every day. We have fine weather here now. I am, very respectfully,

Your obedient servant,
(Signed) D. K. WARDWELL,
Lieut.-Col., U. S. A.

The three following recommendations will indicate the measures I adopted to accomplish my desire to obtain a little more active service at the front before the rebellion was entirely ended:

To Whom It May Concern:

The bearer, Lieut. Geo. A. Armes, is a particular friend of mine. He has already served one term of enlistment, and has been wounded three times in the service of his country. Upon a surgeon's certificate he was admitted to the Veteran Reserve Corps, in which he has served for some months, part of the time as Lieutenant under me. Having sufficiently recovered, he is anxious to return again to active service. I find him to be an excellent officer and a gentleman, and if there is a probability of your helping him to a position, your kindness will be greatly appreciated.

I remain, very respectfully,
Your obedient servant,
(Signed) F. W. H. KENDRICK,
Capt. V. R. Corps.

Washington, D. C.,
May 2, 1864.

Note.—Captain Kendrick is now the senior Captain of the Seventh U. S. Infantry.

Soldiers' Rest,
Washington, D. C., May 4, 1864.

Brigadier-General Martindale:

Sir—I have the honor to recommend to your consideration Lieut. Geo. A. Armes, formerly of the Sixteenth Virginia Volunteers, now of the V. R. C.

He has been long and favorably known to me as an officer and gentleman.

I remain, General, yours,
(Signed) E. M. Camp,
Capt. and Q. A. A. D.

My duties at Concord had been very agreeable from the fact that I was kept on the move all the time, which suited my roving nature.

I reached Washington, D. C., and was made an assistant Provost-Marshal and inspector of new troops being organized and prepared for field duty. The Veteran Reserve was substituted as a new name for the Invalid Corps.

It was the general impression in May, 1864, that General Grant would march into Richmond with the enormous number of men at his disposal, he having five soldiers to every Confederate, each one fully armed and equipped, with plenty to eat, while the Confederates were poorly armed and equipped and half starved.

The fighting at the front had begun in earnest, and the heavy artillery, which had been quartered in forts around the Capital, so long living on the fat of the land, were suddenly hustled to the field. The daily news of Grant's victory made many believe that the war would not last much longer, and I became so anxious to get to the front that I requested the following letter of introduction to General Augur from Congressman Whaley, hoping that he might be able to find some way to get me to the front:

House of Representatives,
Washington, D. C., May 4, 1864.

Maj.-Gen. C. C. Augur:

Sir—Please give Lieut. G. A. Armes an interview.

Very respectfully,
Your obedient servant,
K. V. Whaley, M. C.

He placed the following endorsement upon the letter, which I presented to General Hardie at the War Department:

Referred to Colonel Hardie. This officer can be spared if his services are deemed necessary at the front.

(Signed) C. C. AUGUR,
Maj.-Gen.

I applied to General Hardie at the War Department May 16, 1864, for an appointment for service at the front. He said that he did not know of any way to oblige me just then, but for me to call the next day. I did so, and he informed me that he had some very important dispatches from the President and Secretary of War that he must send to General Grant by some trusted officer, that he could not think of anyone who could perform that duty better than I, and that, after delivering them to General Grant, I might ask him to assign me to duty, and he thought the General could find a place for me. He then issued an order relieving me from duty with my regiment, and the next morning I was handed the following:

Headquarters, Military Department,
Washington, D. C., May 18, 1864.

Col. R. H. Rush,
Commander of First Brigade, V. R. C.:

Colonel—The Secretary of War directs that Lieut. Geo. A. Armes, V. R. C., at Sherbourne Barracks, be ordered to report immediately for duty at the War Department. He will be required to proceed to the Army of the Potomac. Please direct that the notice of his reporting be given without delay to these headquarters. By order of

W. N. WISEWELL.
THEODORE MCGOWAN, A. A. G.

Within one hour after receiving the above order I was at the War Department. General Hardie told me that orders had been given the Quartermaster to let me select any horse I wished, directed me to go to the corral and take my choice, giving me instructions to return and see the Secretary of War as soon as I had obtained my horse, as there was a boat ready to take me to Belle Plain, and that I was to be entrusted with very important dispatches, orders and commissions for several officers.

Arriving at the corral, I received every attention and assistance that could be rendered in helping select a horse. As there were thousands of them, it took me some time to make a selection. At last I found one, a beautiful bay, seven or eight years old, as sound and as active as a horse could be, which I soon mounted and dashed up to the War Department, reporting to General Hardie, who went with me into the room of the Secretary of War, also handing me the following pass in his own handwriting:

War Department,
Washington, D. C., May 18, 1864
Pass Second Lieut. Geo. A. Armes,
Veteran Reserve Corps, and horse to the
Army of the Potomac.

By order of the Secretary of War:
Jas A Hardie
Colonel & Insp. Gen'l

(Not Transferable.)

Mr. Stanton handed me the dispatches, commissions, etc., giving me verbal instructions. Finally, he took me by the hand and wished me success. I was soon on the boat and on my way to Belle Plain, where a special escort was furnished me and the following order:

War Department,
Adjutant General's Office,
Washington, May 18th 1864

Special Orders,
No. 180 } Extract.

32... 2d Lieut George A Armes-
Veteran Reserve Corps. will proceed without delay
to the Head Quarters Army of the Potomac. on
Special Service. and report to the Commanding
General thereof.

* * *

By order of the Secretary of War:

(Signed) E. D. Townsend

Assistant Adjutant General.

Lieut Armes Official

thro ~~Present~~ Col Hardie Thomas M Vincent

Assistant Adjt General

Upon arriving at Belle Plain, my escort was found waiting, and we galloped on into Fredericksburg the next day, passing thousands of soldiers en route to the front to replace the thousands who only a few hours or days before had been killed or wounded. At Fredericksburg wagon-load after wagon-load of dead soldiers were being hauled to and piled along the edge of a long ditch or trench, where the bodies were being wrapped in blankets, placed side by side in the bottom of the trench and covered up. It was indeed a sad sight. General Shriver, if I remember right, was in command there at that time, and upon my reporting to him, a fresh escort of cavalry was furnished me, and by dark on the 20th of May I was at General Grant's headquarters.

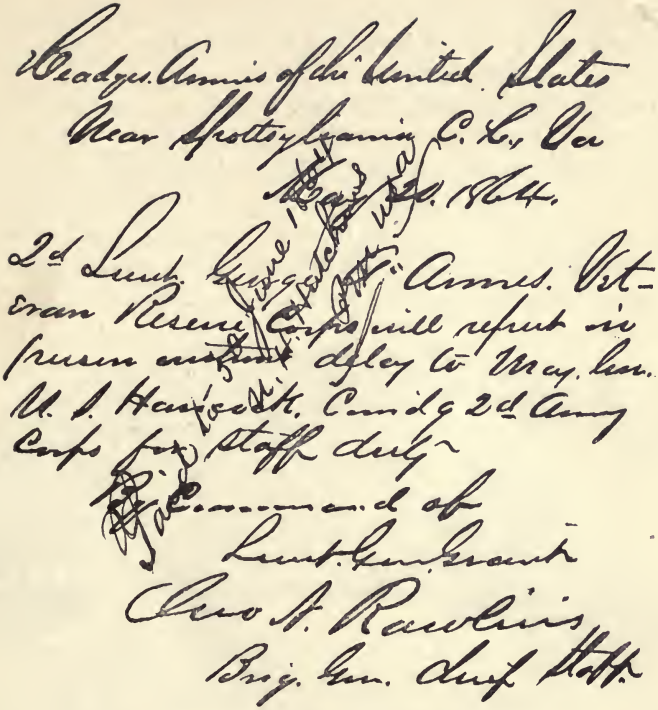
DELIVERING DESPATCHES TO GENERAL GRANT

The General was sitting near a log fire in front of his tent, talking with members of his staff and General Meade. An orderly announced my name to General Rawlins, who was chief of staff, who informed me that he would receive any papers from the War Department. I declined to hand them to him, on the ground that the Secretary of War had directed me to hand them to General Grant in person. He then called General Grant over to the front of the tent and introduced me, when I at once handed him the commissions, dispatches, etc. He handed them to General Rawlins, who opened them, and, after reading the contents, passed them back to the General.

I was requested to take a seat by the camp fire, while Generals Grant and Rawlins had quite a long discussion, after which they joined the party. After a short conversation with General Rawlins, I told him I would like to remain in the field, explaining my reasons. He then acquainted General Grant with my desire, and the latter asked General Rawlins where he could assign me. General Rawlins recommended either Generals Hancock or Sedgwick. General Grant then said, smilingly:

Order him to report to General Hancock, who is one of the best generals in the Army; he will give him his fill of fighting, if that is what he is looking for.

Bidding General Grant good evening, I went with General Rawlins to his tent, and he placed the following endorsement upon my War Department order, which I still have:



As soon as the above endorsement was written, General Rawlins sent an orderly to show me the way to General Hancock's headquarters. There I reported for duty in compliance with the endorsement, which General Hancock read, and at once called his staff and introduced them to me; at the same time he called his orderly (Shaw), who fixed up the "toddies."

My work now began in earnest, and the next day I rode to the lines near Spottsylvania Court House, Va., visiting some of the Division and Brigade Commanders in company with Captain Parker, one of our staff. May 22 we camped at Hanover Junction, and at about 8 A. M. took down headquarters tents for a grand move. When we reached the Richmond & Fredericksburg Railroad we found it necessary to put our artillery in position, and by 4 P. M. the fighting commenced. General Birney's Division

charged over the works at double-quick time. General Hancock exposed himself in the hottest of the fire and wherever his presence was most necessary.

While returning from delivering a message to General Tyler a shell passed between my breast and my horse's head, the shock from which caused my horse to fall. As he was going at full speed I struck the ground fully twenty feet in his front, but was not badly hurt. My horse was dead in a few moments, and securing a riderless horse, I was soon on my way again, and reported to the General, who congratulated me upon my narrow escape.

Unhorsed While Delivering Messages.

The firing ceased at dusk, when the dead and wounded were gathered up. We lost about 200 killed, but captured several hundred of the enemy; in fact, we gained a signal victory. It was a miracle that the General was not killed, as the shot, shell and bullets were flying all about him, but he sat his horse as if he was on dress parade, and gave orders to his aides as pleasantly as though he were just having a little fun.

On May 23 we skirmished most of the day, capturing about thirty prisoners near Hanover Court House, but did not have the battle we expected.

May 24 the Corps left the river. Then we had brisk skirmishing all that day, until we reached the bridge over North Anna, which was protected by a strong force of Confederates, but after some very hard fighting we took the bridge.

On May 25 General Hancock had us all out very early, and we were kept in the thickest of the fighting most of the day. Shortly after the departure of Generals Meade and Burnside, with their staffs, who had been at headquarters most of the morning, a report came to General Hancock that the Ninth Corps were shelling our men at the bridge. The General immediately sent me to General Burnside to have it stopped, and while carrying the order it was necessary for me to pass through an open space, which was covered by a masked battery of the enemy, the bullets from which were as thick as bees in the air. Just before returning I told Lieutenant Fletcher of General Wilcox's staff, who was preparing to return with me, of the danger, but he said that the important orders he had to deliver required him to run the risk, so we started across the field together at full speed. When I looked back I saw that he and his horse were down, where they remained until after dusk, when it was discovered that he had received several bullet wounds. After my reporting back to the General, he and all of us rode up to examine our lines a little before sundown, but the Confederate sharpshooters made it so disagreeable that we could not go very far; so we returned and prepared ourselves for the flank movement which was to take place the next day.

May 26, 1864, we were at Hanover Court House, fifteen miles from Richmond, and our headquarters were established in the Jones House, where Dr. Dougherty, our Corps surgeon, ordered me to bed and fixed up my leg, which had become quite lame from the effects of a bruise caused by coming in contact with a tree while delivering an order to General Tyler, who then commanded an artillery brigade, but the doctor found it impossible to carry out that order, as I was determined to be on the go all the time.

May 27 we were on the march most of the day, and it was after 12 o'clock before the command halted for the night.

May 28 we were on the flank movement by 6 o'clock, and the skirmishing was kept up briskly until 4 P. M., when it was made extra lively, General Sheridan losing several hundred men and sixty-five officers of his command. Most of the wounded were taken to Salem Church, near Pamunky river, when we crossed and rode to the head of the column, through fields, woods and over ditches, in order that the men marching in the road would not be annoyed or inconvenienced by our horses crowding them.

May 29, while at Dr. Pollard's, General Hancock sent Barlow's Division out to reconnoitre. Captain Wilson and myself were sent with him out on the Richmond road, and just as we reached the road that turns to Hanover Court House we were fired into. I at once reported to General Hancock, who sent me to General Meade for reinforcements, which were immediately put in action, and a very lively fight took place.

May 30 General Hancock had us all up about 4 A. M. General Barlow moved his Division in advance, with General Gibbon on his left and General Birney on the right. After the General had selected a prominent position for headquarters, he sent me after 600 of Berdan's sharpshooters, who advanced beyond the skirmish line, where they did excellent service. Both sides kept up a heavy fire, and hurled shot and shell at each other most of the day, without any particular gain on either side. Many good men were killed on both sides. Before the artillery commenced firing, General Hancock sent word to Mrs. Shelton, who occupied a very fine house, with many of her lady friends as guests, that she could have protection within our lines, as her house, being between the two lines, was liable to be destroyed; but she declined to leave, and soon after shot and shell were crashing through it. That evening the whole family were found in the cellar, safe and unharmed. During the engagement General Hancock sent me with orders to General Tidball, commanding the artillery, to fire more to his left, so as to give General Birney an opportunity to advance on the right.

This incident was witnessed in front of the Shelton house May 30: Early in the morning General Grant rode up, and was scanning the enemy's lines through his field glass, and was but a few feet from a caisson. The women in the house sent a negro with a shovel of coals, who, raising the lid of the chest, threw the coals in. An explosion quickly followed. The General showed no signs of being disturbed. It was no doubt known by some of those in the house who he was, and they hoped by performing the above to remove him from earth. Their scheme failed.

The firing was kept up most of the night, and on the morning of May 31 Generals Barlow and Birney advanced their Divisions and took the breastworks, which were soon utilized by the Second Army Corps. General Whistler did some gallant work with the Second New York Heavy Artillery. General Hancock worked us very hard all day, and it seemed almost a miracle that none of us were hit, as we were under a continuous fire most of the time. General Grant and staff were fired upon while passing near Colonel Shelton's house.

Colonel Batchelder, our Corps Quartermaster, lost twenty wagons and three officers, which were en route to Port Royal after provisions. During the night I delivered the following circular to each Division Commander:

Headquarters Second Army Corps,
May 31, 1864—12.30 A. M.

If Division Commanders in the advance require support, and cannot obtain it on their right or left, they can call upon the Major-General commanding the Corps for reinforcements. He will be found at the Shelton House.

W. S. Hancock,
Maj.-Gen. Commanding

Reaching Cold Harbor during the night of June 1 on our march, the old Second Corps was firing pretty lively by 4 o'clock A. M. On the 3d of June the "Johnny Rebs" soon let us know that they did not intend to fall back any further. We made up our minds that they were going to give us hard work, and by sunrise there was a line at least six miles long, pouring a continuous fire

at each other. The artillery went at it in dead earnest; it was an interesting sight.

The Fifth Army Corps was soon in need of assistance, and General Birney, commanding the Third Division, went to General Warren's support, who was opposed by a very strong force. These Confederates seemed determined to break our line if possible, and when General Tyler, commanding the Fourth Brigade, charged, he was shot in the foot, and everyone of his staff was either killed or wounded. Colonel Brooke, commanding the Brigade (now Major-General, U. S. A.), was shot through the stomach, and Colonel Porter, commanding the Eighth New York—one of the most popular officers in the Army at that time—was killed. Colonel Haskel of the Sixty-sixth New York, another gallant officer, with eight other Colonels whose names I do not now recall, were also killed.

General Hancock stationed himself, with his staff, upon a prominent knoll, where he could witness almost every movement, sending his officers at all necessary times, which seemed to us exceedingly numerous, to the Division Commanders with orders. He directed General Barlow to occupy a position on the crest of a hill which the Confederates seemed determined we should not hold. Captain McIntire was ordered to deliver this, but had not gotten out of sight before his horse was shot under him, and he had to return, when Capt. Isaac Parker was told by the General "for God's sake get that order to Barlow." Parker had gone but a short distance when his horse was shot in the eye, reared up and fell over dead. General Hancock, clasping his hands together, said, "Poor Parker is killed." Turning to Captain Wilson, he told him to get the order to Barlow at once. Just as Captain Wilson started one of our orderlies was killed, and a few bullets went through the headquarter's flag and one through the rim of the General's hat, when he quietly said, "Gentlemen, it is a little close here," but still sat on his horse, which was firm as a rock.

Just then Captain Wilson returned, his horse having been killed. General Hancock then turned to me, and said:

"Now, Mr. Armes, it is your turn, and for God's sake get this order to Barlow."

The battle was now raging its hottest, and shells were bursting all around us, tearing up the ground under our horses and covering us with dirt.

I headed my horse for General Barlow, who could be seen sitting on his prancing steed, in the midst of the firing. Lying at the side of my horse's neck, I sent him forward at full speed, and in less than four minutes was at Barlow's side.

Delivering Despatches to Barlow.

The charge was made, but it was found impossible to drive the enemy out of their stronghold. The old Second Corps now went to work in earnest, and dug rifle pits, and soon had a strong line of breastworks, which proved to be good protection against the bullets and shells, which filled the air like a swarm of bees.

Upon my return, General Hancock grasped me by the hand and thanked me for my promptness. Colonel Mitchell then rode up to me, and said that General Meade, who was talking to General Hancock when the latter gave me the order, asked him,

"Who is that young officer that just started for Barlow?"

"It is Mr. Armes," Hancock replied, "and he would carry an order into hell if I should tell him to take one there." All were

very tired and hungry that night when we went into camp, where the coffee without milk and a little fat pork and hard tack, which our cooks had prepared for us, was relished.

About June 10, 1864, after marching all night, we reached Wilcox's Landing on the James river, and General Hancock at once placed me on duty to superintend the crossing of the troops, with orders to report every hour the number who had crossed and facilities for getting them over as rapidly as possible. All the boats were loaded to the water's edge, and not a man or horse was lost out of the entire Corps. As fast as the men landed on the other side they marched to the Christian farm, where the General made his headquarters, and I then superintended the crossing of the artillery. It was after 1 o'clock before I had an opportunity to get a moment's rest. I believe General Hancock would have sat on his horse and kept up all night if Dr. Dougherty had not made him get into an ambulance at 1 o'clock and try to get a little rest.

The troops were supposed to be on the march, but the roads were so narrow, the men so tired, that we made very slow progress, and by 5 o'clock the roads were so blocked with artillery, troops and wagons I could not get the ambulance, in which the General had fallen asleep, along the road. I took the responsibility of riding ahead until I found a large field, when I ordered the whole command to turn in and park. For a few moments I could see each regiment as it came to a halt at the place assigned it drop sound asleep almost the moment the order of "Place, rest" was given. I say it was only for a few moments that I saw it, for I was soon sound asleep myself, although on my horse, and saw very little for nearly two hours, as I had been in the saddle most of the time for two nights and three days. As soon as the rear of the column was in the field, the General's ambulance came up, and I was suddenly awakened, and took my place by his side. He was wide awake, but still remained in the ambulance, which was driven along by the side of the Corps.

When we reached Long Bridge, orders were given me to remain there until the entire command had crossed, and then have the bridge taken up and burned.

Colonel McIntosh was in command of the rear guard. At half-past 5 o'clock in the afternoon his men were destroying bridges; half an hour later my orders had been carried out, not a bridge or crossing remained, and I started for headquarters, twelve miles away, at Clark's House, arriving there at 9 o'clock. This delay was due to the darkness of the night and the blocked condition of the road. Owing to these adverse conditions three hours were necessary for what would have ordinarily required but an hour.

A cold dinner awaited me, an excellent *hot* one having been served but an hour or two before to Generals Grant, Meade and Hancock and their entire staffs, with the exceptions of Captain Meade, Lieutenant French and myself. We never lacked appetite, and had no cause to find fault with the food furnished, our great trouble being want of time to eat.

I formed a habit of writing something home every day, if it was not more than three lines in pencil, on scraps of paper or anything I could find to write on; and as hundreds of my letters and notes have been preserved, I find some very interesting matter in them. The following are extracts from some of the letters written to my father and brother during the campaign before Petersburg and Cold Harbor, Va.:

Virginia, June 4, 1864.

General Hancock had all of his staff called out before 4 o'clock this morning, and we were in our saddles, as the indications were we would be attacked by the "Johnnies," who seemed anxious to drive us from the line of breastworks and trenches we had made so strong, but after a few thousand shots were fired by our infantry, they seemed to abandon the idea of getting us out so easily as they first anticipated, General Tidball having set his artillery to work throwing shells into their ranks, which made them scatter and look for shelter, and the only thing they could do was to return the fire, which was kept up all day at a lively rate. Very few men have been killed on either side, but a good many wounded. I have been greatly provoked at the General, since starting to write this, for keeping our headquarters in such an exposed position, as I have had to move five times, trying to find a safe place in which to write. A short time ago a shot went through the kitchen tent, knocking our mess table to splinters. The General sits on his camp stool in front of his tent watching the shelling as if it were a sham affair, instead of a very serious one, but no matter

how anxious any of us may feel for our safety, we dare not show it, but have to keep ourselves within hearing of his voice, and be in readiness at any moment to ride through the midst of the firing and the bursting of shells. Those around Washington who see staff officers dressed up in their gay and showy uniforms at the theaters, receptions and balls no doubt think it is grand to be on the staff, but if they could be at our headquarters for an hour they would soon be convinced there was a little work attached to the position, and I am now convinced that the remark made by General Grant to General Rawlins, that "Hancock would give me my belly-full of fighting," seems to have come true, for I am not hankering after any more than the General seems fit to furnish.

After delivering an order to General Barlow this afternoon, upon my return, while riding along the trenches and breastworks the Second New York Heavy Artillery had just completed, Colonel Whistler, who commands that regiment, and who has been so energetic in holding his line, asked me to dismount and inspect his work. So, securing my horse out of range of the enemy's fire, I accompanied the Colonel. It seemed certain death for a man to show his head above the trenches, as the rebel sharpshooters would put a bullet through him almost as fast as one appeared. Three of the regiment and one officer were killed as the Colonel and myself were going along the line, and the old Colonel would sing out in each case, "Keep down and don't expose yourselves; you must be careful and obey orders."

I told General Hancock about Colonel Whistler's coolness and ability, and the hard work he had done with the Second New York, and the General remarked, "Yes, he has made the Second a good regiment."

General Nelson A. Miles, one of the youngest officers of his rank in the army, whom I met in Washington some time ago, is bound to make his mark. After leaving General Whistler, I met Miles, who asked me to ride along his line with him, which I did, and he did not seem to mind the bullets and shells buzzing past him any more than if they were so many bees.

I have written you a longer letter than usual this time, and it may be my last, as it seems impossible to escape being hit.

June 5, 1864.

By 6 this A. M. the fire was very lively on both sides, but we had no regular battle. Captain Miller of our staff, who runs our mess, got up an elegant dinner, and keeps a good supply on hand of everything the market affords, and promptly collects our bills. My share for the past five days is only $12.55, so our being in the saddle such a great part of the time makes our board bills very

light. I think Miller's object in collecting so promptly is that in case any of us are killed he won't be out of pocket on the mess.

June 6, 1864.

Just after my letter was closed last evening, and we were all through a good dinner, the "Johnnies" made up their minds that our headquarters must be moved if their shells could do it, and they seemed to have the range on every tent and our headquarters. So about 3 o'clock the shot and shell were being hurled among us so fast that the General gave orders to get our horses, and while in the act of mounting Captain McCune of our staff had a leg taken off below the knee, and was at once carried into his tent, where Drs. Dougherty and Smart gave him every attention possible, and had him sent to the field hospital, which is out of range of the enemy's fire. I shall never forget his answer to Dr. Dougherty when he was asked if he was badly hurt. His reply was, "Yes, doctor; my leg has gone to hell." We had quite a force of soldiers and engineers at work today undermining the rebel works, so as to blow them up, it being almost impossible for us to shell them out.

Gaines Mills, June 7, 1864.

I have been very busy with the engineers most all day, laying out new roads and in moving our headquarters from Cold Harbor to this place, also in seeing about the burying of the dead, which in some cases have laid unburied several days, after it was settled by a flag of truce we could have two hours for that purpose.

Division Commanders were at once notified of this, and our troops and the "Johnnies" were soon mingled together and engaged in this work, seemingly as contented as if there was no hostile feeling existing between us. Very few words were spoken, as strict orders had been given on both sides prohibiting conversation between us, but, of course, this could not be fully enforced. The bodies of many of our men were found right along the Confederate breastworks, where they had been killed in their attempt to get over, many being swollen up almost as large as a horse and perfectly black.

June 8, 1864.

This A. M. I received my first letter in three weeks from home, we having been so continuously on the march the mail could not be distributed, but letters we wrote could be forwarded, everything being rather quiet.

June 9, 1864.

There has been but little firing today. There is a fine spring of water between the Confederate and our lines, and arrangements made by which both use the water, where we meet as long-lost

friends and joke each other. I must not forget to mention the scolding I received from the General last night, and you bet I will always remember it. I am very fond of music, you know, and I wanted to hear something besides what I have been hearing the last few weeks—the hum and buzz of the bullets and shells. None of our bands have played for some time, and I accidentally met the leader of the Vermont Brigade Band, and asked him if he would not like to come to Second Army Corps headquarters and play a few pieces for the General. He gladly jumped at the opportunity, and brought all his men over, and I assigned them a place in front of the General's tent, fixing candles on sticks, so they could see to read their notes. I had not said a word to the General about it, who, by the way had just laid down for a nap, and was asleep, but I did not know it at the time.

As soon as the candles were lighted the members of the band turned to their notes and the music started in earnest, and so did the General. He sprang up from his bed half asleep as suddenly as if a shell had burst under him, and the first expression I heard from him was, "What in the h—— is that?" Not one of us said a word, but awaited developments. He stood at the door of his tent a few moment until the band was through with the piece it was playing, when he walked up to where they were and enquired for the leader, who reported, and the General asked, "What command do you belong to, and how came you over here?"

After being informed that one of his staff had requested him to come, the General thanked them very politely, but excused them, and they withdrew. Then he asked Colonels Mitchell and Parke if they knew who of the staff dare go out of his command and get a band to play for him at that hour of the night, just as he was trying to get a little rest. They did not know who it was, but I waited a few moments until he had cooled down a little, when I tapped at the door, and was invited in, when he immediately ordered Shaw to bring in two "toddies." While we were enjoying these I changed the conversation to the band, and said that, believing him to be very fond of music, and having accidentally run across this band, I thought I would agreeably surprise him. He remarked in a very pleasant manner, "Mr. Armes, I have bands in my own command, and when I wish music I don't propose to call it from another command, but I will overlook it this time." Then he immediately ordered Shaw to bring in two more "toddies," which we drank to the success and good intentions of the band, after he highly complimented me upon my success in making some new short roads and bridges during the day, and at 10.30 I bade him good-night.

Gaines Mills, June 10, 1864.

I slept soundly all night, until called by General Morgan, Chief of Staff, who sent me to Major Brainard, Chief of Engineers, to see how many tools he had on hand that were available. Upon my return he sent me to get the detail to use them from General Gibbons' Division.

June 11, 1864.

General Wright of the Sixth Corps and General Gibbons of ours came over to headquarters last evening, when General Hancock, Major Mitchell and myself went with them to General Grant's headquarters, where a long discussion took place, and I discovered there was to be a grand move soon, but, of course, I dare not put the purport on paper. I will let you know more tomorrow.

Headquarters in the Saddle (as Pope said in 1862),
Near the Chickahominy, June 12, 1864.

All I can say now is that all our baggage, tents, etc., have been sent to the rear, and the General and all of us are in the saddle, ready to make a sudden move—only known to a few. It may be several days before I can send you another line.

Headquarters, Second A. C.,
Near Petersburg, Va., June 16, 1864.

We have been making what is called a forced march the past four days. General Hancock has kept along with us at the head of the column most of the time, sharing the same fare—hard tack, muddy, warm water and fat bacon. After marching most of last night, we halted at 7 this morning at a clump of shade trees in sight of Petersburg. The Ninth Corps has been ordered to cooperate with our Corps, and I have been riding back and forth the most of the day to try and get General Burnside to hurry his men forward, but to no purpose. I am confident that if General Grant would come forward and hurry General Burnside up we could march into Petersburg tonight without much trouble, but it looks as if there was a disposition somewhere not to go to Richmond or bring the war to a close just yet. There has been a good deal of firing on both sides most of the day, and we have lost a good many men. The General's wound has given him a great deal of pain and worry all day, and his want of rest and something proper to eat and drink has been very trying, not only for him, but your humble servant also. Will try and get a few lines off tomorrow.

June 17, 1864.

We are trying to hold our ground, and at the same time watching for an opportunity to advance. The General and all of us have been on the front lines most of the day. An arrangement has been made for General Burnside to make an attack on the works in our

front at 9 o'clock tonight with 5000 men, and our Corps is in readiness to go forward if necessary. General Warren came over to our headquarters at 10 o'clock this forenoon very much surprised that Burnside had not fired a shot. General Hancock requested me to go with General Warren and find Burnside, which I did, but we got no satisfaction, and I have just returned and reported the result to the General, and it is now after 11 o'clock P. M., and I can hardly hold my eyes open.

June 18, 1864.

The General kept the old Second Corps under arms all of last night, and was up himself, with all his staff within range of his voice. At 12 o'clock I was sent to see why Burnside had not made an attack, and he told me to say to General Hancock that he would make a charge in a short time with 5000 men deployed. Upon that report nearly every regiment of our Corps was ordered to stand under arms, and not an officer or man dared sit down, but many fell sound asleep, standing and resting on their guns; they were tired out. Nearly an hour passed, and still no sign from Burnside. The General sent to him again, and I found him sound asleep under a tree, with nearly all of his staff. I woke him up, and stated that General Hancock had sent me, with his compliments, to inform him that the Second Corps had been under arms since 9 o'clock last evening, waiting for him to advance, and it was now 1 A. M. The only excuse he was able to offer was that his men had not come up as expected. After delivering this reply to General Hancock, his remark, addressed to all of us, was, "Gentlemen, poor old Burnside is so slow," at the same time telling me to remain on the lookout and report the first sign immediately. After waiting until 2 this A. M., I took the responsibility of going to see Burnside again. He was still lying under a big tree talking to some one, and told me to tell General Hancock that he would make the attack within an hour and a-half. Not caring to disturb the General I galloped to General Birney's headquarters and gave him the information. I found him, with his division, all ready, but it was after 4 o'clock this morning before Burnside charged, when he captured six pieces of artillery and 400 or 500 prisoners. I at once took the news to General Hancock, who ordered me back to the front line to watch developments, and report anything of importance to him. I returned at 11 A. M., expecting to get a little rest, but after two hours of sound sleep I was informed that the General desired to see me. Rushing into his presence half asleep, I found Generals Grant and Meade, with their staffs, all around in full uniform and looking as gay as if they had just returned from a review, and soon saw that Shaw (the General's orderly) had not

been idle. General Hancock gave me a message to deliver to General Gibbon. Upon returning, General Hancock was in his bed in the Jones House, where Dr. Dougherty had ordered him to remain quiet, as his wound was still in a terrible state, having had a number of small pieces of bone taken out.

The command of the Second Corps devolved upon General Birney, he being the senior Major-General in command. Lieutenant French and myself were sent to the front lines with him to watch matters, and we have been under a very hot fire several times during the day, as the General seems to make a target of himself by wearing his full-dress uniform of a Major-General, yellow sash and stars shining so conspicuously above everything else. We captured a few Johnnies, and this evening a detail of men went between the two lines to gather up a few of the dead and wounded, but several were shot down by the enemy before they could recover anyone. It seems hard to be so situated that a man who lies in the hot sun, shot to pieces, cannot be reached, and has to die for want of proper treatment. If General Hancock was only in command of the Army of the Potomac it would not be many days before we would be in Richmond. He would have marched right into Petersburg yesterday, and have been in Richmond today, with scarcely any loss on our side, if allowed to. But the speculators, officeholders and many of those in power do not want the war ended this year, judging from the movements made. We have a good, strong line today, but I am completely tired out.

Two and one-half Miles from Petersburg, June 19, 1864.

This being Sunday, the Army is resting as well as they can under the circumstances, as General Birney took command of the Corps yesterday, and was fighting most of the time. I did not get much rest. Our Corps has not gained much ground, except what General Barlow, with his First Division, took, and now holds all he gained, railroad and all. Colonel Morgan, Lieutenant French and myself inspected our front line with General Birney about 2 o'clock, and then went to General Barlow's headquarters. No charges have been made today. In spite of the continuous firing, several burying parties went out tonight to gather the dead and wounded.

June 20, 1864.

I received a very small mail last night, the first we have had for several days. I commenced answering letters before breakfast, and had not replied to more than twenty-five, when several of General Burnside's staff came to General Birney's headquarters, where I remained during the day (but slept at our own in the Jones House. General Birney ordered me to accompany them and show

them our front line, which was pretty close to the enemy's works in some places. After our return, Captain Miller had a fine supper prepared for us, which we all relished, you bet, as we did not carry any lunch with us, and could not have eaten it if we had, as we were in the saddle most of the time from 10 A. M. until dark, and were watched so closely by the Confederate sharpshooters. The Ninth Corps is to relieve us at 8 o'clock this evening, and take the place on our front line. Generals Grant and Meade and staffs visited our headquarters during the day. General Hancock's wound is in such a condition that the doctor finds it necessary to insist upon his keeping as quiet as possible this hot weather, in order to save his life, but he has a hard time in carrying out his wishes, as the General is so restless and anxious to be in his saddle and on the front line with the boys. We all do our best to keep him posted on every movement and everything of importance. General Birney works hard and seems anxious to do something that will immortalize him. He is very dignified, and feels his importance as the Commanding General of the Second Corps, and well he may, as it is as high an honor as a person could wish for to say that he was ever a member in any capacity of the Second Army Corps. We all like General Birney, but he is not able to handle so large a command just yet; after a little more experience he may improve. One great element in his favor is that he is a man of extra good habits.

June 21, 1864.

General Birney moved out early with the Second Army Corps, General Barlow commanding the First Division, General Gibbon the Second, General Mott the Third (General Birney's), in the rear. This movement looked as if we were trying to flank the "Johnnies." The firing began to grow very lively as soon as we reached the Jerusalem plank road, where we were obliged to halt, and feel our way slowly, and fortify as we advanced.

General Hancock became so excited that he rushed out of his room in the Jones House, and wanted his horse brought up, so as to go to the front line, where the fighting was taking place, but Drs. Dougherty and Smart made him return to his bed with the greatest difficulty. The General keeps saying, "I am afraid something will happen to the Corps." He wants to be with it in action all the time. General Birney did well today with the Corps, as we have taken quite a large number of prisoners. Among them is a General Baker, who had a beautiful white thoroughbred horse, which our staff, as well as General Birney's, all wanted, but could not be used by all of us, so we decided that as General Barlow had done most of the work he should have the horse. There seems to

be a tremendous force of Confederates in our front, and all the tools we can get hold of are used by the men throwing up breastworks, being obliged to work in reliefs all night, in order to be able to hold our own, as we are liable to be charged upon any moment. If so, we will be in a bad fix. I have carefully inspected our entire front line twice today, and the men are completely worn out. General Tidball keeps the country well lighted up with his mortars, which throw the shells by the thousands into the camps of the enemy, many of them bursting in the air, it looks like the whole country was ablaze with fireworks. Almost everyone seems excited, as it is the impression that we are on the eve of a great battle, and as the men are almost worn out from the forced marches we have just made, and from the hard work of digging ditches and throwing up breastworks, we are not in a very favorable condition to do more than hold our ground, if we can do that. The weather is very hot, and we cannot procure anything to drink but warm, muddy water, made so by men, mules and horses all rushing into it. Canteens and tin cups by the hundreds can be seen by the side of a mule's or horse's front or hind leg or nose in the water, and other men hurrying out of their way, so as to dip their caps in and drink, as if the water was from a nice cool spring. General Birney seems extra wide-awake this evening, doing all he can to prepare for the worst. If I live to write another letter it will be one of interest, I think; so good-bye until you hear from me again. From yours, truly.

June 22, 1864.

As everything seemed quiet, with the exception of the usual firing on the picket line, this morning, after breakfast, I lay down to take a nap, and had barely gotten asleep, when General Morgan woke me up to go with General Meade, to show him where General Barlow's headquarters were. Then I delivered a written order to General Mott, commanding the Third Division, to have his command all in readiness to attack at a moment's notice; came back to headquarters, and while eating my dinner Gen. F. A. Walker, General Hancock's Adjutant-General, who is temporarily assigned to duty with General Birney, told me to get ready to go with General Birney to the front line, as he wished all of our (Hancock's) staff to accompany him.

By the time we were all mounted a tremendous firing was heard in front. The General ordered me to ride out as fast as I could and ascertain the cause. I soon discovered several regiments in full retreat, and reported the fact to General Birney, who rode to Gibbon's front line, where he saw for himself the terrible condition we were in, and that we had lost McKnight's battery of artillery,

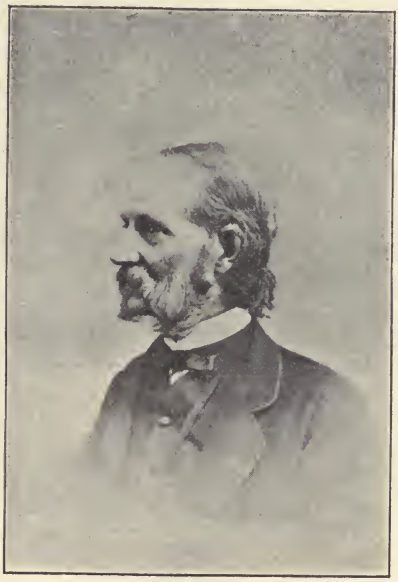
the first one captured from our Corps since its organization. He sent me with orders to General Gibbon to recapture it at once, and then to General Meade to get reinforcements. I stopped by the Jones House and reported to General Hancock the result. He sprang out of his bed, wild with excitement at the bad news, but, of course, the doctor would not let him go to the front, as he wished to do. He told me to hasten to General Meade, who said we could get help from the Fifth Corps if we needed it. I then went to see if the battery had been recaptured, Captain Parker going with me, and soon saw that it was no use to try to get it with our troops. I reported the fact to General Hancock, who said: "For God's sake get a division from the Fifth Corps at once," and in a few minutes was with General Griffin, at the head of his First Division. Although he was temporarily in command of the Fifth Corps, he remarked to me that he had been in readiness for some time, as he had expected that we would need help. He brought his division up at double-quick time, and reported to General Birney, who told him to hold the inner breastworks, while he made another attempt to get back the battery. Griffin said to me it was impossible to do so, and offered to take his division and do the work, but Birney seemed too proud to have it said another Corps could retake a lost battery that he had failed to take with such a force as he had engaged, and seemed to display a feeling of jealousy for fear Griffin might receive the credit he desired for himself. General Griffin seemed displeased at the refusal of General Birney to allow him to send a force from his Corps to try and recapture the battery, and so expressed himself to me. Of course, General Birney failed to get back the battery, as his men were all tired out and too much demoralized to make a successful charge the third time. We have lost a great many veterans and valuable men today, gaining nothing worth mentioning. It is unfortunate that General Hancock is not able to be out among the men, as he would create an enthusiasm, which appears lacking under General Birney, who, nevertheless, does the best he can, regardless of his own danger or fatigue. I do not believe there is an officer in the Army who can excel General Hancock in handling a large body of men in action, and my only hope is that his wound will not keep him away from his command much longer. It is now after 11 P. M., but the roar of artillery and bursting of shells around us will not prevent me from sleeping, as I am getting so accustomed to it I would not wake if one were to burst within ten feet of me.

June 23, 1864.

General Birney had us all accompany him at 4 o'clock this morning to inspect the front line of works, and found that each Divi-

sion Commander had established a strong line, which was proved this afternoon, when the Confederates charged us, and were forced back into their works, many being killed. Our loss has been small compared with that of the enemy. General Barlow has lost five of his staff officers, killed and wounded, this week, giving a chance for five more ambitious young men, who like active work, to take their places.

Upon my return to headquarters I found a very doleful letter from my father, who seemed to be in a distressed condition of mind, fearing he would never see me again. The following is an extract of my reply:



PROF. J. O. ARMES

You must bear in mind that there are thousands of fathers, North and South, who have their only child-son in the Army, exposed to the same danger and hardships that I am, and as you have two sons left, in case I am killed you have no good cause to worry, but should feel blessed and thankful that you are so much better off than many fathers. Of course, I cannot tell what moment my time may come, but if this should happen to be my last letter, you

can obtain my photograph at Brady's, which was taken a few days ago at Cold Harbor, standing by the side of General Hancock and the rest of his staff, which is good of all of us. Dear father, I further wish to remind you that you ought to feel proud of the fact that you have one son out of the three who is doing his best to help save the Union. If you have the good luck to have one killed while doing his duty in the field, it will be to your credit.

Generals HANCOCK, BIRNEY, BARLOW, GIBBON, TIDBALL and Staff.

In this letter to my father I wrote as I then felt, that it was the duty of every able-bodied man to come forward and do his might in saving the Union. Under such circumstances the thought of life or danger was not to be thought of.

June 25, 1864.

After breakfast the firing on both sides began to be lively, and General Birney ordered us all to accompany him to the front lines, where we remained until 10 o'clock, when General Morgan sent me after the Corps officer of the day, whom I found with Captain Crafts, who commands the Fifth New Hampshire, the field officers having all been killed or wounded. Upon my return I was sent to inspect the whole line of the Second Corps, a very dangerous duty to perform, as the Confederate sharpshooters were on the

alert to try to pick off anyone they could who appeared in sight above our breastworks, both sides amusing themselves all day shooting at each other from behind the works. Capt. Clayton McMichel, Ninth U. S. Infantry, one of General Birney's staff, rode with me along a portion of the works, until we came to an open space, which was covered by a masked battery, when he said

Inspecting Line in Front of Masked Battery.

he was not going any further. I told him that my orders were to inspect the whole line, and that I would have to do it alone with my orderly. So we started across this open space, when this battery opened upon us, and I put spurs to my horse and headed for a ravine, running right in range of the shot and shell for a few moments, but soon had the satisfaction of hearing them pass over our

heads. Neither of us were touched, but Captain McMichel tried to make fun of us among the officers for turning so suddenly and making such good speed, and, as he said, trying to outrun the shell, but admitted that Uncle Sam had not enough money in the Treasury to induce him to try to cross the same place. I am his guest, and we are occupying the same tent tonight, at this writing, and a popular, good-natured, entertaining man he is. His father is one of the leading men of Philadelphia.

June 26, 1864.

After breakfast I was sent to inspect our lines again, but as the Confederate sharpshooters were so extremely lively, I felt that it would be impossible to get through alive on horseback; so I left my orderly to hold the horses in a safe place, and made the trip on foot, stooping and dodging through the trenches as the bullets passed me. Very few men killed on either side today.

June 27, 1864.

As matters seemed sort of quiet, I had a detail of soldiers plant a lot of shade trees in front of my tent, as the weather is very hot, and I am about broken down from overwork and need of rest. This afternoon I got General Barlow's band to play several pieces for General Hancock, who seemed to appreciate the music this time. He is much better than he has been, and assumed command of the Corps this evening, sending General Birney back to his (the Third) Division. We are all fixed up comfortably in our tents. Everything is very quiet, but we are all wide-awake and on the watch not to be taken by surprise. It is now after 11 o'clock P. M., and we all have had a pleasant evening, and enjoyed our refreshments.

June 29, 1864.

We have been fixing up strong works all along our front lines; regiments are establishing themselves in permanent quarters, as the main fighting seems to be held up on both sides for the time being, except the exchange of a few shots at each other as pastime. General Morgan had me procure a large number of entrenching tools and distribute them to the front lines, in order to make the works a little more secure. This afternoon Dr. Robertson and I took a ride over a number of the battlefields which we have left behind us, but will be mentioned in the annals of history in coming years.

General Hancock was able to take a horseback ride this evening, his staff accompanying him. He is much better, but still keeps his quarters in the Jones House. General Barlow loaned me his band again to play at our headquarters, and he came over for awhile, and we spent a very pleasant evening.

Being pretty nearly broken down from hard work, and in need of rest, I made application to General Grant to be released from staff duty and returned to my command at Washington until such time as active hostilities begin again. He having assigned me to duty with General Hancock, it requires his order for a release.

July 4, 1864.

My application to be relieved from the staff was returned today by order of General Grant.

Extract from letter to my father the night before the above order was received:

July 3, 1864.

From the appearance of affairs here there must be an agreement on both sides not to do any more fighting for awhile.

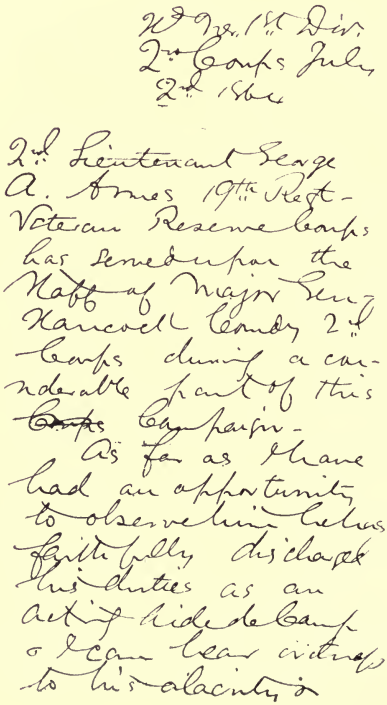
The breastworks have been so securely made that no sudden attack from the "Johnnies" will allow our lines to be entered. Many of the officers who were able had their blooded race-horses brought to the Army, and a nice race-track was made, and the racing was commenced in earnest. Col. James Brady of General Miles' staff is the principal leader in getting up all these horse races, and is generally the winner, and socially he is a great favorite with everyone.

Theaters have been built, and all kinds of attractions are resorted to for the entertainment of the soldier boys of the Army of the Potomac. Old Fat Andy, Chief Sutler of the Army, has distributed his supplies at different convenient points, and thousands of the boys can be seen smoking their cigars and patrolling back and forth in squads of from four to twelve, enjoying themselves as much, if not more, than if they were in their own country town and Barnum's circus had just opened. Many of the beautiful horses that are now on the track have been captured or taken from their owners' stables as our Army marched through, but I do not believe that General Hancock knows anything about it, or he would make it warm for some of those who have obtained their horses in this manner. Nor will I ever forget his orders to me, when marching through the country, which were to shoot anyone who dared to molest private property of any kind, or enter a private house unless invited into it. It is a grand sight to gaze upon the churches, houses, theaters, awnings and arcades the men of our Army have built and made out of green boughs of trees during the past three or four days.

I would greatly enjoy an active part in the horse racing if I were able, but my doctor advises me to obtain a rest and change, or I

will be unfit to perform duty if active work begins again. So you may expect soon to see the boy you have been so anxious about during the past two months, unless the steamer blows up, or some accident happens to me en route home. I enclose the following letters handed me by two of the bravest and most daring Generals any Army ever produced, or that any Army could wish for—men who do not know what fear is, but know how to command and handle their men under fire until they are killed and wounded by the thousand. As this is my last letter to you before I leave for home, I will cut it short, and say no more until we meet at home.

The following are the letters handed to me by Generals Barlow and Miles when I bade them good-bye; the originals I still possess and have never had occasion to use, but hold them as precious mementoes from gallant men with whom I was daily brought in contact on the field of battle:



readiness in carrying
orders under fire
Francis C. Barlow
Brig Gen Comdg Div

Headquarters First Brigade, First Division, Second Army Corps,
July 3, 1864.

Lieut. G. A. Armes has served on staff duty in this Corps during the campaign from Spottsylvania to Petersburg, Va., and in the engagements of Spottsylvania Court House, Talapotony, North Anna, Cold Harbor and before Petersburg. He has conducted himself with great credit and advantage to the service.

NELSON A. MILES,
Brig.-Gen. Commanding Brig.

Besides verbally complimenting me several times during the campaign from the Wilderness to Petersburg, General Hancock

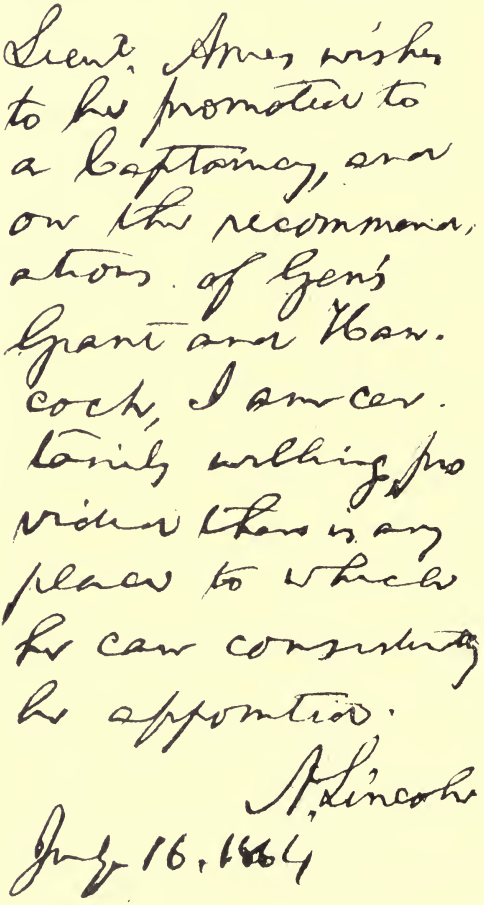
Head Qrs. Armies of the U.S.
City Point July 4th 1864

Of the services of Lieut. George A. Armes I cannot speak from personal knowledge but knowing the high and well merited standing of Maj Gen Hancock, both as a soldier and gentleman, I concur in his commendation of his services.

U. S. Grant
Lieut Genl

handed me as strong a letter as he could well pen, requesting my promotion to a Captain, which position was afterward given me in the Second New York Heavy Artillery.

The preceding letter from General Grant was handed me before I left the front, on which I obtained the following endorsement:


Lieut. Ames wishes
to be promoted to
a Captaincy, and
on the recommend-
ations of Gen's
Grant and Hanc.
cock, I am cer-
tainly willing to
render them any
place to which
he can consistently
be appointed.
A. Lincoln
July 16, 1864

After bidding General Hancock and staff good-bye, and parting on friendly terms with all, I proceeded to City Point, General Grant's headquarters, where I remained several days, and then

reported to my regiment at Washington for duty. I was just in time to take an active part in the defense of that city, being put in command of the front line during the attack made by General Early, near Fort Stevens, in July, 1864, where the firing was kept up quite lively for a time.

When Early assaulted Fort Stevens, where Brightwood is now situated, President Lincoln came out to witness the battle, and persisted in climbing upon the parapet, thus exposing himself to the fire of the enemy. Being frequently cautioned by the commanding officer not to make a target of himself, he was finally told that if he again exposed himself he (the officer) would be forced to place him under arrest. Mr. Lincoln smilingly replied: "Well, I reckon I had better obey orders, then." And yet at that moment Mr. Lincoln was Commander-in-Chief of the Army and Navy of the United States. This was the first instance in the war that he was personally on the field of battle and under the fire of the enemy, and at that time Fort Stevens was under a very hot fire from the batteries of Jubal Early.

This earthwork, called Fort Stevens, is still in a fair state of preservation, and the same is true of the little cemetery, about three-fourths of a mile north of it, on the Brightwood road, where the Union soldiers who fell in that battle were buried. It is now a National Cemetery.

But for the timely arrival of the Sixth Corps and a portion of the Nineteenth Veteran Relief Corps Jubal Early would doubtless have captured Washington. It was owing to the existence of Fort Stevens and the neighboring rifle pits that our troops were enabled to repulse General Early's attacks on the 12th of July, 1864. This and Fort Reno, on the bluff at Tennallytown, were the two forts out of the whole chain of fortifications surrounding the city of Washington that were the means of keeping the Confederate Army out of the city. The guns of Fort Reno during the Gettysburg campaign prevented the Confederate General Stuart and his splendid cavalry command from entering the city from that direction. The author participated in the battle at Fort Stevens, and, although quite ill, not until his regiment was relieved and ordered to Arlington Heights did he give up, and by order of his

doctor take to his bed. Feeling that his regiment might have some active work on hand, he obtained a pass to join it at once, unknown to his doctor or any member of his family.

I took with me the following letter for use, if necessary, as everyone granted a pass had to be identified in some way, for the capture of Washington seemed certain unless the strictest measures were adopted:

Soldiers' Rest,
Washington, D. C., May 5, 1864.

Brigadier-General Martindale:

Sir—I have the honor to recommend to your consideration Lieut. G. A. Armes, formerly of the Sixteenth Virginia Vols., now of the "Veteran Reserve Corps." He has been long and favorably known to me as an officer and gentleman.

I have the honor to remain, General, Yours,

(Signed) E. M. Camp,
Capt., A. Q. M., A. A. D. C.

Washington, D. C., July 16, 1864.

Lieut. George A. Armes has served under my command several months; he is active, energetic and efficient, and I earnestly recommend him for promotion.

Edw. W. Hinks,
Brig.-Gen. U. S. Vols.

My duties were to drill, go on duty as Officer of the Day, patrol the city, etc.

On the first of August I was made an Inspecting Officer in addition to commanding a company.

The performance of this duty apparently proved satisfactory, for I was relieved from garrison duty, although in command of a company, and assigned as a special inspector.

My company having been ordered to Elmira, N. Y., while I was on inspection duty, the Assistant Quartermaster endorsed the following on my order:

Washington, D. C., September 5, 1864.

Transportation furnished to Elmira, N. Y.

Benj. Burton,
Capt., A. Q. M.

Upon reporting to my company, I was detailed as Officer of the Guard about three times a week, to keep watch of the Rebel prisoners, who were held in frame barracks, surrounded by a high board fence, where sentries, inside and out, paced their beats at all hours.

When not on duty I enjoyed the hospitality of many of Elmira's best citizens, who gave parties, dined and entertained the military in their midst to the best of their ability. But my stay was not destined to be of long duration in the comparative quiet of Elmira. An order came from Washington sending our company to Utica, N. Y., and during their stay in that city our men were quartered in the basement of one of the principal churches, while the Captain and myself lodged in a private house nearby.

Among the pleasant people who made us feel perfectly at home I recall especially the families of Senator Kernan, Colonel McQuade and Mr. Hopkins. Captain Kendrick, being a member of the Seventh New York Regiment, would often take a seven days' leave and visit New York city, to mingle with such of his comrades as were not in the field, leaving me in command of the company. We used to drill in the public square, which would often be filled with spectators, and it afforded the Captain a great deal of amusement, at times, to see me deploy his company as skirmishers, with fixed bayonets, and charge the crowd, which would scatter pell-mell in every direction.

Having little duty to perform aside from the daily drill, I took advantage of the opportunity to visit Albany, Rochester, Rome and many other places around Utica. One could not wish for a more enjoyable time than we passed while on duty in this pleasant little city of Central New York.

The headquarters of the regiment at Buffalo, N. Y., where the band was kept by the commanding officer for his amusement and entertainment, at the expense of the officers and such men as would contribute may serve to remind many how it was in war times, especially those who paid to keep up the music, but never heard the band play.

Readers can see that I was responsible for the men placed in my charge, to deliver, as much so, as if they were negro slaves,

being conducted from one State to another before the war, only then, on the escape of a slave, the civil law would have taken hold, and, in my case, if a soldier should happen to get away from me, I would have to appeal to the military. I must not fail to mention that just before complying with the above order I learned that I had been especially recommended to the Governor of New York for a Captaincy in the Fifteenth Regiment N. Y. Engineer Corps, and by calling upon the Adjutant-General at Albany would receive my commission. I at once made application for leave, which was granted.

Upon reaching Albany I met Lieutenant-Colonel Palmer of the Second New York on the street, and he seemed delighted, as he had not seen nor heard from me since I had bidden him good-bye only a few weeks before at the front. I soon informed him of my status, and showed him my notice of appointment in the Fifteenth New York, and he at once requested me to come into his regiment, and upon his endorsement, which was made upon the notice I had received from the Adjutant-General, Governor Seymour consented to change me to the Second New York Heavy Artillery, and my commission as Captain was made out and handed to me before I left the Governor's room, who entertained me in his usual pleasant way and explained that General Hancock had made a strong and special request in my behalf. So I was greatly indebted to Colonel Palmer for his endorsement and advice to go in the Second New York, which I have never regretted to this day. Upon my return to Elmira I called upon General Diven and showed him my commission as Captain. He asked my age. I told him nineteen. He at once grasped my hand, congratulating me and wishing me further success, and at once wrote the following letter to help me get out of the V. R. C.:

Headquarters A. A. Provost Marshal General and Superintendent
Recruiting Service, Western Division, State of New York,
Elmira, October 13, 1864.

This is to certify that Lieut. Geo. A. Armes has been on duty in this district in the Veteran Reserve Corps; has discharged his duty faithfully. Having been commissioned a Captain in the Sec-

ond New York Heavy Artillery, I recommend that he be mustered out of the Veteran Reserve Corps, to enable him to accept such commission. He should be allowed a short time, if he so desires, to settle the business connected with his company.

(Signed) A. S. DIVEN,
Brig.-Gen. Com. Mil. Dist. Western N. Y.

I soon learned that I could not be mustered into the Second New York until my resignation was accepted as Second Lieutenant, V. R. C., which I sent to the War Department as soon as I returned from Baltimore, at once transferring all my property and funds, was ready to start for the front. But the acceptance of my resignation had not come, so I applied for and received the following:

Special Order Elmira, N. Y., October 5, 1864.
No. 364.—Extract.

Leave of absence for seven days is hereby granted to the following-named officer: Second Lieut. Geo. A. Armes, Nineteenth Regiment, V. R. C. By order of

COL. B. F. TRACY.

(Signed) CHAS. S. BARTON,
Capt. and Asst. Adj.-Gen.

The night before I left Elmira a farewell party was given me by my brother officers, among whom was my Captain, who is now an officer in the Seventh United States Infantry, and I am sorry to say I have not met him since he bade me farewell at the Elmira Depot, October 31, 1864.

November 2, 1864, found me in Washington, when I called at the War Department to find out the cause of delay in acceptance of my resignation, and was informed that it had been accepted, being sent through my Colonel at Buffalo. As I was anxious to reach the front, I requested and was given a copy.

Within five days after receiving the above I was on duty with my regiment and in command of one of its best companies in the field in the front of Petersburg, Va. The following is an extract from "muster-in roll of Capt. G. A. Armes in the Second Regiment of New York Artillery, Volunteers, commanded by

Col. Joseph Whistler, called into the service of the United States by the President on the 7th day of November, 1864, for the term of three years, unless sooner discharged:"

Remarks: Appointed vice Captain Clark, discharged; muster to date, November 7, 1864. I certify I have carefully examined the above-named officer who is borne on this roll, and have accepted him into the service of the United States for the term of three years, unless sooner discharged, from the 7th day of November, 1864.

(Signed) W. S. Wood,
First Lieut. and A. C. M. Mustering Officer.

Station near Petersburg, Va.
Approved: (Signed) M. H. Stacy,
First Lieut. Twelfth U. S. Infantry, Second A. C

Upon reporting for duty I found Major George Hogg in command of the regiment. I was sent out on picket duty with my company (E), where I would remain from twenty-four to forty-eight hours, and then be relieved by some other company. Then I would return to camp and there go on duty as Officer of the Day, but would drill my men in addition. There being a number of vacancies and non-commissioned officers scarce, uninformed of the reason of that condition of things, I issued my first order, making the following promotions: Corporals were promoted to sergeants as follows: Isaac P. Clarke, A. Cook, Myrick and Theodore H. Musson. A like number of privates were made corporals.

I at once began to take pride in having one of the best companies in the regiment or division, as it did not take me long to find out that the men were of a more intelligent class than the average soldiers I had been dealing with previously, and in spite of my ups and downs I have never regretted belonging to it, although I entered it under very unfavorable circumstances. Being a perfect stranger and from an outside State, it is not to be supposed that everyone in the regiment should be my friend. It was perfectly natural that many of the members would look upon me as an intruder on my accepting a commission which each one thought should have been tendered to himself. Further, the

fact that a boy of nineteen years was placed over men and officers many of whom were old enough to be his father, and in a few instances his grandfather, was another obstacle I had to contend against. And, above all, the commanding officer being so different in his habits, was hostile towards me from the day I reported for duty. In addition to being in command of my company I was required to go on duty very often as Brigade Officer of the Day, the field officers of the command being so scarce that the senior Captains of regiments were selected to perform the duty. I was very fond of the duty in spite of the danger attached to it, as I felt proud of the very important responsibility with which I was entrusted.

After we had fixed up our dug-outs, which were very comfortable when the mud chimneys worked well and did not smoke us out or when a shell thrown from the enemy's works into our camp did not suddenly hustle us from a sound sleep. We felt as if we would at least remain there through the winter. General Grant would not or could not have the heart, we thought, to take us away from our nice little houses which we had worked so hard to build and put us in the mud and snow where there was no prospect of getting fixed comfortably again during the winter. Especially would he not move us to a place where the shell would burst over and around us during the night only to make a fine display as a substitute for fireworks. Feeling, therefore, that I could get off, I sent in an application for two days' leave, which was approved until it reached Gen. Nelson A. Miles, who disapproved it. In consequence of this the application came back to me through the regular military channels from Second Army Corps headquarters disapproved.

Camp Second N. Y. H. A., December 6, 1864.

To Benson Stedman,
Adj. Second N. Y. H. A.:

Sir—I respectfully request permission to go to City Point on business for two days. I have the honor to be,

Very respectfully,
Your obedient servant,
(Signed) Geo. A. Armes,
Capt. Com. Co. E, Second N. Y. H. A.

I was badly worried, and at first could not account for what I thought was a snub or rebuke for something I had neglected, although I had not missed an hour from duty since I had joined my regiment. The fact that I believed General Miles to be friendly and to read his disapproval endorsed upon my application after it had been approved up to him made me very despondent. I could not help but feel blue, being of a very sensitive nature. I was in need of a few things which could not be procured except at City Point, and supposed, of course, the commanding officer of the regiment could grant me the two days I wished, but he could do nothing but forward every application to corps headquarters, no discretion being allowed any officer under the Major-General to grant permission for officers or men to go from their commands. As it was the first disapproval I had ever had upon an application of any kind since entering the Army, it made me sick, and while trying to think of something I had done to give cause for the disapproval I was sent for by the Major commanding the regiment, and until I appeared in his presence imagined something terrible was going to happen to me; but upon reporting—I found him in his usual condition, drunk—he mumbled out that he had sent for all of his company commanders to quietly inform them that the regiment was to move during the night, and to have our companies in readiness to move at a moment's notice, with three days' rations in the haversacks and one hundred rounds of ammunition to each man, and to go in light marching order. I at once begun to cheer up, and grew perfectly well in less than an hour at the prospect of again going into active service. I gave the necessary orders, and my company was ready to a man. In a very short time I had a close inspection, and let all the men who wished go to sleep, putting extra sentries to warn them when necessary to fall in line.

On December 9, 1864, we were all on the march before daylight, and made a halt about nine o'clock in the woods near Hatcher's Run, where we listened to the heavy firing along our front and the lines to the right and left, expecting every moment to be called into action. About 12 M. Gen. Nelson A. Miles rode up to Major Hogg, who was then in command of the regiment, and

asked for volunteers to take the works at Hatcher's Run. The Major referred him to me as the only one whom he thought would volunteer to attempt such a dangerous task. I was then in comamnd of the right wing of the regiment, and was called upon to volunteer, but I told General Miles I would not volunteer to undertake a job of that kind, but if it was his orders to charge the works I would take them if I lived and was not disabled before reaching them. He then gave me the order and to select as many men as I wished from any regiment in his division. I prepared to take my own company, E, and the color company, C, of the regiment. General Miles then explained that two regiments of his division that had undertaken to capture the works had been driven back with many men killed and wounded, left where they fell, some of them being still in the water where they were shot down. The stream had been dammed up below, causing the water to overflow the banks on each side, and the men had to wade in water from one to three feet deep before they would reach the main stream, where they would step off the edge of the bank and suddenly go down, some men sinking out of sight with the heavy weight of cartridges, equipments, etc., they wore. While the men were in the water Johnny Reb was behind his entrenchments on the other side firing at the men of the first regiment who undertook the job of getting the works, and which, after getting into the bed of the stream, lost all hope, and instead of trying to crawl up into the works, did their best to get back to where they entered. Many could not swim. The Second Regiment charged. They acted as if they would go right into Richmond before they stopped, but they didn't. They only got out into the water a little way when the bullets buzzed like swarms of bees, and instead of trying to cross over, the whole regiment turned back. Then it was that General Miles became excited and called for volunteers; but the moans and cries of the dying and wounded who were covered by the guns of the rebels who were behind these entrenchments, and many being in the water, made it look like certain death for any human being to venture across. So the General could not get a volunteer. He told me he was confident of winning the day if a few of the men would only go into

the works; that he would follow with his division and secure them. The signal was to be the firing of five guns, and at the fifth I was to charge. I marched down as near the works as I could, when the bullets began to come past us lively, when I ordered the men to lie down, and I protected myself as well as possible behind a big tree and took a view of the situation, which looked very discouraging, though I did not show my thoughts, but between the firing of the guns ordered the men to divest themselves of everything unnecessary to use in the charge; to fix bayonets and prepare themselves for a hand-to-hand contest, and if there was a man in the command who felt as if he could not go into the works to say so before we started, as I did not wish a man to turn back, and if there was but one more left I wanted him found in the works. Only one man of the command complained. His excuse was rheumatism, and a large family depended upon him, and if killed they would be in a terrible condition. I told the first sergeant he might leave Mr. (?) Carr in charge of the knapsacks and property left by the men. That order seemed to please Carr in spite of the boys reviling him. All my men seemed in the best of spirits, and at the sound of the fourth gun I commanded "Attention!" when every man sprang up, and at the fifth gun I gave the command "Forward, guide center, march!" After reaching the water we charged through it, crawling up and working our bodies through the obstacles placed in the space between the bank of the stream and the breastworks; then over we went into the works, many of our brave boys being shot or bayoneted through while dragging themselves with their heavy wet clothes up the steep embankment, behind which Johnny Reb thought himself secure, but to his sudden surprise found it necessary to let the Second New York Heavy Artillery take charge of them, while they thought it would be more beneficial to their health to be nearer Richmond, as the climate around Hatcher's Run was a little too warm.

It must have been an interesting sight for the spectators to sit and watch Companies E and C struggling in the water with the bullets whizzing past like bees and spattering the water in our faces while we were endeavoring to cross over and charge up the ramparts, which we could not have held but for General Miles'

Charge at Hatcher's Run, Va., 1864.

promptness in following right after us with his division, which saved us, as I do not believe one of the Second New York would have been spared after he had got inside the works if the large force of General Miles had not followed us so close with his pioneers, who bridged the stream with the roofs of stables and sheds and old wagons, logs, benches and everything that could be thrown into it to aid the troops in crossing.

I was unfortunately stunned in a hand-to-hand encounter with a "Johnnie" as I was going into the works, and after coming to, I have been since told, my first question was to know if we had captured the works.

Your humble servant was bayoneted in the jaw and throat, and for some time left for dead, while many of the men were stabbed through and through while crawling into the works.

Quoting from my diary of December 10, 1864, I said I am sorry we failed to go right into Petersburg, as the command made such a desperate effort to do so, but we have gained a good deal of ground

with small loss on our side, but rather heavy for the other. The rest of the regiment crossed over and came into the works close after Companies E and C, Major Hogg commanding the regiment until it reached the water, but there he and his horse, I have been told, had some trouble about crossing. After my return to camp I soon discovered that I had not committed any offense by applying for a two days' leave, as the reason for not granting it was that my services were needed in the contemplated move General Miles had planned to take place December 9, 1864. The fact is, that within a week after the capture of the works at Hatcher's Run, to my utter surprise and without the least hint or expectation that I had been noticed any more than thousands of others who had been in larger—as I thought—and more severe fights or battles than Hatcher's Run, was the announcement of my name in General Orders No. 266 from the headquarters of the First Division, Second Army Corps, December 14, 1864, of which the following is an extract:

The Brigadier-General commanding desires to express his gratification at the gallant manner in which the passage of Hatcher's Run was forced on the 9th inst., in the face of an entrenched enemy and other obstacles, by which he had made it so difficult.

To Capt. George A. Armes and Second Lieut. O. F. Bliss of the Second New York Artillery, who crossed at the head of the troops, is credit due for their gallant conduct and example. The affair, with that of October 27, when 100 men of the One Hundred and Forty-eighth Pennsylvania Volunteers, under Capt. J. E. Brown, assaulted and captured a fort of the enemy opposite Fort Morton, proves that any position can be carried by resolute and determined soldiers, when led by skillful and gallant officers. Captain Brown's gallantry has been recognized by promotion to rank of Brevet Major, and it will give the General commanding pleasure to recommend for brevet the officers who distinguished themselves at Hatcher's Run.

By order of

BRIG.-GEN. MILES.

W. R. DRIVER,

Maj. and Asst. Adjt.-Gen.

Headquarters First Brigade, First Division, Second Army Corps,

December 14, 1864.
Official: (Signed) SAML. S. KERR,
Capt. and Asst. Adjt.-Gen.
Headquarters Second New York Artillery, December 31, 1864.
Official: (Signed) B. F. STEDMAN,
First Lieut. and Asst. Adjutant.

From the fact that after two veteran regiments had failed to capture or get into the works ours in a charge not only took the works, but forced a general stampede of the whole rebel line, causing our side to win the victory of the day and Brigadier-General Miles to gain the extra star of a Major-General, being mentioned in general orders for one of the most gallant charges made during the war, our regiment was further confirmed in its gallant record. Not only will it be mentioned in history, but every man who was engaged there cannot but feel proud of the notice and complimentary orders by General Miles recognizing and giving them credit for performing their duty so faithfully.

I was sorry not to see the names of Sergeants Musson and Oliver in the order of General Miles complimenting me for capturing the works, as those two brave and gallant soldiers followed close to me in the desperate charge, and deserve a medal of honor for their brave conduct, considering that this was one of the most desperate and dangerous assaults, which could not have been carried through but for the assistance and gallantry of the men who did the work and deserve the credit as much as myself; in fact, great credit is due every man who followed me on that desperate charge. As General Miles says in the complimentary order published to the Army, "It is proven that any position can be carried by resolute and determined soldiers when led by skillful and gallant officers."

I must not fail to mention the name of Private Hector Hale, who, since the war, has made himself very popular and useful in purchasing and publishing the *Oneida Free Press* and keeping together the organization of the old Second New York Artillery. Among others I feel it my duty to mention Maj. O. F. Hulser, who proved his true friendship to me by acts and deeds in times

of need, and who is now enjoying life at his retreat in the Adirondacks, where he entertains his friends in princely style.

Up to that time the officers of the regiment, including the commanding officer, Major Hogg, had done everything they could to make the position disagreeable for me. He was in a drunken and disgraceful condition most of the time, but soon after this general order was promulgated there was a sudden change, and I became one of the most popular officers in the regiment from the simple fact that I was the means of its being mentioned in general orders and complimented for the first time during the war, notwithstanding the many battles and engagements in which it had participated during the campaign from the Wilderness to Petersburg. However, it created quite a jealousy and envy among a number of outsiders in the first division.

The first time I had occasion to notice the feeling outside of my regiment was in a report made by Colonel Crafts of the Fifth New Hampshire Volunteers, which was referred to me for a reply. As Colonel Crafts had been absent from his regiment most of the time when it was composed of good men and officers, who were most all killed and wounded in battle, he was advanced in rank and got command of the regiment after it had been filled up with recruits and substitutes, and not having been noticed in orders by any of the officers over him, he felt jealous of any public notice in the part I took at Hatcher's Run, and made an uncalled-for report to the General commanding the brigade.

CHAPTER IV.

January 6, 1865.

I always made it a rule not to show partiality to men of my company, but as young Collins (Brown) was a bright boy and a good penman I selected him as company clerk. His father's letter to me was only a sample of hundreds I have received from parents whose sons were in my command since I entered the Army. Some of the best men North enlisted in the artillery regiment, as it was given out that they would be placed on duty in defence of the Capitol and would not have to go into the field and endure the hardships of the common soldier. Under those circumstances most every profession or trade, and men from nineteen to sixty years of age, from the minister who sacrificed the duty he was required to perform to the patriotic crossroad farmer, who would leave his farm and stock in charge of his young sons, and then the gambler, who enlisted in order that he could get better acquainted with the boys after payday, were all put together. I shall never forget many of the complaints made to me as Captain. The preacher would often come to my quarters to let me know that men were playing cards for money, and that it would be much better for them to be reading their Bible or praying. The steady old farmer would complain of the preacher continually annoying them with his prayers and advice to prepare for death, etc. Smith would complain that Jones was putting on too much style for a soldier, and that he and his tentmate did not want him in their tent or dugout; that Sergeant Brown or Corporal Simmons were not fit to be over good men; that they belonged to a low class with whom they would be ashamed to mingle at home, and did not wish to serve under them.

I would change them from one tent to another until I had them classed off in very good shape. I still remember the many complaints brought to me against Van Allen, whose father was a broker, and the only fault they could find was that he put on too much style for a non-commissioned officer. It was not long before I had peace and good feeling in the company, but I had to work hard to accomplish it, as my Lieutenants were not of much service, they being of a rather complaining and fault-finding dis-

position. Much better material existed in the ranks for officers than they.

Two months had not passed ere I had my company in such a good condition that the steadiest and most careful inspectors, who would examine not only the general appearance of the company, but would carefully inspect each gun, the equipments and clothing, quarters, cook-tent, company books and all papers and records, but he would require me to drill and maneuver the company in his presence, and it would make me feel quite proud after the inspection to hear him say, "Captain, I am well pleased with the appearance of your company and its management, and have no fault to find or suggestions to make more than to say, continue as you have started and you will always get a favorable report from the inspector." The most of my time was required in looking after the men, who had a hard time in keeping everything clean and in order, as many of them had to sleep in mud and dirt most of the time during the fall and winter of 1864 and 1865 while in front of Petersburg, as it snowed and rained, froze and thawed, so that the red mud was over the shoetops in many places in camp, which the men were obliged to walk through, being without stoves and scarcely anything in the shape of fuel except green pine wood in fireplaces with our mud chimneys, which would smoke us all out of quarters at times, while we would have to stand in the cold mud until the chimneys were fixed or the quarters made more comfortable. Our guard duties were about the same from one day to another. The men were in camp from three to six days at a time, and would have to drill, do police duty, perform general guard duty and be on the watch day and night to keep from being surprised by the rebels, who were encamped within a few hundred yards of us, all the time watching for a chance to gobble us up; and as some of us had very comfortable little houses plastered with mud, we were not going to let them be taken from us if we could help it. In addition to the camp duties the men were obliged to go out on picket duty from twenty-four to forty-eight hours. On that duty men were not supposed to lie down, take off their clothes or go to sleep, but many had deep holes dug in the ground where they could sit and talk and keep warm the best they could from the little fire allowed in the hole in the ground which protected them from the bullets of the rebel pickets or sharpshooters when careful

not to expose themselves; but often careless men were shot, which, however, made but little impression upon other soldiers, as it was such a common event to see a wounded or dead comrade.

It was astonishing how contented most of the men were, some of whom had lived in their brownstone fronts, with every comfort in life that money could afford; but we made up our minds that we were soldiers and those over us had put us where we were, and that it would not better our condition to find fault or appear the least discontented; so we obeyed all orders and kept up as cheerful a front as possible. Although a mere boy, I was obliged at times to assume the dignity of an old judge. I took such a pride in having a company of my own that I felt as if I would like to remain in the Army all the time. On January 1, 1865, I wrote to my old Colonel, who had gone into civil life, for a letter of recommendation for the regular Army, and the following was his reply:

Office of Close, Corbett & Monroe
Washington City, Jany 5th 1865.
227 Penn Av.

Jas. T. Close
F. E. Corbett
Wm. A. Monroe

Dear Sir:

This is to certify that Capt. Armes existed in my Regiment in the year 1862, and soon after was promoted to a Lieut in Co. A. of the same He proved a faithful Officer and has been promoted since to the Captaing in a nother Regiment He is now desirous of obtaining a position in the Regular Army and think he would make a valuable Officer and fill the position with Honor to himself and to his country

James T. Close,
Late Col. 16th Va. Vols.

Upon showing the above letter to a regular Army officer friend, he told me I would have to go in as a Second Lieutenant, as no positions were given in the line to a higher rank. That so discouraged me I would not apply for it, as I thought it would be rather a come-down to accept a Second Lieutenantcy after having been a full Captain. So I went on with my duties as Captain of Company E and as Brigade Officer of the Day.

As I was in command of the regiment one day on account of Major Hogg's being sick (drunk) I detailed myself for duty and reported accordingly, showing my own orders at headquarters.

Not having a horse of my own, one was always furnished to me from brigade headquarters for my tours of service, lasting from twenty-four to forty-eight hours.

January 7, 1865.

While performing the duty of Brigade Officer of the Day I often met field officers of different regiments whom I had not seen since I was on the staff of the corps commander. Among them was the Lieutenant-Colonel of the One hundred and twenty-fifth New York, who suggested that I come into his regiment as a Major, and that if I would go to Elmira and get three companies, or enough more to make three companies, he would see that I got my commission. I told him to put the proposition in writing and get the approval of the brigade commander and I would undertake the job. The following was received by me within a week afterward:

Headquarters 125th N. Y. Volunteer Infantry,
January 7, 1865.

I do hereby agree, if Capt. Geo. A. Armes, Second New York Artillery will procure three companies for my regiment, that I will make him Major of the same, that vacancy now existing.

(Signed) Joseph Hyde,
Lieut.-Col. Commanding 125th N. Y. V. I.,
3d Brigade, 1st Division, 2d A. C.

(Endorsement.)

Headquarters 3d Brigade, 1st Division, 2d A. C.,
January 9, 1865.

I approve of the within. Captain Armes made an agreement with me last summer to recruit three companies for this regiment, but was ordered to the field before he had time to undertake it.

I respectfully request that he be permitted to make the trial. I have confidence in his ability to accomplish what he attempts.

(Signed) C. D. MacDougall,
Col. Commanding Brigade.

The Lieutenant-Colonel of the Second New York having resigned about that time, promoted Major Hogg to Lieutenant-Colonel, leaving a vacancy as Major, and as several officers of my regiment requested me not to send in my application to go into another regiment, I did not, but concluded to wait my chances for promotion in my own regiment. As Captain Humphreys ranked me, I supposed he or his friends would secure his promotion, and did not make the least effort to secure it for myself; but from what I could learn at the time, Captain Humphreys was indifferent and made no effort, and the result was that a gentleman by the name of Selkirk came to the regiment with a commission as Major signed by the Governor of New York. The officers at once called a meeting and got up a protest, and twenty officers signed it to be forwarded to General Miles, hoping to prevent his muster in and the appointment of Captain Humphreys or myself.

* * * * * * * * * * *

They all seemed determined that the new Major should not come into the regiment if they could prevent it. The above petition was brought to me with a request that I take it in person to General Miles. I declined to take any part in the matter, and still have the original in my possession, which I do not believe General Miles has seen to this day. I submitted to the Major coming into the regiment, as any true soldier should have done.

I felt as bad as anyone, as I was very ambitious and anxious for promotion; but I took the ground that a Governor of a State had the right to commission anyone he saw fit, and it was not the place of subordinates to question his action. Very few regiments in the field had officers all from the same State. It was not a time to question where a man was from so it was known that he had united with the defenders of the Union.

Having been without my trunk and with nothing but a change of clothing for three months, I sent a note to General Williams, chief of General Meade's staff, to get it for me when he went to Washington if it would not be too much trouble; so on February 1 I received the following telegram:

Headquarters Army of the United States,
City Point, Va., February 1, 1865.

Capt. G. A. Armes,
Second N. Y. Artillery, 1st Div., 2d Army Corps:

I brought from Washington for you a trunk and sword. Please send for them tomorrow (Tuesday), as I may leave here the following day. My quarters are with General Ingalls.

(Signed) SETH WILLIAMS,
Brig.-Gen.

Such kindness on his part rendered to those he could help made General Williams one of the most beloved officers in the Army. His name is not only fastened on my memory as a soldier, but as a generous and obliging friend.

Treasury Department,
Washington, January 31, 1865.

Dear George:

Your trunk, sword and key, after so long a tribulation, started this P. M. for Annapolis to go to the front in care of Gen. Seth Williams, your old friend you knew, who remembered you. He says he will immediately telegraph you from City Point. He has the key. Herewith find letters from General Hancock, etc., inside.

* * *

Affectionately,
YOUR FATHER.

A letter I wrote to the Surgeon-General seemed to have its effect, for soon after its return to me quite a number of men were returned to duty from the hospital and in time to take a part in the little maneuver and attack we made before the grand move.

The month of March was a busy one for both Armies, which for a few weeks before appeared as if they were asleep, as far as any active service was concerned. New life seemed to inspire the men, and the atmosphere seemed to invigorate and produce a sudden change in every man. About the last of March the whole Army was in motion, sweeping everything before it as we marched along, such as chickens, pigs, horses, cows, turkeys, sheep and even the contrabands, who would amuse the boys at the camp fires, dancing their jigs.

My company was in splendid shape and had been specially excused from fatigue and other extra duties for one week by Major

Husler only a short time before on account of its good discipline and cleanly condition, etc.

March 31, 1865.

While I was in command of the right wing of the regiment one of the brigade staff rode up to me with orders to prepare to to charge on the works in our front, one of the keys to Petersburg. I supposed he meant at once, as he seemed excited and in a great hurry, so I gave the command "Forward!" Just as we were about going into the works we were called back, causing many of the men to scatter and get mixed. I did not want to come back, but made up my mind to take the works. Not having a flag or guidon, I spied an old gray shirt on the ground and at once held it up on the point of my sabre, ordering the boys to rally around and follow me into the works.

Some few misconstrued my object and did not support me as I wished. If they had done so the Second New York would have had the credit of being the first regiment that took the works in front of Petersburg, as there were but few "Johnnies" behind them at that time. Instead of capturing the works that afternoon we held them that night, I receiving the following order after applying for 500 more men:

Headquarters 1st Brigade, 1st Division, 2d Army Corps,
March 31, 1864.

Capt. G. A. Armes,
Second New York Artillery:

Sir—I send you twenty-five men in addition. The Colonel commanding Brigade directs that you make a good, strong picket line and throw up protection in your front. The Third Brigade will be relieved tonight. Keep the connection with the Fifth Corps, and if you lose connection with your right, report the fact to these headquarters. By order of

Col. G. W. Scott.
Wm. McCallaster,
Capt. and A. A. A. G.

Colonel Scott highly complimented me for keeping connection with such a small number of men during the night.

I was placed in a very responsible position, and there was little sleep for us, as we all began to see that our work would begin in earnest the next day, it being one of the weakest points upon our whole front.

April 1, 1865.

Charges were made by other troops on the works, and on the second we had Petersburg and the whole rebel Army retreating and our Army after them. The pursuit was followed up night and day until we reached Burksville, then on to Farmville, where we had our last fight, which was short and severe, quite a number of valuable officers and men being killed in the engagement, among them General Smyth and Captain Boyd, two warm personal friends of mine. Captain Boyd had ben wounded seventeen times and only lately returned to the field hardly recovered from the last one to be killed in the last engagement of the Army of the Potomac on the evening of April 8, 1865.

The next day terms of surrender were made.

(General Lee's Acceptance of the Terms.)
Headquarters Army Northern Virginia,
April 9, 1865.

Lieut.-Gen. U. S. Grant,
Commanding United States Armies:

General—I have received your letter of this date, containing the terms of the surrender of the Army of Northern Virginia, as proposed by you. As they are substantially the same as those expressed in your letter of the 8th inst., they are accepted. I will proceed to designate the proper officer to carry the stipulation into effect. Very respectfully,

Your obedient servant,
(Signed) R. E. Lee,
General.

After that great event the most of our Army marched back through the mud, for it had been raining and the roads, as well as the fields were almost impassable, to Burksville Station, where we encamped for a few weeks before starting on our grand and long march through Richmond on our way to Washington. There Gen. C. C. Auger was in command of the department.

April 12, 1865.

While we were in camp at Burksville my father visited me for the first time since I had been in the field, coming by the way of Richmond, which had been captured after he left his home, and which he had the satisfaction of exploring before I did in spite of my having been nearly four years trying to get there.

The camp accommodations were all that I could tender my father, and he, not being accustomed to the ways of a soldier in making the best of his situation, did not remain long; but he had the satisfaction of seeing a great deal of Army life and what men could endure when obliged to during an active campaign, returning to Washington pleased with his visit to me and qualified with a stock of knowledge he could not have gained in any other way but by personal experience.

Soon after he left the general court-martials were organized in the different commands of the Army of the Potomac to try such offenders as the commanding officers of regiments wished to vent their spite upon—in some cases, at least.

I was one of the victims (Arrest No. 8) of a drunken Lieutenant-Colonel named George Hogg (a hog by nature as well), who signed a set of fixed-up, manufactured and false charges for the purpose of forcing me out of the service if possible. The pretext was that I had ordered an enlisted man to do my cooking and not reporting the fact; also that I requested Colonel Hogg to delay the execution of an order from the War Department so that Private Charles F. Jones could draw his pay and bounty.

"Third, that he did appropriate sugar, etc., to his own private use contrary to the wishes of the company."

The general court-martial consisted of Brev.-Col. John S. Hammill, Sixty-sixth New York Volunteers; Lieut.-Col. L. W. Husk, One hundred and eleventh New York Volunteers; Lieut.-Col. James Hyde, One hundred and twenty-fifth New York Volunteers; Maj. S. F. Gould, Fourth New York Artillery; Maj. H. G. Egburt (lately killed while gallantly leading his regiment against the Filipinos), One hundred and eighty- third Pennsylvania Volunteers; Capt. ——— Nelson, Twenty-sixth Michigan Volunteers; Capt. A. J. Smith, Fourth New York Artillery; Capt. A. J. Hilliard, Fifth New Hampshire Volunteers; Capt. ——— Liebenon, Sixty-first New York Volunteers; Capt. Thomas Henry, One hundred and fortieth Pennsylvania Volunteers, Judge-Advocate.

I pleaded not guilty to the charges and specifications, and feeling confident the court could not find me guilty on such a set of manufactured stuff, I did not employ any counsel to defend me. I appeared before the court April 20, 1865. Court-Martial No. 1.

Upon the perjured testimony of Lieuts. A. Cook, Myrick and one Edmund Jessup, who swore that I had an enlisted man in my quarters for a week or two, although the testimony proved the man who did my cooking was properly accounted for on my reports, I was found guilty of having a man cook for me on February 27, 1865, at camp near Patrick's Station, Virginia.

It was shown that only half a pint of sugar had been used by me from the company's rations, and then at a time when it could not be procured anywhere else, but that it was returned. The evidence proved that I did my duty in the Jones case; that nothing underhanded had been done by me in any transaction; but the court went through the form of sentencing me to dismissal. But it united in a recommendation of the sentence being remitted, and I was restored to duty with my company by orders of Gen. George G. Meade. Although Maj. O. F. Hulser of my regiment was called for the prosecution, he gave good evidence in my behalf.

Question by the Judge-Advocate: Do you know whether Captain Armes had an enlisted man doing his cooking at any time?

Answer. I do not.

J.-A. Do you know whether Captain Armes did at any time solicit Lieutenant-Colonel Hogg to suspend the execution of an order concerning an enlisted man?

Answer. Not of my own personal knowledge.

By the Accused: What is the character of the accused as an officer and gentleman?

Answer. It is good. He has always, as far as I have observed, performed his duty. While in action at Hatcher's Run, in a charge our regiment made, Captain Armes was in front, and was mentioned afterwards in general orders from Division headquarters for his bravery. The discipline of his company is equal to any in the regiment. I have excused his company for a week from picket on account of its cleanliness.

Question by the Court: What is his reputation for truth and veracity?

Answer. I believe the accused to be a man of truth and veracity.

The above is a true copy of the words used under oath by Major Hulser at a time when I was being persecuted by my Lieutenant-Colonel, which should be sufficient proof that I did my duty, he being in a position where he could judge.

Just before the Army started for Washington, by way of Richmond, my brother made me a visit. He had with him a commission as Second Lieutenant in the Second New York Heavy Artillery. On reaching Richmond he was satisfied that there was not as much pleasure and honor in being a commissioned officer as he had anticipated, and bade me good-bye, concluding he would prefer going back to Washington on the boat rather than to walk with the regiment, so he was not mustered in. Soon after bidding him good-bye at the Spottswood Hotel I met Dan

GEN. ROBERT E. LEE.

Lee, a nephew of Gen. Robert E. Lee and a brother of Gen. Fitzhugh Lee, the late Governor of Virginia (now Brigadier-General and on duty in Havana). Dan and I were playmates before the war, and I had not seen him since our last meeting at the home of his aunt, Mrs. Fitzhugh of Ravensworth, adjoining my fathers's property at Annandale, Fairfax county, Virginia.

He and I were about the same age and warm friends as boys. He went in the Southern Navy, and had arrived in Richmond only two days before I did. He appeared as glad to see me as if there had been no war or differences of opinion between us, and at once invited me to the house of his uncle, Gen. R. E. Lee, where I remained an hour or two, and just as I was about to leave he handed me a large-sized photograph of the General in full uniform, to which the General affixed his autograph. I retain it to this day, and shall never forget the sad expression of his face as the General shook hands and bade me good-bye, I little dreaming that it would be the last time I would ever see him alive again. It was only a few days before that he was in command of one of the bravest and most devoted Armies that was ever organized.

My regiment camped near Yellow Tavern the first night after passing through Richmond, and having a good opportunity to keep from marching on foot, I secured a very good horse in exchange for a watch, which I thought would not be as useful to me at that time as a horse, and I rode the greater part of the way from Richmond to Washington. After our arrival there we went into camp at Arlington Heights, Va.

Being very anxious to visit my family, who were in the city only three or four miles from camp, I obtained a pass for that purpose and met my family and many friends, who were as glad to see me and as much surprised as if I had returned from among the dead, many having given up all hope of seeing me again, as I was thought by some to be a very reckless, daredevil sort of a boy. The 29th of May came so quickly after reaching my home that I did not care to return to camp if an extension of leave could be secured, which I applied for and received.

After reporting back to my regiment it was soon decided that the Second New York Artillery should not be mustered out, but retained for a while longer and be placed in charge of the forts and public property around Arlington Heights. My company was among the six ordered to garrison Fort Whipple. After we had been settled there a few days General Meade's farewell order was published:

Headquarters Army of the Potomac,
June 28, 1865.

Soldiers:

This day two years ago I assumed command of you under the orders of the President of the United States; today, by virtue of the same authority, this army ceases to exist. I have to announce my transfer to other duties and my separation from you. It is unnecessary to enumerate here all that has occurred in these two eventful years, from the grand and decisive battle of Gettysburg, the turning point of the war, to the surrender of the Army of Northern Virginia at Appomattox Court House. Suffice it to say that history will do you justice. A grateful country will honor the living, cherish and support the disabled, and sincerely mourn the dead.

In parting from you, your Commanding General will ever bear in memory your noble devotion to your country—your patience and cheerfulness under all the privations and sacrifices you have been called on to endure.

Soldiers, having accomplished the work set before us, having vindicated the honor and integrity of our Government and flag, let us return thanks to Almighty God for His blessings in granting us victory and peace, and let us earnestly pray for strength and light to discharge our duties as citizens, as we have endeavored to discharge them as soldiers.

(Signed) Geo. G. Meade,
Major-General, U. S. A.

That order was the last that was issued, and when it was read to the grand old Army of the Potomac, which was ordered to fall in line under arms at their camps, posts and stations, the tears could be seen upon many an old veteran's cheeks, whose thoughts, no doubt, were wandering over what that Army had passed through during the time he helped make it what it was. To feel that their old commander was issuing his *last* order was enough to make most any soldier of that Army feel sad.

As the fact as to how the Army of the Potomac got its name has never been made public, I will relate the circumstances as told by ex-Gov. George Stoneman of California, who was my guest during his last visit to this city. He accompanied me to spend an evening with his old friend, Gen. R. C. Drum, the Adjutant-General of the Army. During the conversation about how he first happened to be on duty here, he said that after Gen. George B. McClellan had been placed in command of the Army he was made chief of staff, and one day when General Scott had a meet-

ing of his officers to advise and consult about the general condition of affairs he called upon the officers present to suggest a name. One suggested Army of Virginia; another, Army of Washington; another, Army of the Union, etc., when General Stoneman said "Army of the Potomac." General Scott at once slapped his hand down on the table, saying, "That's it, that's it. Let the Army hereafter be known as the 'Army of the Potomac.'"

There being seventy-five or one hundred prisoners at Fort Whipple at this time, of course it had a tendency to increase the duties and a great deal of work necessary to be done, many of the prisoners were put to work hauling sod, fixing up the ramparts, and, in fact, giving the whole place a general cleaning up; and within fifteen days it had changed from a dirty, dismal and neglected-looking one to a clean, bright and cheerful resort for the many visitors daily and hourly stopping to look through the fort and garrison. People from most all parts of the world when in Washington would stop over to see Fort Whipple and Arlington Heights, situated only a short distance from the fort. The place that R. E. Lee and his wife owned before the war had a great attraction for many.

Having good quarters and a place to receive and entertain, I endeavored to make visitors interested by allowing them as many privileges as possible. The enlisted men, as well as the officers of the garrison, seemed pleased to have the opportunity of mingling with and talking to those who had never seen a fort or talked with a soldier before.

The following are in relation to the dismantling of the forts around Washington and disposition of the ordnance stores, a great deal of which was turned over to me at Fort Whipple, it having been decided that the other forts should be discontinued. Fort Whipple is retained to this day, but is now known as Fort Myer, named after Coloned Myer, formerly Chief Signal Officer, U. S. A.:

Headquarters 1st Brigade, De Russey's Division, 2d A. C.,
June 26, 1865.

Having been assigned to the duty of placing the proper armaments in the forts to be retained in the Department of Washington, south of the Potomac, from those to be dismantled, and turning over all surplus ordnance and ordnance stores as are not needed to the Ordnance Department, in compliance with orders from

headquarters, De Russey's Division, I herewith furnish you with a memorandum of changes to be made at your post, which must be strictly observed.

The ammunition, implements, equipments, etc., which are to go to other forts must be packed separately for the forts for which they are to go, and every box or barrel plainly labeled.

These labels will give a memorandum of each article contained in the package, from what fort the package is from, and to what fort the package is to be sent, etc., giving minute directions for the entire dismantling.

GEO. A. ARMES,
Capt. 2d New York Artillery, Com. Ft. Whipple.

As we had no band at our post, General Whistler would occasionally loan his regimental band, which would give a great deal of pleasure, and the music would cheer many a discontented soldier, whose only thoughts seemed to dwell on the fact that the war was over and he ought to be allowed to go home. Therefore I had to be on my guard to devise means and ways to divert the thoughts of many upon other things, and no doubt such as did not understand my motives thought I was most too strict and exacting for a commanding officer of volunteers. But Companies E, G, L and M made a fine showing on the dress parades, drills and other duties, which were daily watched and admired by the many visitors. I do not believe there were four companies in any regular regiment in our Army that could have done more effective work in action, make a better appearance on parade or be more active and precise in drilling and maneuvering than the above during the month of July, 1865.

During the short time I remained at Fort Whipple the great Army which covered hundreds of acres of land immediately around the city of Washington disappeared. Regiment after regiment marched to the depot and were loaded upon the trains as fast as cars could be procured, until nothing but the guard of a few volunteer soldiers were left to protect the Government property until the few regular troops could be distributed to take their places.

During the month of July, 1865, when the trial of Mrs. Surratt, Payne and other conspirators connected with the assassination of Mr. Lincoln was in progress at the Washington Arsenal, an order came to me at Fort Whipple from the War Department to turn my command over to the next ranking officer and report to the

Adjutant-General of the Army at once. I was alarmed at first, fearing that Mr. Stanton was going to cut my time short in the Army upon the report of some enemy who I imagined had manufactured something that gave Mr. Stanton an excuse to bring me before him. Within one hour from the time I received the order I was in the presence of General Townsend, who at once said he had sent for me to obtain some reliable information for the Secretary of War, and asked me if I knew Dan Lee, a nephew of Gen. R. E. Lee. I told him I did, and had seen him within the past few days. As soon as he was assured that what I said was true he took me into Mr. Stanton's presence, who told me to describe Dan Lee and state how many times I had seen him since General Lee's surrender. After appearing satisfied with my statement he told General Townsend to go with me to the Arsenal and show me all the conspirators who were being tried and see if Mr. Lee was among them.

After our arrival there General Townsend saw General Hunter, the president of the court-martial, who took a recess of the court, and all the prisoners were brought into the room and seated upon a bench. General Townsend then requested me to point out Dan Lee from among them. After a close inspection I informed the General that he was not among the number. He told me I must certainly be mistaken; to look again, and be more careful, and see if there was anyone there who resembled him.

I pointed to one of the prisoners who sat in the center on the bench, remarking that he resembled Mr. Lee more than any of the rest, but that he did not belong to the Lee family.

General Townsend and I then returned to the War Department and reported to Secretary Stanton, who seemed to doubt my report at first, until I offered to go with anyone he would send to the residence of Mrs. Fitzhugh, his aunt, at Annandale, Fairfax county, Virginia, with whom Mr. Lee had been residing since the surrender. After explaining to Mr. Stanton that my father owned the adjoining property, and that Dan Mason Lee and I were boys together, he said he was satisfied that I was right. Colonel Baker, the detective, who was present at this time, flew into a rage, and stated that the prisoner Payne, whom I had pointed out as the one most nearly resembling Dan Lee of any of the prisoners, was not true; that he was in disguise, and that his name was not Payne, but that he was a nephew of General Lee, who was impli-

cated in the assassination of Mr. Lincoln, and had sent his nephew Dan to assist in the assassination of Mr. Lincoln and the Cabinet. Mr. Stanton at once ordered Colonel Baker to leave the room, as he saw he was trying to get up a scheme to have Gen, R. E. Lee and family arrested in conection with the conspirators.

The villainous scheme of Baker was thwarted by my being able to convince Mr. Stanton that Payne, the conspirator, was not Dan Lee, which, in my opinion, prevented the arrest of Gen. R. E. Lee and others of his family. The failure to accomplish this vile purpose in getting Mr. Stanton to aid in trying to connect General Lee with such a crime ended his power and influence with the Secretary of War and other authorities, and soon after the news of Baker's suicide was made public.

I have not to this day seen anyone who has expressed the least sympathy for him. I do not believe there was a man in the United States who had more power at one time than Baker so far as concerned arresting innocent people, thrusting them in prison, confiscating their property and burning houses and barns in the night, sending helpless women and children out in the snow and obliging them in some cases to go miles before they could find shelter.

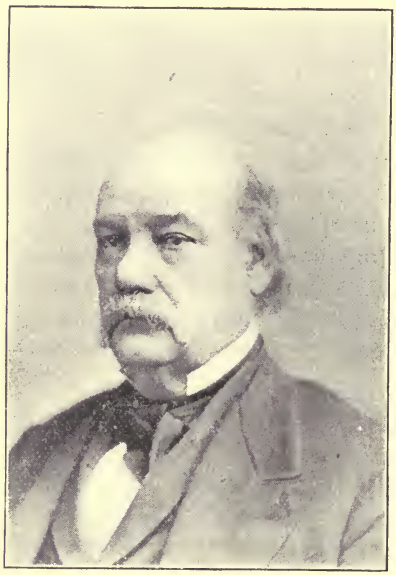
After I had satisfied Mr. Stanton as to the facts I returned to my post.

After promptly complying with all previous orders I was handed another ordering me to report to the War Department Bureau of Refugees, Freedmen and Abandoned Lands.

Just as I had moved in my new quarters and assumed charge at Alexandria, Va., Colonel Marsh arrived and took command, giving me following orders assigning me to duty as superintendent for the counties of Fairfax and Alexandria, with headquarters at Fairfax Court House, which took me within six miles of my farm and old home in Fairfax county, Virginia, which I had left at the breaking out of the war over four years before, the improvements on which had all been destroyed, leaving nothing but the walls of the Castle and foundation of buildings and stumps of the orchard, which had also been destroyed.

I complied with the order at once, taking a good supply of passes signed in blank, so that I could insert my name or the name of any one of my command to whom I wished to grant a pass.

Upon reaching Fairfax Court House I took possession, according to orders, of the residence and property of the Hon. Henry W. Thomas, who with his family had been in Richmond during the war, but just as I was about moving in Mrs. Thomas and her children appeared, having just returned from Richmond, and pleaded with me to let them go in their own house, which I did, after another one just as good for my purpose had been secured.



EX-GOV. THOMAS OF VA.

As I was free to go where I pleased, I had but little to do, and with officers, horses and teams at my command and disposal, having plenty of room in my house to entertain and receive visitors, I made it a point to have quite a number of them all the time, my principal duties being to investigate the complaints of the darkies and their masters, the refugees and Union people who had returned to their homes or to the land where their homes had been before the war.

Col. James Jackson having named the tournament he had given at the time the State seceded (described in Chapter I) the "Grand Secession Tournament," and as I had been the successful

knight at the same, I felt that as the war was over it would tend to restore family relations between estranged neighbors to give one to be known as "The Grand Union Tournament" as an offset to the one given by Jackson.

I announced the 5th of September, 1865, as the day fixed for the "Grand Union Tournament" to be held at Fairfax Court House, sending out handbills all over the country, inviting those who were disposed to take an interest in it to report to me, and explaining that no distinction would be shown to one party more than to the other. When it took place forty-eight knights, besides the marshals, aids, heralds and assistants took a part, many having been with Mosby and in the different branches of the service in the Confederate Army. Most all the Union or Army officers of my district took an active part, riding as knights and meeting the Southern boys on as friendly terms as if there had been no differences of opinion between them.

Seats were fixed up and awnings erected from the branches of trees which I had directed to be hauled from the woods, and every possible convenience for the comfort of the many gathered there was arranged.

Many people from Washington and Alexandria came in on extra trains and in stages, hacks and buggies. Others came in ox-carts and on foot for miles to witness the grand affair.

Speeches were made by General Massey, postmaster at Alexandria, and others, and it turned out to be a grand success.

But the most singular part of it was that I should ride as one of the knights under the title of "Hope Castle," the name of my old home, which had been destroyed during the war, and then to be pronounced by the judge as the successful knight, entitled to crown the Queen of Love and Beauty, having been awarded that honor by the judges at Colonel Jackson's Tournament over four years before.

This created quite a sensation and remark by many persons who had witnessed both affairs. As I had outgrown my bashfulnes to some extent, I crowned the eldest daughter of General Massey at the ball given in the evening, which was kept up until sunrise the next morning.

It was interesting to see the grounds around where the tournament took place filled with all kinds of vehicles. Many of the ladies who had attended the tournament given by Mr. Jackson

only a few years before, coming in their carriages elegantly dressed and with their turnouts, came now in an ox-cart with a little brother or aged father driving, and all dressed in homespun.

But they were received by me in as friendly a spirit as if no misfortunes had overtaken them, and I made them feel as comfortable as was possible.

In the afternoon after the tournament was over horseracing was indulged in, and all seemed pleased with their visit to Fairfax Court House.

Following is a copy of a large bill which I had directed to be posted on trees and in postoffices throughout the several counties:

GRAND UNION TOURNAMENT AT FAIRFAX COURT HOUSE.

A Tournament will be held at Fairfax Court House on Tuesday, September 5, 1865. The Coronation Ball will be given at the Union Hall in the evening. Addresses will be given by Brig-Gen. W. D. Massey, Postmaster of Alexandria, and Thomas J. Murray of Fairfax. Knights will report to Capt. Geo. A. Armes at Fairfax Court House.

Committee on Arrangements—Amos Fox, A. Hoag, D. Mason Lee, W. Broughton, Rollins Fowle and Capt. Geo. A. Armes.

Committee for Receiving Knights—Dr. Robert F. Simpson, Gilbert S. Miner, J. B. Bowman, G. W. Lee and C. W. Turley.

Marshals—Col. James T. Close, William H. Delaney, Amos Fox, Col. Daniel F. Delaney and Albert Coxen.

Heralds—B. McNeil, Dallas Powell, A. Alexander, Col. D. Windsor.

Committee on Invitation—W. Powell, R. H. Cockrell, O. W. Hunt.

Judges—W. Powell, R. H. Cockrell and Dr. V. P. Gunnell.

A fine band of music will be in attendance.

In order to have the ball a select affair the folowing invitation was sent and each person invited by name:

Complimentary.

M————————:

The pleasure of your company is requested at a Grand Tournament and Ball to be given at Fairfax Court House September 5, 1865, by, Yours, very sincerely,

CAPT. GEO. A. ARMES,
For the Committee.

The ballroom was crowded at the appointed time, and when I placed the elegant crown on the "Queen of Love and Beauty" there was grand applause and the music and dancing commenced, the Queen and maids of honor forming two sets to themselves, one Queen and seven maids of honor.

The *Alexandria Gazette* gave a report as follows:

* * * The following names are among the list of knights who fearlessly and nobly contested for the honors of crowning the queen, and although all but one was doomed to be vanquished, yet they all evinced great skill in horsemanship and dexterity with the lance: Carlton Lewis, Knight of Mount Royal; William E. Armes, Knight of Raven Plume; Edward Javins, Knight of the Turf; John Heath, Knight of Annandale; Chas. Taylor, Knight of Burk's Station; Wisewell Terrett, Knight of Defiance; Geo. A. Armes, Knight of Hope Castle; Will Trammell, Knight of Arlington; George French, Knight of Potomac; C. H. Armes, Knight of Olive Branch; T. J. Murray, Knight of Virginia; S. M. Baker, Knight of Cumberland; H. Bailey, Knight of Bailey's Cross Roads.

At the conclusion of the tilting it was decided that the "Knight of Hope Castle," Capt. Geo. A. Armes, had borne off the ring the greatest number of times, and was, therefore, entitled to select a fair lady for his queen. He choose Miss Carrie Massey of Alexandria. To William E. Armes was given the privilege of choosing the first maid of honor, and he selected Miss Lizzie Smoot of Washington. Lieutenant French, the next on the list, chose as second maid of honor Miss Libbie Bowman of Vienna, and Capt. S. M. Baker chose Miss Annie E. Close of Alexandria as third maid of honor. A speech was then delivered to the knights by Thomas J. Murray of Fairfax, which was pronounced very fine, and was followed by one from Gen. W. D. Massey to the queen and her maids of honor.

Afterward a trial of speed between the horses of the respective knights was indulged in, which resulted in the victory of the fine mare owned and ridden by Capt. Geo. A. Armes.

A grand ball at the Union Hotel in the evening closed the festivities, which were pronounced by all to have been of the most pleasing and unexceptionable character.

A few days after the tournament was over an old Irish woman by the name of Kearney, who claimed she had been a laundress for General Auger before the war, fixed up a store in a little shanty in the village and sold whiskey to the soldiers to such an extent that several whiskey rows took place between citizens and sol-

diers. In one of these disturbances the discharge of a six-shooter at a soldier from the hand of one of the lawless citizens caused me to take it away from him, as there was no civil law that could be fully enforced. Instead of coming to me after he got sober, he complained to General Auger at Washington that I had taken his pistol. The General at once sent the following letter to General Howard:

Headquarters Department of Washington,
Twenty-second Army Corps,
Washington, D. C., September 12, 1865.

Dear General:

The bearer, Mr. Fletcher, complains that a pistol has been taken from him by Captain Armes at Fairfax Court House, on the grounds that citizens are not permitted to have arms.

I am not aware of any such order, and fancy that Captain Armes is acting without orders from you. Will you be good enough to have him instructed not to interfere with citizens, except so far as duties in your Bureau require it?

I am, truly yours,
(Signed) C. C. Auger,
Major-General.

General O. O. Howard.

The following endorsement was placed on the above letter and referred to me:

Bureau of Refugees and Freedmen, etc., Washington, D. C.
Captain Armes,
Asst. Supt., etc.:

You will immediately return this man his pistol, and as you have no authority to act as provost marshal, or in any capacity outside of your legitimate duties as Superintendent of the Bureau, you will make no more seizures, and restore any property of whatever description you may have taken in violation of such authority.

By order of
Maj.-Gen. O. O. Howard,
Samuel G. Taggard,
A. A. G.

Almost every citizen in my district had either a gun or a pistol, and no one else but the complainant had been interfered with during the whole time, I was in command, and under the circumstances could not do otherwise than I did. If I had allowed him

to shoot one or two soldiers and not interfered I would have been blamed more than I was.

Mrs. Kearney continued to sell whiskey to the soldiers in spite of my warning and that of the civil authorities, who seemed to have no power to enforce any of the laws at that time.

Subsequently facts came to me that soldiers of my command had committed depredations in the village, broken windows, etc., in a drunken row. I thereupon sent to Mrs. Kearney's establishment and took all the whiskey that could be found, when she at once came to my headquarters and demanded the return of it on the ground that she had been a laundress of General Auger, saying that he would let her sell as much as she wished, and if I did not give it up she would report me to him. I informed her that I had reported my action to headquarters and would have to await orders in the matter.

A few days after I received an order to return the seized whiskey.

Headquarters Department of Washington,
Twenty-second Army Corps,
Washington, D. C., September 14, 1865.

General Howard,
Commander, etc.:

Will you be good enough to have Captain Armes directed to return to Mrs. Kearney, the bearer hereof, the property he has taken from her? She will tell you the circumstances of their being taken. Mr. Ferry has investigated the matter, and thinks the property should be returned.

I am, truly yours,
(Signed) C. C. Auger,
Major-General.

G. B. 79, 1865; endorsed and referred to me.

Respectfully referred to Captain Armes, who will turn over to Mrs. Kearney all property seized from her. Captain Armes will be particular, in restoring this property, to return the exact amount and articles seized. This paper will be returned, with report of action endorsed. By order of

Major-General Howard.
Max Woodhull,
Col. and A. A. G.

Washington, D. C., September 18, 1865.
Bureau R. F. and A. Lands.

Of course I promptly complied with the order, and I enclosed a copy of a letter from one of the judges to General Howard sus-

taining me in what I had done and asking if Mrs. Kearney could not be prevented in some way from selling whiskey to soldiers, which explained the fact that I had not interfered with any of the rights of the citizens, and seemed to be satisfactory to General Howard, as I did not hear anything more from it.

Fairfax Court House, Va., September 6, 1865.

Captain Armes:

Dear Sir—Yours, in relation to Mrs. Kearney's liquors, is received. I have not the least objection to your taking the course you propose. When they got their license from the court it was fully explained to them that they must be subject to all military orders relating to the sale of liquors.

I think that prompt measures ought to be taken, as I am satisfied that she daily violates military orders in regard to selling drinks to soldiers, and has forfeited her license in other respects.

Yours truly,

JOB HAXHURST.

As I expected to be mustered out of the service soon, and all the buildings on my father's farm having been destroyed, I purchased the Newcomb or Bee Hive farm, next to my old home, which had several very good buildings upon it, paying $3500 for the property, making arrangements to live there and go to work as a farmer in my old neighborhood.

I put men to work, bought lumber and other property at Government sales, so as to be ready to go ahead in civil life as soon as my military services were dispensed with.

My regiment was ordered to New York and there mustered out September 29, but not being relieved to go with it, of course I had to remain on duty. Finally an official letter was sent me with an order to turn over my district to Captain Smith, which I did within ten days after receipt of the order.

While transferring my property to the officer who relieved me I obtained a pass so as to get my accounts settled at the department before reporting to New York for muster out.

Before reporting for muster out I settled all my acounts with the Government for the time I had been in the service, receiving a clearance from the Second Auditor's, Treasury Department, office.

The following is one of the peremptory orders received by me:

B. F. R. and A. L.,
Headquarters Twenty-fifth District of Virginia,
Special orders Alexandria, Va., September 4, 1865.
No. 4.

Capt. G. A. Armes will immediately proceed to the house of Mrs. Nancy Ratcliffe and bring away the two colored children, Sarah and Fannie Hooper, still held as slaves by said Mrs. Ratcliffe, and deliver them to this office.

If it is necessary to take them by force or even *bloodshed*, let it be done. The purpose of this Bureau *must and shall be carried out so far as in the power of the Superintendent of this District.* Captain Armes will attend to this matter in person, and if he has not sufficient force at his command, he will call on Captain Baker at Vienna for more men.

JAMES TERRELL,
Asst. Supt. Fifth Dist. Va.

CAPT. GEO. A. ARMES,
Supt. B. R. at Fairfax Court House, Va.

Knowing that exaggerated reports were being made to the War Department and General Howard by the negroes, I used discretion in the execution of many of the orders I received, always taking into consideration that the war was over and that a white man ought to be as good as a negro, although many officials who were in power at that time acted as if a white man who happened to live in Virginia should have no rights.

I would listen to both sides of the case and act according to the reliable evidence offered.

The county jail was at my disposal, and I had occasion to arrest a great many persons in my district, but did not jail more than five or six during the time I commanded. Many of these arrested had been my schoolmates before the war, or I knew of them and took their word and promise to appear for trial at the time and place given, and then would not detain a person longer than was necessary to settle his or her case. Of course all were not acquitted, and I found it my duty to inflict heavy penalties in some cases.

But instead of shutting them up in jail I would impose a fine, which the parties would agree to pay at a fixed time and furnish proper security for the payment, upon which I would let them return to their lands and families, who were much in need of their presence and help. By this course I rendered justice to both

parties. Many men returning from the Confederate Army to their lands found the buildings, fences and property destroyed, and in some cases families of darkies would be living in patched-up buildings made from the material of their master's dwelling-house which they had torn down and carted off to the land of some one else. Sometimes horses, cattle, hogs, furniture, and in fact all kinds of property, would be found in possession of Mr. Darkey, who would not give anything up, but claimed everything, as well as the increase, as his own. In settling some of the cases I would allow the darkey to retain the increase of the stock that he proved he had cared for and attended to as his own, but made him return the original stock, mares, cows, hogs, sheep, etc., as nearly as it was possible to do so, with all the furniture, except bedding and such things as were actually necessary for the darkies' future use.

As the fences were all down and stock had to be watched, very often the darkey would let his stock trespass on his neighbor's grain field and do considerable damage.

When a cow or a hog, and sometimes a horse, belonging to Mr. Darkey would be shot by the returned Confederate soldier their complaints would perhaps come to me or go to the Secretary of War, General Auger or General Howard, who would send them to me for investigation or settlement by imposing fines and making the guilty party pay the owner for the animal killed. I seemed to give general satisfaction, and to such an extent that many called upon me showing a disposition to forget the past; and in talking over old times we arranged the tournament that took place on the 5th of September, 1865, to be known as the "Grand Union Tournament," already described.

If my memory is correct, I reported in New York for muster out on October 20, 1865, and was paid up to the date of receipt of the order releasing me from duty in the Freedman's Bureau, which was October 9, 1865, but nothing for the ten or eleven days I was detained settling my acounts in Washinigton in compliance with instructions from the War Department already mentioned. Soon after returning to my farm in Fairfax, after being mustered out of the military service, I received an appointment as surveyor of the road from Accotink to Annandale.

Within a few days I had my forces at work, and soon fixed up the road in good shape. Improving my farm with extra out-

buildings, sheds, a good post and rail fence, also engaged my efforts. I procured several kilns of oyster shells, which I burned and spread the lime over the land. I bought horse-power threshing machines, cutting-box and circular saw to work by horse-power, and, in fact, had every convenience that a farmer needed; four wagons, two carts, thirteen work horses, two yoke of oxen, four mules, one good saddle, two driving horses and one good buggy. Blacksmith forge, tools, etc., were also secured.

Having made several miles of post and rail fence from my own timber, many tops of trees which remained were cut into cord-wood and hauled into the city to sell, bringing out oyster shells by return load. While engaged in this work I would often meet officers and ex-officers of the Army, some of whom advised me to give up farming and go into the regular Army.

Among them was General Auger, who offered to give me a letter which I could use if I made up my mind to do so, and wrote the following:

Headquarters Department of Washington,
Washington, D. C., December 23, 1865.

Captain Armes served for some time within this Department, and from all the reports I have concerning him as an officer during that time I can safely state that he gave entire satisfaction in the performance of his duties.

My personal knowledge of him is slight, but is favorable to him. He is particularly deserving, as being a resident of Virginia at the time of the rebellion he immediately espoused the Union cause, and he has served in our Army almost continually during the war. I will mention another event highly creditable to him, as showing a true soldierly disposition: He gave up his appointment as an officer in the Veteran Reserve Corps to join a regiment in the field.

(Signed) C. C. AUGER,
Maj.-Gen., U. S. A., commanding Dept. of Washington.

Soon after that I was going into the Metropolitan Hotel after oyster shells to load on my wagon. I met General Hancock at the door. He seemed delighted to see me . As I was dressed as a farmer, with my trousers in my boots, the General looked at me pretty hard and wanted to know what I was doing. "Farming in Virginia," I replied. He then said that this kind of life was not suited to me and I had best go into the cavalry service on the

frontier; that I was more suited to the life of a soldier than that of a farmer. I began to think so myself before I left, as I did not relish the hard work a farmer is required to do to succeed in Virginia.

His advice so impressed me that I began to look for some one who would buy my farm, and I sold it to a Mr. King for $5500 cash, although it was worth $10,000.

I went to the War Department with letters from General Hancock, General Tompkins and Senator Joseph Segar of my State, and was at once appointed a Second Lieutenant in the Second United States Cavalry and handed the following by Captain E. J. Harrington, who was on duty in the War Department at that time and who attended to the matter at once:

Adjutant-General's Office,
Washington, May 22, 1866.

SECOND LIEUT. GEO. A. ARMES,
Second U. S. Cavalry.
Care of CAPT. E. J. HARRINGTON,
A. A. G. War Department.

I forward herewith your commission as Second Lieutenant, your receipt and acceptance of which you will please acknowledge without delay, reporting at the same time your age and residence when appointed, the State where born, and full name correctly written. Fill up, subscribe and return as soon as possible the accompanying oath, duly and carefully executed. Should you accept the enclosed commission, you will, after complying with the above instructions, report at once to *Carlisle Barracks, Pennsylvania*, and report for duty to the commanding officer of the post.

I am, sir, very respectfully,
Your obedient servant,
(Signed) J. C. KELTON,
Asst. Adj.-Gen.

Chief Quartermaster's Office, Depot of Washington,
Washington, D. C., January 2, 1866.

I have known Mr. Armes for five years, and believe him fully worthy of the position he seeks, in a commission in the U. S. Army.

Mr. Armes has rendered important service to the Government on several occasions, and I can testify to his bravery, loyalty and integrity.

(Signed) CHAS. H. TOMPKINS,
Bvt. Col. and Q. M.

Hon. E. M. Stanton,
Secretary of War.

Roseland, Va., January 7, 1866.

Sir—If the authority pertains to me as Senator-elect for Virginia to designate anyone for appointment in the regular Army, I have no hesitation in urging for such appointment Maj. Geo. A. Armes of Fairfax county, Virginia.

I make this recommendation after a full examination of his claims, both on the basis of moral merit and actual military service, and on such examination I do not hesitate to express very confidently the opinion that very few young men can present higher evidence of fitness for the military service.

I have the honor to be,
Very respectfully,
Your obedient servant,
(Signed) Jos. Segar.

I reported to Colonel Gibbs, commanding Carlisle Barracks, Pennsylvania, for duty June 11, 1866, where I met Second Lieutenant Buford, Fifteenth Infantry, and First Lieut. Walter Comstock, Seventeenth Infantry, who were ordered with me to our regiment. We stopped over night at Harrisburg and parted next day. The latter, who was a brother of Gen. C. Comstock, U. S. A., went to Nashville, Tenn., and died soon after.

I present the following from Mr. Seward, whom I called upon just before leaving Washington for the frontier, his letter being in his own handwriting. I have preserved the original to this day. While with him in the department he addressed me as his son, as "Good morning, my son."

Well, my son, you will find that for a few years (I hope many) wars and troubles will cease. I hope that they may not return in your day, as I feel sure that they will not in mine. Of course, I say these things with reference to our own country, not with regard to foreign nations, which have been at peace, while we have been an exception, involved in having civil war.

(Signed) William H. Seward.

June 9, 1866.

The following letters, among others, were also handed to me by the writer to use if necessary among the strangers on the frontier:

War Department, Bureau of Refugees, Freedmen and Abandoned Lands,

Washington, March 25, 1866.

Capt. Geo. A. Armes:

Dear Sir—I am much pleased with your resolution to take a firm stand for what is right. You will find many temptations to do wrong in the ordinary garrison life of the Army, and you must, therefore, constantly seek the Divine blessing and direction.

To be judicious, to win the respect and love of your companions and to abstain from every appearance of evil is necessary for a Christian man to produce good fruit, but it will always require watchfulness and prayer.

Very truly yours,

O. O. HOWARD,

Major-General.

Headquarters Department of Washington,

22d ARMY CORPS,

Washington, D. C., June. 9. 1866

Sient Armes, 2d Cavalry served in this Dept for sometime as an officer of the 2d N.Y. Hart. Being wounded, he was transferred to the V.R.C. So soon as he was able for field duty, he applied to be sent to the field. His request was granted, and he served in the field until the close of the war. His record as an officer in this Dept is a good one, and from what I have heard his field service was highly creditable to him.

C. C. Augur.

Maj Genl Vol

Genl & Ad Wash

Headquarters Department of Washington.

OFFICE OF CHIEF QUARTERMASTER.

Washington, D. C., June 9th 1866.

I have known Lieut Armes 2d U.S. Cavy for a considerable length of time and have always found him to be an energetic and faithful officer—

I did not have the pleasure of his acquaintance in the field but from what I have always heard in regard to his services in the Army of Potomac the same was highly creditable to him in every respect—

Wm. J. Ludington
Col Cy Genl
Dept

On my way from Harrisburg to New York I stopped over one train at Columbia, Pa., to see my brother Wiliam Edward, who had entered the military school there immediately after his return from the Southern Army, where he had served with General Stuart until the General was killed. I dined with Professor Alexander, proprietor of the institute. After presenting my brother with a pair of Captain's shoulder straps, he having been promoted from the ranks to a Captain of cadets within two years after entering the school, I bade him a final adieu, landing in New York City June 13, the guest of C. C. Field.

In my journal I wrote:

Cleveland, Ohio, June 14, 1866.

Arrived here in time to breakfast with Major Brownston, formerly of General Hancock's staff, who took me through the most interesting parts of the city during the day. After securing a sleeper, I bade him and my friends good-bye.

Springfield, Ill., St. Nichol's Hotel, June 16, 1866.

Met Lieutenant Eddie, formerly Acting Adjutant-General to General Tidball in the old Second Corps. After we attended St. Paul's Church we took in most of the city, visiting Oak Ridge Cemetery, saw the tomb or vault of President Lincoln and registered at the sexton's office, then visited the house Mr. Lincoln lived in before the war. I was surprised to see such a plain house, and not in the best part of the city at that. The yard being filled with flowers and plants made it a very attractive-looking place.

Fort Leavenworth, Kan., June 22, 1866.

On my way here from St. Louis I stopped over at Jefferson City to attend a reception given by an old friend of mine by the name of Clarke. Met Governor Fletcher and a number of very pretty girls. I being in full-dress uniform seemed to catch the latter's eye, many of them coming to the depot to say good-bye. Upon arriving at Kansas City I had to take the steamboat for this place, as the railroad ends there. Had a very pleasant chat with ex-Major-General Blunt of known fame.

Arriving at the post, the Adjutant informed me that the headquarters of my regiment was at Fort Ellsworth, between two and three hundred miles west, but handed me an order to report to Fort Riley first.

I then called on General Ingalls, an old friend, formerly Chief Quartermaster of General Grant's Army, who introduced me to Colonel Potter, the Department Quartermaster, requesting him to fix me up with the best pair of horses he could pick out and a full outfit for the plains.

Colonel Potter showed me every kindness that one officer could show to another, sending me his headquarter ambulance to ride back to the hotel, about four miles from the post. Declined an invitation from Colonel Shurbon of General Pope's staff to be his guest at the post. Having known the Colonel for several years in Washington, I felt as if I had met a long-lost brother here among so many strangers.

Have met many officers and seen about all there is to be seen of the city, and am sorry I cannot remain longer.

Head Quarters Armies of the United States,

June 22d 1866

I have been personally acquainted in the field, during the war, with Lieut Geo. H. Jones 2d Cav. and am Knowing to the fact of his having served with great gallantry and fidelity — He is an Officer of merit and good reputation —

Rufus Ingalls
Bt Maj. Genl. &
Q. M. Gen U. S. A.

Osage, Kansas, June 23, 1866.

Colonel Potter sent me a nice ambulance, four mules and my horses and equipments to the hotel this morning, and after getting my rations, cooking utensils and bidding friends at the hotel good-bye, have driven thirty-five miles today, passing many wagons loaded with supplies for the frontier posts. Some of them were stuck in the mud with twenty yoke of cattle trying to pull them out. The many long trains with from six to fourteen yoke of cattle to each wagon was a grand sight to me. I am now in camp on the prairie, and my cook is getting my supper in Army out-door style.

Mission, Kan., June 24, 1866.

I drove forty miles through a beautiful country that seems to be settling up very fast by the white men, who have brought horses, cattle, sheep and hogs here, established homes, and are bound to prosper.

The Pottawatomie Indians own most of the land in this section, but are a lazy, worthless set.

Manhattan, Kan., June 25, 1866.

I started at six o'clock this morning and overtook General Sykes and his command, who are on their way to New Mexico. I kept along with the command until after three o'clock, meeting Captain Snyder and Lieutenant Dugan, Fifth Infantry; Lieutenant Hamilton, Third Cavalry, and a number of other officers who are on their way to establish their homes on the frontier. One of the men of the Fifth Infantry was sunstruck and died while on the march. A grave was dug by the side of the road, and he was wrapped in his blanket and buried. There has been quite a little settlement here and some very good building put up out of a soft stone that can be cut with an axe or formed into any shape, but hardens when exposed to the air. Only drove thirty-five miles today.

Fort Riley, Kan., June 26, 1866.

Maj. O. D. Green of the Adjutant-General's department came to Manhattan in the stage last night, but rode from there to his post in my ambulance, and upon our arrival at eleven o'clock this morning he introduced me to Major Norris of my regiment (Second Cavalry), who commands this post, and who invited me to be his guest.

He introduced me to Lieut. G. W. H. Stough of the Third Infantry, also to Lieut. E. J. Spaulding and his wife, of my regiment.

After dinner Lieutenant Spaulding and I rode to Junction City, about three miles from this post, where I completed my camp outfit, as my company is stationed over three hundred miles farther west.

Solomon City, Kan., June 26, 1866.

Capt. R. B. Owen, post quartermaster, furnished me four fresh mules for my ambulance and a six-mule team to carry my baggage and forage for my saddle horses to Fort Ellsworth, the headquarters of my regiment. If I had been a Brigadier-General I could not have received more attention at the hands of Major Norris and Lieutenant Stough and all the officers than I did during my stay over at Riley. Mr. A. M. Hill, who claimed to have been with Gen. Ward B. Burnett, took me to some springs which were discovered in 1849 at the time of the big Indian fight, where

they were so badly whipped. The Indians considered it bad medicine to drink the water, and it is said no Indian has ever drunk out of it since.

Fort Ellsworth, Kan., June 28, 1866,

After crossing two prairies and driving fifty-three miles, I arrived here at dark this evening and reported to Col. I. N. Palmer of the Second Cavalry, who gave me my orders at once to take the next stage going to Denver, C. T., and report to the commanding officers of my company, M, for duty at Pond Creek, Kan. He then introduced me to the officers of the regiment on duty here.

Capt. John Green invited me to be his guest and introduced me to his wife, a very entertaining and pleasant lady and a sister to the wife of Surgeon-General Hammond of New York.

Captain Green and I then adjourned to the sutler's, where Colonel Palmer and Lieutenant Lester soon joined us.

Soon after the Colonel and his Adjutant came to Captain Green's quarters with the plans for a new post to be called Fort Wallace, which he wished me to take with me to my camp and help select a place to build it.

After explaining all the details and meeting Brevet Brig.-Gen, Theophilus F. Rodenbough, a Captain in the regiment, who helped entertain us until after twelve o'clock, they bade me good night, wishing me a safe journey through the war parties of Indians, who were committing their depredations, burning stage stations murdering everyone they could intercept along the route.

Department of State,
Washington, June 27, 1866.

Lieut. George A. Armes,
Second U. S. Cavalry,
Fort Leavenworth, Kan.:

Lieutenant—I give you my hearty thanks for your interesting letter of the 20th inst., which I have attentively read.

I am, Lieutenant,
Your obedient servant,
WILL H. SEWARD.

On the stage en route to Pond Creek, Kan., June 29, 1866.

I was waked up by the sergeant of the guard at two o'clock this

morning and found the stage waiting for me and full of passengers armed to the teeth with Winchester Henry rifles, shotguns, pistols and revolvers, knives and dirks, ready to defend themselves against the Indians, who were liable to charge upon the stage most anywhere between Ellsworth and Denver. An overland coach is something to be compared with an Army tent, as far as finding room for one more is concerned. I secured a place where I could sit straight up, and by four o'clock was asleep, but just as the sun was rising I was startled by one of the passengers shaking me by the shoulder and saying "Indians!" As I opened my eyes I saw the passengers getting out their firearms, and was so startled I hardly knew what to do first except to draw my six-shooter and wait for further developments. It was not very long ere we found out that a large herd of buffaloes was coming toward the road, which were first thought to be Indians. They ran alongside of the stage for more than a mile, giving us all a chance to fire into them, but without effect as far as we could see, although at least two hundred shots were fired by us before the last buffalo crossed in front of the stage. The driver told me that herds of two or three hundred thousand would often try to cross the road in front of the stage, and often run by the side of it for miles and close enough for the passengers to kill them if they were shot in the right place. The same could be said of the antelope, only they would run faster and not remain by the side of the stage so long as the buffalo before crossing the road in front.

The drivers as well as the mules seemed to enjoy the races, which are often kept up for over ten miles before the last buffalo or antelope crosses over. Never having seen a buffalo before, I became quite interested in the grand sight of the hundreds of thousands that covered the plains and looked like large herds of cattle at a distance.

Soon after the buffalo had all crossed in our front the drivers informed us that the way they were scattered and confused was a sure sign that Indians were not very far off, and then we began to wish that we had saved our ammunition, but some of us had plenty. About nine o'clock, before we drove up to the station to change our team and get breakfast the driver called our attention to the smoke ahead of us, stating that the Indians must have destroyed the station, and as we drew near the bodies of the three

men, which were filled with arrows and scalped, was a sickening sight. One man was the keeper, another the cook, and the other stock-tender. All the mules and harnesses had been carried off and fires started in every place where anything of value would burn. Not being able to get the breakfast we expected, we had to fall back on the lunch we had with us. After covering the bodies of the murdered men, we came on the next station, about fifteen or twenty miles farther, where we had a splendid dinner, consisting of beans, pork, fried buffalo and antelope and short cake, hot.

Pond Creek, Kan., June 30, 1866.

More men and mules were telegraphed for to replace what the Indians had made way with and the station ordered to be re-established.

I reached this camp about four o'clock this afternoon and rode over one hundred miles, seeing but few trees and buffaloes on the barren plains, which has a thick sod of buffalo grass about two or three inches high, said to be very nutritious. Upon my arrival I reported to First Lieut. A. E. Bates, Second Cavalry (now Paymaster-General, U. S. A.), who is commanding the company. Our Captain, John Mix, being absent on recruiting service, he introduced me to Capt. James I. Jordan, Sixth Infantry, United States Volunteers, and his First Lieutenant, Flood, Post Quartermaster; also to Lieutenant Adams of the Second Cavalry, who has been on duty with the troop, and to Dr. Turner, Post Surgeon. The above-named officers with one company of infantry compose the command here, and all quartered in tents.

Pond Creek, Kan., July 1, 1866.

Was called up to attend my first reveille at four o'clock this morning, after which I attended stables, which means that I superintended the grooming of the company horses. They are tied to a large rope outdoors, and each cavalryman grooms his own horse, unless he is absent on other duty, when other men of the company are required to do it. We ate breakfast at seven this morning and had monthly inspection at eight o'clock. At nine o'clock Lieutenant Bates had some horses saddled, and with Lieutenant Flood, the guide (Comstock) and about twenty men as an escort, we took a ride over the prairie and shot four buffaloes. My orderly killed ten or fifteen rattlesnakes and gave the rattles to me. I to-day received the following order:

Hd Qrs Post Fort Wallace Kansas.

July 1st 1866.

Special order
No - 46.

2nd Lieut C. A. Amies is hereby appointed ~~Post~~ Adjt of this Post and will be obeyed and respected accordingly

A E Bates
1st Lieut 2nd U.S. Cavy
Comdg Post.

July 2, 1866.

Lieutenant Bates did not get up this morning, but left the morning work for the Second Lieutenant (your humble servant). After breakfast I borrowed his razor and brush and shaved myself for the first time in my life, but could not get anything but a little fine fuzz. Lieutenant Bates then issued an order making me Post Adjutant, and I mounted guard for the first time since 1863. I got through it without a mistake, which makes me feel quite proud, as I was so closely watched by the West Point officers here. Lieutenant Bates drilled the mounted men and gave me a few recruits to drill for an hour or so today. I sent a detail of ten men to quarry out stone for the new post as soon as we can find a site to build it on. Our company consists of about ninety splendid young men and one hundred bay horses.

July 3, 1866.

I had guard mounting and inspection at eight o'clock this morning, and with two exceptions men looked well. I notified the sergeant-major that hereafter I would select the neatest man for the commanding officer's orderly, and hoped that I would not have occasion to find fault with the bad appearance of any more men. I spent most of the day in making myself familiar with the duties of my new office and studying cavalry tactics.

July 4, 1866.

After guard mount this morning Lieutenant Bates and I took the plans for the new post and rode out to select the ground. We selected a beautiful site near the Smoky Hill river near a large stone quarry, where stone could be cut out with an axe and sawed into any shape required. Lieutenant Bates then sent an orderly to camp after a detachment of men, who were immediately put at work digging foundations for our building and getting out stone. After the men had gotten fairly to work we started to return to camp, and while Lieutenant Bates' horse was galloping over the prairie he stepped into a prairie-dog hole, falling, throwing Lieutenant Bates over his head and injuring him severely.

I had to send for an ambulance to bring him into camp, where he was put to bed, and is now under the care of Dr. Turner, who says with careful attention he will be out in a few days. We have named the post Fort Wallace.

July 5, 1866.

Lieutenant Bates not being able for duty, the command of the company devolves upon me. Drilling is suspended while the new work is going on.

July 7, 1866.

Lieutenant Flood, the Post Quartermaster, and I went on a reconnoiter and came across a pack of wolves instead of Indians. We gave chase to a large white wolf, emptying our revolvers several times without any seeming effect.

July 9, 1866.

Lieutenant Bates is now able for duty, and has assumed command, ordering me upon a board of survey to inspect a lot of corn and beef, which I found unfit for use. While riding out this afternoon I got into a nest of rattlesnakes, killing four of them.

July 11, 1866.

Immediately after breakfast this morning we commenced to move our camp to the new post, where we had put up our tents and made two very pretty streets. My tent was the first to go up, and is the first officer's tent pitched at this post. I had the picket rope for the horses and the tents all put up before three this afternoon.

We officers have to go four miles for our meals, as the stage station is the nearest building to our new post, but we will soon start a mess of our own.

Fort Wallace, Kan., July 14, 1866.

I was appointed Post Treasurer in addition to being Post Adjutant. Today Private Wiliams of my troop was badly kicked while trying to catch a mule out on herd. I detailed another man for guard in his place. Captain Scott, late Quartermaster of Volunteers, just arrived with his appointment as our sutler.

July 16, 1866,

Lieutenant Bates, Captain Scott, Lieutenant Flood, Dr. Turner and myself, with a few men as our escort to watch the Indians, took a horseback ride to the mountains, and I saw more deer, wolves, rabbits, antelopes, buffaloes and rattlesnakes than I ever saw before.

July 17, 1866.

Dr. Turner and myself were ordered to superintend the unloading of twenty-five wagons of corn, and we found a shortage of fifty-five bushels. Private Hailey became so drunk and boisterous that I could not control him without severe usage, and reported him to Lieutenant Bates, commanding company, who ordered me to make a spread-eagle of him. I innocently asked him how, when he flew into a rage, reminding me that I was not in the volunteer service, and when ordered to do anything never to ask a question, but promptly obey. I at once started to get my prisoner, and Lieutenant Bates, perhaps feeling that I did not really understand the meaning of "spread-eagle," came out and told the sergeant of the guard to bring him an axe, some picket pins and rope, when he had the pins driven into the ground and ordered four men to place Private Hailey on his back, straighten his arms and stretch out his legs and tie them to the pins, where he was kept in the hot sun for several hours until he was subdued.

July 22, 1866.

We had general inspection this morning, and Lieutenant Bates found everything in splendid shape, but one man who had carelessly left one button of his coat undone. The man started to make an excuse, when Lieutenant Bates grasped his throat and choked him until his eyes and tongue bulged out, and the man had nothing more to say. This afternoon all the officers and I took a horseback ride and hunt over some new country which no white man had ever seen before.

Fort Wallace, Kan., July 23, 1866.

The well is now sixty feet deep; nothing but slate rock comes up, which smells like coal oil. We have about fifty soldiers at work building stable wall, etc. Reports say that small war parties of Indians were seen between here and Denver.

August 1, 1866.

The long-expected supply train came in today, and Dr. Turner and myself were the board to receive the flour, beans and corn.

General Palmer, Colonel of the regiment, Captain and Brevet Gen. T. Rodenbough and Captain Harrison arrived today and enjoyed a splendid dinner which I had gotten up for the occasion. After a very close inspection of my company, General Palmer complimented me, saying he was very much pleased with everything and had no suggestions to make. Captain Harrison, the district inspector, gave me a close inspection at retreat, and said he was glad to see the men, clothing and equipments looking so neat, and complimented me for the good condition in which he found everything.

August 5, 1866.

Comstock, the guide, came in after a long scout. He discovered a new spring within twenty miles of the post and reports having seen thousands of wild horses fifty or sixty miles northwest of the post.

August 15, 1866.

Sergeant Wakeman was put on duty this morning as sergeant of the guard, reporting that a band of Indians was seen within twenty miles of the the post. I have the men in readiness to go farther if ordered.

August 17, 1866.

When I rode up to the stage today to deliver some mail a beautiful young lady handed me a *Harper's Monthly* and asked me if I would accept it from her. I did so and thanked her. As she was the first young lady I had seen for several months, her pleasant and generous manner made me almost fall in love with her, but I was unable to get her name. Lieutenant Bates gave orders to the sutler today not to let an enlisted man have any whiskey unless in the presence of a commissioned officer.

August 18, 1866.

My cook, Hanford, was so drunk this morning that I had to put Private Ellis in his place to get breakfast. As the Indians are near here, I have been getting the men ready to go on scout.

August 19, 1866.

We marched about twenty miles today, but saw no signs of Indians, and returned to the post.

August 20, 1866.

Lieutenant Bates has given orders that I attend whiskey calls and march the men to the sutler's two or three times a day, and not let any men have more than one drink at a time.

August 24, 1866.

About two this afternoon "Spotted Horse," chief of a party of Cheyenne dog soldiers, made us a visit with thirty or forty of his warriors, dressed as if they were on the warpath. Comstock, our guide, introduced the three chiefs to all of us, and we had quite a chat and smoke, which we had to indulge in or the Indians would have considered it quite an insult. We treated them well, although we knew they were spies and only came into the post to see how many men we had. Leiutenant Bates let the Indians go among the men and exchange their moccasins, beads and buffalo robes with our soldiers, who exchanged sugar, tobacco and blankets for what they got from the Indians. I exchanged a blouse for a bow and quiver full of arrows and a rawhide lariat. The Indians did not leave until sundown.

August 27, 1866.

Comstock, the guide, who has been absent from the post two or three days watching the Indians who made us a visit the other day, came in this evening with one or two families of ranchmen, who had been warned by the Indians to leave the country within ten days, as their ranches would be burned and no mercy shown to anyone found. The men have decided to return to their property and, if necessary, fight it out and hold their own if possible. Lieutenant Bates has telegraphed for more ordnance stores, guns, ammunition, etc.

August 29, 1866.

At one o'clock this afternoon four six-mule teams came into the post from Fort Lyon, the nearest to ours, loaded with ordnance stores, ammunition, etc., also three splendid howitzers, so we are pretty well provided. Several families of the settlers came into the post for protection from the Indians this evening. A party of us went on a short scout this afternoon and gave chase to a pack of wolves. I killed one with my revolver after firing twelve

of fifteen shots at him from my horse at a full run. It is the first wolf I ever killed, and I felt rather proud of the event.

August 31, 1866.

Quite a commotion was created today upon the arrival of Paymaster Smith and Judge Chamberlain of Denver, who is his guest. He reported having several narrow escapes from the Indians, who have been watching him for the past two days. I had the companies fall in line and Lieutenant Bates mustered them. The men all look well, and will give Mr. Indian a lively tussle if he comes this way. We had to stop getting stone at the quarry, as the Indians are after the mules, and we have not enough men to guard the teams while hauling stone.

September 1, 1866.

The mail last night brought Lieutenant Bates' appointment as Regimental Quartermaster, and the first thing this morning after breakfast he turned the command of the company over to me.

Captain John Mix of the troop is on recruiting service, and I have no idea when he will return. Paymaster Smith paid us all off today, and he and Judge Chamberlain left for Fort Ellsworth, about two hundred miles east, with a good strong escort. Some of my men got pretty drunk this afternoon, and all seemed to be having a jolly time, as soldiers generally do after payday. I put only one in the guardhouse.

September 4, 1866.

At stables this morning First Sergeant Miller reported Privates Humphreys and Dawson had deserted during the night with two horses from the picket line. I at once put the corporal of the stable guard in arrest for his neglect and carelessness. I sent Sergeant Allison with two men toward Fort Lyon and Corporal Emerson and two men toward Fort Ellsworth. I then took an escort from the company and twenty-five wagons to go after timber for the stables. Comstock killed a splendid buffalo this evening, and after marching twenty-five miles we all have a splendid appetite to relish the broiled steak.

Several of my men were so drunk this evening that they could not groom their horses, so I had the first sergeant duck them all in the stream of deep cold water, and it seemed to wake them up, for after a few dips they felt able to attend to their horses.

Showbrugh Creek, Neb., September 5, 1866.

The wagon master had the train ready early, and we pulled out at sunrise. I put my flankers out on each side of the train and left a strong guard in the rear, while I rode ahead with the rest of the command. About ten o'clock in the forenoon I spied seven buffaloes and started after them with my orderly and guide, firing at least thirty shots at the one I picked out before I killed him. He fought like a tiger for a while and charged at me several times with his eyes shut, but I put spurs to my horse and dodged him every time. Comstock killed the other six at twenty shots. He killed one at the first shot, which is a rare thing to do, even by the best marksmen on the plains. I caught a buffalo calf with my lariat and brought it into camp this evening. My men all seem well pleased with the change of getting away from post duty and the fatiguing work which they have been doing so long.

Sinking Water, C. T., September 7, 1866.

We are eighty or ninety miles from Fort Wallace, Kansas. I kiled a tremendous buffalo with my revolver at three shots. Comstock killed the largest buck antelope I ever saw. I have pitched our tents on the stream and will soon have our wagons loaded with timbers. I keep a strong guard out all the time watching for Indians and to keep from being surprised. Comstock and I took a ride over the country where no white man had ever been before. We crossed the south and north forks of the Republican river. The north fork is dry and sandy in the daytime, but at night there is from three to six feet of water in it. Comstock took me up one of the branches where an old village of Indians used to be and where he lived with them some four or five years ago and showed me the graves of a number of Indians he helped to bury in the tops of the trees. A few pieces of the buffalo rope, a tomahawk and some beads were found under one of the trees which had dropped from the body above. My orderly took possession of them to show to the rest of the men.

September 9, 1866.

This being Sunday, I let the men rest, except the guard and a small escort which I took on a short scout, during which we discovered a graveyard where the bodies of hundreds of Indians were lashed to the boughs of trees from twenty to forty feet above

the ground and secured by straps of rawhide that the weather would not affect for years. Some of the men found wooden spoons, pipes, silver bracelets and rings that had fallen from some of the bodies that had been there the longest. During the scout we discovered a large beaver dam. Leaving our horses, we quietly got into a position where we could see them work, which was a great sight to me, as I had never seen them at work before. I asked Comstock to shoot a very large one that was out on a log in the dam. He fired, but the beaver fell in the water, and as it was twenty or thirty feet deep and not a man with me who could swim, I jumped in myself and swam out where he he was floating like a big hog. After getting him ashore I was so excited that the men had to help me out of the water. I gave the beaver to my orderly to bring into camp, and on my way in made up my plans with Comstock how to cook him and to have him skinned so that it could be stuffed and sent home. After reaching my tent I told my cook to take charge of the beaver, and he reported that the stupid orderly had tied him to the saddle and lost him. I ordered him back to get that beaver, but he returned in the night with the report that he could not find the back trail, so I vowed that I would not promote that private to any position as long as I had command of the company; he is too stupid.

Shonough Creek, C. T., September 13, 1866.

All my wagons being loaded, I left Sinking Water river this morning for Fort Wallace. The river was given that name, I am told, because six months of the year the water is from four to twenty feet deep and the other six months the water disappears. Nothing but the dry sand or bed of the river can be seen in the dry time. This whole country is covered with a thick sod, and the grass the best I ever saw, and if the springs and streams were not so far apart and if the Indians were not in the way it would soon be settled. As I have one of the fastest-running and best-winded horses I ever rode before, I undertook an experiment this afternoon in trying to run an antelope down, which I ran for ten or fifteen miles, but he skipped ahead of me just out of the range of my pistol compelling me to give up the chase, as I could not get anywhere near him. We marched thirty miles today and brought my loaded wagons in camp O. K.

Fort Wallace, Kan., September 18, 1866.

We are all back to the post in good shape. Orders were telegraphed me to be sent to Fort Lyon to General Sherman, and I sent Corporal Carroll in charge with four days' rations and one hundred rounds of ammunition. Each man has one Spencer carbine and two Colt's revolvers and a saber. I went out with twenty men as an escort on a buffalo hunt, and one old bull, after he was wounded, charged at me. Putting spurs to my horse, I got out of his way, but he caught one of the men's horses and pitched him up on his horns like a cow would a dog and threw the man off at least ten feet, hurting his arm. We killed thirty buffaloes, and it was nine o'clock this evening before reaching camp.

Big Springs, C. T., September 19, 1866.

Just as I had retired last night after my hard day's ride after buffalo Sergeant Dean came in from Cheyenne Hills, where he had been on escort duty, with a train of supplies, and reported that three of his men had deserted. I ordered my fast horse, a corporal and three privates, and we started toward Denver. After riding sixteen or eighteen miles a terrible thunder and rain storm came up, and it grew so dark we could not see the road and had to lie down on the prairie until it was light enough to see, when we again mounted and rode on until within two miles of this station we met Sergeant Allison with two of the prisoners, whom he had captured near Denver. I changed horses and ordered him to take his time and go on to Fort Wallace with the prisoners, while I would go forward and try to capture the other deserter.

Benham Station, C. T., September 20,1866.

After getting a cup of coffee last night I started and have just ridden ninety miles. As I am obliged to return to Fort Wallace and all my horses have given out, I told the station-keeper to let me have four fresh horses out of his stable, leaving him my five worn-out ones. Then I sent the corporal and his three men on towards Denver by order of Lieutenant Flood with orders to lose no time and spare no expense to capture the deserter.

Fort Wallace, Kan., September 21, 1866.

When the stage arrived at the station last night, and while the horses were being changed, a rough-looking man came into the

room where I was waiting and wanted to know if I knew anything about the stage horses being taken. I seemed surprised when he began to curse and threaten me. I put my hand on my revolver to use it in case he made an atempt to draw his, and as he had ten or fifteen stock-tenders around him who could cut me into mincemeat at a word from this bully who was so rough to me, I concluded not to make the first motion to shoot. The stage being announced, I started to get inside, when I was ordered not to try it, but was soon on top with the driver, who at once demanded my fare, which I paid. After riding several miles I asked him who that rough man was, and was informed that his name was Benham, the general superintendent of the overland mail route; that he was considered one of the most dangerous men West; that he had killed several men, and thought no more of knocking one of his stock-tenders down or shooting him than if he were a dog. After riding a few hours in the snowstorm one of the passengers inside of the stage changed places with me, and I had a nap. At Cheyenne Mills at four o'clock this morning, discovering one of my sergeants with his men returning from Fort Lyon I got out of the stage and ordered one of the best horses saddled and started for this post, which I reached by ten o'clock, riding fifty miles in less than six hours. I reported the facts of my treatment to the post commander, Lieutenant Flood, who said he could not and dare not try to do anything about the matter, but he would go on a buffalo hunt for two days and leave me in command of the post and I might do what I saw fit. After he left I ordered fifteen of the best and most trustworthy men I had to report to me mounted, armed with their carbines and revolvers, knowing that Benham was a dangerous man and that he had eight of his own men in the stage who were good shots and would fight as long as breath lasted. I felt that I would have some hard work to get possession of Mr. Benham, but I made up my mind that I would have him or there would be someone hurt, and when the stage was near the post I met him with my fifteen men and gave orders to the driver to halt, and when he saw sixteen determined men armed he halted his stage, when Mr. Benham looked out and ordered him to drive on. I then drew my pistol on Mr. Benham and ordered him to hold up his hands, while the sergeant disarmed him and marched him to the post, where I put him in irons and in the guardhouse, ordering the driver to go on with the mail and

Arresting Benham.

his passengers. The driver seemed delighted to see me make Mr. Benham submissive, saying it was the first time he had ever heard of anyone doing so, as he was one of the worst men in the West. After Mr. Benham had been in the guardhouse for a short time he sent word for permission to see the commanding officer of the post. I sent word that the sergeant of the guard might bring him to my office. He seemed surprised when he discovered that I was the commanding officer, and at once stated that he had a great deal of business on hand and that my detaining him at this post would delay and greatly interfere with his re-stocking the road; that he hoped I would release him; that he had been hasty in temper; that after thinking the matter over he saw that I was right, and that the taking of the horses did not interfere with the stopping of the mail in the least; that the horses the stock-tenders let me have were extra horses, etc. I asked him if he were willing to put that fact in writing, and he sat down at my desk and wrote the following:

Fort Wallace, Kan., September 22, 1866.

I certify, on honor, that the United States mail was in no way interfered with or stopped by Second Lieut. Geo. A. Armes, Sec-

ond United States Cavalry, taking the four horses and pursuing the deserters from Company M, Second United States Cavalry, on the 21st inst.

(Signed) A. BENHAM,
Supt. Mail & Express Co.

Witness to signature:
J. S. MILLS.

After an apology in the most humble terms in the presence of witnesses and handing me the above paper I ordered his release and invited him to lunch with me, which he accepted, and after lunch he ordered an extra team and bade us all good-bye and started off in his buggy toward Fort Ellsworth.

September 23, 1866.

The stage drove up to my headquarters this morning, when Governor Gilpin of Colorado Territory and several of his friends got out. After showing them about the post I invited them to a good lunch. The Governor reminded me that he was a graduate of West Point and was a Second Lieutenant in my regiment at one time. Before leaving he gave me a pressing invitation to visit him at Denver. He is a very interesting talker, and has seen a great deal of Western life. Lieutenant Flood, Dr. Turner, Mr. Warner and Comstock returned this evening from the buffalo hunt.

Shawnee Creek, Kan., September 26, 1866.

Having received orders to proceed without delay to Fort Sedgwick, I at once packed up, transferred my property and, after bidding my friends good-bye, marched out of the post with a hundred cavalry and fifteen six-mul teams.

I was entertained most of last night by Captain Scott, the sutler. As I was allowed to use my own discretion as to marching across the country or going around by way of Denver, I concluded to run the risk of cutting across a country no white man has ever been over, and with the aid of my compass and map I expect to come out all right if not attacked by the Indians. The last mail just brought me the following letter from Lieutenant Bates:

Denver City, C. T., September 23, 1866.

Lieut. Geo. A. Armes,
Fort Wallace, Kan.:

Lieutenant—Mr. Street, the General Superintendent of the H. O. M. & Express Co., has just called upon me in regard to a matter of difficulty between you and Mr. Benham, one of their agents. From his account and from some of your men who reported here, and whom I have sent down the Platte, I understand that while in the pursuit of deserters you took the responsibility of seizing certain of the stage horses to continue the pursuit, and that since then, owing to some altercation between you and Mr. Benham, you have seized him and put him under guard.

Fearing that you have *seriously* overstepped your powers in this matter, I take the liberty of writing this letter of advice. In the first place, I think you were entirely wrong in your first action, namely, in taking the stage *stock*. You should remember that your jurisdiction does not extend beyond the limits of the Government reservation, save in cases of actual hostilities and great emergencies, when you might be supported in disregarding the interests of everything save that of the service; but the pursuit of a deserter can hardly be called such an emergency. Again, you know the Government and laws make a decided difference between individuals and the agents and employes of companies who are employed in carrying the Government mails; for instance, they are exempt from arrest in all cases while engaged in carrying the mails, except when for great civil crimes, and even then the evidence must be plain and conclusive.

If Mr. Benham came to your post, and was disrespectful to you, your authority extended to putting him off from the reservation and prohibiting his return, and that was the extent of your authority, unless you can show conclusively that he was interfering with your military authority in such a manner as to make his arrest a necessity, which could be overcome in no other manner.

Mr. Street has telegraphed to General Hancock, at St. Louis, an order for Mr. Benham's immediate release, and unless you are more than sure that you are right, as, for instance, supposing the agent had made some personal assault, I would advise you to release him immediately. Remember that this man is but the representative of a large and responsible company, who will not only be as much bound to punish their agents when they are wrong as to protect them if right, and except in a very few and exceptional cases, such as I have already supposed, your right method of procedure is to report the facts fully to the employers, and to demand from them the punishment of their employes if wrong.

I have as yet received no orders, and may be here for some time for aught I know. Please write me fully in regard to this matter,

for I am anxious to know what kind of a scrape you have got yourself into.

Respects to Pills and the rest.

I am, etc.,

A. E. Bates,
First Lieut. Second U. S. Cav., R. Q. M.

If I have any mail there, please send it up without delay. Have you sent up any? I have not heard a word from anyone. Use Holiday's franked envelopes.

To sustain me in taking possession of the stage horses I submit the following order, which Lieutenant Bates did not seem to be aware that I had received:

Headquarters Post,
Fort Wallace, Kans., September 17, 1866.

Special Order No. 75.

Second Lieut. Geo. A. Armes, Second U. S. Cavalry, will proceed at once, with Corporal Gorman and three (3) privates of Company "M," Second U. S. Cavalry, in the direction of Denver, C. T., in pursuit of three (3) deserters from Company "M," Second U. S. Cavalry, using every effort in his power to overtake and capture them. In case Lieutenant Armes, horses give out, he will (if having any knowledge of the deserters) take any horses he can find, provided it in no way interferes with the regular running of the H. O. M. & Express Co. Lieutenant Armes will return by coach to this post if his horse gives out.

C. E. Flood,
First Lieut. Sixth U. S. Vol. Inf.,
Commanding Post.

Sinking Water, September 27, 1866.

Just before reaching camp this evening I marched into a herd of buffalo which seemed almost as tame as cattle. The prairie seemed black with them for miles. I ordered the first sergeant to bring me thirty-five mounted men, and gave orders for each man to kill his buffalo. I killed two at three shots, and my men killed sixteen, and we have had a lively time getting four of them skinned, and I expect to tan the hides into robes. Sergeant Miller shot his horse through the head during the excitement, and six or eight of the horses fell, and some ran away with their riders. All together we had a very exciting time. It took me at least half an hour to assemble the men after the charge was made. Having marched all day since sunrise, and men and horses being very

tired, I omitted the form of a roll call and let the men build large fires and enjoy buffalo meat, which they are broiling over the fire on sticks. I do not believe I ever saw a more happy and contented set than these appear to be. We have just loaded four wagons with buffalo meat.

Camp Hancock, at the North and South Forks of the
Republican River, Nebraska, September 29, 1866.

Since we came in camp this evening signs of Indians have been discovered, causing me to double the guard. The spot is a lovely place for a camp, plenty of fish, ducks and game. I have concluded to remain here two days and give the men a good rest. Had a close inspection and read a few articles of war to the men, warning them of the punishment in store for any neglect of duty.

Camp Hancock, C. T., September 30, 1866.

Having named this camp after one of the best friends I have in the Army, General Hancock, the name alone is enough to make every true soldier be fully contented. As we will have about sixty miles to march tomorrow without finding water, I have ordered all the kegs, canteens and barrels filled from the spring where we are now camped. I have just given orders to break camp at three o'clock tomorrow morning.

Armes' Spring C. T., October 2, 1866.

We had a long and tiresome march all day. When we halted to go into camp this evening most of us made up our minds we could not have any water, but finding a low, damp-looking place, I ordered two men to dig, and within two feet found plenty of cool, clear water, which is a great treat. All the water we had in kegs, etc., had been used up. Having marched about twenty miles through the deep, dry sand, men as well as animals are completely tired out, and the good water we have found we consider a godsend. We also have plenty of grass, antelope, ducks and buffalo meat in abundance. The first sergeant has requested me to let him put the remarks on the morning report book and on the roster, our camp, under the name of Armes' Spring, which I consented to.

Collins Ranch, Platte River, C. T., October 3, 1866.

We left Armes' Spring last night at seven o'clock, after building a fire on top of a hill to use as a signal or guide to take our course from, forming the company in single file and sending one man in advance with a lantern and compass. We took a northwest course, and marched until eleven at night, when we halted to rest until one this morning, when we built another fire and marched until eight o'clock this forenoon without a halt, rested one-half hour for breakfast and marched until one this afternoon, halted for one hour for rest and lunch, and reached this camp and river at six this afternoon. After a march of sixty miles since seven last night without water, except what we had in kegs, men and animals are looking well, but tired. We made a splendid trail all the way from Fort Wallace, Kan., which can be used hereafter as a road, almost two hundred miles. I feel rather proud of the fact that I have come through such a wild country without the loss of a man, animal, assistance of a guide or anyone who had ever been through this country before. The men are now enjoying a swim, and will start for the post tomorrow morning, which is only ten miles above on the river.

Fort Sedgwick, C. T., October 4, 1866.

Most all the men had a good bath in the Platte river again this morning, and they looked splendid in their new full-dress uniforms, which I ordered the company to appear in at inspection just before marching into the post, which I reached at one o'clock, reporting to Capt. James P. W. Neil, Eighteenth Infantry, who ordered me to go into camp until such time as the barracks are completed. I have plenty of tents and have made a splendid camp.

October 6, 1866.

Yesterday I was mostly engaged in making my reports to the Department Commander, giving the details of the march and description of the country. Lieut. W. F. Halleck, the Post Adjutant, proposed that we should start an officers' mess, which I agreed to, and got our first dinner ready in time for Lieutenant Bates, who just arrived from Denver, and is my guest while here. Captain Neil ordered thirty of my men to go to work on the new barracks, and they have been putting shingles on the roof most of the day. I drew enough stores today to give every man a com-

plete outfit, and at inspection the company looked splendid. Captain Neil has ordered us to be under arms at all roll calls.

October 9, 1866.

Captain Neil has ordered Lieutenant Halleck and me to go on duty every other day as Officer of the Day, and as I have to drill, overlook the work of building the barracks, make the rounds after twelve o'clock at night, go on boards of survey, command the company, etc., I am kept very busy. My barracks were completed today, and I moved the company into them at four o'clock this afternoon. Lieutenant Bates, Dr. Latham, the Post Surgeon, and I visited Julesburg, four miles east of the post, the only little town within two hundred miles of the post. Lieutenant Bates introduced me to Gen. B. H. Hughes of Denver, and then started a game of billiards with Colonels Webster and Wyutt. The game was so interesting that I concluded that my friends were booked for the evening, so I returned to the post to attend to my company duties.

Indians are getting troublesome. I improve all the time possible in drilling my men, jumping the horses over ditches, etc.

I have adopted a new drill of my own for Indian fighting that has not appeared in the tactics which will be very important if we are surrounded on the plains by the Indians. Captain Norwood, commanding K Troop of the regiment, arrived with eighty men this morning. Only fifty-five were mounted. I find the Captain to be a gentleman of the old-fashioned Southern style, and have invited him in our mess. He is from Baltimore, Md. My commanding officer is a very pleasant man to converse with when sober, but I have not seen him often. He has been on a spree for some months, I am told, and is likely to keep it up for some time. Lieutenant Bates arrived today from Laramie, and is on his way to Denver after lumber for the new post. He is my guest.

October 20, 1866.

Mr. Shepherd arrived today with a lot of horses for the regiment, and, taking rather a fancy to me, gave me a hint that I might pick out some for my troop, so I drew fifteen good ones and exchanged others so as to have all bays, and I can boast tonight of having one hundred of the best horses in the service.

October 21, 1866.

Capt. John Mix and his wife arrived today, and Col. John Green with four companies of the Second Cavalry, commanded by Lieutenant Gregg, Lieutenant Norton and Lieutenant Wandless. Capt. Henry B. Freeman and wife and Captain Arnold of the Eighteenth Infantry also came today.

October 22, 1866.

I gave up my quarters to Captain Mix and wife last night. The Captain assumed command of the company this morning, but I wil not have to turn over the property until the 1st of November.

North Platte River, D. T., October 23, 1866.

Just as I retired, about 1 o'clock this morning, news came into the post that Carlisle's large train of mules had been captured by the Indians and some emigrants who were traveling with his train had been murdered, several women and children scalped, and that the Indians had gone northwest with the stock. Colonel Neil, the Post Commander, at once ordered Captain Norwood after the Indians with his full company of cavalry. He was mounted and off with his men in one-half hour from the time he received the orders. Thinking perhaps I might be needed, I told my first sergeant to notify the men to be ready to mount in five minutes if an order should require us to go to the assistance of Captain Norwood.

Within two hours after Captain Norwood left an orderly returned with a request from the Captain for more men; that he had discovered a large trail of Indians going in a northwest course. I was ordered to report to him at once, and within ten minutes was on the move with one hundred as good soldiers as I ever saw mounted. Instead of going down the South Platte to the place where the Indians had crossed I forded the river near the post and then took a northeast course, hoping to strike the trail ahead of Captain Norwood and pursue the Indians independent of him, but just as the sun was pushing out of the clouds my advance guard discovered one of his flankers, and all I could do then was to report, which I did with a salute, and was ordered to march my troop in the rear of his. After slowly marching fifteen or twenty miles I rode to the head of the command and informed Captain Norwood that if we did not go faster it would be impossible to overtake the Indians. He remarked that he did

Reporting to Norwood.

not intend to push his horses up by overmarching them, and continued in his slow pace until we reached the North Platte river, just as the sun was setting, when he looked at the muddy waters and then at the sun, and said, "Well, we might as well return to the post, as it was a very dangerous undertaking to cross the river at that place, and, further, there were too many Indians on the other side for us to handle with two companies of cavalry." I reminded him that it was our duty to try and overtake the Indians and punish them; that every time they committed depredations, murdered people in the way they were doing, for our troops to follow them a short distance and then give up the chase only encouraged the Indians to be more daring and make them feel that no matter what they did they would escape punishment. After being satisfied that nothing I could say would induce Captain Norwood to go forward I asked my first sergeant, Miller, if he thought all the men would follow me and do their duty as soldiers. He said, "Every man will follow on, sir, and fight for and with you as long as breath is in their body, sir." I then reported to Captain Norwood my intention to go forward and try to punish the Indians, and that if he would not go in command that I would take my troop and surprise the Indians and punish them if possible. He objected to my leaving his command, and threatened to prefer charges if I did. There being no time to parley, I or-

dered my men forward and jumped my large bay horse off the bank into the river, reaching the other side safely, and watched the rest of the men into the river, some of the horses plunging through the quicksand. A few of the men were off their horses entirely, holding on to the saddles or the horses' tails, but they all got over safely, fixed up the saddles, mounted and started on the trail up Pumpkin creek, a stream that empties into the North Platte river. Looking back over the river, they could see Captain Norwood and his company slowly marching back to the post. By 9 o'clock in the evening my advanced scout discovered a little fire and reported to me. Ordering all the men to dismount, I took the scout and Sergeant Miller and advanced cautiously, and soon discovered some roast buffalo meat over the fire. After be-

Crossing Platte River.

ing satisfied the Indians had all gone, the men helped themselves to the roasted meat, which was the first mouthful they had eaten for twenty-six hours. After the men had all they wanted, we marched on, and soon the sergeant of the rear guard reported to me that Private Smith's horse had given out. I ordered him to see that he was started back towards the post, and to head his horse to the Platte river, and remain there until daybreak in the morning, and if I was not there, to mount and cross the river and make his way into the post the best way he could, and to give each man whose horse gave out the same instructions. By half-past 11 tonight my scout reported being near a large village; that a narrow path passed between two high peaks, and beyond in the large valley were the Indians and all their animals. I

counted my men, and had only twenty-five left to do the work in store for them, the rest having been sent back to the river on account of their horses giving out. My first impulse was to start back, when the thought occurred that before I could reach the post I would be surrounded and murdered by the Indians, and that it would be better to risk surprising them while asleep than to run the risk of retreating. So I selected eight men of the twenty-five to hold the horses, and divided the other seventeen into detachments, placing a non-commissioned officer in charge of each, instructed that as soon as the charge was made to enter

GREATEST CAVALRY FEAT ON RECORD.

the tepees and gather up the arms and equipments which he could find, another sergeant to take charge of all the stock, and start them towards the post, and send two of his men on the best horses or ponies he could catch and start them to the Platte river, with instructions for the men there to remain until we arrived.

We quietly advanced to the upper end of the village, and discovered two old squaws on guard, sitting over a little fire in a hole in the ground. Just as they started the alarm, I ordered the charge, firing our carbines and revolvers into the tepees, Green

making the mountains ring with the blast of his bugle, starting the animals through the village.

The Indians were all in a state of confusion, and ran out of their tepees into the underbrush, leaving most of their clothes, arms and equipments, which were gathered up by Sergeant Kane and his men and loaded on the old pack mules. There being several hundred Indians to contend against, I made all possible haste to

RETURN TO FORT SEDGWICK.

get out, and caught up enough fresh horses, ponies and mules to remount my men, and turned my horses in with the captured stock, and drove all to the North Platte, where I found the rest of the company waiting.

They assisted in getting all the stock over the river, and when within forty miles of the post Captain Norwood met me with his

company and some infantry in escort wagons, which had been hurried forward to my assistance. Captain Norwood congratulated me, saying he would not forward the charges he had been preparing, as long as I had been so successful. After waiting for an hour, and enjoying a good breakfast of bacon, hard bread and coffee, Sergeant Miller had one of the ponies saddled up and decorated with all the Indian chief's regalia, and requested me to ride him to the post, and as I did so, hundreds of the people came from all the country about to congratulate me and thank me for the way I had punished the Indians. Only seven men and thirteen of the horses out of the twenty-five were wounded, and I brought them all safe into the post, with 300 head of cattle, 200 mules, a large number of Indian ponies and horses, buffalo robes, bows and quivers, rifles, pistols, pipe shields, war bonnets and one lance, with the scalp locks from thirteen persons, including the locks of two little girls' scalps, who no doubt had been murdered, mutilated and scalped. The Indians were so suddenly surprised that they did not have time to gather up anything in their flight, and before they could return to their tepees my men had gathered most of their weapons. Had the Indians known at the time the strength of my command, not one of us would have been left to tell the tale. I was fortunate myself in not getting worse hurt, as one bullet went through my hat, grazing my head and slightly stunning me, and one struck my canteen, one my saber hilt, and one made a slight flesh wound in my side. Three of my men are very badly wounded, and Dr. Latham says he will have to amputate the arm at the shoulder of one of them, as the head of the arrow is driven into the bone so far it will be impossible to get it out. I am very proud of the fact that I got all of my men back and arrived safely at the post, and in spite of my being tired out, the congratulations of so many people, some of whom have come many miles to see me, makes me feel as if I were a man of great importance in this part of the country, as they claim that it is the first time the Indians have been punished for years.

Fort Sedgwick, C. T., October 24, 1866.

My plans were carried out like clockwork, and every man did his duty faithfully and as intelligently as if he had been especially trained for that kind of work. It was about 12 o'clock last night

when we advanced to the edge of the village, where all were as still as death but the tingle of the bells on the ponies, which were grazing with the cattle, horses and mules.

October 27, 1866.

During my scout Colonel Green left, with his command, for Fort Laramie. News came in this morning that the Indians are committing depredations all over the country. Captain Neill sent Captain Norwood and fifty men to More's Ranch after them. I addressed my report of the scout to the Assistant Adjutant-General of the Department of the Platte, through the post Adjutant, but Colonel Neill returned it, with orders to address it to him. I obeyed his order, and sent one copy direct to headquarters over his head, explaining my reason for doing so.

I must call attention to the following names of my Company M, who supported me in performing, perhaps, one of the greatest cavalry feats ever heretofore recorded, and who proved themselves by their acts and deeds one of the most remarkable companies of soldiers in our Army:

Roll of Company "M," Second U. S. Cavalry.

First Sergeant George C. Miller, Sergeants Henry H. Todd, Frank H. Allison, Christian Widman, Thomas Keane, Daniel FitzPatrick, Corporals Robert T. Lyons, George Zimmerman, Jeremiah J. Gosman, Philander Freeman, Bugler Wm. Osterhold, Saddler Edw. Sanzonsi, Farrier Joshua Hooker, Privates Henry Buch, Joseph Bucholtz,* William Beese, Michael Casper, Rodgers Curry, Maurice W. Curry, Oscar Close, Andrew F. Carrick, Michael Connell, Martin Cullen, William Carney, Thomas Clark, John Castello, John C. Caldwell, Henry Callow, Thomas Connely, John F. Donley, John Derlin, John C. Davis, John W. Davis, Michael Delaney, Henry Donnan, Peter Dolan, Jesse E. Dewey, Albion H. Brown, George Dimmick, Henry Desmar, Victor Dungan, Robert Dawson, Alonze Dufour, Henry Entriken, Charles Erskine, John Ellis, Francis Edwards, Albert H. Furnice, George Fessenden, Frank B. Flanders, Joseph Foster, Henry Gordon, William Gibson, Charles Green, Michael Groman, Wm. Garrison, Michael Hoffnagle, Wm. J. Humphreys, Edw. Homel, Wm. Henicke, Jacob P. Hischberges, Chas. H. Haynes, Patrick Hefron, David Hall, Michael Haley, Almon Hacket, Jas. Hand,

Edw. Handford, Rudey Hertsman, Gollieb Kischner, Daniel Keith, Jno. Kimmel, Wm. P. Leakey, Saml. McCullom, Jas. S. Mills, Bernard Martin, Barney McKean, Wm. Moore, Peter Myer, Christian Pagh, Jno. Sullivan, Washington Sutton, Edmund Smith, Henry Stoffel, Jno. C. Sergeant, Charles F. Senior, August Emil Tetzner, Chas. Telton, Michael Van Kennan, Jno. Williams, Albert Wolfe.

*On November 17, 1899, a man by the name of Burnside handed me the following memoranda, saying that Mr. Bucholtz was receiving a pension of only $12, he having been disabled in a march with me after Indians in the fall of 1866. On looking up the company roster I find that he was one of the men that was with me in that fight.

October 28, 1866.

It was my turn to go on duty as Officer of the Day, but Captain Mix insisted upon taking my place, on account of my being so badly used up. He and Colonel Neill had a lively discussion in regard to the details of enlisted men. It seems that Colonel Neill used the men from both troops to help build and complete the infantry quarters, and now he requires the cavalry to build them over, and will not let any of the infantry help.

Fort Sedgwick, C. T., October 29, 1866.

The following is an extract from my report sent last night:

After pursuing the Indians ninety miles, I surprised them in their village, located on a small stream north of the North Platte. After a spirited skirmish, we recaptured the stolen stock and fifty-three horses, twenty-two Indian ponies, 175 mules and 300 cattle, arms and camp equipage of the Indians. After setting fire to the village, and fearing an attack from a large party in the vicinity, I hastened to this post, which I reached at 5 P. M., the 24th inst., having marched at least 170 miles in thirty-seven hours. My men and horses started without their breakfast, and had nothing to eat until their return this side of the North Platte, except some buffalo meat found abandoned by the Indians and what Captain Norwood brought when he came to my assistance. We crossed the North and South Platte rivers twice each, and our wet clothes were soon a sheet of ice. The Indians left on the ground four of their killed and seven wounded. Three of my men were badly wounded, and thirteen horses, but I was able to get them all back to the post. My command submitted cheerfully to the hardships of the march and behaved beautifully under fire. Had my men

been armed with more revolvers but few Indians would have escaped, for we effected a complete surprise.

Respectfully,
Your obedient servant,
(Signed) G. A. Armes,
Second Lieut. Co. M., Second U. S. Cav.
Through Commanding Officer Co. M, Second Cav.

Headquarters Company M, Second U. S. Cavalry,
Fort Sedgwick, C. T., October 28, 1866.

Respectfully forwarded. The energy displayed by Lieutenant Armes in following the trail, under very discouraging circumstances, with a tired and hungry command, and the cheerful submission to privations and hardships by the whole command, are certainly worthy of admiration. The within case seems to furnish conclusive evidence that the revolver is almost indispensable in our Indian warfare.

(Signed) John Mix,
Capt. Second U. S. Cavalry,
Commanding Company.

Captain Norwood returned from his scout this evening, but did not see an Indian.

November 3, 1866.

I received a reprimand from Colonel Neill today because I let the sergeant of the guard take some hay from the stock for the men to lie on in the mud at the guard tent. He claimed I should have taken the hay from my company, being Officer of the Day, and I claimed the hay should not come from the company allowance, but from the Quartermaster. As the Colonel is still on a drunk, I did not worry over the reprimand.

November 7, 1866.

While on duty as Officer of the Day yesterday, Private Daly, Company K, burned all his clothes up, thinking it would be an excuse for not doing fatigue work, but I had him taken under guard behind the stable, where he dug a hole three feet deep and four feet wide, and when it was completed I had him fill it up again, and after he had dug and filled it up three times he begged off from further punishment, and I sent him to the quartermaster-sergeant, who issued him a new suit of clothes; so he did not make much by his singular behavior. General Weitzel, with four companies of the Eighteenth Infantry, arrived today, and Lieu-

tenants Fenton and Joshua W. Jacobs (now Captain and Quartermaster) are my guests.

November 20, 1866.

Corporal Foster returned last night with a deserter and Captain Mix's horse. Colonel Neill and Captain Mix had quite a row. A ranchman brought a load of potatoes into the post and Captain Mix bought them. Colonel Neill ordered the man out of camp, and would not let him deliver the potatoes. Captain Mix wanted them, and told me to take the company wagon and go after them. Colonel Neill stopped me, and would not let me go. I then hired a private team for $4, and we soon had the potatoes in the stable. Colonel Neill got very angry, and ordered all Captain Mix's men from the carpenter shop, and would not let them take the furniture and chairs they were repairing or anything they had taken into the shop.

November 21, 1866.

A large party of Northern Cheyennes crossed the river below the post yesterday, going south on a hunting expedition. They have forty squaws along to skin the buffaloes, take care of the stock and wait on the Indian warriors, as they consider it beneath their dignity to help cut up or take the hide off a buffalo, or perform any manual labor. When a warrior rides up and kills a buffalo, his work is over, and he will jump off his pony and lie or sit down and smoke, letting the squaws catch the pony the best way they can and unsaddle and care for him. Post Chaplain Wright, U. S. A., from Fort Laramie, arrived today on his way to Washington. I gave him a large number of Indian trophies to present to friends, who will appreciate them, as a lance, with the scalp-locks of fifteen or twenty persons, some of them taken from women and children, who were afterwards burned and tortured to death in camp, will be quite a curiosity, as well as the shields, bows and quivers, war bonnets, tobacco pouches, pipes, etc. Johnny Keller, an old friend and brother-in-law to Colonel Camp, Quartermaster, U. S. A., is my guest, and we had a splendid horseback ride this afternoon.

November 24, 1866.

Mr. Keller left for Fort Laramie yesterday. Captain Mix had the men shoot at the target, 100 yards, with the new Spencer carbines just issued to the company, and only six shots struck it.

November 25, 1866.

While exercising my horses, as usual, and training my men to spring on and off as the horses jumped over a bar, without saddles, which made a very interesting sight, many collected around to see the men and horses go through these exciting exercises. Many of the men would stand up on their horse's bare back and ride around the ring at a gallop, and run, in many instances, and spring on and off their horses while running and jumping over the bar. In fact, I never saw as active a set of young men in the Army as I have in my troop. Although the drill I have adopted is not in the tactics, it will eventually be adopted in exercising cavalrymen, and will prove of great advantage, not only in an Indian fight, but in remounting and dismounting while in pursuit of an enemy.

Colonel Neill came out, with his orderly, and stood watching the maneuvers for some time, which I supposed he admired, and I felt proud to see my men and horses doing so well, and naturally supposed that he was pleased with my new tactics. Suddenly the orderly reported that the commanding officer wished to see me at once. Complying with his order and approaching, I saluted, and was immediately ordered to my quarters in close arrest (arrest No. 9). I felt for a few minutes as if I would sink into the ground, but complied with the order, not having the least idea why so unjust (as I thought) an order should be given, except that Colonel Neill was drunk and was not responsible for what he was doing.

November 29, 1866.

I am still very sick, and have my meals sent to me, but I managed to obey Captain Neill's order and report to him. He had nothing of importance to say, being drunk as usual. I made an excuse and left. Lieutenant Halleck and Post Adjutant called upon me twice today. He informed me that Captains Mix and Neill had a lively spat, and that charges would soon be preferred by Captain Mix, my company commander.

Headquarters Fort Sedgwick, C. T.,
November 30, 1866.

Lieut. Geo. A. Armes,
Second U. S. Cavalry:

Sir—By direction of the commanding officer you are hereby released from arrest, and will report to the commanding officer of your company for duty.

Very respectfully,
Your obedient servant,
WALTER W. HALLECK,
Second Lieut. Eighteenth U. S. Inf.,
Post Adjt.

Upon receipt of the above order, releasing me from arrest, Colonel Neill reprimanded me for adopting a drill outside of the tactics, and cautioned me never to again drill regular soldiers as circus-riders and jumping jacks. But at this date (1899) I observe at Fort Myer the same mode of tactics in the riding-school has been adopted by Colonel Gordon, and appeared to be approved by everyone present, officials and others; but my only mistake was that I was over thirty years ahead of the time when I advanced the idea of drilling regular Army soldiers in such exercises.

November 30, 1866.

Colonel Neill ordered the command out on inspection at 10 o'clock this A. M. Captain Mix was sick, and I took command of the company, sick as I was. Captain Mix preferred charges against Captain Neill this afternoon as the last resort on account of abuse.

December 1, 1866.

Gen. I. N. Palmer and Lieutenant Peale arrived at 2 o'clock this afternoon and drove to my tent, as they did not care to call on Colonel Neill, the commanding officer, but just as they had accepted my invitation, Colonel Neill came in and insisted so earnestly they should stay with him that they accepted. Lieut. A. H. Bowman, Twenty-seventh Infantry, who is with General Palmer, remained as my guest, but Captain and Mrs. Mix got up a splendid dinner, and had all the officers of the post, except Colonel Neill, dine with them, giving me a chance to get better acquainted with General Palmer, who is on his way to take command of the regiment and establish his headquarters at Fort Laramie.

December 3, 1866.

After a careful inspection yesterday, General Palmer and party left for Laramie, but not until he had expressed himself as highly pleased with the splendid condition he found the troops in. I do not believe there is a more perfect gentleman in the Army. He seemed to take a special interest in me, and is proud of the successful scout and Indian fight I had a few weeks ago, as it goes to the credit of the regiment.

December 6, 1866.

Captain Mix is still on the sick report, and I am in command of the company. Colonel Neill thought he would vent his spite toward Captain Mix today by ordering me to send the best laundress in the company away. So, in order to head him off, I told the first sergeant that if he could find a man in the company who would marry her she would not have to go. Soon after he appeared with Sergeant Widman, who said he would marry her. There not being any minister or Chaplain near, I sent for Lieutenant Halleck, the Post Adjutant, who agreed to marry them. After sending out a number of invitations, the ceremony took place in the barracks at 4 o'clock in the presence of Major English, Captain Mix and wife, Captain Norwood and myself. This evening Major English selected ten or twelve of the best singers at the post to serenade the bride and groom, and then wound up at Colonel Neill's headquarters. The Colonel then went to the sutler's and drank with the men, and had a row with two of them. One man struck Colonel Neill in the face, and then the fun had to stop.

December 10, 1866.

Captain Brown, chief engineer of surveying party for Northern Pacific Railroad, passed through the post yesterday and dined with me. While drilling the company below the post I looked over the Platte river and discovered Paymaster Armistead, who was unable to cross. I sent the company to the barracks by First Sergeant Miller, and undertook to cross the ice, but my horse broke through seven times before reaching the Paymaster, and I came near being carried under the ice by the current, which was very strong. Major Armistead was glad to see me, as he was nearly frozen and half starved, not being able to get fuel for a fire to cook with. I managed to get back to the post, selected twenty

men, secured a flat-bottomed boat, and with a long rope got the boat over all right, and told the Paymaster and his clerk, Stephen Jecko, his young nephew and son of Judge Jecko of St. Louis, to get in. After the iron safe was placed in the boat, the men started, and about the middle of the river the ice gave way and the old Major thought he was gone, but by careful management my men got him safely landed, and he showed he appreciated their action by giving each soldier a good big drink of whiskey, which pleases a soldier more than anything else, as whiskey is scarce in this part of the country. The Paymaster has agreed to stand by me in case of any trouble I may have with my commanding officer, Colonel Neill, and he says he will never forget the kindness I have shown him. He blames Colonel Neill for his neglect in not trying to get him into the post last night, when he knew he was across the river without fuel or anything to eat.

On the Prairie, C. T., December 12, 1866.

I obtained permission to go buffalo hunting yesterday, and I took Bugler Green and Sergeant Allison. Mr. Newman joined at Julesburg, and after a ride of ten miles, we discovered a small herd. I killed one after a half-mile chase, and stopped to cut his tongue out and cut his tail off, supposing the rest of the party knew where I was, but as the buffalo scattered in different directions, and the men after them, I was soon lost sight of. It being sundown and a storm approaching, and about twenty miles from the post, I knew it was useless to try to get back tonight; so I unsaddled my horse and secured him with a lariat, and made my bed by the side of the buffalo, as I thought it best to remain until sunrise tomorrow morning.

Fort Sedgwick, C. T., December 14, 1866.

Just as the sun rose yesterday my horse threw up his head and neighed, when he was answered by horses at a distance. I sprang from under my blanket, with my pistols and carbine, making a breastwork of the buffalo, thinking Indians were coming, but I soon discovered Sergeant Allison, Green and Mr. Newman coming toward me. They had hunted for me for awhile, then unsaddled and remained all night in one place. Reaching the post about 3 o'clock this afternoon, I reported to Colonel Neill and

presented him with a nice tenderloin buffalo steak, which he accepted, and then ordered me to my quarters in arrest. I felt pretty bad, as it was impossible for me to have returned sooner. (Arrest No. 10.)

Upon our return we came out at Bovey's Ranch on the Platte river, where we met Captain Hart, who is on his way to his regiment, and after a good dinner, which was gotten up specially for us (we had had nothing to eat for forty-eight hours), we came to the post in Captain Hart's ambulance. During the night we were out Captain Mix sent all the men he could spare from the post to look for us, signal fires were made on the highest hills, but we were unable to discover them. We had been given up by most everyone at the post, as there are so many Indians on the war-path, trying to capture just such parties as ours. Captain Norwood had taken some artillery out several miles from the post to fire, thinking, perhaps, we might get the direction of the post from the sound of the guns. Captain Mix did not return with the company until this evening, and he was glad to see me alive, in spite of the long and tiresome hunt he had made for us.

December 16, 1866.

Being still in arrest, I have had plenty of time to read and rest. I finished a book on the "First Battle of Bull Run," and wrote twenty-two letters. At 7 o'clock this evening Colonel Neill had me marched to his quarters under charge of a sentry, and gave me orders to explain why I did not return to the post the day I left it. He was just sober enough to be in a good humor, and accepted my explanation, ordered the sentry to his quarters and released me from arrest.

December 18, 1866.

We had three hours of mounted drill today. Being Officer of the Day, I had to superintend having the three deserters securely ironed, as they were brought in this morning. Lieut. H. S. Galbraith, Eighteenth Infantry, who has been Colonel Neill's guest, was ordered out of his quarters today, and is now my guest.

December 20, 1866.

While at a target with my company today, and explaining to Lieutenants Harmon and Galbraith and the ladies who came out

with them how nicely the new carbines worked, a shell exploded in the breech and almost put my eyes out. Dr. Latham and the hospital steward worked on my face for several hours this afternoon, picking out the powder, and I am much better tonight, although suffering a great deal of pain.

December 24, 1866.

The Indians set fire to the prairie a few miles from here, and the danger of the hay and post buildings being burned required me to take all the men I could gather together and try to stop it. Captain Mix gave me his secret of acting, which I shall never forget, as it may prove valuable to me in the future. I carried it out with effect by setting fire to the grass near the post and starting it towards the fire that was working this way, and when the two fires met they went out, and thus the post was saved. Captain and Mrs. Beebe have invited me to a party at their house tomorrow night. Lieutenant Fitch, formerly of the Nineteenth, V. R. C., arrived by stage and is my guest.

Christmas, December 25, 1866.

After breakfast this morning Lieutenant Fitch and I, with twenty-five mounted men as an escort, went on an antelope hunt, and after selecting a large buck, I started after him at a full run, firing my revolver at every jump, and after a chase of a mile one of my shots broke his leg, when I rode up and killed him. It took two men to lift him on a horse, and as he was the first I ever killed, I felt rather proud, and was congratulated by all my friends at the post this afternoon.

December 26, 1866.

It was four o'clock this morning ere the party broke up. I never saw people enjoy themselves more than they did last night. We had music and dancing and supper at twelve o'clock. Mrs. Scott was the belle. Mrs. Captain Mix and Latham deserve a great deal of credit for the good supper and tasty display of everything. After two hours of mounted drill this afternoon, which I conducted in the absence of Captain Mix, with Lieutenant Fitch as spectator, he left on the stage for his post. Just after dinner this evening news came to us all here that Lieutenant-Colonel

Fetterman, Twenty-seventh Infantry; Captain Brown and Lieutenant Gennmond of the Eighteenth Infantry, and Lieutenant Wandless, commanding Company C of the Second Cavalry, with ninety enlisted men, besides a number of citizens, had all been killed by the Indians at or near Fort Phil Kearney. Such news is sad, but we expect further details tomorrow.

December 28, 1866.

Captain Norwood and I were on a board of survey yesterday. The news of the massacre is confirmed, and troops have been sent after the Indians from Fort Laramie. Twenty-five four-mule wagons had gone several miles from the post after wood. While returning fifty or one hundred Indians charged at the train, and Colonel Fetterman, who was guarding it, started with ninety enlisted men and thirty-one citizens after the Indians, who ran into a deep ravine about a mile from the main road. They were immediately ambushed by several thousand Indians, who were hidden behind the bushes, rocks and hills. Not one man of the one hundred and twenty-one was left, all being killed and many bodies being mutilated.

December 29, 1866.

Captain Mix was placed in close arrest before guard-mount this morning by Colonel Neill, who also forbade my going near his quarters or speaking to him on company business. He also forbade me from speaking to Mrs. Mix on any pretext, or a guard would soon be placed over me. Of course I have to obey orders.

CHAPTER V.

EXTRACTS FROM DIARY, ETC.

January 1, 1867.

I came off duty as Officer of the Day this morning, seeing the old year out and the new one in. Captain Mix relieved me. Colonel Neill received orders to turn over all quartermaster's stores to Captain Norwood, who has been appointed Post Quartermaster. I can hardly realize that I am just starting another new year. In looking back on the contrast of my last year with my present surroundings and what I have been through during the past six months, settled and established hundreds of miles from civilization, surrounded by rattlesnakes, Indians, buffalo and other wild animals, it seems almost like a dream.

I am thankful to God for giving me health and strength to abstain from the many wicked vices surrounding a young Army officer on the frontier, and hope and pray that I may be able to continue an upright course and not yield to the many temptations and snares to which so many give way in this country, but follow the advice and teaching of my dear mother, to whom I was devoted, and who died a true Christian.

January 2, 1867.

Private Sullivan was reported absent at reveille this morning. I started a searching party after him, and about eleven o'clock his body was found on the ice in the middle of the river holding a hen in one hand and a rooster in the other. All three were frozen to death—Sullivan, rooster and hen. Mr. Sullivan had been in the habit of crossing the river during the night to get whiskey from a ranch opposite the post, and being fond of chickens, concluded he would have an extra dish that Uncle Sam does not furnish his boarders. The owner of the ranch had made complaint that his chickens were being stolen, but the thief was sly enough to keep from being caught. He must have taken more whiskey than usual, or stopping to meditate, fallen asleep and frozen to death.

I ordered Sergeant Miller to send me a detail from the company to dig a grave, selected a place on the river bank, and Corporal Lyon with five men soon reported, wrapped a blanket

around Private Sullivan and his chickens and buried them four and one-half feet deep. The owner of the ranch, who witnessed the ceremony, seemed greatly relieved, and now feels that his chickens will be safe in the future.

January 3, 1867.

An order came from department headquarters today placing Colonel Neill under arrest and Captain Mix in command of the post.

January 4, 1867.

I moved into my new quarters this morning. News came to the post today that two men have just been killed and scalped by the Indians near Fort Casper and the telegraph wires cut so that we cannot get particulars.

January 5, 1867.

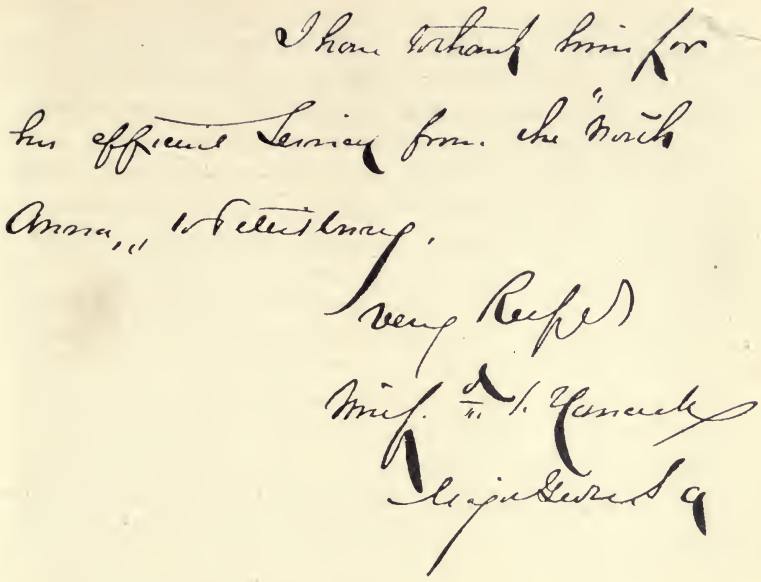
The Indians are murdering ranchmen, emigrants and all people they meet. The settlers are frightfully alarmed as they see that we have not half enough soldiers to protect them. Returning to my quarters, I found an order from Capt. Mix appointing me Post Adjutant and the following letter from Gen. Hancock:

Head Quarters Department of the Missouri,

Fort Leavenworth, Kansas, Dec 25th 1866,

2d Lieut. George A. Armes, 2nd U.
S. Cavalry, my attached Army Staff
as a Volunteer Aide de Camp,

during part of the time I commanded the Second (2nd) Army Corps, and served under my orders in the campaign of 1864 (Wilderness) in which he was engaged in several of the most important battles of that period, with credit to himself and advantage to the service. I found him always ready night and day, for the most disagreeable duty when any service requiring hard-riding accompanied by danger, offered, Lieut Armes was a volunteer.



January 6, 1867.

Entered upon my duties as Post Adjutant this morning after attending stables for Companies K and M; drilled Company K two hours, mounted, this forenoon. The Paymaster paid all the companies this afternoon. Campany M's stables caught fire in the saddler's room this evening and burnt up my double harness, saddle and bridle and over $100 worth of my traps. Major Burbank and Mr. Beebe, his clerk, are guests of Captain Mix. Dr. Latham, Captain Mix, Major Burbank, Mr. Beebe, Wentworth (the scout) and I, with ten enlisted men as an escort and a six-mule wagon, went on a buffalo hunt yesterday. Captain Mix killed two, Mr. Beebe one, Wentworth five, I only one, bringing back the wagon loaded all within three hours from the time we left the post. Captain Norwood returned from Fort Laramie, relieved me from command of his company today and started with it for Fort Laramie. I have to attend to all the calls, stables, guard-mount, drills, etc., and go on duty as Officer of the Day in addition to my duties as Post Adjutant.

January 13, 1867.

They had a lively time today. Colonel Neill sent word to Captain Mix that he was going to take command of the post. He broke his close arrest by going to his first sergeant and trying to get him to fall his company in line to arrest Captain Mix. I was ordered to put him back in his quarters, when he rushed into the sutler's store, where he backed up in the corner of the room with two loaded revolvers, threatening to shoot any person who dared to molest him. I marched the sergeant of the guard and two men into the room and took a loaded revolver in my hand, intending to get Colonel Neill to his quarters dead or alive, and just as the Colonel and I were about to shoot at each other Dr. Latham rushed in and sang out: "Colonel Neill, I have something important to tell you," and walked up to him. They were soon on their way to his quarters admiring the Colonel's pistols, which the Doctor managed to get possession of. I at once placed two guards over the Colonel in his quarters and took possession of his revolvers.

January 15, 1867.

Governor Cummings of Colorado and Major Lewis Thompson, Second Cavalry, his military secretary, arrived yesterday. The Major is my guest. Colonel Neill having sobered up a little and given his word to Captain Mix that he would not give further trouble, the guard was taken off. Reports of a large war party of Indians being near came to the post during the day. I am ready to go for them with three companies, and can be on the march within five minutes after receiving orders.

Captain Dewees, Lieutenants Cahill and Neill left today for Fort Laramie with their command. Three better officers than they cannot be found in our Army. Captain Mix sent me with a sergeant and ten men to Julesburg this afternoon after a band of robbers who had broken in and stolen a lot of goods from one of the stores there, but had gotten away before I got there, going northwest with hundreds of dollars' worth of goods. I am in command of the post in Captain Mix's absence.

January 16, 1867.

Captain Mix gave me orders to assume command of Companies B and D, Eighteenth Infantry. Have been kept busy all day.

Meig's Ranch, D. T., January 21, 1867.

Orders came yesterday afternoon to take four six-mule wagons and twenty-five men of my company, proceed to an old cañon fifty miles from the post and take possession of a large amount of stolen goods reported to be there and capture the robbers if possible. I left the post at daybreak, and in crossing the Platte river the wagon broke through the ice. I was detained four hours, and am now camping out in a very cold snowstorm without wood or anything to burn, even to make coffee. Mr. Hughes, owner of the ranch, has kindly let us have the use of his fireplace to cook what coffee we need, but cannot give us any further comfort.

Pole Creek, Twenty Miles from
Laramie Ranch, January 22, 1867.

During last night, just as I had gotten half asleep under my blanket in the snow, the sergeant of the guard reported that he believed a party of Indians were trying to break into the camp. Quietly having all the men placed under arms, with instructions not to let an Indian or robber get away alive, I went to the outpost and soon heard my name called in English, and Sergeant Widman reported with twenty-five men, handing me the following letter:

Headquarters Fort Sedgwick, C. T.,
January 23, 1867.

Lieut. G. A. Armes,
Second U. S. Cavalry:

Sir—I send you a wagon loaded with forage and rations, about four days each, also your saddle horse Ranger, some bandages and lint. You must not take your wagons too far in a fight. They would ruin you. Leave them at a safe place. When you get near the Indians, use your own judgment, always keeping in mind that your horses have much hard work to do after this trip. I cannot spare you any more men, for we must keep enough here to protect the post and keep matters quiet around us. I think you have men enough to fight all the Indians that you are likely to meet. At all events you must do the best you can with the men at your disposal.

Very respectfully,
Your obedient servant,
(Signed) J. Mix, Captain,
Commanding Post.

I sent a sergeant back to the post with a request that at least fifty more men be sent to me, as some forty or fifty men who were sent to Laramie, coming to Sharp's Woods, were surrounded by Indians and almost starved out. One man had ventured out and got to me with this information. Not waiting for reinforcements, I started out at three o'clock this morning in the snowstorm with fifty-five men and five wagons for the wood-choppers' camp, about forty miles up in the cañons. I halted at eight this morning at Lewis' Ranch on Pole creek, and at nine o'clock was again on the march to rescue the citizen wood-choppers. We had not marched more than twenty miles when a band of Indians came dashing at us. I at once had my wagons parked and left them in charge of the teamsters and ten soldiers. Then I deployed my men, placing Lieutenant Jenness in command of the left, and charged the Indians, who wheeled and ran over the hills into the deep ravine full of snow, my little command after them, firing our

RESCUING THE WOODCHOPPERS.

carbines, yelling and making as much noise as we could. After a chase of three miles the Indians disappeared, and all we got was one Indian pony with a war-bag full of dried meat, saddle and bridle, bow and quivers, shield and a number of Indian trinkets, with six or seven head of cattle they had just stolen and driven

from the wood-choppers' camp, which is only ten miles further on. My scout thinks all the men have been murdered, and that the Indians are making for the village with the stolen stock, so I will not wait for reinforcements, but go forward tonight and search the camp if possible. The snow is over a foot deep on a level, and five and six feet deep in the cañons. I first sent in a request to the post to hurry me forward more men if possible, stating that I will go forward tonight, and that one of my men was killed or captured by the Indians, but I lost no time in spite of the suffering of myself and men. If it had not been for the assistance of Lieutenant Jenness I hardly believe one of us would have been left, but he helped to cheer the men forward and charge when, judging by the large band of Indians, it was hopeless.

RETURN FROM THE RESCUE.

Pole Creek Crossing, Lewis' Ranch, D. T., January 24, 1867.

After taking the captured cattle and ponies to the wagon camp we got a little coffee and something to eat. No signs of reinforcements coming, we started for the wood camp, about twenty miles northwest in the mountains, which we reached about ten o'clock last night in the midst of one of the coldest Dakota blizzards I ever experienced. The Indians who had been holding the wood-choppers prisoners scattered the moment the little command was

discovered, when the citizens rushed out wild with excitement and rejoicing over our arrival and their rescue from starvation and death. They had been out of provisions for two days, and were boiling their shoes and boots to appease their hunger. My men divided their rations with them, got a hasty meal, and after getting warmed up a little by the good fires they had there, we started on the trail of the Indians, hoping to surprise and capture their village, about ten miles further on. Twenty of the wood-choppers, well armed with Winchesters and revolvers, volunteered to go with me, the rest starting on our back trail for the wagons we had left behind, taking orders to the sergeant in charge to return to this ranch and wait for further orders. We discovered the village about four o'clock this morning, and charged into it to find it empty. Not a live Indian could be seen, and my scout soon informed us that from what he had discovered he judged the village had been abandoned about five hours, and that the Indians who had held the wood-choppers prisoners, discovering our approach in the night, supposed I had a large force, hastened to their camp with the alarm, and the Indians got their families out as quickly as possible, starting for the mountains in a panic. After following their trail about ten miles I found it useless to attempt it further, as the horses would plunge in the ravines filled with soft snow from five to ten feet deep, and as the men were beginning to grow numb with the cold, I started for the ranch about twelve o'clock. It has taken me eleven hours to come twenty-five miles.

Meigs' Ranch, C. T., January 25, 1867.

It was between eleven and twelve o'clock last night when we reached Lewis' Ranch. When I was taken off my horse and carried into Mr. Lewis' room, which he kindly gave up to me, and as soon as the ice had melted from over my mouth so I could speak, I requested runners to be sent in to the post for two or three ambulances for the frozen men, who are unable to sit on their horses without great suffering.

Lewis gave his cowboys orders to have all my horses put under his sheds and well fed and to bring a lot of dry hay into the ranch and make all the men as comfortable as possible, while he and his clerk gave their personal attention to me. I was bathed in cold water and rubbed with towels until the doctor thought I

would pull through without losing any fingers or toes. Many of the men who had to be taken off their horses will lose their fingers and toes, and in one or two cases, I am afraid, their hands and feet.

I must mention the kind attention of Mrs. Major Kellogg. After she had started on to Fort Laramie the blizzard became so severe that she came back to this ranch, and upon her arrival, although suffering from the cold herself, she at once lent a helping hand to us all.

It was after ten o'clock this morning before I could get away from Lewis' Ranch, as I had to put my frozen men in six-mule wagons, making them comfortable as possible, and after being placed on my horse and my feet and hands bundled up, we started for this ranch.

About three o'clock this afternoon the only ambulance from the post met us, and after placing seven of the worst cases in it I sent it to the post with orders to hasten back to this ranch for more men who are unable to sit on their horses at all.

The ranch being too small to give us shelter, we are all camped in the snow tonight, and as fire only makes us worse, we are doing without any.

Thirty-two of the forty men who went with me to the Indian village are badly frozen, which gives the other ten men a great deal of extra work, as they have the care of the horses in addition to waiting upon their frozen comrades.

It is a good thing the Indians did not discover the strength of my little command, for if they had and we had met them in their village not one of us would have been left, as the scouts say there were ten Indians to one of us, and with the assistance of their squaws could have massacred us in a few moments.

Fort Sedgwick, C. T., January 26, 1867.

Two ambulances arrived at my camp during last night, and I sent fourteen more of my frozen men to the post, then saddled up and marched the rest of the command in, reaching the post at twelve o'clock, where I was placed in a cold room by Dr. Latham and every attention shown that could be to cure me. Captain Mix called on me with General Potter, Colonel of the Thirtieth

Infantry, who are now in camp near the post waiting for the storm to abate before going forward to Fort Laramie. Several of his officers called to see me during the day, but I am in such a suffering condition that I could not talk or entertain them. I feel considerably cheered up from the fact that I return to the post without the loss of a man or horse being left on the plains, with the exception of the man killed or captured by the Indians during the first day's fight. Meeting Mr. Coad last night, he gave me proof that "sixty-seven head of cattle and one pony which Lieutenant Geo. A. Armes, Second United States Cavalry, captured from the Indians belong to me and my company. Witnesses, Thomas Randall, Alva Wylie. (Signed) J. F. Coad."

Mr. Coad being the contractor, the recovery of his cattle will be a godsend to him as well as the families at the post, as he can bring his wood here now, which we were in great need of. Mr. Coad is now one of the prominent business men in Omaha, Neb.

I prepared and submitted my report as follows:

Fort Sedgwick, C. T., January 26, 1867.

Capt. J. Mix,
Second U. S. Cavalry,
Commanding Post, Fort Sedgwick, C. T.:

Sir—I have the honor to inform you that Sergeant Weidman, with twenty-five men, overtook me at 11 o'clock P. M. on the 21st inst. twelve miles from this post, at Meig's Ranch, where I stopped a short time. I left Meig's Ranch, with thirty-seven men, at 3 A. M. on the 22d; reached Lewis' Ranch, at Pole Creek Crossing, thirty miles, at 9 A. M., ate breakfast, and left at 10 A. M. for the cañons on Lawrence Fork, thirty-eight miles, to rescue Coad and his men; proceeded up Pole creek twelve or fifteen miles, when I discovered Indians; sent my wagons to a safe place and parked them, and started after the Indians with thirty-four men; followed them four miles, when they scattered in the bluffs and hid behind rocks, etc. They tried to decoy me with traps, by sending one or two out at a time. I sent a sergeant and four men out, and captured one pony, which an Indian had ridden out most too far; the Indian escaped behind the rock. I dismounted my men, climbed up the bluffs, and tried to get in rear of them, but failed; the snow was so deep it was impossible to follow them. I then mounted and started, and in trying to cross gullies the horses would sink in so deep it was with the greatest difficulty that the men could get them out, even by dismounting. I concluded it was not policy to risk my men in the cañons, as it was growing dusk, and the Indians ten to one. So I returned to the wagons, after a round trip of fif-

teen miles, then fed the animals, and started on to Lawrence Fork, which was twenty-three miles; reached there, and rescued Coad and twenty-one men at 2 A. M., the 23d inst.; fed and rested until 7 A. M., then started for the Indian camp, eight miles; found it deserted, and took fifty head of cattle, which they had left behind in their hurry. I returned to Lawrence Fork at 11 A. M., took four mules from the teams, packed them with grain and blankets, and started on the trail at 3 P. M.; marched all night until 4 A. M., the 24th, when I stopped near Pine Bluffs, making forty miles; fed and started again at 7 A. M., marched twenty-five miles, when I lost the trail, as the wind had blown the snow in and filled it up so that it could not be found. I then started for Pole Creek Crossing, which I reached at dusk, making a march of fifty-eight miles; left Pole creek at 10 A. M., on the 25th, and reached Meig's Ranch at 7 P. M., thirty miles; stopped all night, and left this morning, the 26th, at 7 o'clock, and arrived at this post at 10 A. M. Twenty-seven of my men are frozen, or are in such a condition that I am afraid they will not be fit for anything more than garrison duty as long as the cold weather lasts. I have not lost any horses. I lost one man, who, I think, was captured by the Indians when I charged into the bluffs, as I have not seen him since. I turned over sixty-seven head of cattle and one pony, which I captured from the Indians, to J. F. Coad & Co., after having sufficient proof that they belonged to him and his company. Second Lieut. John Jenness, Twenty-seventh U. S. Inf., who was on his way to join his regiment, volunteered his services, which I accepted. I furnished him with a horse, and he rendered valuable service in the charge, and behaved himself in a gallant manner. When in the cañons, and in great danger, he set a fine example to the men by his coolness and determination. It is my opinion he will be a daring and useful officer to the Government. Great credit is due the five citizens whose names I will send in to you soon, with the recommendation that they be employed in the Quartermaster's Department, as they are now out of employment and badly frozen. Most of the Indians were dressed in blue overcoats and mounted on American horses. Citizens whom I have talked with, and who were near them six or eight days ago, state that some are armed with Spencer carbines, and seem to think they are the same Indians who partook in the massacre at Fort Phil Kearney. Sergeant Keane, Corporals Furniss and Dimmock, and, in fact, all the men, behaved themselves in a gallant manner, and endured the hardships like true soldiers and men. From the appearance of the arrows found, the Indians were Cheyennes. A war bag was taken from the captured pony, which I judge contained at least twenty days' rations of dried meat, etc. I omitted to mention that seventeen head of cattle were found along their trail, which they had left in their retreat when I charged into the cañons after them. It is

the opinion of all those with whom I have talked that the Indians from above are coming this way for the purpose of meeting those from the Republican and attacking this road some time in February. Total number of miles marched since I left this post, two hundred and forty-nine (249). The horses seem to be still in good condition and not much worn.

G. A. Armes,
Second Lieut., U. S. Cav.,
Commanding Detach.

Capt. Mix endorses my report as follows: "Lieut. Armes has in this case, as he always does, carried out his instructions with energy and discretion. The severe loss in frost-bitten men is to be regretted, but the citizens on Lauren's Fork would doubt- have been massacred but for the assistance sent."

Note.—A paper in McClure's for June, 1899, by W. T. Carney, gives a detailed account of this terrible experience, but it is colored to suit the writer whom I had reprimanded for inciting to mutiny. I had no more to eat or wear than the command; no pack-mule to carry supplies personal to myself; went as far and suffered as much as the balance. In one instance I now recall I gave my overshoes to one of the men, taking them off my feet to do so. Capt. Mix—not Fox—did not reprimand me, nor did any other of my superiors. During the entire time I did not leave my command except as stated in my report.

Fort Sedgwick, C. T., January 27, 1867.

My frozen fingers caused me so much pain and suffering during last night that I did not sleep. Of course I did not have to mount guard as Post Adjutant, although I am not on the sick report.

Mrs. Captain Mix is doing all she can to make me comfortable, and has fixed a bed in her side of the house for me, my quarters being taken by some of the families of the Thirtieth Infantry, who cannot be made comfortable in camp.

February 5, 1867.

Mr. Foot from Washington left by stage yesterday for Fort Saunders. Captain Mix placed me in command of the post today while he and General Potter went on a buffalo hunt. In addition to being post commander and Officer of the Day, I am Post Adjutant, commander of Companies B and E, Thirty-sixth United States Infantry, and Company M, Second Cavalry, Post Treasurer and Provost-Marshal, which duties take about sixteen hours of my time out of the twenty-four.

Lately looking through the records of the War Department I found the enclosed letter from Governor Kirkwood. But my promotion had been made by General Grant before they reached the department without any request of mine:

Senate Chamber, February 8, 1867.

Hon. Edw. M. Stanton,
Secretary of War:

Sir—I enclose a letter forwarded to me by John Clark, Esq., for you.

I am well acquainted with Mr. Clark, and take pleasure in commending him as a worthy and reliable gentleman.

I have understood that Lieutenant Armes has been promoted for his gallant conduct, and trust my information may be correct.

Very respectfully,
Your obedient servant,
(Signed) S. J. Kirkwood.

Jefferson City, Mo., February 4, 1867.

Hon. E. M. Stanton,
Secretary of War:

I take the liberty of an old friend and supporter during your early career in Ohio, and who has had the good fortune (or rather sense) to agree with you in all the trying times through which we have recently passed, to call your attention to the case of Lieutenant Armes of the Second U. S. Cavalry at Fort Sedgwick.

Many without half the service or merit rose to be Brigadier and Major-Generals. He rendered the most important service at the first battle of Bull Run, for which he received the acknowledgments of Generals Heintzleman and Wilcox. He continued to serve wherever duty called and where energy and courage were wanted, particularly distinguishing himself in a charge at "Hatcher's Run." Having been appointed Second Lieutenant in Second U. S. Cavalry, he has on two recent occasions performed extraordinarily dangerous and valuable service against superior numbers of hostile Indians, and was astonishingly successful in both. In the last, however, he and his command were badly frozen. Such conduct, I think, where you have the power, will not be allowed to pass unnoticed or unrecognized.

A short time before his fight he wrote me that he would be obliged to leave the service, as he could not afford to remain in it; that his pay was $120 per month, and that $60 of that went for boarding, $35 for servant, $5 for washing, and the balance would not pay for his clothing and other necessary expenses. But I think he ought to be promoted and retained in the service, and have written to call attention to his case for that reason.

I would respectfully refer to Hon. S. J. Kirkwood and the Hon. J. W. Grimes, U. S. S.

Truly appreciating, as I believe, the eminent services you have rendered our country,

I am, as ever,

Your fast friend and admirer,

(Signed) JNO. CLARK,

In this connection an extract from a letter of my father is pertinent:

Washington, D. C., January 19, 1867.

Good-morning, George:

I have taken upon myself to ascertain what they thought of you at Army headquarters in relation to your glorious and successful Indian achievement, and in conversation with General Townsend last evening he told me that General Grant, who knows you personally, was highly pleased and satisfied you ought to be promoted, and that ever since complimentary orders had been issued he had been trying to find a place for you, but after a talk with General Kelton, I learned that General Grant had recalled an appointment of some other officer, and put you in his place, and that notification of your appointment had been forwarded for your acceptance.

* * *

Colonel Dodge, then in command, released Colonel Neill from arrest, who relieved me from command of his company.

February 15, 1867.

I detailed Colonel Neill for Officer of the Day for tomorrow, and after guard-mount I wrote out my resignation as Post Adjutant and handed it to Colonel Dodge, who declined to accept it, stating that he desired me to remain his Adjutant.

After dinner Colonel Dodge and I took a horseback ride, calling on General Potter and his officers of the Thirtieth Infantry, still in camp opposite the post on the other side of the Platte river.

The following is self-explanatory:

Headquarters Thirtieth U. S. Infantry,

Near Fort Sedgwick, C. T., February 19, 1867.

Lieutenant:

Can you let me have one hundred and twenty (120) gun slings (Springfield rifle)? If so, please let the orderly bring them over, as we need them to equip the men at once, and if you will send the invoices and receipts I will receipt for them.

Very truly,
Your obedient servant,
J. S. Tompkins,
First Lieut. Thirtieth U. S. Inf.,
Acting Adjt.

To Post Adjt., Fort Sedgwick.

Captain Mix will comply with the request of Lieutenant Tompkins.
Geo. A. Armes,
Lieut. Second Cavalry.

February 19, 1867.

Fort Sedgwick, February 19, 1867.

Respectfully returned to Lieutenant Armes, and attention called to Par. 450, Revised Regulations.

J. Mix,
Capt. Second Cavalry.

The above orders to my post commander was an unintentional oversight, and if my commanding officer at this time had not been a gentleman I might have been severely punished and much capital made of my endorsement.

February 19, 1867.

After guard-mount this morning, upon returning to my office, Colonel Dodge read a telegram and congratulated me upon my appointment as Captain.

I told him I had received it some days ago, but did not want it He argued that it was a very important position, and advised me to accept it. I agreed to decide by tomorrow morning.

February 20, 1867.

Dr. and Mrs. Latham sent me an invitation to their party last night, and the dance did not break up until after three this morning. Colonel Dodge and I had a long chat, and after his calling my attention to the fact that my promotion would place me over the heads of several hundreds of officers who now outranked me, and that the promotion was for gallant and meritorious conduct, and that it was a great honor to be mentioned in such a way by my superior officers, I made up my mind to accept, and Colonel Dodge swore me in today.

News of a large party of Indians on the warpath was brought to the post tonight by Mr. More of More's Ranch, fifty miles above here.

February 21, 1867.

Lieutenant Haughey relieved me as Post Adjutant yesterday forenoon, when I was ordered to go with Captain Mix, sixty-four mounted men and four six-mule teams to carry our supplies while after the war party of Indians reported near the post. I invited Captain Ray to go with us, and as he had been in the artillery, Captain Mix let him take charge of the piece we had.

More's Ranch, C. T., February 22, 1867.

We got an early start this morning and reached this place before sunrise. Mr. More was delighted, and did everything in his power to maks us comfortable. The Indians stole fifty or sixty of his horses and have gone towards the Republican river.

Summit Springs, C. T., February 23, 1867.

We started out at daybreak, having marched nearly fifty miles in a cold rainstorm. No signs of the Indian trail.

Camp Lookout, C. T., February 24, 1867.

We all had to be up most of last night to keep the animals from freezing, and it was eight o'clock this morning when the command started. Nearly all the horses had to be led, as the plains are one sheet of ice, not a tree nor brush of any kind in sight, and it has been a difficult matter to make any headway, as all the animals are smooth-shod.

Camp Sandy, C. T., February 25, 1867.

We started at daybreak this morning and have marched fifty-seven miles. After the first few hours we reached the sandhills and got along much faster, as the men and animals would break through the crust of ice into the soft sand and did not slip nor slide so much. The command is comfortable tonight, as the great piles of sand break the cold wind off. Many of the men have dug into the sand to keep warm.

Camp on Republican River, C. T., February 28, 1867.

Marched on the trail thirty-five miles yesterday and followed it down Chief creek to this river, which we reached at three o'clock this afternoon. Just as the horses were unsaddled one of the videttes discovered an Indian in a cañon and fired at him, when he and his pony soon disappeared.

Captain Mix ordered me to take thirty men and try to locate the Indian camp, as it is not very far off. As soon as I was out of sight of our camp twenty or thirty Indian warriors appeared in my front, when I charged them, and in less than five minutes I discovered several hundred Indians forming a circle around us. I then galloped to one of the highest bluffs and dismounted and prepared my men to receive the charge from the Indians, who appeared in a large force prepared for battle. Seeing there were at least fifty Indians to one of my men, I began to prepare for the worst, giving orders to be very careful and let each shot make one Indian less. Having thirty of the best men ever commanded as soldiers and knowing them to be good shots, I felt much better than if they had been unaccustomed to fighting Indians. Only a few moments elapsed before I was entirely surrounded by the red devils, who made up their minds I was going to fall an easy prey, judging by the slow manner they formed their circle around us. First, they made their ponies almost fly, then come to a run, a gallop, a trot and down to a slow walk, all the time getting nearer and nearer, until they were within easy reach of our carbines.

Having every man on his knees with his gun at a "ready" and in a circle around our horses, which were held by six men, we were in a pretty good position to defend ourselves for a while at least. Just as I was about to give the order "Fire!" an Indian and a half-breed rode out from the mass of Indians and called out "Don't shoot! Don't shoot!" Taking a sergeant, I met them half way between the lines, when I discovered my old friend Spotted Tail, chief of a large tribe of Northern Sioux. The half-breed was a Mr. Lee, owner of a ranch on the Platte river, who had a number of wagons loaded with goods in the Indian village, where he was trading.

After shaking hands and saying "How, how," I explained that I was after horse-thieves and was not trying to get up a fight with them. Spotted Tail stood straight up, saying, "My men no steal horses from white men. Cheyennes steal horses. Cheyennes thieves gone South. My men good. Fight no white man unless white man shoot first."

I then invited him to select fifty of his war chiefs and acompany me to camp, where I introduced him to Captain Mix, who was

enjoying a good cup of coffee, with some hard-tack and bacon, before a fire, around which some twenty of the Indians seated themselves and began to smoke the pipe of peace. Spotted Tail became very talkative, denounced the Cheyennes to Captain Mix and praised his own tribe as the friend of the white man.

After a powwow Captain Mix gave each Indian some coffee, hard bread, tobacco and meat, which took nearly all we had, when they all shook hands, saying, "How! bye-bye."

Before leaving Mr. Lee told me that it was just as much as Spotted Tail could do to control his warriors, as they were so anxious to fight; that he ordered one young chief shot on the spot and had several others punished, and that some twenty or thirty of the young men left him and threatened to kill us anyway; that it took great determination on Spotted Tail's part to prevent an attack upon us, and that if we had fired first he could not have stopped them at all. Under the circumstances, I feel that I am in luck.

Camp Plains, C. T., March 1, 1867.

As our rations are out and we are over one hundred miles from our post, we gave up the chase after the horse-thieves and started back, making about thirty miles today, and went into camp early to protect ourselves from a terrible "Norther," which is freezing us almost to death.

Camp Starvation, C. T., March 2, 1867.

Not having anything to eat for men or horses last night nor any wood, we had to cut up and burn two of our wagons to keep us from freezing to death, but got an early start this morning, and have marched all day through snow from one to four feet deep, with a crust frozen just hard enough to let us break through about every other step.

From nine to three o'clock this afternoon neither man nor horse could be seen thirty feet away, and the legs of the men and horses were so badly cut by sharp ice and snow that our trail could be followed by the blood.

Not having recovered from the effects of the previous fearful storm, I was not able to take my share of the work with Captain Mix, and it is as much as I can do to keep breath in my body. The skin has peeled off entirely from my face and nearly all over my body, and I have suffered terribly during the past twenty hours.

We went into this camp at four o'clock; not a mouthful of anything to eat; only one wagon left to burn for fuel tonight, and as we can hardly expect to get away from here alive, Captain Mix has named this spot Camp Starvation.

We are now quartered in the snow from three to five feet deep.

Beauvais Ranch, C. T., on Platte River, March 3, 1867.

To our surprise we found our party all alive at daybreak this morning and started for this place. Fortunately, a few miles' march took us out of the deep snow, and we had good weather and fine marching all day.

We now feel at this hour, ten o'clock, as if we were quartered in a palace, so comfortable, lying on the dirt floor on our buffalo robes in front of a big blazing fire and drinking our black coffee.

Fort Sedgwick, C. T., March 4, 1867.

We got an early start and reached this post at two o'clock this afternoon, being met by Colonel Dodge, Dr. Latham and a number of anxious ones, who had expected never to see us alive again, as they had given us up.

The following is an extract of Captain Mix's report upon our return:

March 5, 1867.

I started at 11 o'clock this morning, the 21st ult., with Lieutenant Armes and sixty-four enlisted men.

Mr. Ray, ex-officer of artillery, volunteered his services, and was placed in command of one three-inch ordnance gun.

The men were furnished with eighty rounds of carbine and fifty rounds of pistol ammunition per man, the piece with fifty-five rounds.

I gained the following information: Mr. More's stock was stolen by "Little Horse"—Skum-sono-ches-che-to—and "Horse-in-the-Road"—Skum-ko-no shum-ko—both of whom belong to "Big Horse's" band of Cheyennes.

"Little Horse" is a son of "Big Horse." They have taken the stock down to the Arkansas river, and had passed eight days before our arrival. I determined to return, and then the real difficulty commenced. We left the Republican March 1.

It was only by the most violent exercise that the men could be kept from freezing.

To add to our difficulties, we struck a snowdrift, which lasted all day, with snow from two to five feet deep.

The crust cut the horses cruelly and left a trail of blood behind us. We could not see twenty feet in front of us.

At 3 o'clock this afternoon the men and animals were unable to move further, and selecting the best shelter that the wind-swept plain afforded, we camped without forage for our horses.

Next morning, without breakfast, in a piercing wind and sleet in our faces, we marched.

Fortunately, we got out of the deep snow in a short time, and were enabled to reach Beauvais Ranch at dark, where my exhausted men and horses found shelter and food.

I cannot speak in too high terms of the whole command, who, through the terrible storm of the 2d and 3d inst., displayed the highest qualities of the soldier—cheerful submission to great hardships and privations, and a prompt obedience—qualities which will ensure their honor on a more glorious, but not more trying field.

Quite a number of the men had been frostbitten a short time since while on a scout with Lieutenant Armes, and their sufferings were very severe. Their comrades were untiring in their efforts to alleviate them.

The best overshoes, comforts, etc., were cheerfully and without orders given up by the men, who were themselves half perished.

It has never been my fortune to witness so many instances of self-sacrifice. I am happy to report that no loss of limbs, or few, if any, fingers or toes will occur in the company, though many of the men will suffer for some time.

The above report is endorsed by Colonel Dodge, the post commander, as follows:

Respectfully forwarded to Department headquarters.

Captain Mix deserves the greatest credit for his conduct through the scout. But for his care, foresight and energy many men must have been lost during the terrible storm which he encountered. I notice, with great satisfaction, the noble conduct of the men while undergoing suffering sufficient to daunt the stoutest heart. It is hardly an exaggeration to say no troop ever performed service under greater hardships than Company M experienced in the scout of January, under Lieutenant Armes, and under Captain Mix in March of this year.

General Rodenbaugh, an officer of the regiment, in writing up its history, refers to reports and official records as follows, on page 380, in relation to the rescue of the wood-choppers:

Among the incidents of the year was the scout made by Lieutenant Armes in January after a party of Indians in the neighborhood of Lauren's Fork.

This scout, which resulted in the capture of sixty-seven head of cattle captured by the Indians, and other Indian property, was accomplished with the usual energy of this officer, and under difficulties that can best be understood by the following quotation from his report: "Twenty-seven of my men are frozen, or in such a condition that I am afraid they will not be fit for anything more than garrison duty as long as the cold weather lasts." Captain Mix endorses his report as follows: "Lieutenant Armes has in this case, as he always does, carried out his instructions with energy and discretion. The severe loss in frostbitten men is to be regretted, but the citizens on Lauren's Fork would doubtless have been massacred but for the assistance sent. Nearly all the stock stolen was recovered."

The General also publishes the following order on page 374 in his history of the regiment, which is considered one of the most complimentary ever issued by our Army:

General Cook, in his order on the subject, says: "Lieut. Geo. A. Armes, Second U. S. Cavalry, being sent with twenty-five men of his regiment from Fort Sedgwick October 23 in pursuit of a war party of Sioux Indians, which had driven off the preceding day several hundred head of stock, found and followed their trail, under the difficulties of crossing two wide rivers, forks of the Platte, and of darkness, ninety-eight miles, from 5 o'clock this morning to 11 o'clock at night.

"Then he surprised the party, instantly attacked, killed and wounded nearly all of their superior numbers, captured twenty-two of the Indian horses, burned their camp, and brought off safely most of the stolen stock. This young officer has set a fine example to the Department of overcoming difficulties that would have discouraged many without loss of credit, of bold determination to succeed, and of striking without stopping to count his enemies, and he has presented to the profession perhaps the greatest cavalry feat heretofore recorded."

General Grant immediately referred the order to the Secretary of War with the following endorsement thereon:

Headquarters Army of the United States,
November 20, 1866.

Respectfully forwarded to the Secretary of War, with the recommendation that this officer be appointed Captain in the Tenth Cavalry, instead of Capt. J. W. Blunt, Second N. Y. Cavalry, recommended by me in my list of November 15, 1866.

(Signed) U. S. GRANT,
General.

GENERAL U. S. GRANT.

This carried my promotion from Second Lieutenant to Captain over the heads of several hundreds of my seniors in rank.

The following notice came from Department headquarters by mail today, it not being known there at the time it was issued that I had accepted:

Headquarters Department of the Platte,
Omaha, Neb., February 22, 1867.

Lieut. Geo. A. Armes,
Fort Sedgwick, C. T.:

You have been appointed a Captain in the Tenth Cavalry. Let me know if you accept, that I may order you before the Board.

(Signed) C. C. AUGER,
Brevet Major-General, U. S. A., Commanding.

Also the following order by telegraph:

Headquarters of the Platte,
Omaha, Neb., March 5, 1867.

Special Order No. 44.

Capt. Geo. A. Armes, Tenth U. S. Cavalry, is relieved from duty at Fort Sedgwick, C. T., and will proceed without delay to Washington, D. C., and report for examination to the President of the Examining Board for cavalry officers in that city.

By command of
BREVET MAJOR-GENERAL AUGER.
H. G. LITCHFIELD,
Brevet Major, U. S. A.,
Aide-de-Camp.

Omaha, Neb.

Being relieved from duty as a Lieutenant, I turned all my property over on the 5th, bade my friends good-bye and left Fort Sedgwick on the 6th for this place with several letters of introduction and recommendation from General Potter, Major Dallas, Captain Spencer and Captain Mix. Mr. and Mrs. Mark Broadhead, who have been stationed at Fort Laramie until the death of Colonel Camp, Quartermaster, U. S. A., which occurred a few days ago, came part of the way with me in the same ambulance. They are on their way back to Washington. We had a very good time, and my promotion seemed to be appreciated by my friends as by myself.

We were caught in a severe snowstorm, but being supplied with good buffalo robes and plenty of lunch, we did not suffer any hardships. The whole country is covered with snow and ice, and we are blocked in this city, as trains cannot come in nor go out. The Quartermaster paid me mileage this afternoon.

Washington, D. C., March 26, 1867.

I am home at last, after having been blocked by the snow for several days en route here and in Omaha.

I met Gen. Napoleon Buford, who handed me the following letter in acknowledgment of his appreciation of me for taking such good care of his son, Temple, who had been my guest at Fort Sedgwick:

Omaha, March 15, 1867.

Capt. Geo. A. Armes:

Dear Sir—A very short acquaintance has endeared you to me very much. Your commencement of life is noble. Your country required your services, and without waiting for rank or position you shouldered your musket and marched to the front. Noble-minded men observed your devotion, and have recommended you for promotion. Now a youth, you are a Captain of cavalry; you have already distinguished yourself.

Let all this success make you more prudent and laborious, striving only for the true and the right.

Every man is the author of his own education. If it is in him it can be gotten out by hard labor and perseverance.

Continue your good habits—your temperance, your modest deportment. Seek the society of the pure, the patriotic. Improve your mind by thought and the best books.

Your kindness to my son has endeared you to me, and while I live I will continue to consult the records of the Army to learn of your fame, and I will pray for your welfare.

N. B. Buford.

I also met Gen. Phil St. George Cook, commanding the Department of the Platte, and family for the first time. He seemed pleased to see me, and I thanked him for the complimentary orders he had published in my case for the fight with the Sioux on Pumpkin creek, D. T., last fall.

I shall never forget the kindness he extended and the promotion he has aided me to receive. Buying a suit of citizen's clothes, I called on Gen. C. H. Thompkins, Assistant Quartermaster-General, and Captain Montgomery, recorder of the examining board, and have come to the conclusion that nothing but hard study for a few weeks will enable me to pass.

March 28, 1867.

I took a room at the National Hotel yesterday; also called on Gen. David Hunter, president of the examining board, who seemed glad to see me.

Col. John G. Gilmore called upon me this evening, and is doing all he can to help me along. I made an application to General Grant for an extension of sixty days' delay in reporting before the board, and gave it to Major Leet, who said he would let me have the General's action soon.

March 29, 1867.

I shut myself up in my room to study, but have had little time for that purpose, as so many people have called upon me today. I also received permission to delay reporting for examination for thirty days.

FRED GRANT IN 1867.

April 4, 1867.

I employed Professor Williamson as instructor. Fred D. Grant, son of the General, called and spent two hours or more with me last night. I remained in my room all day. Captain Boden, late Sixteenth Virginia Volunteers, and Lieutenant Roe made me a short visit.

April 15, 1867.

Last evening Captain Potts of the Navy called and we attended Dr. Hall's church. Lieut. C. B. Stambaugh spent five hours studying with me, as he is preparing to go before the board also.

Washington, D. C., April 21, 1867.

Yesterday Captain Potts and I called on Secretary Wm. H. Seward, who seemed as glad to see me as if I had been his own son.

April 23, 1867.

The professors have been giving me their attention all day, and they are well paid, for I do not intend to fail in my examination if teachers can save me.

April 28, 1867.

Yesterday gave all my time to studies until two o'clock, when I took Miss Colby to Fort Whipple and Arlington Heights in a buggy, as I could not induce her to go on horseback. After our return, at seven o'clock this evening, I called on Gen. David Hunter, president of the board of officers before whom I am to appear for examination. After asking a few questions, he told me to report before the board Monday, so, instead of attending church, I devoted my whole time to study.

April 30, 1867.

I reported at ten o'clock yesterday morning to General Hunter, and found the other officers composing the examining board present. After an informal conference, I was informed that they would recommend me to the War Department for an extension of leave for thirty days to prepare for examination.

May 9, 1867.

Professor Phill has several officers in his class whom he is preparing to pass the board, among whom are Lieutenants Grafton and Robinson.

May 14, 1867.

Yesterday Professor Phill highly complimented me on my progress with my studies. Afterward I called on General Emory, one of the members of the board, who seems deeply interested in my success. He introduced me to his daughter, and I passed a very pleasant evening with them.

May 18, 1867.

Captain Grafton and Lieutenant Derlin, who are taking lessons with me under Professor Phill, came to my room last evening, where we worked over our tasks like troopers until twelve o'clock.

Professor Phill, after examining me for two hours today without my missing a question, encouraged me by saying that I need not be uneasy about passing my examination, as I would get through without any trouble. Captain Grafton, who has received his appointment as Second Lieutenant of the Twenty-ninth Infantry, called upon me during the day at three o'clock. Miss Ida Kendall and I went on horseback to the Soldiers' Home, and upon our return stopped at the President's to listen to the music by the Marine Band.

May 22, 1867.

Captain Grafton called and assisted me this forenoon. This afternoon my father called and requested the loan of my blooded mare, which I declined to let him have on the ground that she might throw him. He became enraged at my thinking he was not able to ride any horse that I could ride. I finally consented, and assisted him in mounting, but within three minutes he was landed plump on the ground, receiving quite a severe jar. He is all right this evening, but I hardly think he will attempt another horseback ride on her.

May 29, 1867.

This is my twenty-third birthday, one of the most agreeable and pleasant I ever passed, and if I owned the world and all that is in it I could not feel better than I do tonight. After being questioned for three long steady hours by the members of the board, which consists of Gen. David Hunter, Gen. William H. Emory and Gen. Pike Graham, three of the most distinguished and gallant cavalry officers of our Army, I was handed the following:

Board of Cavalry Examination.

Washington, D. C., May 29 1867

To
Geo. A. Armes
Captain 10th U.S. Cavalry

Captain You are hereby notified that you have this day passed a satisfactory examination before the Board of Cavalry Examination, agreeably to an Act of Congress, approved July 28th, 1866.

D. Tyler

Bvt. Major General, U. S. A.,
President of Examining Board

May 30, 1867.

Reporting to the War Department, Gen. Robert Williams handed me my commission.

I do not believe a commission was ever appreciated more than this, since it was given as a reward of merit and distinguished conduct in the field for my success in capturing a large amount of stock and destroying an Indian village without my using political influence or solicitation. The Paymaster paid me to June 1 as Captain this afternoon.

June 1, 1867.

Have been packing my effects and calling on friends and bidding them good-bye during the day.

June 8, 1867.

Yesterday I was engaged in closing up my private affairs and sending out invitations for a grand farewell party, which took place last evening. By nine o'clock the house and parlors were crowded, and the dancing commenced at ten and was kept up until twelve before we sat down to the table loaded with every delicacy of the season and plenty of champagne.

Carlisle Barracks, Pa., June 11, 1867.

After bidding my friends good-bye in Washington, I called on the Quartermaster, who furnished me transportation to this post for my blooded mare, who was put in a box-car, and upon my arrival she had slipped and strained her back, and was so badly injured that she had to be taken from the car and placed in a field, and was taken charge of by a Mr. Noble, a resident of this place. Upon my reporting to the commanding officer, he placed the following endorsement upon my order:

Headquarters Cavalry Department,
Carlisle Barracks, Pa., June 11, 1867.

Capt. Geo. A. Armes, Tenth U. S. Cavalry, reported in person this day in accordance with the within instructions.

(Signed) F. Van Vliet,
Capt. Third U. S. Cav., Bvt. Lieut.-Col., U. S. A.,
Commanding.

St. Louis, Mo., June 15, 1867.

My stay at Carlisle was rather short, as I was furnished orders to proceed without delay to Fort Leavenworth, Kansas.

I am now at Mrs. Boylis' private boarding-house, a stopping-place for Army officers. She is a very aristocratic and pleasant lady. Colonel Thomas, Department Quartermaster, paid me $87.87 mileage this afternoon on train en route for Jefferson City, Mo.

June 17, 1867.

This morning before leaving St. Louis I called on General Nichols of General Sherman's staff, one of the most elegant gentlemen in the regular Army. After bidding him farewell I made a few purchases and left at three o'clock this afternoon.

Fort Leavenworth, June 18, 1867.

I arrived here at ten o'clock this morning and reported to General Hoffman, Colonel Third Infantry, who introduced me to Colonel Grierson, and I was assigned quarters at this post.

Every officer here is very busy organizing recruits into companies and preparing them for the field for active work against the Indians.

Fort Leavenworth, Kan., June 19, 1867.

Early this morning I was handed Special Order No. 12, dated June 18, 1867, assigning me to duty at this post and put in charge of sixty negro recruits. First Lieut. William Kennedy and Second Lieut. John A. Bodamer assisted me in drilling them.

June 22, 1867.

Four more recruits were assigned to me this morning, and I organized my company, to be known as F Company, which is composed of eighty-four very good-looking darkies, some of whom are very dull and stupid.

June 23, 1867.

I issued arms, equipments and clothing to my company yesterday afternoon, was ordered to attend dress parade with my company, and after forming a line close to the white troops, General Hoffman came down and ordered them at least ten or fifteen yards to the left, saying he must not bring my nigger troops so close to his white ones. General Grierson immediately took up for the supposed right of his darkies, and he and General Hoffman seemed to have it pretty hot for a while.

June 24, 1867.

Immediately after breakfast this morning I was handed the following order:

Headquarters Department of the Missouri,
Fort Leavenworth, Kans., June 24, 1867.

Abstract 5.

Special Order No. 136.

Capt. Geo. A. Armes, Company F, Tenth U. S. Cavalry, will proceed without delay by rail to the terminus of the Union Pacific Railway, Eastern Division, and from there will march to Fort Harker, Kans. On his arrival at Fort Harker, Captain Armes will report to the commanding officer, District of the Upper Arkansas, for further orders. The Quartermaster's Department will furnish the necessary transportation.

By command of
General Hancock.
(Signed) Chauncey McKeever,
Asst. Adjt.-Gen.

To Capt. George A. Armes,
Tenth U. S. Cavalry.

Topeka, Kan., On Train, June 26, 1867.

I left Fort Leavenworth at six this morning, marching my command to the depot, loaded them on the train, having no trouble, and am now passing this city. All the men are in the best of spirits.

Fort Riley, Kan., June 27, 1867.

Arrived at this post last night. Today have been drawing rations and forage and resting the men and horses.

Chapman, Kan., June 28, 1867.

I marched my company from Fort Riley to this place and loaded it on the cars. Left one man sick at Fort Riley. I had to put Clark, the transportation master, under guard because he became so unruly.

Fort Harker, Kan., June 29, 1867.

Arrived here at seven o'clock this morning, reporting to Gen. A. J. Smith, commanding district, and am now in camp half a mile from the post in tents.

Camp Grierson, Fort Harker, Kan., June 30, 1867.

General Smith sent me word to muster my own company, which I did from a list of names written in leadpencil on a piece of paper, not having a description list or a muster roll.

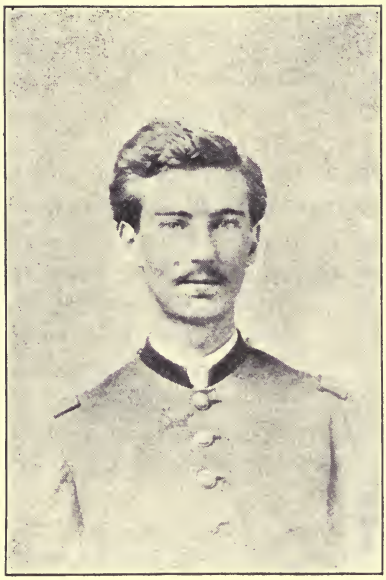
Indians were reported as being seen near the post this afternoon.

July 1, 1867.

I received orders early this morning to go on a scout, and have just returned, after a march of about fifty miles. Found a good many Indian pony-tracks in sand crossing Smoky river.

Fort Harker, Kan., July 2, 1867.

Have been in camp most of the day preparing for movement in light marching order in case the Indians commit any depredations in this section. Bought my brother William Edward a nice Indian pony, saddle and bridle, and have detailed a soldier (darkey) to wait on him. President Johnson having appointed Ed to West Point, advised him to make a visit out here with me for a while before reporting there, as his health has been taxed by overwork at the college which he has just left, where he had been promoted to the Captaincy of the cadets. He greatly enjoys his pony, and expects to have a good time hunting and shooting buffalo, Indians, etc.



WM. E. ARMES.

Camp in the Field, Saline River, Kan., July 3, 1867.

During last night the alarm of Indians committing depredations near here was made, and Gen. A. J. Smith ordered me out with every man I could spare. We started at four o'clock this morning with two days' rations, one hundred rounds of cartridges per man and Wild Bill and Wentworth as my scouts and guides. After finding the trail, we followed it until it was too dark to go further, and are now in camp with a double guard around our horses. Before starting this morning I called my brother out and asked him if he could defend himself with the fifteen men whom I left in the main camp. After his assuring me he could and that he would make a fort of the sacks of forage, I bade him good-bye.

Camp Grierson, near Fort Harker, Kan., July 4, 1867.

I returned this evening from my scout, and after making my report to Gen. A. J. Smith, he broke to me the sad news of the death of my brother, whom I had left yesterday morning in camp

in the best of spirits and apparently in excellent health. He was taken with cholera, and died before three o'clock that afternoon. It was the saddest news I could receive. He was a great favorite, bound to me not only by the ties of blood, but by more than ordinary brotherly affection. He stood at the head of his class, and was a favorite with all who knew him. I feel that if it had only been myself that was taken and he left to enjoy the bright prospect before him how much better it would have been. General Smith, who seems more like a father in his kind attentions to me than a commanding officer, assured me that every attention was rendered, and both post surgeons and the ladies of the post did everything to save him. I reached my camp just in time to see his dear face again before they took him to his grave, but was unable to see him buried, being overcome with grief and completely prostrated.

Camp Davis, near Fort Harker, Kan., July 5, 1867.

Two of my best men were take down with cholera this morning, and I sent them to the post hospital, immediately moved my command and established a new camp on higher ground. I am sick enough myself this evening to be in bed, but will not give up the ship if I can help it.

July 6, 1867.

Ten of my men went on sick report this morning, but the doctor seems confident of their recovery, as we are now in such a healthy location. Lieutenant Bodamer has taken to his bed with symptoms of cholera.

Camp near Bunker Hill, Kan., July 9, 1867.

Just as I sat down to breakfast this morning General Smith sent orders for me to take thirty men and scout up the Smoky Hill river to Wilson creek to capture and punish a war party of Indians reported to be depredating in that vicinity. Wild Bill, my guide, reports fresh signs of Indians this evening.

Camp Davis, Kan., July 10, 1867.

I left Mr. King's ranch at daylight and went by Bunker Hill, crossing the Smoky Hill river fifteen miles south and examining its tributaries and every place where Indians were likely to hide or stop, returning at 6 o'clock this evening, reporting results to General Smith's satisfaction.

July 12, 1867.

The news that Maj.-Gen. W. S. Hancock was coming this way from Denver reached here today, and I selected a good escort and rode out to meet him, escorting him to the post, where he is now the guest of General Smith. I was delighted to meet him, and we have just had a long chat about war times, etc.

MAJ-GEN. W. S. HANCOCK.

July 13, 1867.

Maj. John H. Page, Lieuts. G. H. Stouch and Wallace, Third Infantry, dropped in to see me this afternoon, and together we called on General Hancock and General Sherman, who arrived today.

July 14, 1867.

I had both companies of cavalry out on mounted inspection at 10 o'clock this forenoon, and was complimented by Generals Sherman and Hancock as to their soldierly appearance. They did not give them a general inspection more than to witness their movements while drilling, etc.

July 15, 1867.

Generals Sherman and Hancock left at 11 this forenoon for Fort Leavenworth, Kan. I sent Lieutenant Bodamer, with thirty-four men, on a scout to King's Ranch. He returned this evening without being able to discover fresh signs of Indians. Mrs. G. M. Sternberg, the Post Surgeon's wife, who rendered

such kind attention and assistance to my brother Eddie in his last sickness, and cared for him as long as life remained, died this evening at the post with cholera, which makes twenty-three deaths within the past ten days.

July 17, 1867.

I have been drilling and preparing all the men I could get out for active service, and attended the funerals of two more of my men, whose bodies were rolled up in blankets and buried near camp, making seven of my command buried within the past ten days.

July 19, 1867.

Had my camp thoroughly policed yesterday, and fixed the sick as comfortable as possible. Dr. Squire, who attended my brother during his sickness, and who is so devoted to me here, just received orders to accompany the Thirty-eighth Infantry to the field. He seems very low-spirited and superstitious, and says that he never expects to return alive, but will not refuse to obey orders. The Thirty-eighth Infantry, now camped near the post, received orders to march to New Mexico tomorrow.

July 21, 1867.

Orders were sent to me today to proceed to Fort Hays, Kan. Going over to the post I had a pleasant chat with General Smith, Captain Hamilton, Lieutenants Cook and Tom Custer. After bidding all good-bye, I returned and loaded wagons with everything necessary but tents, and am now ready to pull out early in the morning.

Fort Hays, Kan., July 25, 1867.

Arrived here with my command this morning, reporting for duty to Capt. Henry C. Corbin, Thirty-eighth Infantry, who is in command. As we both rank as Captains from July 28, 1866, and it being undecided who is the senior, I went into a separate camp near the post until the rank question is settled.

July 27, 1867.

I was engaged most of yesterday fixing up my camp, drawing and issuing clothing and drilling my men. Captain Hamilton and Lieutenant Cook, Seventh Cavalry, called on me today. The rank question being settled, he put me on duty as Officer of the Day, relieving Lieutenant Saxton, Thirty-eighth Infantry.

July 29, 1867.

I went on duty at 10 this morning as President of a General Court-Martial, and tried two men of Company C, Thirty-eighth Infantry. One of my men died of cholera last night and was buried in the prairie this afternoon near camp.

July 31, 1867.

After breakfast this morning I ordered two more men buried, who died last night with cholera. Captain Corbin inspected my company at 5 o'clock this afternoon.

Campbell's Camp, August 1, 1867.

At 2 o'clock in the afternoon, while taking an inventory, report came that Indians were near. I immediately mounted my command and started after them, and found the bodies of seven men (white), who had just been killed and scalped. From the appearance of the trail I am now on there are more Indians than I can handle with my little squad, and I am awaiting reinforcements, which I sent after a few minutes ago.

Fort Hays, Kan., August 2, 1867.

I sent a request to the post commander last night to send me thirty good men and a howitzer at once, as I could not, with my small force, whip the Indians likely to be encountered. No reply having met me by daylight this morning, I started to follow the Indian trail, and by 9 o'clock, after a march of about twenty-five miles, discovered Indians, and soon after was obliged to dismount my men and fight them on foot. I managed to get back alive, although badly wounded, and will make my report in the morning. I have just learned tonight that the reinforcements I requested were immediately sent to me in command of Lieut. J. M. Kelly of the Thirty-eighth Infantry, who, after following the Indian trail a short distance, said he had *cramps in the stomach*, and returned to the post, when Captain Corbin ordered another officer of the Thirty-eighth Infantry to take his place, but he was too late to render me any service.

Dr. Buchanan probed my wound and extracted the bullet, and is now giving me every necessary attention. He tells me the bone is not injured, and by careful nursing and attention I will soon be up and ready for duty.

August 3, 1867.

The following is my official report sent in today:

New Fort Hays, Kans., August 3, 1867.

Capt. H. C. Corbin,
Thirty-eighth Infantry,
Commanding Post:

Captain—I have the honor to submit the following report:

In compliance with instructions received from you, I left this camp at 3 o'clock, the afternoon of the 1st inst., with forty-four mounted men, and proceeded as far as Campbell's Camp, thirteen miles down the railroad, where I saw seven of his men, who had just been killed by the Indians, and learned that they had gone up the north branch of Big Creek, which I followed eighteen miles, but could not find the trail, as the night was dark.

I returned to Campbell's, on the opposite side, and dispatched six men to the post for an additional support of thirty men and one piece of artillery. I intended to start at daybreak north for the Saline, where the Indians were supposed to have gone.

I waited four hours, and no men came, so I started out at daybreak, the 2d inst., with thirty-four mounted men, leaving four sick. I reached the Saline (fifteen miles) at 8 o'clock this morning, which I followed up twelve miles, where I was met and attacked by about seventy-five Indians.

I dismounted my command, threw out some flankers to save my horses, and gave orders to advance on up the creek for the purpose of recapturing the stolen stock, but in ten minutes I was surrounded, and fires were built all around the command on the tops of the bluff.

I kept my flankers well out, and advanced until I saw what was supposed to be a herd of buffalo, but close investigation discovered them to be Indians coming to the support of those around me. I gave the command, "To the left, march!" and started for the post. In half an hour I was entirely surrounded. A few Indians at a time would occasionally dash through the command.

Sergeant Christy was shot through the head and killed while getting his men in place.

My first sergeant, Thornton, Corporals Spriggs and Posy had their horses shot from under them. Three more horses were wounded, but I managed to get them into camp.

The Indians followed about fifteen miles, during which time at least 2000 shots were fired at us, with very little effect.

The only reason I can give for their being such poor marksmen is that they had not become accustomed to the use of our new firearms. The most of them seemed to be armed with the improved Spencer carbine, others with rifles and revolvers.

Very few arrows were shot at the command.

C. L. Taylor

I was wounded in the hip by a rifle ball. When this was generally known the men became nearly uncontrollable; some fired all their ammunition away at random, and rushed to me with the report that they were out. Being unable to walk or stand up, I was put on my horse, and then ordered every man back to his place on the flank and rear who was without ammunition, so as to give the Indians the impression we were well supplied and not alarmed.

With the assistance of Lieutenant Bodamer and my two guides (Mr. Becker and Mr. Brink) we succeeded in keeping the men in their places by sending them back without ammunition as fast as they came in; others took warning and did not waste their supply, and finall became cool.

No man was allowed to ride except the sick, who led the horses; in that way the command was saved.

Sixty-four miles were marched from the time of leaving Campbell's Camp until my return to this post last night.

Total number of miles marched since 3, the afternoon of the 1st inst., 113, without rations or forage. It is my opinion, as well as of those who were with me, that we were surrounded by at least 350 to 400 Indians, of whom six were killed and several wounded while making dashes through the command, but were soon picked up, tied to their horses and hurried to the rear, thus preventing the capture of them or their horses or ponies.

Two white men or half-breeds were with the Indians, who took an active part, but were very careful not to dash through the command. I had fifty shots fired at them, but to no effect. They were mounted on the finest and most active horses I ever saw. It is my opinion that a large number of Indians are encamped between the Saline and the Solomon, or on the Solomon, where any amount of stolen stock could be recaptured, provided a sufficient force could go after them.

It would not be safe to send a less number than 200 or 300 well-armed and equipped men, as the country which they would operate in is so broken up, full of gullies, cañons and hills, that it would take a large force to drive them out.

It is the greatest wonder in the world that my command and myself escaped being massacred, as we had to retreat fifteen miles through a hilly country, full of cañons, rocks and gullies, fighting our way foot by foot, the Indians dodging from one gully and rock to others and firing on us at every chance.

Great credit is due Lieutenant Bodamer, Mr. Becker and Mr. Brink for the coolness and daring they displayed on several occasions when the Indians dashed upon us. If it had not been for their coolness and efficient aid not one of the command would have returned.

I would recommend that a strong force be dispatched to that section to drive them out as soon as possible, as they have formed

the opinion that they can whip any force sent against them.

I am, Captain,
Very respectfully,
Your obedient servant,
(Signed) GEO. A. ARMES,
Capt. Commanding Co. F, Tenth U. S. Cavalry.

(Endorsement of Post Commander.)
Headquarters Post,
New Fort Hays, Kansas, August 3, 1867.

Lieutenant T. B. Weir,
A. A. A. Gen. Dist. Up. Ark.:

Sir—I enclose herewith the report of Captain Armes of his engagement yesterday, which tells the whole tale. The reinforcements he speaks of were sent him, but did not reach his camp until he had left some thirty minutes. It consisted of some twenty-five mounted infantry and one howitzer, manned under command of Sergeant Pittman, "C" Co., Thirty-eighth Infantry.

Sergeant Pittman has just returned to camp. He went up the north fork of Big Creek until he struck a branch of the Saline. He came on a party of some fifty Indians; he fired three shells into them, when they scattered in every direction, leaving much of the debris of their camp behind, but nothing of any importance. The Indians have been seen in small parties in the vicinity of the fort today. We are prepared for any further movements they may make. To act on the offensive we must have more men. I can protect the post and the railroad with what I have, but cannot make any expedition or movement against the enemy to an advantage. That Captain Armes did all he could to recapture the stock no one here, either citizen or soldier, doubts. For doing the work and moving his command as he did he deserves great credit, and any reward our common superiors may have in store for the meritorious I hope may be bestowed on him. I most heartily concur in Captain Armes' recommendation of Lieutenant Bodamer, as also Mr. Becker.

I have noticed the conduct of Mr. Becker for some time, and have been much pleased with him. He is a young man of exceptionable habits, of education, and seems to be in every way well fitted for a commission in the Army, inasmuch as he served as an officer of infantry during the war. I would recommend that he be appointed to that branch of the service.

I am, Lieutenant,
Very respectfully,
(Signed) H. C. CORBIN,
Capt. Thirty-eighth Infantry,
Commanding Post.

P. S.—I would name, among the difficulties encountered by Captain Armes, that six of his men were attacked by cholera during the fight, and had to be strapped to their horses to be got off the field.

August 4, 1867.

Lieutenant Bodamer is commanding my company and marched it on dress parade this afternoon. Dr. Buchanan allowed me to sit up a portion of the day. Since he got the rifle ball out of my hip I am not in so much pain as I was, except at times, and feel as if I would like to go on another Indian raid if an opportunity should occur.

Camp Rose, Kan., Western Union P. R., August 5, 1867.

In spite of the doctor's protest, I started out with forty men for Sharp's camp to try and punish a war party of Indians, who are reported as having murdered several emigrants and stolen a large amount of stock in that vicinity.

I had to ride in my ambulance most of the day on account of weakness and pain from my wound, but am determined not to remain in camp if it is possible for me to punish this band of Indians.

Camp near Fort Hays, Kan., August 6, 1867.

I rode along the line of the railroad today and let the workmen see I was on the watch for Indians, which encouraged them to go on with their work. As I had not enough men to follow the Indians any distance from the railroad, I returned here this evening. My wound is giving me a great deal of pain, but the doctor gave me some medicine which relieved it.

August 7, 1867.

Although I went out on a short scout, I have not been able to assume command of my company. Colonels Wicks and Sharp came from their camp thirty miles west of this post, and requested help to go after the Indians, who stole thirty-eight of their horses and mules yesterday. No one can be spared from the post at present. My wound is much better tonight, and I am anxious to get out with a good command of cavalry large enough to whip the red devils.

August 8, 1867.

Captain Corbin let Colonel Wickes, engineer of the road, have fifteen men as an escort to protect him in his camp, and he had not proceeded more than four or five miles when he was attacked by a party of Indians and had to return. Major Moore, with four good companies of the Eighteenth Kansas Cavalry, are ordered here to protect this line. The hospital steward came over to dress my wound today, and I am much better.

August 11, 1867.

I moved about so much yesterday that the doctor required me to lie in bed all day. I have not been able to transact any official business, but he encourages me by saying a little quiet rest will make me all right soon.

August 12, 1867.

I insisted on reporting for duty, and took command of my company this morning, although I am very weak, but there is such a good chance for me to do something, I am determined to run some risks without regard to consequences.

Camp Barker, on Saline River, August 14, 1867.

As the Indians are divided in war parties all around us, I was ordered to start out last night with my company, F, Tenth United States Cavalry, and Companies B and C of the Eighteenth Kansas Volunteer Cavalry, commanded by Captains Barker and Jenness of the Eighteenth Cavalry. We marched thirty miles on one stretch and tried to surprise the Indians in their camp, but failed to find any signs so far, although I have marched sixty miles since last night.

Camp Price, August 16, 1867.

I marched my command twenty-six miles since last night, and am now drying some buffalo meat in order that I may follow the trail in light marching order and surprise the Indians if possible.

Camp Wickes, on the Union Pacific Railroad, Thirty-five Miles West of Fort Hays, Kan., August 17, 1867.

I discovered a very large trail of Indians during the day, and it will be necessary to have more men and rations to make a successful pursuit. I called for two volunteers to go to the post, forty-five miles east of this place, with a letter requesting the post commander to send as many men as he could possibly spare, but

as so many men have been killed lately by the Indians, there seems to be no response to my request. Knowing it to be almost certain death to them or murder for me to order messengers to proceed with my letter to the post, I took one man as my orderly, and leaving Captain Barker in command, started at sundown for the post, in spite of my wound being so painful that I could scarcely sit on my horse.

McDonald's Camp, near Saline River, Kan., August 18, 1867.

I reached Fort Hays about ten o'clock last night, and ordered five wagons loaded with forage and rations for my command; changed horses, and reached this camp at eight this morning, riding ninety-five miles during the night.

Major Elliott, with his command of the Seventh Cavalry, who was in camp, agreed to go north to the Republican river and assist me in bagging the Indians, whose trail I reported to him as having gone in that direction, so if Major Moore's command and I reached the Republican river at the same time our three commands can clean the Indians out entirely in a short time.

Camp Corbin, on Saline River, Kan., August 19, 1867.

I picked out seventy-five of the best men and horses in my command and followed the trail. Sent Lieutenant Price's Eighteenth Kansas Cavalry in charge of the wagons and the rest of the command to a designated point on the Solomon river. Marched eighteen miles today very cautiously.

Camp A. J. Smith, Solomon River, August 20, 1867.

I started out to follow the trail at nine o'clock last night. Have hid my command in a deep ravine during the day, so the Indians will not discover it, and will march out again tonight.

Camp Price, Beaver Creek, August 21, 1867.

I left Solomon river last night at six o'clock, marched ten or fifteen miles and went into camp. Starting out at two o'clock this morning, an Indian was discovered at sunrise. He fired at one of my advanced guards, when I at once galloped up and soon became engaged with a war party of several Indians. We dismounted, and I placed my men around the horses, requiring them

to lie down and receive charge after charge by the Indians, who were driven back by the volleys of my men as they dashed up to us.

By a well-directed fire I held my ground until sundown, when I found that my first sergeant, Thornton, had been shot through the left leg below the knee, breaking it so that he could not stand up at all. Ten other men were badly wounded.

I moved to this place, about ten miles from where the firing took place.

Beaver Creek, Kan., August 22, 1867.

Marched ten or twelve miles during last night, and early this morning came to my wagons, in charge of Lieut. Price, who was also surrounded by Indians. Found Captain Jenness in the same predicament.

This brings all our forces together. Several of their men were wounded, but I feel much better now that we are in supporting distance. I am sorry to say, however, that in spite of my deploying my men and sending scouts as far out as we dare, we have not been able to discover the least sign of Majors Elliott and Moore, who were expected to co-operate with us. If they had come to my rescue according to agreement we would have won one of the grandest victories ever known in this country and captured the entire Indian village, as it is located not more than four or five miles from where I was engaged the first day.

Solomon River, Kan., August 23, 1867.

After dark last night I moved several miles nearer the post, and at daybreak this morning was entirely surrounded by Indians. It was impossible for me to move during the day, and I had all I could do to fight and keep them off the best way I could.

Counting up the killed and wounded tonight I found that thirty-five have been killed and wounded during the past three days out of the seventy who were engaged in the fight.

Following is the official report now (1899) on file in the War Department:

New Fort Hays, Kansas, August 24, 1867.

Capt. H. C. Corbin,
Thirty-eighth U. S. Infantry,
Commanding Post New Fort Hays:

Sir—I have the honor to report that, in obedience to S. O. No. 71, dated headquarters New Fort Hays, Kansas, August 12, 1867, I assumed command of Companies B and C, First Battalion, Eighteenth Kansas Cavalry, under command of Capt. E. A. Barker, Eighteenth Kansas Cavalry, and Company F, Tenth U. S. Cavalry; marched to the Saline river, and followed the course of the stream west until I met Major Moore, commanding Companies A and D, Eighteenth Kansas Cavalry, coming down, about 4 o'clock on the 14th. We decided to march to the Solomon. Major Moore went to the northwest and I to the northeast; we were to meet each other on the Solomon.

I followed the Solomon forty miles, examining all its tributaries thoroughly.

Failing to find Major Moore, I took a southwest course, intending to come to Monument Station and scout down the Smoky, but on the 17th, finding a very large trail running northwest, I followed it.

After coming to the Saline, I halted my command, forty-five miles from Fort Hays, and rode with three men as an escort into Fort Hays, and ordered up four wagons with forage and one with rations, and took twenty-two dismounted cavalry as guard to train. Rejoined my command on the evening of the 18th, and on the 19th started on the trail, when I started to Beaver creek, seventy miles. I then halted to wait for Captain Jenness and several scouts whom I had sent out for Indian signs.

Reached Beaver Creek 9 A. M. on the 21st. While eating breakfast one of my videttes was attacked by one Indian. Supposing more to be very near, I at once pushed on, leaving my wagons in charge of Lieutenant Price and sixty-five men of the Eighteenth Kansas, with orders to come on as fast as possible to the Republican and to await further orders.

Fearing he would follow directly after me, I sent Sergeant Carpenter, Eighteenth Kansas, and Sergeant Johnson of Company F, Tenth Cavalry, back with instructions to follow Beaver creek down eight miles before they crossed.

Before they had proceeded three miles they met Captain Jenness, Eighteenth Kansas Cavalry, and scouts, whom I had sent out that morning. Captain Jenness assumed command of the party (twenty-nine) men.

Seeing the Indians circling around, he decided to attempt to overtake me, but failed, as he was attacked by too many Indians. His report is as follows:

"During my forward movement I was attacked at 3 o'clock this afternoon by about 300 Indians."

I sent Captain Barker to the left with half of the command to make a charge on the largest portion.

Before he had proceeded 100 yards I discovered reinforcements of Indians coming from the northwest, and found it necessary to place my animals in the nearest ravine and throw my men to the right, left, front and rear, which was done just in time to save my stock by repelling a charge of the Indians made just as I had dismounted. The Indians fought me from 3 to 9 o'clock P. M. San-tan-ti, in full uniform, on a beautiful gray horse, sounded the charge with his bugle at least a dozen times, whooping and yelling and endeavoring to get his men to charge into the ravine, but only getting them near enough to have at least twenty of his saddles emptied at a volley and a dozen ponies killed and wounded.

Under cover of the darkness I attempted to find the rest of the command. Reaching Beaver creek at 4 o'clock the morning of the 22d, and seeing no signs of the wagons, I halted until sunrise to rest my exhausted men; then followed the creek up two miles, and found Lieutenants Price and Thomas, Eighteenth Kansas Volunteers, with the wagons, encamped in a ravine, all safe, but entirely surrounded by Indians, in groups of fifty or more, evidently trying either to starve them out or to seize an opportunity to charge and run off the stock.

I soon learned that Captain Jenness was nearby in a helpless condition. I immediately sent out a sufficient force to bring him and his wounded into camp. The Indians continued charging and fighting until 4 o'clock in the afternoon, when I mounted twenty men, which was all I could raise, and charged on the Indians, driving them across the creek, but found it policy to get back to camp as soon as possible, as about 300 or 400 commenced circling around, trying to cut me off from camp. It is my honest opinion that not less than fifty Indians were killed and 150 wounded. Seventy cavalry are as many as I had to oppose at least 800 Indians.

Lieutenant Price had sixty-five men with the wagon train; Captain Jenness had twenty-nine men. Total strength of the command, 164 men, divided in three separate detachments, attacked by various bands of Indians.

About 4 o'clock in the afternoon, on the 23d, several Indians came toward us from among about 100, waving a white flag. I sent out my guides with a white handkerchief tied to a stick, with instructions to receive the messenger and ascertain what he wished, and, if necessary, to let me know.

The Indians came near enough to recognize the scout, and called him by name, cursing him, and one of them fired his pistol at him. At the same time several Indians started out from among those behind, carrying a red flag, singing out in plain English, "Come here, come here, you sons of guns; we don't want to fight the niggers; we want to fight you white sons of guns," etc.

The guides reported that they recognized San-tan-ti, Roman-Nose, Charlie Bent and other prominent chiefs.

In my opinion "San-tan-ti" considers himself to be in command of the district.

While returning for rations on the night of the 18th, I met Major Elliott, commanding battalion Seventh U. S. Cavalry, who partly agreed to start on the morning of the 19th for the Republican and co-operate with me. On no other condition would I have returned so far with so small a force. Supposing he and Major Moore, Eighteenth Kansas Volunteers, to be in my vicinity gave me confidence to push forward, and had they co-operated with me, might have recaptured 1200 or 1500 head of stolen stock.

I believe that large numbers of Indians may be found on the tributaries near the North Forks of the Republican, and from appearances they intend to move north of the Platte.

While returning to this post I met Major Elliott, with companies of cavalry, going towards the scene of our recent operations, and if a force could be sent from the Platte, at least 2000 head of stock could be captured.

I would recommend that if pursuit of Indians be continued on the plains, a temporary post for supplies be established near the North and South Forks of the Republican.

It gives me pleasure to commend to the favorable notice of the commanding General the following officers, guides and enlisted men, who, by their cool determination and exhibition of courage and perseverance under danger the most trying, contributed greatly to the salvation of the command:

Capt. E. A. Barker, Captain Jenness, Second Lieutenant Reynolds, First Lieutenant Thomas, First Lieutenant Price, Company B, Eighteenth Kansas Volunteer Cavalry; Second Lieut. John A. Bodamer, Company F, Tenth U. S. Cavalry, whom I recommended for brevet commision in last report for determination to succeed; Asst. Surg. R. Westerling, U. S. A.; P. A. Becker, whom I recommend for commission in another report; A. S. Philly, scout; First Sergt. F. M. Stall, Co. B; Sergts. J. Springer, G. A. Camel, Corp. James Howell, Privates E. Worley of Co. C, and J. Gordon, Co. B, Eighteenth Kansas Volunteer Cavalry; Sergt. C. A. Crumble and Corp. Batter of Co. F, Tenth U. S. Cavalry.

The whole command acted nobly, and set a fine example for other Kansas volunteers to follow.

I reached Fort Hays at 5 o'clock P. M. today.

The following is a list of the wounded, two of whom died and were buried on our way in:

Capt. G. B. Jenness, Co. C; Sergeant Fannagan, Co. B; Privates F. Anderson, William Hillory, F. Forrester, J. Gordon and Hayes of Co. B; Sergts. J. A. Carpenter, J. H. T. Springer, J. A. Campbell, Corporal Towell, Private William Sotherland, Eighteenth Kansas Volunteer Cavalry; First Sergeant Thornton, Sergeant Johnson, Corporal Shepherd, Privates Crosby, J. Anderson, G.

Godfield, J. Marshall, J. Brown, J. Robinson, C. Murray, F. Smith, Co. F, Tenth U. S. Cavalry; Private T. P. Masterson, Co. C, Eighteenth Kansas Volunteer Cavalry; Private W. Turner, Co. F, Tenth U. S. Cavalry, and Private A. J. Priley, scout.

I am, Captain,

Very respectfully,

Your obedient servant,

GEO. A. ARMES,

Capt. Tenth Cavalry,

Brevet Major, U. S. A., Commanding.

Fort Hays, Kan., August 24, 1867.

I reached this post during the night with my command and our wounded just after having met Major Elliott with his six companies of the Seventh Cavalry on their way to co-operate with me according to the plans laid out before I made my main move on the trail. Instead of moving promptly he had waited at this post to get his wagon loaded with forage and his command fixed up as if they were going out on a grand review. He was marching along with his flags and guidon, a train of wagons and ambulances following in the rear, as if he intended to make an average march of from ten to fifteen miles a day, while if he had started as he had agreed to we would have cleaned out the whole village of Indians. On opening my mail I found the enclosed letter from General Grierson:

Headquarters Tenth U. S. Cavalry,

Fort Riley, Kansas, August 19, 1867.

Capt. Geo. A. Armes,

Brevet Major, U. S. A.:

The Major-General desires to express his gratification at the very creditable accounts which reached him of your late engagement with Indians. He regrets your wound, but congratulates you that it is not very serious, and that you were fortunate to escape with such small loss to your command.

Very respectfully,

Your obedient servant,

HENRY S. ALVORD,

U. S. A.

Hundreds of people located in and around the vicinity of this post have been calling and congratulating me most of the day.

Headquarters Post New Fort Hays, Kans., August 23, 1867.
Bvt. Brig.-Gen. Chauncey McKeever,
Asst. Adjt.-Gen. Dept. of the Missouri:

General—I enclose herewith the official report of Bvt. Maj. Geo. A. Armes, giving detailed account of the affair which took place northwest of this post, near the Republican. Major Armes did all anyone could have done with the men he had (and many would have done less without discredit). The universal testimony of the officers and men with Major Armes is that the Indians have been severely punished in this affair, and we feel that they have at least paid in part for their recent depredations in this vicinity. All think that many of our own race were with the enemy, from the fact that our forces were repeatedly challenged in plain English. The warriors are described as being highly painted. They acted altogether on the offensive, and from their superior numbers and fine condition of their stock, compelled our forces to act on the defensive.

The conduct of Major Armes and the officers and men of his company is highly creditable, not only to themselves, but to the service to which they belong.

For the gallantry and perseverance of the officers and men of the Eighteenth Kansas Volunteer Cavalry the people of the State are greatly indebted, and have added to the already established fact that with the people is our strength.

The wounded are well provided for, and our medical men report them doing well.

I am, General, very respectfully, your obedient servant,
(Signed) Henry C. Corbin, Capt. Thirty-eighth Infty.

During the month of August the cholera prevailed at this post fearfully. The company was engaged in two battles with the Indians. The first was on August 2, 1867, near the Saline river. The loss in the fight was one officer wounded—Captain Armes—and one enlisted man killed, three horses killed and three wounded. The second was on August 22, 1867, between Beaver Creek and Republican river, Kansas. Our loss was one man killed and twelve wounded, twelve horses killed and three wounded. During the months of July and August the company had marched 911 miles.

September 1, 1867.

Twenty recruits were assigned to my company today in place of those who were killed and died of cholera during the past six weeks.

September 11, 1867.

Dr. Wiggins and Lieutenant Beecher, Third United States Infantry, arrived from Fort Lawrence, Kan., today and reported

that San-tan-ti (name of the chief) was there with a number of his chiefs. Lieutenant Howard of the Fifth Infantry, with the headquarters band, arrived this evening.

September 12, 1867.

I went on duty as Officer of the Day at nine this morning, and was placed in arrest by Captain Ovenshine, Fifth Infantry, who was mean enough to act upon false statements without first sending to me for an explanation. Have the limits of the reservation. (Arrest No. 11.) At six o'clock this evening Lieutenants Howard, Fifth Infantry, and Amick, Tenth Cavalry, had a horse-race for a purse of $300. I was one of the judges. Lieutenant Amick's horse came out eight feet ahead, creating considerable excitement.

September 13, 1867.

I was released from arrest at ten this forenoon, and no cause given from Captain Ovenshine for his unjust action. He seems to act as a sort of a figure-head for some of my enemies.

September 14, 1867.

Governor Crawford of Kansas arrived here today, and we rode to Hays City and other places of interest in the vicinity of this post.

September 15, 1867.

Governor Crawford and his friends made a visit to my camp this morning and witnessed the general inspection, after which I had a number of horses saddled for myself and friends and took a good escort to protect us from the Indians. We enjoyed a grand buffalo hunt this afternoon, killing quite a number. The Governor and his staff left this evening for Topeka.

September 20, 1867.

Captain Ovenshine going on the sick-list, sent for me to take command of the post and attend to the duties for him in his office. Mr. Parks, in charge of the railroad camp above here, was killed by Indians today.

September 22, 1867.

General Gibbs has relieved Gen. A. J. Smith from command of the district, and has sent me orders to have a separate camp from the post, not requiring me to be subject to any duties under the post commander.

September 23, 1867.

Colonel Carpenter, with Company H, Tenth Cavalry, arrived today; also my brother, Charles H. Armes, from Washington. This afternoon we all went driving in my ambulance. In looking over my mail, which had been delayed on account of change of station, I received the following letter from my friend, Colonel Cary:

Washington, D. C., August 27, 1867.

Capt. Geo. A. Armes,
Fort Harker, Kansas:

Dear Captain—Your letter of July 11 was duly received, and I was glad to hear from you.

I had, with much regret, heard of the death of your brother.

I was married on the 29th July to Miss Colby, of which event you were duly apprised by cards, which were sent to you. To you I am indebted for my acquaintance with the lady who is now my wife. * * *

After we were married we went to Niagara Falls, down the St. Lawrence to Montreal, up Lake Champlain, down the Hudson to New York, and here. What a splendid trip we had and a splendid time!

I am ordered to my regiment, and leave tomorrow for St. Paul, Minn. Write to me there, care Maj. A. G. Robinson.

I see your name in the papers from time to time. You are doing well, and I am glad to see it, too. Shall always be glad to hear from you. My wife sends you her regards.

Yours truly,
(Signed) A. B. Cary.

(Now Paymaster-General, U. S. A., lately retired.)

September 25, 1867.

I moved my camp about a mile above Hays and made arrangements to take my meals at the hotel in Hays City at ten dollars per week. The General Court-Martial, of which I am president, met at the post and we tried one enlisted man.

September 28, 1867.

I sent ten men to Colonel Wickes' camp yesterday to remain there as a guard. My court met at ten o'clock this forenoon, and we finished the trial of three enlisted men of the Seventh Cavalry, adjourning at ten o'clock to meet on Monday.

October 1, 1867.

I received notice of the shipment of fifty horses from Fort Leavenworth to replace those killed and disabled in my last engagement with the Indians.

I also received the following complimentary order from Gov. S. J. Crawford, which was delayed for several days on account of my change of station. It will make the men who were engaged in the Indian fight on the Republican river feel good to know that their gallant services were so highly appreciated by the Governor of their own State who is not only a soldier, but a statesman and one of the best men I ever met in public life.

I feel encouraged to think he acted so promptly on my recommendation:

State of Kansas, Office of the Adjutant-General,
Topeka, September 3, 1867.

General Orders No. 8.

Official information having been received of the noble part borne by Companies B and C, Eighteenth Kansas Volunteer Cavalry, in the recent engagement with a greatly superior force of hostile Indians on the tributaries of the Republican river, thanks are hereby returned to the brave officers and men of those companies participating in the engagement, and especially to Capt. E. A. Barker, First Lieut. John W. Price and Private Joseph H. Gordon of Co. B; Capt. Geo. B. Jenness, First Lieut. P. E. Thomas, Second Lieut. J. Reynolds, Sergts. G. H. Springer, G. A. Campbell and F. H. Carpenter, Corp. Jas. H. Towell and Private E. J. Wooley of Co. C; also A. S. Philly of Shawnee county, scout to battalion.

The personal daring, courage and military skill displayed in resisting more than ten times their own numbers, in repulsing the bold charge made by the enemy (led by the basest of white men, well drilled in war), in thwarting the cunning of the Indian, deserves and merits the highest praise and commendation.

By order of the Governor.

(Signed) J. B. McAfee,
Adjt.-Gen.

I certify that the above is a true copy of an order issued under my direction while Governor of the State of Kansas, and that Maj. George A. Armes, U. S. A., was present and commanded the forces participating in said engagement, as I was at that time informed.

(Signed) Samuel J. Crawford.

I went to the courtroom as usual at 9 A. M. One or two of the members being absent, and not being ready to go on with the case before the court, I stepped over to the Post Quartermaster's office for a few moments to see him in relation to his not being more prompt in furnishing my company with forage. Captain Laufler became very insulting, grabbed his revolver, threatening to shoot me if I did not leave. I picked up a board and knocked the pistol out of his hand, and then twisted his nose for him in the presence of several officers. A short time afterwards long-legged Lieut. J. Milton Thompson, the Post Adjutant, seemed so anxious to perform his duty that he placed me in arrest instead of Captain Lauffer, who was the principal of the disturbance, and his action was immediately approved by Captain Ovenshine, the Post Commander, who seemed to be under control of his subordinates, and who has no regard for justice, honor or decency. I was ordered to my quarters in close arrest, and Lieutenant Kennedy relieved me of my command.

This (arrest No. 12) seemed to please Lieutenant Kennedy, who was naturally very jealous of the reputation I had established in my successful Indian expeditions. The older officers, who could not help but show their envy and jealousy on account of my success, naturally took sides against me.

Camp New Fort Hays, Kan., October 8, 1867.

The railroad is just completed, and the cars came into this town for the first time today.

October 9, 1867.

I joined with several others and got up a meeting which raised $400 in cash for Mr. Clark to start a newspaper, which will be known as the *Hays City Times*.

October 17, 1867.

Started to put up a building on my lot in Hays today. Hired three teams for $15 a day; expect others tomorrow.

October 26, 1867.

This has been a gay day. Lieutenant Amick and Lieutenant Fisher had a horse-race. Lieutenant Amick won $400; I won $18 on his horse. The officers of our post had a lively time at the sutler's last night. Lieutenant Lebo, Captain Graham, Lieutenant Bodamer and the party that remained there most all night drank

eighty-seven bottles of wine. Such customers are very profitable to Mr. Wilson, our genial and enterprising sutler.

Fort Hays, Kan., November 5, 1867.

The Indians have been driven out of the country, the settlers are returning to their ranches, and Captain Jenness of the Eighteenth Kansas and his company left today to be mustered out.

Fort Hays, Kan., November 30, 1867.

Colonel Carpenter has been ordered to Fort Riley and is getting his command in readiness. He has been a very good friend and companion to me while we were on duty together. My company goes with his command to Fort Riley to winter.

Walnut Creek, Kan., December 3, 1867.

Colonel Carpenter left at eight o'clock this morning with his company, H, Davis', G, and mine, F. I rode in my new ambulance, which I have just purchased from Colonel Corbin, several miles, when I concluded to ride horseback, leaving it in charge of my orderly, Thomas Henery, who let the team run away, breaking the front axle in two. We are now in a splendid camp and the weather is pleasant.

December 6, 1867.

Several officers called upon me today, and I returned their calls at the post. Captain Howard, Fifth Infantry, Acting Adjutant-General to Colonel English, called upon me with the request from the Colonel that I was not to visit his post without his permission. Of course, when I received such a very important message from the great "I am," I did not give him an opportunity to refuse, and contented myself by entertaining such friends as wished to call upon me.

Camp on Chapman Creek, December 9, 1867.

We went into camp at two o'clock this afternoon, after marching twenty miles. Colonel Carpenter killed two prairie chickens on the march and invited me to dine with him.

Fort Riley, Kan., December 10, 1867.

We arrived at this post at one o'clock, and were met by General Grierson, who gave me the limits of the post.

Christmas Eve, December 24, 1867.

Colonel Carpenter left this morning for Leavenworth, Kan., having been detailed for court-martial duty. The citizens in Junction City gave a grand party to myself and other officers of my regiment, but I declined attending, not wishing to ask permission to leave the post. Lieutenants Lebo, Badger, Banzhalf and Myers spent the first half of the evening with me.

Christmas, December 25, 1867.

The sun has been bright most of the day, and most everyone kept open house, myself included. Most all the officers called upon me, General Grierson included, who sent me an invitation to attend a hop at his quarters this evening.

December 31, 1867.

General and Mrs. Grierson have invited me to call on them without regard to ceremony, and seemed disposed to grant every indulgence I might wish.

The following reached me on this the last day of the year:

Abbotsford, near Ogden,
Riley Co., Kans., December 23, 1867.

Dear Armes:

Your very welcome letter reached me in due course of mail, and I owe you an apology (which I will make when next we meet) for not having replied to your favor at an earlier date.

I read your account of your fight with the redskins to a crowd of officers at the fort; all of whom, particularly those of your regiment, seemed highly delighted to hear of your complete success.

It was generally voted that you deserved a big brevet, and I sincerely hope you will get it.

Whilst in Washington this winter I will do my best to help you in that way.

It is reported that you are to be hauled up for stopping that blackguard Benham; if so, have me summoned, and I will do all I can for you. Every officer at Riley approved of your course, and commended you for acting as you did.

Major Smith did not pay your accounts until recently, as you will see by the enclosed certificate.

Robertson and Allen of your regiment have been relieved from duty at Riley and ordered to join their regiment.

My paper is about out, as you will readily imagine when you see this scrap. I had a notice of your Indian affair published in the Junction City paper. Let me hear from you when you can.

It will always give me pleasure, and should you ever come this way I will be most happy to see you, and have you to make my house your home. If any of my old friends are at your post, please remember me to them.

P. S.—Flood is mustered out and gone home.

Very truly, yours,

D. W. Scott.

Headquarters Dist. Upper Ark.,
Fort Harker, Kans., August 23, 1867.

Capt. Geo. A. Armes,
Tenth U. S. Cavalry:

Captain—I am directed to inform you unofficially that General Hancock will be at the end of the railroad track on Sunday, where he will dine. If you can be spared from Fort Hays the General would like to see you there with a personal escort.

Similar letters to this have been sent to Majors Elliott and Moore and Captain Corbin.

I am, Captain, very respectfully, your obedient servant,

W. B. Weir, First Lieut. Seventh Cav., A. A. A. Gen.

CHAPTER VI.

Leavenworth, Kan., January 2, 1868.

I left Fort Riley on the eleven o'clock train this A. M. for this post to appear before a court-martial for trial. Colonel English and Dr. Fryer came as witnesses against me.

January 3, 1868.

I reported to Captain Beebe, Adjutant-General of the Department, who referred me to Colonel Hoffman, Post Commander, who assigned me quarters and gave me the privilege of remaining in the city if I wished, and I am the guest of Mr. Shrivers.

January 7, 1868.

General Hoffman extended my limits as far as Leavenworth City, where I met Mr. Shreeves, and, with Colonel Carpenter, called on Judge Delahay and daughters. We went to hear the Bell Ringers this evening, who were very entertaining.

January 8, 1868.

The trial of Gen. George A. Custer was ended yesterday, and this morning I appeared for trial before the same court, whose president is Gen. L. C. Easton. My case was postponed until tomorrow.

Col. C. C. Parsons, Fourth Artillery, one of the members of the court, introduced me to Lieut. Peter Leary, Jr., Fourth Artillery, who has kindly taken my case as counsel. Gen. Custer and Lieutenant Cook were held to $5000 bail today to appear before the civil court tomorrow morning.

January 9, 1868.

I appeared before the court at ten this morning. Colonel Myer's case was up for a short time and closed. Maj. Andrew Sheridan, Third Infantry, was sick and excused from sitting as a member. I made no objection to any of the members. Colonel Benteen and Lieutenant Commagere, Seventh Cavalry, were the only two witnesses examined today. Both were for the prosecution. Colonel West, Seventh Cavalry, testified before the civil authorities against General Custer and Lieutenant Cook today.

January 11, 1868.

I appeared before the court (court-martial No. 2) at ten o'clock this morning, the following members being present:

Brvt. Maj.-Gen. L. C. Easton, Deputy Q. M. Gen.; Brvt. Maj.-Gen. J. W. Davidson, Lieut.-Col. Tenth Cav.; Brvt. Brig.-Gen. M. R. Morgan, Major and C. S.; Lieut.-Col. Enoch Steen, U. S. Army; Brvt. Lieut.-Col. J. McNutt, Major Ord. Dept.; Brvt. Lieut.-Col. C. C. Parsons, Captain Fourth Art.; Brvt. Major D. Parker, Captain Third Infty.; Brvt. Major H. T. Davis, Captain Tenth Cav.; Brvt. Captain H. A. Huntington, Lieutenant Fourth Art.; Judge Advocate, First Lieut. A. M. L. Crawford, Thirty-eighth U. S. Infty.

Captain Ovenshine and Captain Lauffer testified for the prosecution, but no testimony so far has been given that can hurt me, as I did not break my arrest to attend meals, nor did I refuse to obey the order of arrest from Lieutenant Thompson until I had resented the insult of Captain Lauffer, and as the affair was over before Thompson, the Post Adjutant, arrived, he had no right to place me in arrest under the authority of the Twenty-seventh Article of War. Private Rogers, Troop K, Seventh Cavalry, testified that he was present and that Thompson did not place me under arrest until after the matter was entirely over. Captain Lauffer having drawn his revolver and threatened to shoot, caused me to pick up a stick and knock it out of his hand.

I was arraigned upon the following charges:

Charge First—Refusing to obey an arrest, in violation of the twenty-seventh article of war; being engaged in fighting or quarreling with Capt. S. B. Lauffer, A. Q. M., U. S. A.

Specificaton—Being engaged in fighting or quarreling with Capt. S. B. Lauffer, A. Q. M., U. S. A., in open camp, being placed under arrest by Lieut. J. M. Thompson, Thirty-eighth Infantry, under the authority of the twenty-seventh article of war. He refuses to obey such arrest. This at Fort Hays on or about the 1st day of October, 1867.

Charge Second—Breach of arrest.

Specification—That having been placed under arrest by order of Capt. S. Ovenshine, Fifth Infantry, commanding at Fort Hays, October 6, 1867, and having had the limit of his camp assigned, did break said arrest by visiting and remaining in the town of Hays City for about three hours on or about the 20th of October, 1867.

Specification Second—That he, on the 2d day of October, 1867, or thereabouts, did visit the town of Hays City without proper authority, he being at that time under arrest, with his camp limit assigned him, with the limits of his arrest. This at or near Fort Hays, Kans., on or about the 2d day of October, 1867.

Charge Third—Neglect of duty.

Did, after having been placed under arrest October 1, having applied October 2, 1867, at the headquarters, District of Upper Arkansas, to have the limits of the district assigned him as the limits of his arrest, which application was returned disapproved October 5, 1867, which paper, as he states, he failed to receive, did neglect and fail to make any other efforts to have the limits of his arrest defined. This at or near Fort Hays, October 2, 1867, until November 2, 1867, or about that period of time.

To which charges and specifications he pleads not guilty.

January 13, 1868.

I appeared before the court at ten this forenoon. Captain Ovenshine testified that he gave me permission to go to Hays City for my meals. Colonel English appeared and swore he saw me there October 20. Quartermaster-Sergeant Moore, Seventh Cavalry, testified that I refused to obey orders of arrest on the ground that the affair with Captain Laufler was all over before Lieutenant Thompson appeared.

The prosecution closed today, and I was given until Wednesday to prepare my defense. Lieutenant Leary is fixing it up. He is a bright, popular young officer and a friend of mine who I believe will show the charges against me were false and fixed up through malice and jealousy by officers whose records will not bear investigation.

Colonel Parsons gave a party last evening to all the officers and ladies of the post. I declined to attend on account of my case not being settled. Lieutenant Leary called upon me this morning and read the defense he had prepared, which was a good one. I appeared before the court and read it, after which the court closed its doors and proceeded to act upon the case. Colonel Sheridan and Major Beebe called upon me this evening and remained two or three hours.

January 17, 1868.

This has been a great day for me, as the Post Adjutant came to my quarters this morning announcing my honorable acquittal and releasing me from arrest, giving me four days' permission to delay reporting to my command at Fort Riley.

The good news was soon spread over the post and the town, and many of my friends have called to congratulate me.

January 18, 1868.

Extract from the press on my acquittal:

The Major may congratulate himself upon having had a hearing before a court composed of some of the most efficient officers and thorough gentlemen in the service.

Fort Riley, Kan., January 21, 1868.

I left the Planters' House (Leavenworth, Kan.) at seven o'clock this morning, reaching this post at three this afternoon.

General Grierson seemed glad to know I got off so nicely.

January 22, 1868.

Assumed command of my company today, giving a thorough inspection and receiving notice to go on duty as Officer of the Day for tomorrow.

January 24, 1868.

General Grierson turned the command of the regiment over to me, which I drilled mounted and passed it in review. I also commanded the regiment this afternoon at dress parade, dismounted. The command made a fine appearance.

Topeka, Kan., February 20, 1868.

Several men deserted at the post last night, and I was ordered after them. Leaving Fort Riley at five o'clock this morning with four men, hired fresh horses and pursued them several miles, when I jumped on a train for this place in order to put out detectives and overtake them.

Fort Riley, Kan., February 22, 1868.

Left Topeka at eleven o'clock this morning; stopped at Wamego, where I secured the three deserters, whom Mr. Beeman had captured in the trap we had set for them, and arrived here at five o'clock this afternoon. I enjoyed the trip and attended to my duties just the same.

March 23, 1868.

General Grierson received orders today to be ready to move the headquarters of his regiment to Fort Gibson, Indian Territory, and turn this command over to Major Kidd.

I have been preparing my company and getting it in first-class order to start for the front as soon as the Indians begin to make depredations.

March 25, 1868.

I had just made arrangements to take a seven days' leave and visit St. Louis when an order came placing me on general court-martial duty, which has broken up my plan.

Kansas City, Mo., April 3, 1868.

As my court finished its case, a seven days' leave was granted, and I left Riley at eleven o'clock this afternoon. Mrs. Scott (who afterwards married Capt. C. G. Cox, Tenth Cavalry) came as far as Manhattan on the train. Lieutenant Williams, Third Infantry, is with me and en route to Jefferson City with some prisoners for the penitentiary.

Washington, D. C., March 30, 1868.

My Dear Captain:

General Hancock, being exceedingly pressed by business, has directed me, to say in reply to your letter of the 20th inst., that he sent the recommendations for brevets for yourself, and, he believes, for Mr. Bodamer, through General Sherman's headquarters, and to make the matter more certain the General spoke about it to General Sherman.

You can see copies (or procure them) of the General's recommendations at the Adjutant-General's Office, headquarters Department of the Missouri.

It is probable that the recommendations are at the Adjutant-General's Office in Washington, and have never been acted upon.

This you could ascertain by addressing a letter to the Adjutant-General of the Army on the subject.

At this time it is not probable that any further action by General Hancock would secure the brevets for you.

I am, Captain, very respectfully, your obedient servant,

W. S. Mitchell, Brvt. Lieut.-Col. and Asst.

Capt. G. A. Armes,

Tenth U. S. Cavalry, Fort Riley, Kansas.

The above letter will have recognized point when the following facts are considered: A short time after General Hancock had been relieved in New Orleans by order of General Grant he accidentally met the General on Pennsylvania avenue, who at once extended his hand, which was refused by General Hancock, and very few of his recommendations were favorably acted upon for some years afterwards.

Jefferson City, April 8, 1868.

After calling at General Sherman's headquarters and bidding General Nichols and other friends good-bye, I left on the one o'clock train and reached this city at eleven o'clock. I am now at the Virginia Hotel.

April 11, 1868.

Orders have come at last to get ready to march, and I have been busy all day packing up all the dress suits of the men and their best clothes to store away in boxes and getting my company ready for light marching order to go in pursuit of a band of Indians who have commenced their depredations in Western Kansas.

I have just sent a letter to Department headquarters in order that report of some mischief-making officers of the post can be investigated, so I can prove their manufactured charge to be false. Captain Burns, Lieutenant Lee and Major Davis seem to be the interested parties who are trying to get me into trouble.

My company wagons are loaded and everything ready to move at eight o'clock this morning. Colonel Forsyth inspected my company very closely and complimented me for having it in such excellent condition.

Chapman's Creek, April 15, 1868.

Major Kidd formed a battalion in line and marched past General Grierson's headquarters in review, where Colonel Forsyth and a number of other officers witnessed the movement.

The men and horses are in splendid condition.

The band went with us as far as Junction City, playing some lively tunes as we passed through. General Grierson rode out with us several miles, and then bade us good-bye. We arrived in camp at two o'clock, and are now comfortably fixed in our tents.

Sunday, April 26, 1868.

After inspection I called on General Sheridan, who is in camp twelve miles above here, and his brother, Col. M. Sheridan, returned with me to Hays City. The Seventh Cavalry is here, and with the Infantry officers of this post makes everything look lively.

General Sheridan being in command in person, has collected quite a force to commence the summer campaign against the Indians, and there seems to be some hard work in store for us.

April 30, 1868.

Generals Thomas, Price, T. T. Crittendon (late Governor of Missouri), Colonels Phillips and Barnett, Judge Jenafer, General Perry and several other railroad magnates arrived here in a special train. They called on me, and I furnished each a good horse, and detailed some forty or fifty soldiers as a body-guard to protect them against the Indians while on the buffalo hunt.

General Price rode in my ambulance a few miles, until we sighted a large herd of buffalo, when I gave him a good horse that would stand still while shooting from him. Several ladies rode out on horseback and in ambulances to witness the hunt.

About 2 o'clock a tremendous bull was shot in the leg by Corporal Butler, giving the General a chance to kill it, which he did by a well-directed shot. Of course, the General felt much excited, and threw down his gun, cheering, which brought the rest of the party around to congratulate him for killing his first buffalo. He handed Butler $5, requesting him to cut off the hind quarters and take out the tongue from the buffalo.

My party killed twenty-seven buffalo, and, after loading two six-mule wagons, we returned to camp, allowing the excursion party to ship what they wished to Jefferson City.

May 2, 1868.

General Crittendon and one or two of my guests have heard of the threats made by Graham and the blackguard, Kennedy, to prefer charges against me for entertaining railroad officials, and, in order to encourage me, voluntarily sent me the following letter:

Maj. G. A. Armes:

Sir—We have learned today, upon our return from Cayote, that some of the officers of the fort and camp are inclined to reflect upon you for having supplied us with some horses yesterday. This we regret, and proffer in partial return for your great kindness to us as strangers any assistance that may be available to you. Many of us have served our Government as cavalry officers during the late rebellion, and then and there learned two potent facts—first, how to use a horse, as not to injure it, and, second, that in a cavalry officer, as a general thing, a warm, genial spirit is always to be

found. We have learned, also, that Captain Graham said upon our departure from home that when we called upon him for horses he responded by asking us if we thought him a d— fool. He used no such language. If he says he did, we can brand him with a falsehood that will place him outside of the pale of decent association. A part of our party have gone on, else we would send you a written denial of the language at once.

If it becomes necessary for us to come to your assistance in any way, inform us by writing to Capt. Thos. E. Bassett, Sedalia, Mo. Excuse our paper, as this is all that could be given us at our hotel. Please accept our thanks and our adieux.

Yours truly,

THOS. E. BASSETT.
JAS. C. WOOD.
THOS. L. PRICE.
JAS. MONTGOMERY.
WM. GENTRY.
T. T. CRITTENDON.
E. W. WASHBURN.

May 4, 1868.

Shortly after I relieved Colonel Carpenter as Officer of the Day and had received instructions as to my duties from the commanding officer, Major Kidd, Kennedy, who is acting Adjutant, came to my quarters and placed me in arrest (arrest No. 13), which order I obeyed, handing him my saber. Afterward he was placed in command of my company and the limits of the camp assigned to me.

From information I have gathered so far this evening several officers have conspired and fixed up a long set of charges upon which they intend to try to have me court-martialed as soon as a court can be organized upon matters that they have been trying to arrange for the past few months, being greatly disappointed with the action of the court at Fort Leavenworth in honorably acquitting me.

May 6, 1868.

I turned over my company proper to this loafer, Kennedy, today. It is surprising that such characters are recognized by decent officials and sustained in their cowardly, sneaking acts.

May 14, 1868.

General Sheridan and staff are here, but go to Fort Wallace on tonight's train. Captain Graham is to take station at that post, being a special friend of General Sheridan's. Graham's company and horses were loaded on the cars this evening to go with the General.

May 16, 1868.

The news of the President's acquittal by the Senate came tonight, and only two or three of the officials of this command seem to appreciate and feel glad of it. If I was in command I would have a general salute fired in his honor, but Major Kidd, being of different politics, appears to pay no attention whatever.

Camp Fifteen Miles South of Hays, May 25, 1868.

News of General Grant's nomination for President came today. As the command has started on the campaign, I had to break up housekeeping at the post, where I was as nicely fixed as a bachelor officer could well be. My chickens were so well trained they would come into the corner of the tent and lay, then walk outside to cackle. No one would know a hen was about the premises until after she had gone outside of the tent. I had to dispose of all my chickens and one of the best cows I ever had at a great sacrifice, as it was impossible to have such luxuries during the campaign after Indians.

Camp Fifty-two Miles West of Hays,
near Grenells' Station, May 28, 1868.

Just after we had put up our tents news arrived that the Indians had attacked Cayotte Station and Fort Wallace. One man had been killed at each place and quite a number wounded and a lot of stock run off by a band of Cheyenne dog soldiers. Two Indians reporting themselves to Major Kidd as Big Horse and Young Buck made our camp a visit. They were treated as friendly as possible, and after spying out and gathering all the information they could, left us to rejoin a band of warriors who had stolen hundreds of head of stock. By rights these two Indians should have been held as prisoners, but Major Kidd, who appears to have scarcely sense enough to come in out of the rain, let them go.

Camp at Chalk Bluffs, May 29, 1868.

This is my birthday, and I am well and hearty, but I am cross and provoked at the mean way Major Kidd commands the battalion. We have only marched fourteen miles and have gone into camp on the Smoky river, in the bed of which we have to dig four or five feet for water, which is warm and muddy, there not being any water in sight until we dig for it. The cars are running to Monument Station and the stage coaches are taken from the old stage line and sent to Denver. We are trying to protect the railroad men, some of them at least, from the marauding Indians and make them feel safe while doing their work.

Monument Station, May 30, 1868.

We only marched thirteen miles today, and I have just had a long and pleasant chat with my old friend, Colonel Cunningham, Captain of the Thirty-eighth Infantry, who commands this post and station. Lieutenants Davis and Ezekial, Thirty-eighth Infantry, are here. Plenty of water is found by digging about two or three feet in the bed of the Smoky river.

Smoky Hill Station, May 31, 1868.

Command started at seven this morning. I rode my pony a short distance, and, upon returning to the command in a gallop, the pony stepped into a prairie-dog hole, throwing me over his head, and stunned me so I had to be picked up and carried in an ambulance until we reached camp, when I was given up for dead by several, but Drs. Sternberg and Killburn brought me to life all right. Both doctors have been rendering me every attention possible, and I hope to be all right and able to march tomorrow.

Russell Springs, Kan., June 1, 1868.

I started to ride on horseback this morning, but soon grew too weak, and the doctor ordered me into an ambulance. We have plenty of grass and water.

Fort Wallace is twenty-five miles west of this camp.

Henshaw Station, June 2, 1868.

We marched thirteen miles today. It has been two years since I was here. Since that time all the buildings have been burned down by the Indians, and the stables are underground.

Private Micheal of K Troop accidentally shot himself this afternoon. His body was wrapped up in a woolen blanket, and we dug a hole and buried him by the side of the road.

Camp near Fort Wallace, June 4, 1868.

We moved in a new camp during the day near Rose creek, and have plenty of water and grass for the command, but unless we have a new commanding officer with more sense than Major Kidd seems to possess we will never overtake or punish an Indian, as he appears to be as worthless an officer as ever wore shoulder-straps.

June 22, 1868.

I received an order to report to Fort Hays for trial on the 27th, and at once loaded my traps into a wagon to start for the post, when Lieutenant Banzhaf obtained an order to let him have a book I was in need of for my defence which I was obliged to give up in spite of my protest.

Hays City, Kan., June 23, 1868.

I left camp near Fort Wallace at six o'clock this morning; rode part of the way on the stage to the end of the track, leaving my pony, which I brought here on the cars, and arrived at eleven o'clock this forenoon.

June 24, 1868.

I reported my arrival to Captain Ovenshine, Fifth Infantry, commanding in absence of Major Yard, Tenth Cavalry. I am allowed to remain in the city until further notice.

June 27, 1868.

I reported to the Judge-Advocate, Lieutenant Brownell, the officer who was once a private in Colonel Ellsworth's regiment, and who killed Jim Jackson at the Marshall House, Alexandria, Va., in 1861, and who was specially promoted to a Lieutenant in the regular Army and retired, answering quite a number of questions.

General Court-Martial Room,
Fort Hays, Kans., July 2, 1868.

Brvt. Maj. Geo. A. Armes,
Hays City, Kans.:

Major—I have the honor to inform you that your case will be called tomorrow morning, the 3d inst., at 10 o'clock A. M.

I am, very respectfully, your obedient servant,
Frank E. Brownell, First. Lieut. U. S. Inf., Judge-Advocate.

Having been kept in arrest since May 4 and everthing done to make life unpleasant in order that perhaps I could be forced to resign so as to create a vacancy for the promotion of some mischief-making Lieutenants, who are ready to do anything they can to obtain promotion, I received the above letter, and now that a court has been ordered I am ready to appear before it.

July 3, 1868.

The court did not meet until nine o'clock this forenoon, when I reported for trial. A large number of witnesses for the prosecution were on hand. Dr. Westerling was examined today, and my

C. H. ARMES.

cross-questions made him contradict himself all through, so that the court soon saw he was lying, and his evidence had no effect against me. My brother is helping to conduct my case. The court adjourned.

(Court-martial No. 3.)

July 7, 1868.

I appeared before the court at ten o'clock this forenoon in compliance with the following order:

Headquarters Dept. of the Missouri, Fort Leavenworth, Kan.
Special Order No. 118—Extract.

A general court-martial is hereby appointed to meet at Fort Hayes, Kans., on Saturday, the 27th day of July, 1868, at 10 o'clock in the forenoon, or as soon thereafter as practicable, for the trial of Brvt. Maj. Geo. A. Armes, Captain Tenth U. S. Cavalry, and such other persons as may be properly brought before it.

Detailed for the Court—Brvt. Brig.-Gen. Pitcairn Morrison, Lieut.-Col. Enoch Steen, U. S. A.; Brvt. Lieut.-Col. Myers W. Keogh, Captain Seventh Cavalry; Maj. E. O. Yard, Tenth U. S. Cavalry; Capt. Edmund Butler, Fifth U. S. Infantry; Capt. Martin Mullins, Fifth U. S. Infantry; Capt. Wm. Thompson, Seventh U. S. Cavalry; First Lieut. Geo. McDermott, Fifth U. S. Infantry; First Lieut. Ed. L. Randall, Fifth U. S. Infantry; Judge-Advocate, First Lieut. Frank E. Brownell, U. S. A. (who had avenged the death of Ellsworth by killing his slayer).

No other officers than those above mentioned can be assembled without manifest injury to the service.

By command of
MAJOR-GENERAL SHERIDAN.
(Signed) CHAUNCEY MCKEEVER, Asst. Adjt.-Gen.
Official: SILAS PEPOON,
Second Lieut. Tenth U. S. Cav., Post Adjt.
(who had been a clerk to A. Q. M. U. S. Grant, afterwards the great General).

Lieutenant Thompson of the Thirty-eighth Infantry was examined, but the court soon sized him up, and saw that he was willfully lying all through his testimony.

July 8, 1868.

I appeared before the court at ten o'clock this morning. Lieut. John Bodamer, one of the clique to help manufacture the charges, gave in all he could to make me appear guilty and willfully lied in trying to sustain the charges.

July 10, 1868.

I appeared before the court at ten o'clock this morning. Several soldiers were used by the prosecution as witnesses, who testified merely what had been told them to say, but were contradicted so plainly during their evidence that the court soon saw that they had been tampered with, and could not possibly give any weight to their testimony.

July 11, 1868.

Appeared before the court again today, and one of the chief conspirators, Lieut. W. B. Kennedy, swore to everything he could

think of that he supposed would have any effect in getting me out of the service in order that he might make a file in case of a vacancy. But the court became so disgusted with Lieutenant Kennedy and his negro witnesses that they made up their minds to close the case, and appeared to regret that they had allowed the trial to proceed, considering the kind of evidence that has come before it.

July 14, 1868.

I brought a few witnesses, reliable and trustworthy, of the best reputations, who contradicted the witnesses Kennedy and the conspirators had picked up to try and sustain the manufactured charges the court has been investigating, and in order that they should not be annoyed or delayed any further I concluded to try and make no more defence and let the matter drop where it is, as I do not believe nor do I feel that it is possible any evidence has been deduced that will cause the court to give me even a reprimand.

Sunday, July 19, 1868.

I sat up until two o'clock this morning, when I went through the train that is on its way to St. Louis and stopped here for a few moments, giving the officers of the post a chance to shake hands with Generals Grant and Sheridan and staff.

Sheridan City, Kan., July 22, 1868.

The members of the court all left Hays for their posts day before yesterday, and I was ordered to report to my post (which I expect to reach tomorrow), awaiting promulgation of sentence.

Camp near Fort Wallace, July 24, 1868.

I arrived here yesterday, and have met Colonel Bankhead, Fifth Infantry, who commands Fort Wallace. He is not only a soldier, but a gentleman, which is more than I can say of Major K—— and several others who wear the uniform and pass as such. I bought a mustang pony today from a Californian and started to lead it to my camp, when it bucked and became so stubborn it was impossible to make him move until Lieutenant Riley of the Fifth Infantry and Captain Philey, my old scout, assisted me in getting him to camp. He was the most obstinate piece of horseflesh I ever saw, but I expect to break him in and make a saddle-horse of him soon.

Camp near Rose Creek, Kan., July 25, 1868.

Lieutenants Johnson, Riley and Mr. Todd from Saratoga Springs visited and invited me to take a ride with them this afternoon, and I at once ordered my mustang saddled, which I attempted to ride, and finally succeeded, after three hours hard work and several tumbles. When he would buck and fall down I would light on my feet and be on him almost the moment he was on his feet again, until I got him completely tired out, affording a great deal of amusement for my friends and the soldiers, who seemed to enjoy the fun.

Russell Springs, Kan., August 4, 1868.

We started out a little after sunrise this morning, marched until twelve o'clock, and got up a horse-race between Lieutenant Beck's horse (Sleepy Dick) and Lieutenant Amick's sorrel. I was one of the judges. Lieutenant Beck's horse won easily. We had an interesting time. Dr. Sternberg (now—1899—Surgeon-General, U. S. A.) and I had a race returning to our camp, and I lost a basket of wine, as my mustang concluded to buck just as I thought I was about to win the race.

Walker Station, August 18, 1868.

A dispatch came today stating that ten families had just been massacred and a great many emigrants killed by the Indians; also news that Hon. Thad. Stevens had just died. I managed to get a good supply of vegetables for my mess when I left Hays, but expect to leave them soon if we go on light marching order.

News has just arrived that Comstock, my old guide and scout, has been killed by the Indians. It is a surprise to us all, as he was considered so cautious and such a careful man. In him we have lost one of the most valuable scouts on the plains.

One hundred and thirty mules were driven off from near Hays last night by the Indians. Lieutenant Beecher, Fifth Infantry, and his scouts have gone in pursuit. Settlers are rushing into our camp with the rumor that the Indians threatened to drive everyone out of this country and to stop the work on the railroad.

Camp on Big Timber, August 21, 1868.

Major Kidd (who is still in command) failed to pay attention to the advice of Wild Bill, our scout and guide, in regard to the course we should take when we left camp yesterday, he appearing

to know more about the country than those who have lived there for years. Under the circumstances, he has marched out of his course at least five or ten miles without prospect of finding any Indians.

August 22, 1868.

Colonel Keogh, Seventh Cavalry, arrived at three o'clock this afternoon and gave orders to Major Kidd to have me immediately released from arrest and placed in command, with information that I had been honorably acquitted by the court. I ordered my mules packed, at once inspected my command, and have it now in readiness for hard work.

August 23, 1868.

General Sheridan and three of his staff officers arrived today, with whom I had quite a chat. There are several expeditions now in the field after Indians, with very little prospect of success of catching any, as the Indians are too sharp and sly to be caught.

CODY KILLING BUFFALO FOR SUPPER.

August 24, 1868.

We marched out at sunrise, met Colonel Benteen, Seventh Cavalry, en route to Harker. He was relieved in the field by Colonel Carpenter, who marched twenty-five or thirty miles, and has discovered quite a number of Indian signs. Bill Cody (Buffalo Bill), one of our scouts and one of the best shots on the plains, keeps us well supplied with plenty of Buffalo and deer. He gets $60 per month and a splendid mule to ride, and is one of the most contented and happy men I ever met.

August 27, 1868.

General Sheridan ordered us to turn in all our tents, extra baggage and everything that was not actually needed in the field, and we started out without the sign of a tent or change of clothing.

Col. G. A. Forsyth has just organized a company of fifty scouts, selected from the best marksmen and hunters on the plains. General Sheridan seems to be going after the Indians in earnest, and we will have plenty to do soon. Just before Colonel Forsyth was ordered to march with his scouts he called upon me to say good-bye and seemed confident of being able to whip all the Indians he would meet on the plains with his select company of scouts, but I told him that if he happened to meet the Indians who had whipped me a few weeks before he would not stand much show with less than two hundred picked men, as the Indians were well armed with the best of weapons and were better horsemen, could travel faster and knew the country better than our soldiers. I wished him good luck and he bade me good-bye.

Camp on Smoky Hill River, August 28, 1868.

Before leaving the post this morning I drew a quantity of rope from the Quartermaster to use in tying my hardtack and bacon on the mules. Senator Conkling of New York, with a large party of his friends, who are on their way to Denver, stopped by our post today. He seemed very glad to see me again, as he is one of my old friends.

Camp above Headwaters of Walnut Creek,
September 2, 1868.

We started out at seven o'clock this morning with Wild Bill as our scout, and while resting a few moments and allowing the horses to graze he came rushing in with fifteen of his scouts to inform me that a fresh Indian trail had been discovered.

September 4, 1868.

After examining the trail of Indians reported, we found it was only a burial party who had just had a funeral and placed the body of a war chief up in a walnut tree, which our Post Surgeon was very anxious to have. As soon, therefore, as he saw the Indians were out of reach he took a six-mule team to the tree and had the body of the Indian, with all the buffalo robes wrapped

around it, placed in the wagon and sent to Hays City, to be shipped to the Smithsonian Institute. As he had permission from authority over me, I could not help myself, and was obliged to let him have one of my wagons to carry out his object.

I am afraid I am somewhat "in a little box," as I had openly expressed myself in the presence of several officers and friends that I was willing to eat all the Indians Major Kidd could capture during this campaign, and as he has secured this dead Indian, some of the officers may try to make capital in order that I shall carry out my agreement; but of course picking up dead Indians was not considered in the programme, and as none of the officers may suggest that I be required to eat the one Dr. Sternberg has just forwarded to Washington, I will not bring up the question.

September 8, 1868.

A special escort was sent to Fort Dodge last night for General Sheridan. A line of messengers is now established between Hays and Fort Dodge. The Seventh Cavalry are reported to be near an Indian village, and we are hourly expecting news of a fight. Apache Bill, one of our scouts, was so much under the influence of liquor that he had to be put in the guardhouse. He is looked upon with suspicion as inclined to aid the Indians.

Fort Dodge, September 12, 1868.

General Gibbs and Lieut. M. Moylan, his Assistant Adjutant-General, called at our camp at eleven o'clock this morning, ordering us to march to Fort Dodge at once. I had been most all night watching my horses, and just before roll-call got in a doze and did not hear the call, but was soon waited upon by an orderly with a request from the commanding officer to report in writing immediately my reason for not attending roll-call.

Camp near Fort Dodge, September 14, 1868.

News came in last night that six citizens had been killed by Indians at Sheridan City, and General Gibbs started out at six o'clock this morning to try and find the trail. Major Douglass is in command of Fort Dodge, and among the other officers whom I met there are Colonel Moyland, Lieut. Phil Reed and Major Sheridan of the Third Infantry. We had a very pleasant entertainment at the sutler's.

September 17, 1868.

I received authority to be absent from camp for two hours, during which time all horses that needed shoeing were shod and my company placed in readiness to move. Just before sundown Lieut. R. G. Smithers, one of the sneaks of the regiment, who is anxious for a file, and who is now Acting Adjutant of the battalion, placed me in close arrest (arrest No. 14) without any explanation or cause, leaving me ignorant of any ground for such an arbitrary act. Lieutenant Bodamer took command of my company.

Camp near Fort Dodge, Kan., September 19, 1868.

I have remained in my tent since day before yesterday, and as I have sent in quite a serious set of charges against Major Kidd, I am in hopes that action of some kind will be taken, as he seems to be used by a set of subordinate officers, who take advantage of his weakness to have him act on their request. The limits of the camp were assigned to me this afternoon. General Sully having returned, I made an application for an interview, to whom I will explain the condition of affairs since Major Kidd has been in command, and he, being a soldier, no doubt will readily see it will be for the interest of the service to get rid of the Major.

September 23, 1868.

Capt. W. Thompson of the Seventh Cavalry called upon me this afternoon and wanted an explanation of the circumstances of my arrest. As soon as I explained what I knew of the case he said he would give attention to the matter and help me, as he is an old friend and I can fully rely upon him as such.

September 24, 1868.

My brother Charles arrived here this morning from Fort Hays with the news that Colonel Forsyth and his scout had been surrounded by Indians; that Lieutenant Beecher of the Third Infantry (a nephew of Henry Ward Beecher), had been killed, Forsyth badly wounded, and more than one-half of his men either wounded or killed.

September 25, 1868.

My brother Charles started with dispatches for General Sheridan today. After he left I was released from arrest by Gen. Alfred Sully and placed in command of my company. A large num-

ber of officers called to congratulate me. The rumor is out that Major Kidd will soon be court-martialed upon the charges I sent in some days ago, General Sheridan having lost all faith in him after trying him all summer in command of a battalion without his accomplishing anything, but mixing matters in a terrible state.

September 27, 1868.

Captain Cox, Lieutenant Bodamer and Lieut. William Davis, with seventy-five men, went on a scout up the Arkansas at six o'clock, and this afternoon orders came relieving Major Kidd from command of the battalion and placing me in command of four companies of cavalry and one of infantry. I at once issued a general order sending Lieutenant Smithers (who had been Acting Adjutant) to duty with his company, and detailed Lieutenant Myers as Adjutant of the battalion in his place. I then went to the post, where I met several officers, who invited me to supper and set up a basket of wine in their appreciation of my success.

September 28, 1868.

I issued orders to day for company and battalion drill, to take effect every day, weather permitting; also took off the Officer of the Guard and let the Officer of the Day attend both duties, giving the former more rest, for the sergeant of the guard can perform this duty. I sent Lieutenant Smithers with thirty men on a scout with two days' rations.

September 30, 1868.

Captain Berry of the Seventh Cavalry and Lieutenant Bodamer of my battalion got up a race today for one mile, purse $200, and just before the race Lieutenant Bodamer, while exercising his horse, came in collision with another, throwing him off and crippling his arm. We all had a fine time. Captain Berry's horse won the race.

October 1, 1868.

When at breakfast this morning I was startled by rapid firing at General Sully's camp, where fifty or sixty Indian warriors had dashed in among the tents while the men were at breakfast. The six companies were so surprised and excited that every Indian got out of the camp in spite of the five hundred or more shots being fired at them, and not one hurt. The same Indians captured a wagon train of provisions and quartermaster stores coming to the

post, set the wagons on fire and took off forty-four mules, and in less than ten minutes I was sent after the Indians with Companies F and G of my command, but just as I was about to charge into their village, after pursuing them thirty miles, a special messenger from General Sully overtook me with orders to halt my command where I was until further orders, and at twelve o'clock this noon orders came for me to select forty men and continue and pursue them. I soon discovered a fresh trail going toward the village, and at once sent for reinforcements, as I found it would be impossible to accomplish anything with only forty men in case I should surprise the village.

Camp near Fort Dodge, Kan., October 2, 1868.

As the reinforcements I asked for yesterday were not sent, I returned to camp at two o'clock this afternoon, after a march of forty-five miles. War parties of Indians are all around us and committing all kinds of depredation possible, and not one of the Indians has been caught or killed in spite of the large number of troops at the different points in the Department.

Camp near Kidder's Ranch, October 3, 1868.

The command started out at sunrise this morning. I was Officer of the Day and remained in charge of the train, five wagons of which stuck in the Arkansas river while we were trying to ford it. One of mine turned over in the river, and several boxes of hardtack were carried off by the current, which was very strong. It took twelve mules to each wagon to get them across, as the quicksand was very bad in some places. We have marched over forty miles, and it was after sundown before we reached this camp.

October 9, 1868.

We started out at sunrise, and it is now after 9 P. M. Have been marching and scouting over the plains looking for signs of Indians, but failed to find any. Met Lieut. John F. Weston, Seventh Cavalry, who is on a scout. He is a bright, active young man, and, judging from his appearance, will make his mark if the opportunity is offered. [He is now (1899) Acting Commissary-General, U. S. A.]

After marching my company over sixty miles I reached camp at ten this P. M.

Camp on Arkansas River, October 11, 1868.

The command started this A. M. for Fort Lyon, C. T., and it is in splendid condition. After a march of thirteen miles my horses appear a little fagged, and I am proud to say that, in spite of the hard work we have had in the last march, I have not lost a horse or mule since I started on this campaign.

October 16, 1868.

We have been marching steadily along. Before leaving camp this A. M. Lieut. R. G. Smithers was placed in arrest by Captain Byrne for insolence and disrespect. We saw a great many Indian signs today, but did not get a shot at any Indians.

October 17, 1868.

We did not start out of camp until ten this A. M., and have placed guards on each side of the command to keep from being surprised by the Indians, who are watching every movement we make, and will take advantage to murder the first man caught alone or steal anything they can. I ran several warriors today, but their ponies are so swift that I found it impossible for my horses to overtake them, and I dare not go too far in their country for fear of an ambush, which they are likely to have in case they can draw us from the main command.

Camp on Old Fort Lyon, C. T., October 19, 1868.

We left camp at 6.20 this A. M., arriving here at 3 P. M. Found the old fort or buildings on fire and plenty of fresh signs of Indians all around us. We only marched twenty miles, and arrived just in time to put the fire out. The post having been abandoned, the Indians concluded to burn the buildings, but our arrival was just in time to save them.

New Fort Lyon, C. T., October 20, 1868.

We started out at 8 this A. M., reaching this post at 1 P. M. I was introduced to Gen. William Penrose and Lieutenants Abel and Bonsall, who have just left my tent, inviting me to come and see them.

General Penrose is to take command of our four companies of cavalry, and he notified us that we would have to start in five days, without wagons or forage, on a sixty days' expedition.

Fort Lyon, C. T., October 21, 1868.

Our train of mules and wagons were all turned in to the Post Quartermaster today, and Lieut. William Beck, our Battalion Quartermaster, was ordered to report to General Penrose, who will attach him to his staff. I drew ordnance and clothing for my men, and have my company ready to move in an hour's notice. Both my Lieutenants are detailed, and I am alone with my company. Have all of the papers to make out, attend to the other duties, requiring all my time, and orders have been issued for officers to be present at every roll-call. It makes my duty quite severe, not having more than from two to five hours in the twenty-four to sleep.

November 2, 1868.

During the last few days we have been practicing at target, preparing for a general campaign, under which we expect to start at a moment's notice, as General Sheridan has formed several expeditions to try and surround the Indians and destroy the village if possible. Gen. William Penrose, who commanded a division of the Sixth Corps during the war, has been placed in command of my battalion, consisting of four companies of cavalry and one of infantry, and as he was successful during the war, he has led General Sheridan to believe he will be a success now, but my impression is he will prove a failure if he undertakes to march without forage for the animals through the Indian Territory and New Mexico, where the grass is very scarce.

November 5, 1868.

Lieutenant Beck, Mr. Powers and I rode up the picket-wire about five miles above Fort Lyon last evening, where I ate my first genuine supper, which was very good. Mr. Powers was a contractor at Lyon, and married a Cheyenne squaw. He is allowed 640 acres for every child that is born. He has established his home on the picket-wire, and furnishes beef for the different posts from his herds of cattle. He introduced us to his five papooses, as he calls them, who are very interesting children, and as he proposes to remain in this section the balance of his days, his future prospects are favorable to make him a millionaire. He is now one of the most prominent men in this section.

C. T., November 11, 1868.

Before marching out of camp this morning I left all my private property with the Post Quartermaster and sent my father $360, retaining about $50 for personal expenses. As the chances are that we may never return alive, I have made my preparations accordingly.

In the Field, November 13, 1868.

General Penrose has placed a whole company on guard at a time in order that we shall not be surprised by the Indians during the night. I had the command of the left flank all day, and we marched twenty-one miles without any signs of Indians.

November 15, 1868.

We started out at nine this A. M., and as a heavy snowstorm came up, we went into camp after marching twelve miles. No sign of wood or fuel of any kind to cook our coffee. I have just found a place under the rocks to spread my blanket, hoping to get a little rest tonight. Twenty-five horses of the rear guard gave out and were shot during the day in order that the Indians may not use them. The lack of forage has caused the horses to break down, and if we undertake to march much further we will soon be afoot.

Camp on Old Fort Lyon, Cimaron, C. T.,
November 16, 1868.

We started out at 8 A .M. I had the advance with my company; marched twenty-four miles. My company was placed on guard this evening, as we take turns by companies.

November 17, 1868.

We started out at 8 this A. M. Major Vandeverle relieved me from picket duty. Fourteen horses were shot this morning to prevent them from falling into the hands of the Indians. We have plenty of grass and wood tonight, and fresh Indian signs have been discovered.

Camp on Cimaron, New Mexico, November 19, 1868.

Left camp at 8 this A. M., and only marched sixteen miles during the day, as we had some very rough mountains to cross. Found fresh signs of buffalo and Indians. Have plenty of water, grass and wood in our camp this evening.

Camp on the Arbray, Col., Road near
Cimaron Crossings, November 20, 1868.

We only marched twenty miles today, and without any signs of Indians. Thirteen horses were shot during the march today. Captain Byrne is the senior officer of the battalion next in rank to General Penrose. He has been very arbitrary in his actions. A very severe snow is now raging, and we are making ourselves as comfortable as possible by trying to find shelter under rocks. There being no grass or grain for the animals, they are now subsisting on cotton-wood bark. My men killed a few rabbits this evening, which were considered quite a treat, but they had to be eaten raw, there being no dry wood that could be used to cook them.

Camp near Red River, November 22, 1868.

Left camp at 8 this A. M., and have been following a trail all day. Some think the trail we are on is the one made by Gen. Joseph E. Johnston in 1865, with his Confederate Army.

Bear Creek, I. T., November 27, 1868.

We did not move out until 9 this A. M., and the picket horses and mules were almost frozen, as the weather is very cold. It is 11 P. M., and we have just arrived here after a march of thirty-six miles. Lieutenant Smithers was in charge of the dismounted men. Fifteen horses and four mules were shot today. Scouts reported a Mexican ox train near here. The Mexicans are hunting buffalo, so we are pretty certain of something to eat tomorrow besides mule meat, as we have been on less than half rations for the past few days.

November 28, 1868.

We sent out and had the mules counted over, and found sixty missing, which the Indians had gotten away with. Not having horses to pursue them, we found it impossible to undertake the recapturing of the stock. After following them ten or fifteen miles, we returned to the camp.

MacNeese Creek, Texas, November 29, 1868.

The command started out of camp at 8 this A. M., and by 9 met a Mexican train, of which General Penrose took charge. We put our packs in the train and let such men as could not march ride in

the Mexican wagons, but the wagons were so heavily loaded with stores and the sand so deep that it seemed impossible for the cattle to pull their loads through it until our men turned in and helped. During the day the sun came out so hot that the bulls soon had their tongues out panting, and it seemed almost impossible to make any headway. Dr. Boggs took Sergeant Evans of my troop and fifteen men to go with this bull train.

Middle Fork Beaver Creek, Texas, November 30, 1868.

Private Brown, who was so badly wounded by the Indians, died last night. Drs. Kilburn and Pearse laid him out. We gave him a military funeral this afternoon and buried him on the prairie near the creek.

Camp Hackberry, December 1, 1868.

We started out of camp at 8 this A. M., and soon discovered a fresh trail of Indians, which General Penrose followed with Company F at a gallop, intending to capture the Indians in a few moments, but he did not. It was interesting to watch his actions; he became so excited and so confident. We have plenty of wood, grass and water tonight. Seventeen of the horses were shot during the march today.

Camp on Huckleberry Creek, Texas, December 2, 1868.

Considering we have plenty of wood, water and buffalo around us, the General decides to let the command rest today, and he and the scouts went out and killed four large buffalo. We are cut down to three hardtack a day, as our bread is nearly gone, therefore we live principally on buffalo meat.

Camp near Beaver Creek, Texas, December 3, 1868.

Captain Byrne became very arbitrary and took advantage of his position as senior Captain of my battalion to place me in arrest (arrest No. 15). I immediately preferred charges against him, and General Penrose placed him also in arrest. The General sent Lieutenant Abel with Company L, Seventh Cavalry, to Fort Lyon after rations, and I was allowed to go also. We marched twenty-five miles today.

Camp on McNee Creek, December 4, 1868.

We marched all day without water, but are in a dry camp tonight. Our command consists of forty-four enlisted men, with Lieutenants Abel, Seventh Cavalry; Beck, Tenth Cavalry,

A. Q. M., and myself. We have five scouts, named Robert Bent, Mr. Boggs, Higths, Marion Ottaby and Captain Mann, besides six mule-packers. We are well armed and can defend ourselves against any number of Indians we are liable to meet. All we fear is that our grub will give out before we reach Fort Lyon. We marched thirty-eight miles today.

Cimaron, near Santa Fe, New Mexico, December 5, 1868.

After we started out this A. M. I suggested to Lieutenant Abel that we ought to kill a few buffalo and pack the meat on mules for fear we might get out of rations, but he was afraid the shots might draw the Indians and did not act on my suggestion. Ottaby, however, knowing how much we were really in need of meat, and being the advance scout, shot three buffalo, which he dropped at the first shot at each. The command were so anxious for fresh meat that the men soon had the hind quarters cut up in small chunks, and each man held on to his own piece. Tonight we are relishing what we have, and are indebted to Ottaby for our luck. Just before we reached camp it began to snow, and we are trying to make ourselves as comfortable as possible, considering that we have no shelter of any kind.

December 6, 1868.

It has been snowing all night, and we are scarcely able to march today on account of the crust being just thick enough to break through, cutting the men's feet and the legs of the animals so as to leave a trail of blood, many of the men being barefoot. We are now in camp with scarcely anything to eat after marching thirty-five miles.

Butts' Creek, December 8, 1868.

As we were entirely out of rations, we left camp at daybreak this morning, and by ten o'clock came to a creek with plenty of good water and wood, where we built fires, and as we were almost in a starving condition, it was decided to select one of the fattest pack mules for distribution among the men. It was not long before they had most of it cut up, and some of the men were holding pieces of the mule on the end of sticks over the fire roasting it while it seemed to be still kicking, but it was juicy and sweet, and afforded us great relief in our starving condition. I had one piece on the end of a stick, and while it was broiling it looked as if it was kicking, and it was as much as I could do to keep it on the

stick, but under the circumstances I did not stop to consider whether it was mule, buffalo or beefsteak. It was amusing to see one of the men with the ears, which he seemed at a loss to know how to cook, but he managed to make a stew of them which satisfied his hunger. I had a little shelled corn roasted, which I used in the place of bread, and enjoyed a hearty meal, after which we marched twelve miles further, and are now within fifty-eight miles of Fort Lyon. Robert Bent, Captain Mann, Hugh Evans and I, with one pack-mule, started out at 4 this A. M., and have marched steadily along most of the day, hoping to reach the post. We now feel encouraged, as we expect to reach Fort Lyon in the morning, where we can get plenty of coffee, bread, milk, etc. We have marched sixty miles since our last meal, which was of mule meat and corn.

Fort Lyon, C. T., December 10, 1868.

After marching most of last night, I reached this post at 9 A. M., and in time to enjoy a hearty breakfast with Mr. Hatch, our postmaster, who handed me a large mail, a collection of over four months. The Chaplain called on me at 12 o'clock, when we reported at the Adjutant's office, where he introduced us to Col. Richard Lay, Third Infantry, who is not only a soldier, but a perfect gentleman. Major Kirk, the postmaster, invited me to dine with him, but I declined. News of General Custer's fight with Black-kettle's band and the killing of Major Elliot, Captain Hamilton and nineteen men is about the only news of importance here.

December 11, 1868.

I have been fixing up my quarters and answering letters most of the day. I dined with Colonel Lay and Major Kirk (Quartermaster), who live like kings, with everything the market can afford. Lieutenant Beck went to Fort Hays by stage. Mr. Ottaby and two scouts started out to find General Carr, who is in command of the Fifth Cavalry, and who is ordered to General Penrose's rescue, he being entirely out of rations and unable to move his command, which is mostly on foot.

Fort Lyon, C. T., December 20, 1868.

Went to church at 11 A. M., but Chaplain Collins had no service, as he did not feel like preaching to me alone, there being no one else present. This afternoon I rode up the picket-wire with Colonel Lay, the Post Commander, and called on Robert Bent and Mr. Power. The latter introduced me to his wife, and he brought out his four little girls.

December 22, 1868.

Lieutenant Briggs, Third Infantry, relieved me as Officer of the Day. No news from General Penrose, who is in a terrible condition seventy-five or one hundred miles from the post.

December 24, 1868.

No news from General Penrose. Report came in this evening that Indians have made a raid and murdered some people at Pond Creek City and drove off a large amount of stock.

December 25, 1868.

Lieutenant Shellabarger and I fixed ourselves up in style and called on the Post Commander, Colonel Lay, then went to the sutler's store, where we met Major Casey, Lieutenant Abel and quite a little party of friends. We indulged in eggnogg and wine for a few hours, then made the round of calls. Everyone seemed happy.

December 28, 1868.

About 11 A. M. a small group could be discovered with our glasses out on the prairie, and upon a close investigation we soon found it to be a few men of the long-lost command of General Penrose, who was on the other side of the river coming into the post. They had been met by a party with rations, so they did not suffer from hunger, but the men were in a terrible condition, many of them barefooted, with scarcely any clothes of any description, and all the men on foot, the horses having starved to death or been killed during the expedition. Lieutenant Whiten of the Fifth Infantry arrived with a train of sixteen wagons, and is stopping with me as my guest.

December 29, 1868.

Lieutenant Whiten had his train unloaded as soon as possible, and after breakfast we went horseback riding. Upon our return we dined with Major Casey in the old style. We called on Colonel Lay, Lieutenant and Mrs. Bonsil, Major Kirk, Mrs. General Penrose, Mrs. Lieutenant Hanna and Lieutenant Abel.

December 29, 1868.

Have been in the house most of the day. Lieutenants Hanna and Shellabarger assisted me on my company papers. Lieuten Whiten started back for Wallace early this morning with his train. Lieutenant Abel and Lieutenant Bonsil started to look for General Carr's command, which had been sent out to look for General Penrose, but lost him, and now we are trying to find General Carr and his command.

CHAPTER VII.

Fort Lyon, C. T., January 10, 1869.

Colonel Craig, quite a wealthy gentleman, who lives between here and Denver, made us a visit with Colonel Francisco and Mr. Spencer, General Boone's son-in-law.

A ranchman by the name of Eaton, with his sweetheart, came to the post today to get married. Chaplain invited several of the officers and ladies to be present to witness the ceremony, which we greatly enjoyed as a novelty.

February 18, 1869.

General Penrose, Lieutenants Beck and Hanna came in about one o'clock yesterday, leaving the command eighty miles off, which is slowly marching this way. A majority of the men are barefooted and on foot. Most all the horses and mules gave out and were shot to prevent their falling in the hands of Indians. General Carr, in command of the Fifth Cavalry, and Colonel Crittenden arrived this afternoon. They have gone into camp near the post.

February 19, 1869.

What is left of the Tenth Cavalry came straggling into the post this afternoon, forlorn-looking specimens of humanity. Mrs. Penrose, Mrs. Beck and I rode out to their camp this afternoon on horseback and witnessed the most pitiful sight we ever saw. The men were partly frozen; their pants had been burned and worn off, and many had not changed their clothing for weeks and months. Lieut. William Davis is in command of my company and has issued clothing for the men today.

February 24, 1869.

General Carr returned my call and spent most of the evening talking over my case, in which he seems greatly interested.

February 28, 1869.

Brevet Colonel and Captain Lay inspected and mustered the whole command at this post this afternoon. It was interesting to see him require General Penrose to march his company past him in review, he (Penrose) wearing the uniform of a Brigadier-General and Colonel Lay only the straps of a Captain. It created

considerable talk in relation to Generals, Penrose ranking as Brevet Brigadier-General and junior Captain to Colonel Lay, who is the senior Captain of the regiment. It is rather galling to Penrose to pass as Brigadier-General and have to serve under a Captain.

March 13, 1869.

After breakfast Lieutenant Bonsall and I walked over to the post sutler's store, where we met Lieutenant Hays of the Fifth Cavalry, who informed me that orders had just come releasing me from arrest. I immediately went to my camp and assumed command of the battalion. Rode out with the ladies of the post this evening as soon as the dress parade was over.

Camp near Fort Lyon, C. T., March 15, 1869.

Yesterday I moved my command a short distance from the post, establishing a separate camp. Had general inspection today, and found the camp in a rather dilapidated condition.

I lost several thousand dollars on account of being denied leave of absence for twenty days, with permission of extension of fifteen days, and as the Indian campaign was over, I saw no good reason for not being allowed to go, only spite work.

Fort Lyon, C. T., March 16, 1869.

Bvt. Maj. G. A. Armes,
Commanding Det. Tenth U. S. Cavalry:

Dear Sir—I enclose the order or letter which you so kindly permitted me to address to the officers and men of your command. Allow me to extend my sincere thanks to you for the opportunity you thus give me of expressing my feelings toward the comrades whom I have had the honor of commanding. Will you allow or have this letter read to the command at the first opportunity?

I am, Major, with great respect, your obedient servant,

Wm. H. Penrose,
Capt. and Bvt. Brig.-Gen., U. S. A.

Fort Lyon, C. T., March 14, 1869.

Officers and Soldiers of the Tenth U. S. Cavalry:

Having been relieved from command before an opportunity was given me to promulgate an official farewell, I take occasion, through the courtesy of your commanding officer, of taking leave of you.

You started from this post on an important mission under many disadvantages. Your horses were in poor condition, and you were to march, without forage, to penetrate a new, and before unknown, country. Hardly had you started when you encountered severe storms of rain and snow, accompanied by intense cold; you were without suitable and necessary shelter for such inclement weather; your horses perished day by day, you yourselves suffering from the intense cold, many with frostbitten hands and feet; but through these hardships and difficulties you pushed nobly on, undaunted, undismayed, anxious to meet the enemy.

But few commands have ever been called upon to endure more than you have, and none have more cheerfully performed their duty.

Although it was not your fortune to meet and engage the enemy, yet this movement was a part of a grand plan, emanating from that great soldier, Major-General Sheridan.

You were instrumental in compelling a large force of the enemy to make a retrograde movement, and there appears to be no doubt that this was the identical force which Bvt. Major-General Custer was thus enabled to encounter and destroy. Your efforts were therefore of material service in the winter campaign.

Had you had the opportunity I am fully assured you would have maintained in battle the honor of the flag and of your regiment.

To the officers and men who so nobly stood with me in our most difficult task I extend my kindest, heartfelt thanks, and wherever you may go my kindly interest shall be with you in all your undertakings. May success crown all your efforts!

Respectfully,

W. H. Penrose,
Capt. and Bvt. Brig.-Gen., U. S. A.,
Late Commander Indian Expedition from Fort Lyon, C. T.

March 17, 1869.

A few of the Fifth Cavalry got in a dispute with some of my men at the post theater, pistols were drawn and a few shots fired. Two men of Major Cox's company, G, were wounded in the row. Within one hour the Fifth Cavalry had turned out to attack my battalion. I reached camp just in time to prevent quite a serious affair. Had the long roll and officers' call sounded, and instructed the officers to call their companies in line immediately, have a check roll-call and not allow a man to leave the camp until further orders.

In that way I prevented the Fifth Cavalry battalion coming in contact with mine. Men on both sides appeared to be desperate,

and it required all my time and careful watching to prevent a terrible conflict. After everything was over General Carr came over and congratulated me for the success and management of my command.

March 18, 1869.

Having received orders to report to Fort Dodge, Kan., about two hundred miles below here on the Arkansas river, east of this post, I have been preparing for the march. We started with my command, composed of four companies of cavalry, thirty-one wagons and two ambulances; marched five miles, and went into a camp on the banks of the river, where we have plenty of grass and fine fishing.

Camp at Old Fort Lyon, C. T., March 20, 1869.

I marched out of camp with all the bugles playing at eight this morning. Nearly all the men are on foot, their horses having been lost during the last campaign with General Penrose, but upon our arrival at Fort Dodge we will be supplied. Lieut. Wm. Beck is my Quartermaster; Lieut. Myers, Adjutant; Captain A. O. Badger, Commissary, and Dr. Kilburne, Surgeon, so I have a very nice and complete staff. Marched thirteen miles, and have gone into a pleasant camp.

Camp near Sand Creek, March 21, 1869.

Moved the command at eight this morning. During the march Lieutenant Smithers killed three splendid buffaloes, which we distributed among the camp upon our arrival this evening. We also killed twenty hogs out of a herd of three hundred wild ones. We marched twenty-one miles today.

March 22, 1869.

We moved at eight this A. M. Lieutenant Davis, who remained behind for the mail, arrived with a large supply, overtaking us today. Lieutenant Myers killed three buffaloes this afternoon, and while attempting to kill the fourth one his horse fell, hurting him severely. The officers and a few soldiers of the command killed twenty-five buffaloes, one antelope, four ducks and two jack-rabbits this afternoon.

Camp at Pleasant Station, C. T., March 23, 1869.

Started out at eight this morning in quite a snowstorm and marched only eight miles. Lieutenant Davis, one of the best

shots in the command, killed three buffaloes, four ducks, two antelopes and one rabbit, and I had quite a variety of meat for my dinner. There being very little fuel and nothing but snow and mud, we are in a very uncomfortable position this evening.

As the storm was quite severe yesterday, we concluded to remain in camp. I did not leave until 8 this morning. On account of previous storms it was impossible to march more than twenty miles. Weather is very pleasant this evening, and we have plenty of wood and grass.

Camp on the Arkansas River, March 26, 1869.

We marched at 8 this morning, and at 11 halted the command to allow the men to kill ducks, as thousands seem to be along the river.

THE MARCH.

Camp in the Field on the Arkansas, March 28, 1869.

Left camp at 8 this A. M., and after marching sixteen miles selected a camp for the command.

I sent Lieutenant Smithers, Mr. Reed's quartermaster clerk, and Mr. Newton of Fort Lyon to Fort Dodge with the mail and after rations and forage for the command. Major Cox and I are having quite a controversy on paper.

Camp near Fort Dodge, Kan., March 31, 1869.

I moved the command out at 7 this A. M.; marched seventeen miles. After reaching camp I rode to the fort, where I met Major Douglass of the Third Infantry, who is in command. He seemed very glad to see me. I also met a number of friends whom I had not seen for months.

April 2, 1869.

Moved my command near the post immediately after the guard-mounting today. Major Cox having left camp without permission, I found it necessary to place him in close arrest. Lieutenant Beck had some trouble issuing tents, and becoming rather insubordinate, caused me to place him in arrest also.

April 3, 1869.

Major Cox broke his arrest during last night and went to the post, where he became so drunk and boisterous I found it necessary to send a guard after him and bring him into camp. General Custer left for Fort Hays with his command, the Seventh Cavalry and Nineteenth Kansas Volunteers, today.

April 4, 1869.

Captain Rogers, Acting Quartermaster at Fort Dodge, sent me a number of horses for my command today, but as most of them were of no service, I ordered a board of survey, consisting of Vandewele, Captains Myrick and Badger, who gave them a full inspection, recommending that only one-third be retained, sending back the rest to Captain Rogers. I have disappointed Captain Rogers, as he expected to put off a lot of his old stock of horses on my battalion.

Walnut Creek, Kan., April 6, 1869.

Received permission to visit Fort Hays, and left during the night; changed mules at Buckner's ranch and drove along lively, making sixty-four miles; weather pleasant.

Fort Hays, Kan., April 7, 1869.

Arrived here at one o'clock this morning. Stopped all night at the sutler's and slept on the billiard table, which I found very comfortable under the circumstances, being so tired out.

I exchanged my old ambulance for a new one. Met General Schofield for the first time. He is in command of the Department. I sold my building at Hays, which cost $1500, to Mr. Wilson for $325.

Camp near Fort Dodge, Kan., April 9, 1869.

Arrived at one o'clock this morning. Was up at seven o'clock. Gave orders to prepare to march at eleven o'clock tomorrow to Camp Supply. I sent a dispatch to Assistant Adjutant-General McKeever this evening, stating I was ready to march in the morning. I also sent off a number of copies of the *Denver Rocky Moun-*

tain News to my friends, publishing the general order by General Carr the day before I left Fort Lyon, with its comments, which I feel quite proud of under the circumstances, retaining the following copy:

"The Tenth Cavalry Complimentary Order by Brevet Major-General Carr.

Headquarters Expedition from Fort Lyon,
Camp at Fort Lyon, C. T., March 14, 1869.

General Order No. 24.

Part IV—The Brevet Major-General Commanding desires to express to the officers and men of the Tenth U. S. Cavalry, lately serving with him, approbation of their excellent deportment and cheerful endurance of the unusual hardships of this winter campaign. By command of

Bvt. Maj.-Gen. E. A. Carr.
(Signed) J. Almy,
Second Lieut. and A. A. A. G.

The four companies of the Tenth U. S. Cavalry, now stationed at Fort Lyon, in this Territory, have been ordered to Fort Dodge, Kan., where they will refit and be mounted. They will then proceed via Camp Supply, I. T., to Medicine Bluff creek, the new post established by General Sheridan upon the Comanche and Kiowa Reservation.

It will be the special duty of this regiment to prevent the Indians from leaving their reservation, and from that point, thoroughly equipped and finely mounted, they can, in a moment's notice, dash after Indians in that section and inflict summary punishment.

The following is a roster of the officers of the battalion:

Capt. and Bvt. Maj. Geo. A. Armes, commanding detachment; Second Lieut. J. Will Myers, Adjutant; First Lieut. Wm. H. Beck, Regimental Quartermaster, A. A. Q. M.; First Lieut. and Bvt. Capt. A. D. Badger, Regimental Commissary, A. C. S.; Acting Asst. Surg. H. S. Kilbourne, Surgeon; Capt. and Bvt. Maj. Charles C. Cox, commanding K Troop; First Lieut. and Bvt. Capt. John D. Myrick, commanding B Troop; First Lieut. Robt. G. Smithers, First Lieut. John A. Bodamer, Second Lieut. Saml. R. Collady, commanding F Troop.

We are informed by an officer of the battalion that during the last ten months it has marched nearly 3000 miles, embracing in their operations Kansas, Colorado, New Mexico, Indian Territory and Texas, and ranging over a territory of 200,000 square miles, or 500 miles north and south by 400 miles east and west.

There is no regiment in the service which has done harder or more effective service against the Indians during the late war than the gallant men and officers of the Tenth Cavalry."

April 10, 1869.

Last evening the wife of Lieutenant Beck pleaded so strongly in his behalf, and after his apologizing and agreeing to control his temper in the future, I released him from arrest and assigned him to duty with a troop, detailing Captain Myrick as my assistant Quartermaster in his place. At 11 o'clock this forenoon, after obtaining twenty extra wagons from Captain Rogers, I moved my command over the river, and am now in a splendid camp.

Camp near Bluff Creek, April 13, 1869.

Left camp at 9 o'clock this morning and marched twenty miles; weather pleasant. After going into camp this evening Johnson of K Troop came in with a dispatch from headquarters ordering me to remain at Dodge.

Camp near Fort Dodge, April 15, 1869.

I marched back yesterday towards this post, and, leaving the command in camp, came in ahead of it this evening. I met Colonel Mitchell, formerly of General Hancock's staff during the war. He is sent here to inspect the Tenth Cavalry.

Camp near Fort Dodge, April 18, 1869.

After inspection this morning I sent a report of the command to the Post Commander at Dodge, reporting for orders in person, and was informed that it was unnecessary to keep my battalion longer, and each company commander might report to the post. Therefore I immediately relieved the guard around my camp and attended the stable call with my troop this afternoon.

The said report follows:

Headquarters Tenth Cavalry,
Camp near Fort Dodge, Kans., April 17, 1869.

Bvt. Brig.-Gen. C. McKeever,
A. A. General, Dept. Missouri:

General—I have the honor to make the following report of the scout made by this detachment during the last twelve months:

On the 15th day of April, 1868, this battalion, then consisting of Companies B, C, F. G, H and K, Tenth Cavalry, under command of Maj. M. H. Kidd, marched from Fort Riley, Kans., and on the 24th day of the same month arrived at Fort Hays, Kans., a distance of 150 miles.

May 25 the line of march was taken up for Fort Wallace, and on June 3 that post was reached, a distance of 140 miles.

The command went into camp a few miles west of the post, and remained there and scouted the surrounding country until the Indian outbreak upon the Saline and Solomon rivers.

The grazing was very poor, and that, with the excessive heat and the arduous character of the duties the horses were called upon to perform, kept them very thin in flesh, and upon the opening of the campaign they were far from being in a serviceable condition.

August 3 the battalion moved down the Smoky Hill river to a point opposite Sheridan City, and upon the 11th day of the month started for Skimmerhorn's Ranch, upon the Saline, reaching that place upon the 23d.

The day following the command marched up the Saline and scouted the country to the Solomon and to a point opposite Hays City, when the march changed to the south, and Hays City was reached on the 24th of the month, a distance of 334 miles.

After turning in the tents and the greater part of the camp equipage, and placing the surplus clothing of the men in store at Fort Hays, the command marched to, and proceeded to scout, the valley of Walnut creek, and was engaged upon this duty until the 12th day of September, when, having received orders to march to Fort Dodge, the line of march was taken up for that post, where the command arrived upon the evening of the 14th. Distance marched, 250 miles.

Whilst encamped near this post several scouts were made by detachments of the battalion—B Troop escorting wagon trains to the camp of the Seventh Cavalry and return, distance 140 miles; K and G Troops up the valley of the Arkansas and return, distance 140 miles.

Several other small scouts were made by the different companies of the command. In almost every case but half forage was taken, and this lack of proper food began to tell very severely upon the animals.

September 28 Major Kidd was relieved, and Captain Byrne, Tenth Cavalry, assigned to the command of the battalion.

October 8 started, with half forage, to scout the valley of the Pawnee; was recalled on the 10th, having marched the greater portion of the night preceding. The command was fatigued considerably when it reached the post. Scarcely had the horses been unsaddled when "boots and saddles" were sounded, and the whole command was marched on the gallop in the pursuit of supposed Indians about twenty miles, when the chase was given up, and the battalion returned to camp.

On the following day, with half allowance of forage, the march was taken up for Fort Lyon, which place was reached on the 20th. Distance marched, inclusive, 317 miles.

On the 11th day of November the battalion, consisting of Companies B, F, G and K, Fort Lyon, C. T., went on an Indian expedition under the command of Capt. and Bvt. Brig.-Gen. W. H. Penrose, Third Infantry.

On the morning of taking the field, as indicated, the horses, though thoroughly acclimated, familiar with and habituated to cavalry duty, were thin and in no condition to undergo and endure the hardships incident to such an expedition.

The battalion marched destitute of everything, except rations, essential to its efficiency, without a change of clothes, proper medical supplies and appointments, with no tents for the officers, without a particle of forage for public or private horses, and with but thirty days' rations for the men.

On the 30th of November the command found itself on half rations of bread, bacon, sugar and coffee, without clothing, and in many instances nearly naked. Several of the men with badly frosted feet, and half of the whole command with rags tied about their feet, in lieu of boots, camped on Palo Duro creek, Indian Territory, awaiting supplies from some source.

During this time the troops were docile, tractable and perfectly subordinate. No soldiers ever behaved better or endured with less complaint.

Up to this time no good grazing had been allowed our animals, and to this fact may be attributed the general and humiliating loss of stock.

Upon the arrival of General Carr's command, matters changed. An expedition was organized by that officer to scout the country to the main Canadian. By exchanging boots and clothing, it was found possible to put 100 men of the Tenth Cavalry in the field, and those men, mounted on mules from the pack train, accompanied the expedition.

This party joined the main command on the 11th of January, and on the 19th day of February the expedition returned to Fort Lyon, having been in the field 101 days.

From thence, on the 18th of March, we started to Medicine Bluff Creek, I. T., via this post. At that time the train furnished this command with the transportation of its material was composed of the mules which had lived through the hardships and exposure referred to, and were utterly incompetent to haul ordinary weights loaded in Government wagons; yet when, on this account, application was made to Brevet Major-General Carr for additional transportation necessary for the benefit of the command, I was ordered to carry knapsacks, sabers and carbines in dismounted march, contrary to the usage of service, and in total disregard of the fact that many of the men were suffering from frosted feet and from the effects of the long march of the expedition indicated, being unaccustomed to foot marching.* On my arrival here I found

*General Sheridan did not in this case exhibit the practical insight and judgment for which he has usually been credited.

some seventy-eight (78) horses entirely unserviceable, which I was compelled to take, although I have no saddles or horse equipage, and which I am compelled to lead with ropes, and I am obliged to borrow wagons to haul the forage necessary to subsist the animals. Requisitions were made while at Fort Lyon for everything necessary to arm and properly equip the command, but they have not yet been honored.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

GEO. A. ARMES,
Capt. Tenth Cavalry,
Bvt. Maj., U. S. A.,
Commanding Det.

April 28, 1869.

The Indians are now stealing and running off stock in every section. They will soon be on the warpath in full force.

April 30, 1869.

I turned out the command at 9 o'clock this morning. One man was found fault with by the inspector, Major Sheridan, who inspected and mustered the command. I was put on a council with Major Cox and Lieutenant Stough today. We examined and priced all the goods at the post traders'. Maj. Andrew Sheridan, after mustering the command, went to the trader's and became so drunk he had to be carried to his quarters on a stretcher. I put two of my scouts in the guardhouse today, and had to take their pistols away from them on account of drunkenness and firing at random around the camp. I have fixed all my company papers and muster-rolls, which have gone forward.

May 5, 1869.

Major Cox interfered in behalf of the scouts today, and I found it necessary to place him in close arrest, and finally had to put a guard over him.

May 6, 1869.

Major Cox made a special request that I extend his limits of arrest as far as the post in order that he might get married this evening. We were greatly surprised, as he only met Mrs. Scott a few day ago, and her husband, Captain Scott, had only been dead a short time. The priest performed the ceremony, and most everyone at the post witnessed the marriage. I sent my minstrel troop to furnish music for the occasion. We had a glorious time.

May 11, 1869.

Major Page called upon me this afternoon and brought a Dutch Captain by the name of Clous with him from the Thirty-eighth Infantry, who seems to have cheek enough to take him anywhere. Clous is with his regiment on his way to Texas.

Fort Dodge, Kan., May 14, 1869.

I took all the pistols away from the citizen employes, as there has been too much drinking lately to allow the men to be trusted with firearms while in camp.

May 15, 1869.

Lieut.-Col. A. D. Nelson, U. S. A., arrived this morning and took command of the Tenth Cavalry, and all extra-duty men were relieved at once from the post.

Buckner's Ranch, May 20, 1869.

I left Fort Dodge on leave of absence at 9 o'clock this morning, arriving here at 2 o'clock this evening.

I had a pleasant ride, and am now quartered for the night in a dugout, which is a good protection from the Indians, who are on the warpath and looking for a chance to secure scalps.

Leavenworth City, Kan., May 24, 1869.

I sent my escort back yesterday, and last night I went in Major Kimball's ambulance to the depot, where I took the train at 10.30 and arrived here at 4 this afternoon. Colonel Taylor, Paymaster, U. S. A., whom I have not seen for several years, has been assigned to duty at this post.

May 25, 1869.

I reported to General Schofield, who commands the Department, being stationed at Fort Leavenworth, for orders at 11 o'clock this morning. General Mitchell, his Assistant Adjutant-General, told me to report back tomorrow morning at 8 or 10 o'clock and my orders would be decided upon.

May 28, 1869.

Called on General Schofield, who told me to remain at this post until further orders.

Lee Summit, Mo., May 29, 1869.

I left on the 9 o'clock train this morning; stopped in Kansas City for dinner. Arrived here at 3 this afternoon. I hired a buggy and drove out to Mr. Tennyson's, who was my father's overseer before the war. He is located here, has accumulated a

large amount of property, and is now one of the most prominent citizens of this section.

Topeka, Kan., June 4, 1869.

Received orders yesterday sending me to Fort Harker under arrest (arrest No. 16, court No. 4). After arriving here Governor Crawford invited me to take a drive with him around the suburbs of this beautiful city.

Fort Harker, Kan., June 5, 1869.

Governor Harvey of Kansas arrived today, and we called on several of the officers and their families. He being my guest, I introduced him to quite a number of my friends.

June 7, 1869.

I called upon Gen. Nelson A. Miles. Mrs. Miles looks like a young bride and is beautiful. She invited me to stay to tea and I accepted. The General was a special friend of mine during the war, under whom I served part of the campaign in front of Petersburg in 1864. He is as social and pleasant an officer as I have met for many a day. Although a full Colonel of the Fifth Infantry, he does not assume as many airs as a Lieutenant. Captain Rawlston of the Third Cavalry is here with twenty men on his way to Camp Beecher.

June 9, 1869.

Lieutenant Abel, Seventh Cavalry, left yesterday with his troop for Schemerhorn Ranch on the Saline river. Captain Berry, Seventh Cavalry, reported here in arrest, and is now messing with Lieutenant Shellabarger, who is ordered before a court for trial. Captain Berry and Lieutenant Shellabarger are great chums, and both of them feeling rather lively this morning, came to my room before I was up and we had quite a scuffle. Colonel Thompson, Seventh Cavalry, and Lieutenant Wallingford arrived this morning as witnesses in the Shellabarger and Berry case.

It having been reported to me by the best of authority that Maj. Lewis Merrill, often called a shirk in my former regiment (the Second Cavalry), always being detailed on some fancy duty, avoiding any risk of his carcass in the field with his regiment, had done all he could to try to prevent General Cooke's favorable action in relation to my capture of the village of Indians in the fall of 1866, and had gone so far as to state that he had regretted issuing the order. I immediately requested the truth, and received the following reply:

Head-Qrs. Dept. of the Cumberland,

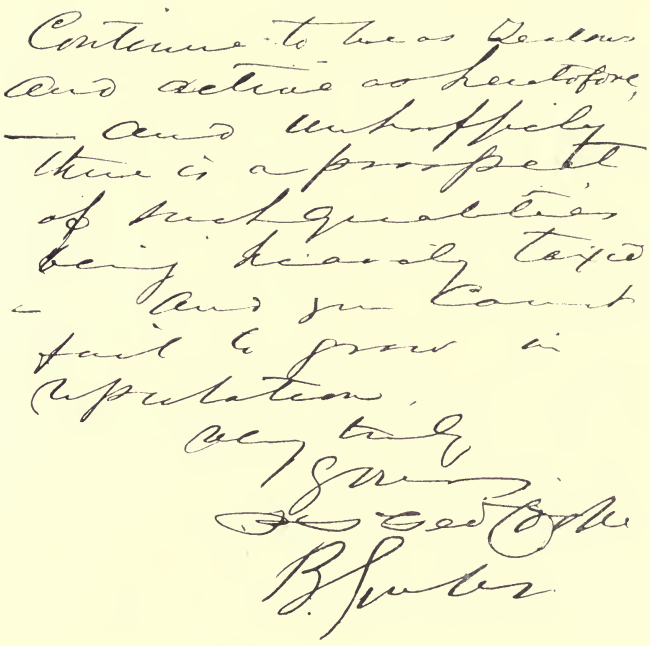
Louisville, Ky., June 17 1869

Capt. Geo A Armes
U S A
Fort Harker Kans

Dear Capt,

I have received yours of the 9th inst in which you mention various assertions in connexion with my Cumbler-meeting order to you in 1866; - such as that I was about to recall it, - regretted issuing it &c &c and ask my remarks on the subject

They are not true, and can be of no real injury to you.



I finally made Major Merrill apologize and deny that he ever made such a statement in the presence of several officers at Fort Harker.

Junction City, Kan., June 26, 1869.

We have had a tremendous freshet for the last few days. A large number of persons were drowned last night, and thirteen of those drowned at Chapman's creek were buried this evening.

The water is sweeping through the streets of this city, and flats between here and the Blue river are overflowing. This is one of the largest freshets that has ever occurred in this State.

Ellsworth, Kan., July 2, 1869.

Lieutenant Sheppard was brought before the court, and had quite an exciting time. Colonel Inman, Post Quartermaster, and Major Cox are assisting him. Captain Schneider, Major Parker and Lieutenant Keyser of the Third Infantry are prosecuting the case. Lieutenant Cook is defending him.

Fort Harker, Kan., July 8, 1869.

Yesterday Captain Berry was granted a three months' leave, and left here this evening. Lieutenant Bell put in a plea of insanity, and the court has appointed a board to examine into the circumstances. I had a very pleasant and social chat with General Miles this evening. Chaplain Van Wycke and I are the best of friends, and are together most of the time. Lieut. Wallingford of the Seventh Cavalry was brought before the court today, creating considerable excitement.

July 19, 1869.

Yesterday afternoon Mr. Boyd and his men came from Ellsworth and brought with them Wild Joe, who had robbed a man of $11,000 the night before. Lieutenant Shellabarger appeared before the court today. I was notified to hold myself in readiness as a witness, but was not called.

(Extract from Ziegler's letter.)

Ruggles and Donohue are still here. Colonel Taylor came in from the West last week. He speaks of you in the most complimentary terms, and says that it is only your ability as an officer which leads the others to persecute you as they do. Be watchful and hold your own. Your rank is rarely attained by one so young as yourself, and I hope to see you hold your place and rise in the future as rapidly as you have done in the past. I am glad to know that Shellabarger came out all right.

July 21, 1869.

After the trial of Lieutenant Shellabarger was closed Major Cox obtained permission to make a motion in his own defense, which failed to have any effect on the court. The court adjourned until August 4.

July 27, 1869.

General Miles entertained the Peace Commissioners, who are on their way to Camp Supply, I. T., to fix up a treaty with the Indians.

July 30, 1869.

Yesterday Hon. E. A. Dodge and lady and Mr. Brown arrived here and were entertained by Chaplain George P. Van Wycke. We took them around the post, which they examined thoroughly, and semed pleased with their visit. They left this morning by way of Fort Hays, Kan., on their way to Camp Supply, I. T., and other points in the West.

August 3, 1869.

Apache Bill was shot through the breast by a Texan about 2 o'clock this afternoon, and is hardly expected to live. I went with Dr. Fryer to see him this evening.

August 6, 1869.

Major Cox was brought before the court this morning, and his application for thirty days' delay was granted. The principal excuse was to get witnesses. The court closed today as if there was nothing to do for thirty days.

Before I came to Fort Harker, after a short stay in Leavenworth, General Schofield ordered me to report here in arrest for trial before the court convened for the trial of several other officers, and soon after arriving I was furnished with the formal charges and specifications for neglect of duty, etc., for not bringing the conduct of Major Cox to the notice of superior authorities, also with the following order giving the names of the court before which I was ordered for trial, and which I was anxious to appear before, as I had served with and knew personally most every officer on the court; but from what I could learn Col. Lewis Merrill, the Judge-Advocate, managed to keep me from appearing before the court, as he was confident he could not convict me on the charges Schofield had manufactured.

Headquarters Department of the Missouri,
Fort Leavenworth, Kans., May 28, 1869.

Special Orders No. 87—Extract.

II—A General Court-Martial is hereby appointed to meet at Fort Harker, Kans., on Tuesday, the 8th day of June, 1869, at 10 o'clock A. M., or as soon thereafter as practicable, for the trial of such prisoners as may be properly brought before it.

Detail for the Court—Bvt. Maj.-Gen. N. A. Miles, Col. Fifth U. S. Inf.; Bvt. Brig.-Gen. H. C. Bankhead, Capt. Fifth U. S. Inf.; Bvt. Maj. D. H. Brotherton, Capt. Fifth U. S. Inf.; Bvt. Lieut.-Col. W. Thompson, Capt. Seventh U. S. Cav.; Bvt. Lieut.-Col. M. W. Keogh, Capt. Seventh U. S. Cav.; Capt. G. W. Yates, Seventh U. S. Cav.; Bvt. Capt. Henry Meinell, First Lieut. Third U. S. Arty.; First Lieut. Chas. Morris, Fifth U. S. Inf.; First Lieut. Michael O'Brien, First U. S. Arty.; Judge Advocate, Bvt. Col. Lewis Merrill, Maj. Seventh U. S. Cav.

No other officers than those mentioned can be assembled without manifest injury to the service.

By command of

MAJOR-GENERAL SCHOFIELD.

(Signed) CHAUNCEY MCKEEVER,
Asst. Adjt.-Gen.

General Schofield, feeling that he could not get me convicted before General Miles' court, issued an order sending me back to my post.

August 14, 1869.

Lieutenant McDonald of the Fifth Infantry and I had quite a discussion in relation to my allowance about quarters. Lieutenant Borden wanted mine for his family.

Fort Dodge, Kan., August 17, 1869.

I received orders from Department headquarters to report at Camp Supply, I. T., night before last. Major Parker let Major Cox and myself have four fresh mules for the ambulance, six for the team and three extra men as an escort to protect us from the Indians from Fort Larnard to this place. We left at 11 this forenoon, marched fifty-five miles, and reached here at 9 o'clock this evening. Lieutenant Reed and I have made arrangements to start for Camp Supply in the morning.

Bluff Creek, I. T., August 18, 1869.

General Brooke, commanding Fort Dodge, Kan., gave me a four-mule wagon instead of an ambulance to ride in, and we had quite a dispute over it. I declined to accept, stating that I would buy my own private transportation, when he reminded me of the fact that he ranked me a peg or two; that he had ridden in Army wagons for hundreds of miles, glad to have even a wagon to ride in; that he was not going to violate orders by allowing officers to ride in spring wagons any longer, and therefore it was impossible to give me one under the circumstances. I secured a good saddle horse, placed my baggage in the escort wagon and rode horseback, and am now comfortably fixed in camp in spite of General Brooke.

Camp Supply, I. T., August 20, 1869.

I took a cup of coffee at daybreak and left Buffalo Springs, reaching Beaver Creek about 8 A. M. I then left my escort, galloped in to the post and reported for duty to Col. A. D. Nelson, who received orders this P. M. to report to a new post in Nevada. This leaves Major Page of the Third Infantry in command of this post.

August 21, 1869.

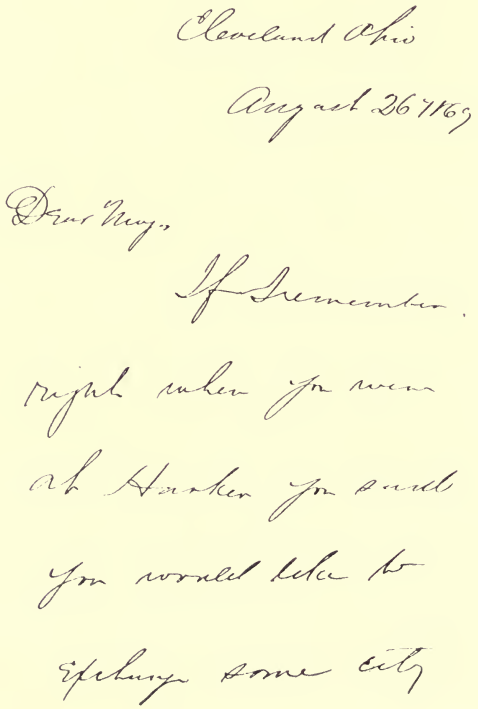
I had mounted drill this afternoon, with my new horses and saddles, which gave general satisfaction and make the men feel more contented. Little Raven and Yellow Bear, Arapahoe Indian chiefs, lunched with me today and witnessed the drilling of my troops, which greatly pleased them.

August 22, 1869.

I had mounted inspection at 8 this A. M. and breakfast with Mr. Tracy. We called on Mr. Curtis at his camp in the Indian village, but only a few old men, squaws and papooses were there, the main portion of the Indians being out on a hunting expedition.

The following is self-explantory:

To Major Armes,
Tenth U. S. Cavalry.



property in Washington
for shares of the
Elsworth coal mine
I have part a lot of
the shares and if
you wish to exchange
I think we can do
it on agreeable terms
Please inform me what you value
the property at and how many
shares you wish of the coal
company. An early reply will
greatly oblige me Hoping this

May find you well

Remain Very Truly Yours

Nelson A. Miles

Address to

Ft. Harker Kas

Do you or any of the officers
with you, push any land warrants
or State scrips which can be located
on public land at $1.25 per acre?
It is the best and cheapest way to
obtain land.

August 28, 1869.

Majors Graham and Cox connived together and fixed up charges against me. Major Page is temporarily in command, and placed me in arrest (arrest No. 17), but soon after released me. I sent for Lieutenants Smithers, Myers, Allman and Banzhof, who denied having anything to do with getting up the charges.

August 29, 1869.

I had a close inspection of my command this A. M., and finding several of my men in a careless condition, ordered them severely punished.

Camp Supply, I. T., September 2, 1869.

With Lieutenant Myers' assistance, I completed my muster-rolls today; also set of charges against Maj. G. W. Graham.

Camp Supply, I. T., August 31, 1869.

Bvt. Col. W. G. Mitchell,
Acting Asst. Adjutant-General, Dept. of the Missouri,
Through Post Headquarters,

Fort Leavenworth, Kans.:

Colonel—I have the honor to transmit herewith charges and specifications preferred against Bvt. Maj. G. W. Graham, Captain Tenth Cavalry, and would respectfully request that he be brought to trial as soon as the General Commanding thinks it convenient. This man's reputation is so notoriously disreputable that no respectable lady can treat him with civility and courtesy due his uniform without incurring a taint upon her fair name, or, at least, to place her reputation in jeopardy. That the service should be purged of such characters is patent to all, as the respect which the uniform once commanded is rapidly diminishing, while the example which is shown by officers of this man's standing and reputation in associating with improper characters is highly damaging to the *esprit de corps* of the Army. I have been told that his case has been brought up at Department Headquarters, but hushed up on the interference of Gen. B. H. Grierson, Colonel Tenth Cavalry.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,
GEO. A. ARMES,
Capt. Tenth Cav.,
Bvt. Major, U. S. A.

(Endorsed.)

Headquarters Camp Supply, I. T., September 6, 1869.

The charges preferred against *Bvt. Maj. G. W. Graham*, Captain Tenth Cavalry, are respectfully returned *disapproved*.

They show malice, and are not preferred in the sense of duty, or for the good of the service.

* * * * * * * * * *

You also bring charges against *Major Graham* for offenses alleged to have been committed nearly a year ago.

Charges should have been put against him at or near the time of the alleged offenses.

Your letter of transmittal breathes of prejudice from commencement to the end. You have constituted yourself *judge* and *jury*, and condemned *Major Graham* unheard. You have spoken of *Department Headquarters* and *General Grierson* in a disrespectful manner. You have cast a slur on the bravery and honor of *Major Graham*, and constituted yourself, without being asked, the judge of the merit and efficiency of officers.

The *Commanding Officer* cannot but think that this letter has been written in an unguarded moment. If *Major Armes* wishes these charges to go forward he will so endorse on this letter.

These papers to be *returned* to this office.

Your attention is called to *Par.* 451, Revised Army Regulations, edition 1863.

By order of

BREVET MAJOR PAGE.

W. N. WILLIAMS,
Second Lieut. Third Inf. V.,
Post Adjutant.

G. 54, A. C. D. M. C. G.
E. B., pp. 166-285.

Camp Supply, I. T., September 8, 1869.

Respectfully returned. As paragraphs 1st and 2d to your endorsement papers are not pertinent to the subject, I do not deem it necessary to reply to them.

To the third paragraph I have to say that I but recently came to a knowledge of the alleged offenses. The failure of my informants to prefer the charges cannot properly be visited upon my head. In regard to Par. 451, Revised Army Regulations of 1863, I cannot see in what particulars I have failed to comply with it. One reason for heading my letter of transmittal to the A. A. A. General of the Department was that I had good cause to believe that the charge would not be acted upon by the Brevet Major commanding the post.

That my letter of transmittal breathes a desire to rid the service of one unfit to wear the uniform, should the present charges be substantiated, I admit. I most certainly believe them to be true, or I should not have preferred them. Nor could I prefer frivolous charges consistent with a sense of duty. My letter is couched in strong terms, but within the bounds of truth, as I believe. Consequently I could not wish to change it in any particular, but to reiterate what is therein stated. No disrespect is intended Department Headquarters by my allustion, nor can I see how a dispassionate reader can observe in its wording or sense the least approach to disrespect that General Grierson was actuated by a desire to benefit the service. I do not question, but I do doubt that he was cognizant of all the facts in the case. I have preferred the charges against Brevet Major Graham because I alone, of the officers serving with the Department at present, can do so disinterestedly, as the result of his trial can in no way affect my position in the order of my grade or regiment.

If malice is shown in the affair it is by the Post Commander towards myself in placing me in close arrest within two hours after charges, utterly frivolous and groundless, were sent in.

My experience in the service has given me an idea that when communications are sent through a subordinate officer to his superior that they cannot be returned to the writer "disapproved," but only for correction, if it need be. My desire is that the charges go forward without delay. Because an officer is a good *gambler*, a judge of intoxicating drinks, or a *bully*, it is therefore no reason why he should be shielded from the punishment his disgraceful acts so amply merit.

G. A. Armes,
Capt. Tenth Cav., Bvt. Maj., U. S. A.

Headquarters Camp Supply, I. T., September 11, 1869.

Respectfully forwarded, disapproved.

The attention of the Department Commander respectfully called to the letter transmitted of Major Armes and endorsements thereon. Par. 451, Revised Army Regulations, edition 1863, has been complied with since this document has been returned by Major Armes.

"Through Post Headquarters" has been added in red ink.

Major Graham has not been placed in arrest. I shall await the action of Department Headquarters.

(Signed) John H. Page,
Capt. Third Inf., Bvt. Maj., U. S. A.,
Commanding.

Headquarters Department of Missouri,
Fort Leavenworth, Kans., September 20, 1869.

Respectfully referred to Bvt. Col. A. P. Nelson, U. S. A., commanding Camp Supply, I. T., in connection with other papers referred to him on the 16th inst.

By command of
Major-General Schofield.
(Signed) W. G. Mitchell,
Bvt. Col., U. S. A.,
A. A. A. Gen.

September 10, 1869.

Yesterday I sent a detail of men to cut cottonwood timber, and commenced the building by putting logs fourteen feet long perpendicularly, which will be stockade quarters when completed. Having no lumber and few nails, I used grapevines and wooden pegs to secure them in their places, and have a lot of prairie grass for the roof, which I will cover with dirt. A detail of eight men cut 220 logs today, at which rate I will soon have my quarters completed.

September 12, 1869.

Col. William G. Moore, Paymaster, U. S. A., an old friend of mine from Washington, D. C., formerly President Johnson's private secretary, arrived here yesterday with his clerk, Mr. Butler, to pay off the command. It did me good to meet one of my old Washington friends, especially one like Colonel Moore, who is one of the most popular and entertaining officers in the pay department.

September 14, 1869.

Yesterday morning Colonel Moore paid off my company at 9 o'clock, and in the afternoon he, Major Page and myself rode up to the Indian village, where I introduced the Colonel to several pretty Arapahoe squaws and some of the leading Indian chiefs. In turn they entertained us, inviting us to smoke the pipe of peace, all sitting around the fire in a circle, passing the pipe from one to another, Little Raven keeping it filled with his kilikinick tobacco. While we were enjoying the powwow the old squaws were busily engaged getting up a splendid dinner of roast meat and one of the nicest and fattest dogs in the village. The Colonel as well as myself went through the form of enjoying the dinner, but both of us chose the buffalo meat in preference to the dog, and in such a way that the Indians took no offense, leaving them good friends, with a cordial invitation for them to call upon us at our camp.

John Smith, Romeo and Big Mouth were on hand when the Colonel left, and he seemed greatly interested in Big Mouth.

September 16, 1869.

Having a first-class minstrel troupe in my company and wishing to give an entertainment to a few Indian chiefs and their families, I sent a sergeant to the village yesterday inviting quite a number to attend the show last evening. It was more interesting to watch the Indians enjoy the performance than the real play.

Big Mouth became perfectly wild with excitement, and his face beamed with delight this morning. One of the Indians who had a very large mule took a fancy to one of my little ambulance mules and made an even exchange.

This afternoon Big Mouth challenged me to a race with one of his fastest ponies, betting an elegant buffalo robe against a pair of red blankets. The race took place at 5 o'clock, hundreds of

Indians coming from their village to witness it. The novelty of the race created great excitement. I rode my own horse, Frank, and the Indian chief his. I beat three lengths and won the buffalo robe.

Camp Supply, I. T., September 18, 1869.

Yesterday was a grand ration day for the Arapahoe Indians, who came in full force to get their flour, sugar, coffee and beef. From twenty-five to fifty Texas beeves are turned out of the corral into the open prairie, where two or three hundred warriors, mounted on their fastest ponies, armed with knives, lances, Winchesters, bows, arrows, quivers and pistols, charged after them, all wild with excitement, and did not stop until the last beef was killed. Then the squaws skinned and cut them up, packing every portion to their village on their shoulders, even the entrails, which they utilize by making soup. During the excitement of the chase hundreds of shots were fired at a single beef before it was killed.

Feeding Indians.

I exchanged a blanket, some sugar and some coffee with a squaw for a nice pair of Indian saddle-bags. One of the Arapahoe Indians slipped into my tent and stole ten dollars. I finished my stockade stables.

September 20, 1869.

Yesterday afternoon Colonel Carpenter commanded the parade, after which Mrs. Lieutenant Myers, Lieutenants Davis and Lindsay and I went after wild plums, which are in great abundance. Lieutenant Myers and wife left today for Fort Sill, and will be greatly missed.

September 22, 1869.

Yesterday I had four teams and one hundred men hauling cottonwood logs. The Cheyenne Indians came in to draw rations this afternoon, and had a great time killing their beeves, some of which ran for several miles.

September 26, 1869.

I came off duty as Officer of the Day yesterday and came very near having some trouble with the Arapahoes while they were drawing rations. Several were badly cut and slashed with knives.

After inspection Dr. Fitch and I rode to the Arapahoe camp and attended the funeral of Big Mouth's daughter, who hanged herself last night on account of some trouble with a young warrior whom she expected to marry. She was a very handsome and popular squaw in the village.

September 30, 1869.

Yesterday I was placed on a board of survey to examine the shortage of a train of C. S. stores which came from Fort Hays. Major Kidd commanded at general inspection today, after which Colonel Carpenter, Major Page and myself fixed the prices on goods of Post Trader Tracy.

October 4, 1869.

Have been working on my quarters during the past few weeks, and now have them most completed.

Mr. Darlington, an old banker, is now having full charge of clothing and rations, but is entirely too easy with the Indians, and they take advantage of his kindness.

Lieut.-Col. A. D. Nelson and Lieutenant Maxon arrived yesterday. This afternoon Drs. Fitch, Lagraw and I rode to the Arapahoe camp to witness a grand medicine-man carrying out his tricks. He would dress himself up in full war costume, with his shield, which he would hold in his right hand, defending himself from the bullets of six young warriors who were galloping around the village. He soon went through the form of being badly wounded and fell from his horse.

The medicine-man was immediately surrounded by hundreds of squaws and papooses, screeching, screaming and moaning, but suddenly he jumped up, sprang on his horse and began firing his pistols and racing around the village like a madman. Then there was a rousing cheer and great excitement among all the papooses,

who were running and cheering wildly with the idea that their medicine-man was bullet-proof and could not be killed by being shot at, so he was at once recognized by all as the "Sword of God, Ruler and Adviser." It did not take me long to find out that the pistols and Winchesters which the young bucks used had been loaded with blank cartridges, but the Indians fully believed that they were loaded with balls.

October 6, 1869.

I completed my quarters yesterday, and in spite of the hard work my command has been doing everything is in splendid condition.

Lieutenant Maxon, a great favorite with Colonel Nelson, told me today that he expects to be placed in command of my company soon, as Major Graham has induced Colonel Nelson, the Post Commander, to believe the charges I preferred against Graham were made up, he having won the old imbecile over by presenting him brandy and wine, making him a present of a Government horse and a dog, winning him entirely in his favor and against me.

October 8, 1869.

Lieutenant Williams, Third Infantry, Acting Adjutant, placed me in arrest (arrest No. 18), giving me ten miles limit, by order of Colonel Nelson. I am now transferring all papers over to Lieutenant Maxon. It is impossible to find any grounds for the arbitrary act, except to please and favor Majors Graham and Cox.

October 18, 1869.

During the past few days I have been engaged in transferring property and papers and getting settled in our new quarters, which are very comfortable. I have entertained quite a number of Indians, and am on very friendly terms with them. Little Raven dined with me today after seeing that the tribe was all supplied with clothing and rations, which were issued to them today.

Little Raven's Camp, I. T., October 20, 1869.

Ten miles south of Camp Supply. I rode to Powder Face's camp this forenoon, who told me that Little Raven had moved, and I searched here until about sundown, when Little Raven, his wives and daughters, seemed very much pleased to see me. They

had a fire built in a large tepee and a nice bed fixed up with buffalo robes. I have just been entertained with a good dinner of buffalo meat, after which Little Raven, several of his war chiefs and I had a good smoke of the kilikinick.

Camp Supply, I. T., October 22, 1869.

Little Raven and one of his daughters were my guests yesterday evening, and after a good breakfast this morning they left for their camp.

October 24, 1869.

Colonel Carpenter and Lieutenant Davis spent most of last evening with me, assisting me to prepare charges against Captain Graham. I loaned Powder Face my horse to ride to his village.

POWDER FACE.

October 26, 1869.

Colonel Carpenter, Captain Graham and Lieutenant Banzoff all went on a hunt yesterday after wild turkeys and brought home nearly a wagon-load. Just after I had completed my stable for a milk cow Colonel Nelson came up and ordered it torn down. A meaner and more disagreeable man could not be found in the Army.

Ne Watch, a very bright Indian chief, came in ahead of his tribe this evening. He presented Major Kidd with ten buffalo robes. I have arranged with him to get me some Indian pictures. His tribe will be here tomorrow.

Headquarters of the Army,
Adjt.-General's Office, Washington, November 4, 1869.

Bvt. Maj. George A. Armes,
Capt. Tenth Cavalry,
Through Headquarters Military Division of the Missouri,
Chicago, Ill.:

Sir—Your application of October 9, 1869, for a Court of Inquiry to examine into the nature of the accusation made against you has not been favorably considered by the General of the Army.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,
E. D. Townsend,
Adjt.-Gen.

Headquarters Department of the Missouri,
St. Louis, Mo., November 12, 1869.

Special Orders No. 213—Extract.

* * * * * * * * * *

A. Upon receipt of this order the following-named officers will proceed from Capt Supply, I. T., to Fort Leavenworth, Kans., reporting in person upon their arrival there to the commanding officer of the post as under arrest (arrest No. 18), awaiting trial before a General Court-Martial. They will await trial at Leavenworth City, Kans.:

Bvt. Maj. Geo. A. Armes, Capt. Tenth U. S. Cavalry.
Capt. Geo. W. Graham, Tenth U. S. Cavalry.
Bvt. Maj. Chas. G. Cox, Capt. Tenth U. S. Cavalry.

* * * * * * * * *

By command of
MAJOR-GENERAL SCHOFIELD.
W. G. MITCHELL,
Bvt. Col., U. S. A.,
Acting Asst. Adjt.-Gen.

Official:
W. G. MITCHELL,
Acting Asst. Adjt.-Gen.
BVT. MAJ. GEO. A. ARMES,
Capt. Tenth Cavalry,
Camp Supply, I. T.

November 24, 1869.

I made arrangements with Toko, Yellow Horse and Ne Watch to kill for me some mountain lions and bring me the skins. Today they brought in thirteen skins of different animals, which I intend to have made into a robe. I paid them with tobacco, sugar, coffee and red blankets.

November 28, 1869.

Major Graham was placed in arrest. There are a great many Indians quartered around us, some of which are not on very friendly terms.

Bluff Creek, I. T., December 1, 1869.

After bidding everyone good-bye at Camp Supply, I left with Colonel Moore and party at 10 A. M. Stopped by the Cheyenne camp and found Big Mouth very sick, but bade him and my other Indian friends good-bye. Lieutenant Hale and Mr. Butler helped to make up the fires last night so as to cook our suppers. Colonel Moore, Major Cox and Lieutenant Hale divided our

grub with the rest of the party, so we all had enough. We enjoyed our supper and talked over old times until 10 o'clock. Broke camp at 8 this morning, arriving here at 4 this afternoon, and are comfortably fixed. Captain Graham's horse, Stocking-legs, was kicked so badly that he had to be shot.

Leavenworth City, Kan., December 7, 1869.

Left Ellsworth at 3 o'clock this morning. Stopped over at Lawrence City for dinner, meeting Mr. Noble. I presented him a buffalo-calf robe and a quiver full of arrows, which he seemed to appreciate very highly. Captain Philey, one of my old scouts, joined us on the train. He seemed delighted to meet me again.

December 9, 1869.

Met Colonel Schofield, the General's brother, at the post. It is apparent he is in collusion with Major Graham and Major Cox, and that an underhanded movement is on foot to down me if possible for them.

Thursday, December 30, 1869.

Did not arrive home until 5 this A. M., having attended one of the most fashionable dances that has been given for a long time. I escorted Miss Ida Hill and Miss Hunt. We met there Miss Kilpatrick and a large number of military men and officers from the post.

CHAPTER VIII.

Leavenworth, Kan., January 2, 1870.

I have been most of the day preferring additional charges against Col. A. D. Nelson, which are of a very serious character, but do not believe General Schofield will ever bring him to trial. He also appears to sustain him with the other conspirators in trying to force me before a court specially picked out to go through the form of a trial as an excuse to dismiss me from the service, but it is a little satisfaction to get the charges and evidence I have on record in order that an investigation in the course of time will show up the villainy of the conspirators, consisting of Gen. A. D. Nelson, Gen. John M. Schofield, Capt. C. G. Cox, Capt. G. W. Graham and Maj. Lewis Merrill.

January 3, 1870.

Although I have been here since December 7, 1869, and a general court-martial in session at Fort Leavenworth, Kan., I have not been furnished with a copy of the charges upon which I am supposed to be tried, and I know that I have not committed any offence that will warrant a reprimand, much less charges. But the officers I was obliged to prefer charges against have combined together to force me out in order to save themselves, and I am sure they are concocting charges to spring on me without giving me an opportunity of offering a defense, but it seems impossible to get an idea of their purport.

Leavenworth, Kan., January 5, 1870.

Wrote fifteen or twenty letters; drove out this afternoon and engaged Judge Ketner and Col. George English, two of the best lawyers in this city, to defend me. They have their hands full, and charge me accordingly. If I can only show up the villain who fixed up such malicious, disgraceful and false charges; and General Schofield's past record, I am told, proves that he is up to all sorts of cunning devices.

Fort Leavenworth, Kan., January 6, 1870.

I find that my expenses are so enormous here that I will have to sell my mules and wagons, which have been bringing me in a good income. I cleared over $10,000 during the past year and did not interfere with any of my duties. I bought a large number of mules, cattle and horses and sold them at a good profit, except a few good mule teams and wagons, which I hired out to contractors, each team paying for its first cost monthly.

January 7, 1870.

When I was ordered here from Camp Supply I had to march several hundred miles before reaching a railroad station, and brought my trotting horse, ambulance and one servant to Fort Hays. There I left them and came here by rail, not being able to get authority from General Sturgis to bring them here.

Leavenworth City, Kan., January 25, 1870.

A letter was handed me today which almost dumfounded me, from the fact that no charges had been furnished.

Leavenworth City, Kan., January 29, 1870.

Bvt. Col. Lewis Merrill,
Major Seventh Cav., U. S. A.,
Judge-Advocate,
Fort Leavenworth, Kan.:

Colonel—I have the honor to acknowledge the receipt this day of your communication of yesterday's date, and to thank you for the assurance that my own interests induced your letter of the 26th inst. I regret that the statements made in the first-named communication demand of me a reply, more especially that which I here quote in full as follows:

"I distinctly informed you, when you came to see me, that the court now in session here was ordered to try you, and that you would in due time be furnished with a copy of the charges against you. This notification having been given you by the Judge-Advocate of the court, you were not at liberty to consider it unofficial."

In reference to this statement, it is necessary that I should say that since my arrival in the City of Leavenworth, on or about the 7th of December last, I have never been to see you; that the only conversation between us since that time occurred on or about the 10th ult. in the office of the Depot Quartermaster at Fort Leavenworth, where I casually met you when I called to ask payment of

the amount due me for mileage, and that at that time no court had been ordered, and that, therefore, you could not have given me any official notice with respect to my trial. The order appointing the General Court-Martial now in session at Fort Leavenworth, and designating you as Judge-Advocate, bears date only the 22d of December, and in the interview above referred to I distinctly remember that you informed me that such a court would be convened, and that it had been intimated to you that you would be appointed its Judge-Advocate. Even, therefore, had you then notified me that the court would try me, I could not properly have considered the statement as official in character, or sufficient to justify me in furnishing you with a list of the witnesses which I would require in my defense. My disposition promptly to comply with any such demand is evidenced by the fact that on the 29th inst. (the day after I had received from you a copy of the specifications and charges) I transmitted you a list of the persons whom I desired summoned, in accordance with your request of the 25th of the present month, received the succeeding day.

You further observe in your communication of the 28th that "there cannot have been any doubt in your mind as to the facts that you were ordered here for trial, and before the court now in session." Permit me to say, in reply, that Special Order No. 213, dated at Department Headquarters, the 12th of November last, and received by me the 29th of that month, simply directed me to "proceed to Fort Leavenworth, to report in person, upon my arrival there, to the commanding officer of the post as under arrest, awaiting trial before a General Court-Martial, and to await trial at Leavenworth City, Kan." While from the terms of the above-quoted order I might have assumed that I would be tried by the court subsequently appointed, and now in session at Fort Leavenworth, it is respectfully suggested that it would have been entirely premature in me, before an official notification of the fact, and before even being furnished by the Judge-Advocate with a copy of the specifications and charges against me, to send you a list of the witnesses needed for my vindication, with a request that you would summon them to appear before a court not then appointed. Indeed, it was only on the 27th inst. that I received a complete copy of the specifications and charges upon which I am about to be brought to trial. I thank you for the copy of the order appointing the court and Judge-Advocate which you enclose for my use in your communication of the 28th. It is the first and only copy which I have yet seen of that order, protesting that if it be true, as you declare, that "my course in the matter so far is one which results in disadvantage to myself only," no fault can justly be imputed to myself under the circumstances so hastily and, I believe, truly narrated.

I have the honor to be, Colonel, very respectfully,
Your obedient servant,
GEO. A. ARMES,
Capt. Tenth Cavalry,
Bvt. Maj. U. S. A.

Fort Leavenworth, February 4, 1870.

Agreeably to the order of the court, passed yesterday, when I took the oath as prescribed, I appear today to declare that, to the best of my knowledge and belief, the testimony of each of the persons named in the communication addressed by me to the Judge-Advocate on the 27th ult. is material and necessary to the ends of justice in my case. Although under charges, I am placed in the anomalous position of being compelled to appear as a witness under oath in my own case, the court requiring that an affidavit should be substituted for my written declaration that I cannot, without disclosing my line of defense, fulfill the requirements of the Judge-Advocate respecting the persons whom I have requested him to summon for the defense. The honorable court cannot fail to appreciate the reasons which induced me to ask a day's delay before complying with its extraordinary mandate, for, while I believed then, as now, that the testimony of each of the persons named in my communication of the 27th ult. was necessary for my vindication, yet I was aware that in certain contingencies some of them might not be needed as witnesses before this tribunal. A desire, however, to be fully prepared upon each and every charge, and not to endanger my case by omissions founded upon contingencies which may not occur, naturally induced me to adhere to the application which is now pending before the court. If, in my anxiety to make a successful defense, it shall be found that I have asked too much, none will regret the fact more than myself, for it is my earnest desire, as an officer true to the Government of my country, not necessarily to add to the heavy expense incident to this court. I now respectfully ask that the Judge-Advocate retire, in order that, if the court please, it may, by interrogating me, judge for itself of the necessity for each of the witnesses named in my communication of the 27th ult., having entire confidence in the wisdom and justice of the court. I desire that the questions and answers be made of record, but trust that I may, without impropriety, ask that they may be withheld from the knowledge of the Judge-Advocate.

Respectfully submitted,
(Signed) GEO. A. ARMES,
Capt. Tenth Cav., Bvt. Maj., U. S. A.

A true copy:
A. C. VON LUITEWITZ,
Second Lieut. Third U. S. Cav.

Headquarters Fort Leavenworth, Kan., February 23, 1870.
To Bvt. Maj. G. A. Armes, Tenth Cavalry,
Leavenworth City, Kan.:

Major—Your letter of this date asking that Captain Graham be placed in close arrest is received.

In reply, I would say that while I regret that so unfortunate (to use no harsher term) affair should have occurred between two officers of the Army as is represented in your letter, still I do not see how it could be remedied by a close arrest of Captain Graham. Placing a commissioned officer in close arrest is a step that I am very slow to take, and one that can only be justified in cases of an extremely rare character. If, however, you desire that your letter be forwarded to Department Headquarters for the action of higher authority it shall be forwarded.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

S. D. Sturgis,
Col. Seventh Cav., Bvt. Maj.-Gen.,
Commanding.

The reader can see that General Sturgis declined to put Captain Graham in close arrest, while in his capacity as president of the court he ordered me to be so treated, and thus disclosed his prejudice.

As soon as it became known that General Schofield had ordered a court for my trial my friends began calling to inform me of it, among them Gen. George A. Custer, with whom I had served a portion of the time during the war of the rebellion, who looked upon such trumped-up charges as an outrage, and immediately took my part.

They informed me of the prejudice of the members of the court, going so far as to give in detail the words used in their expressions concerning me. I could not expect justice before the court, therefore I prepared myself with evidence to sustain me in my grounds for objecting to the members, and in the case of Colonel Buell I had a reliable witness present who was proof to the fact that he had expressed himself, although he denied it under oath, and my witness being present was a great surprise and enraged the rest of the court to such an extent that they could not hold their tempers and took advantage of their authority to arbitrarily sentence me to the guardhouse; and after being placed there I sent a note to the Officer of the Guard stating that I had left my rooms and everything unlocked, with all my effects, and the request was denied me to even go and secure my property. An

order from General Sturgis to the Officer of the Guard stated that I should be required to remain in the guardhouse until I purge myself of contempt of court, and that I should not be allowed to have intercourse with anyone. After being kept in the guardhouse all day without anything to eat I made written request to General Sturgis that some provision be made to keep me from starvation.

Headquarters Department of the Missouri,
St. Louis, Mo., December 22, 1869.

Special Orders No. 239—Extract.

I—A General Court-Martial is hereby appointed to meet at Fort Leavenworth, Kan., on Monday, the 3d day of January, 1870, at 10 o'clock A. M., or as soon thereafter as practicable, for the trial of such persons as may be properly brought before it.

Detail for the Court:

Bvt. Maj.-Gen. Saml. I. Sturgis, Col. Seventh U. S. Cav.

Bvt. Lieut.-Col. Franklin E. Hunt, Maj. and Paymaster, U. S. A.

Bvt. Maj. David H. Brotherton, Capt. Fifth U. S. Inf.

Bvt. Lieut.-Col. John S. Poland, Capt. Sixth U. S. Inf.

Capt. Simon Snyder, Fifth U. S. Inf.

Bvt. Lieut.-Col. David H. Buel, Capt. Ordnance Dept.

Bvt. Col. Albert Barnitz, Capt. Seventh U. S. Cav.

Capt. Chambers McKibben, Fifteenth U. S. Inf.

Capt. Geo. W. Yates, Seventh U. S. Cav.

Judge-Advocate, Bvt. Col. Lewis Merrill, Maj. Seventh U. S. Cav.

No other officers than those above mentioned can be assembled without manifest injury to the service.

* * * * * * * * * *

Fort Leavenworth, Kan., March 12, 1870.

The court being in session, pursuant to the foregoing order and its various adjournments, all of its members being present, Bvt. Col. Lewis Merrill, Maj. Seventh U. S. Cavalry, Judge-Advocate, then proceeded to the trial of Bvt. Maj. Geo. A. Armes, Capt. Tenth Cavalry, who, being present in court, and having heard the order concerning the court, was asked if he objected to any member.

The accused then stated that he had only yesterday received notice that his case would come up today, and asked that delay be given him until Monday.

The Judge-Advocate stated that the accused had been here awaiting trial since the beginning of the court, and had long since had his charges, and had appeared before the court, and had all his witnesses summoned, and that nearly all of them were here; that

he had been notified by the Judge-Advocate that his case would come up at such time as the business of the court would permit, and that at that time his request that he should have three or four days' notice was refused, and it was explained to him that the business of the court was such that no such notice would be given him, but that he must be ready at any time that he should be called upon. This was some weeks ago.

Whereupon the court was cleared, and the request for delay refused.

The accused then desired to challenge all the members of the court and the Judge-Advocate.

The Judge-Advocate then read the Seventy-first Article of War, and informed the accused that the law forbade to even receive such a challenge, and that the court had no right to violate the law.

The accused then asked that Lieut. E. L. Randall, Fifth Infantry, be permitted to appear as his counsel in this case for the present.

Lieutenant Randall explained to the court that the accused had retained civil counsel in this case, and had not notified them that his case would come up this morning, and they were not here in consequence; that he was willing to advise the accused until they came, and then would withdraw.

The accused then objected to Capt. Geo. W. Yates, Seventh Cavalry, on the grounds that Captain Yates was prejudiced against the accused.

Captain Yates asked to withdraw, that he was prejudiced.

The court was then cleared, Captain Yates withdrawing, and after a deliberation, decided to sustain the challenge, and Captain Yates accordingly ceased to be a member of the court in this case.

The accused objected to Bvt. Col. Albert Barnitz, Captain Seventh Cavalry, on the ground that Captain Barnitz has a strong prejudice against the accused.

The court was cleared, Colonel Barnitz retiring, and the challenge was not sustained.

The accused objected to Capt. Chambers McKibben, Fifteenth Infantry, on the ground that he had expressed himself to others unfavorably to the accused.

The court was cleared, Captain McKibben retiring, and the challenge was sustained.

The accused then objected to Capt. Simon Snyder, Fifth Infantry, on the grounds of prejudice.

The court was then cleared, Captain Snyder retiring, and sustained the challenge.

The accused then objected to Bvt. Lieut.-Col. David H. Buel, Capt. Ordnance Department, on the grounds of prejudice and that he had expressed an opinion unfavorable.

Ques. by J.-A. to Colonel Buel. Have you any knowledge of the matter now pending?

Ans. None whatever.

Ques. Have you ever formed or expressed any opinion whatsoever in regard to the matter against the accused?

Ans. It is impossible that I should do so, for I have not the least idea of what the charges are.

Ques. Have you any bias or prejudice against the accused which will in the matter now pending prevent you from giving him a fair and impartial trial according to your oath and according to the evidence which may be adduced on the trial?

Ans. I feel confident that I have not.

The accused now stated that he could bring before the court the person to whom Colonel Buel had expressed the opinions unfavorable to the accused in the matter now pending, and desired that Colonel Buel be put on oath, in order that he might examine him about certain matters.

Bvt. Lieutenant-Colonel Buel was then duly sworn by the Judge-Advocate and put on his "voir dire."

Ques. by Accused. Have you ever expressed any opinion as to the guilt or innocence of the accused in the matter now pending?

The accused then stated that he had been told by a party that Colonel Buel had stated that he would not believe the accused on oath, and would vote for his dismissal if on a court, but that he declined to state who told him so or to bring the person before the court, and desired to question Colonel Buel as to his having expressed any such opinion. The court refused to permit the question until the accused should show grounds for believing that the

Custer to My Rescue.

opinion had been expressed. (General Custer, who was one of the spectators in the courtroom, at once authorized me to call him before the court, as he saw I did not wish to give his name.) The

accused then stated that Gen. G. A. Custer is the person whose testimony can show that Colonel Buel said he would not believe the accused on oath.

Ques. by J.-A. to Colonel Buel—Have you ever stated that you would not believe the accused on oath, and would vote for his dismissal if on a court?

Ans. I have.

Ques. by Court. Notwithstanding the opinion you have formed of the credibility of the accused, can you fairly and impartially try him on the evidence and according to your oath?

Ans. I feel confident I can do so.

The accused then stated that he had the same opinion of Colonel Buel, and had so expressed himself outside before he came in.

I said that was also "my opinion of Colonel Buel, under oath, and I want that to go on the record."

The accused was checked by the president, and the court was cleared for deliberation, and, on being reopened, proceeded to his trial for contempt of court.

The members of the court were then duly and severally sworn according to law by the Judge-Advocate, and the Judge-Advocate duly sworn according to law by the president of the court, all of which was in the presence of the accused, who was then arraigned on the charge of contempt, and specification as follows:

In that Bvt. Maj. G. A. Armes, Captain Tenth Cavalry, an accused for trial before a General Court-Martial instituted by Special Order No. 239, Headquarters Department of the Missouri, of December 22, 1869, being in the presence of said court, preliminary to his (Armes') trial, while the matter of his challenge to Bvt. Lieut.-Col. David H. Buel, Captain Ordnance Department, a member of the court, was proceeding, did, in a menacing and contemptuous manner, say, "I would not believe Colonel Buel under oath. I expressed that opinion outside, before I came in. I want that to go on the record, too, as my opinion of Colonel Buel," referring in this to Bvt. Lieut.-Col. David H. Buel, Captain Ordnance Department, a member of the court, and in the hearing of, and intended to be heard by the court and the spectators, and to the contempt of the court and to the causing of disorder and the disturbance of the proceedings of the court.

But in spite of the insults offered and the vile action of the court I controlled my temper and submitted to the action of the court without a word, and was as respectful and submissive as if on duty.

Whereupon the accused said: "I do not wish to evade a trial by any means, but when I have been told by parties outside the

court that certain members of the court had expressed opinions unfavorable to me, I thought it but justice to myself to object to them as members of the court."

The court was cleared, and, after deliberation, found the accused, Bvt. Maj. Geo. A. Armes, Captain Tenth Cavalry, "Guilty" of the charge and specification exhibited against him, and therefore sentenced him to be confined, in charge of the officer of the guard, in the post guardhouse at this post (Fort Leavenworth, Kansas) during his pending trial, or during the pleasure of the court, and denied all communication with anyone.

And Colonel Buel was allowed to remain as a member and vote on the sentence.

Fort Leavenworth, Kan., March 12, 1870.

Bvt. Maj.-Gen. S. D. Sturgis,

Colonel Seventh Cav. and President G. C. M.,

Through the Officer of the Guard:

General—I have the honor to state that the officer of the guard, having received orders not to allow me to have intercourse with anyone, he has taken the grounds that I cannot go to my meals without being liable to have intercourse with some one. I have had nothing to eat since breakfast, and would respectfully request that some provisions be made to keep me from a starvation punishment, which I should not think any commanding officer would wish to enforce.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

GEO. A. ARMES,
Capt. Tenth Cavalry, U. S. A.

Main Guard, Fort Leavenworth, Kan., March 12, 1870.

The Commanding Officer has verbally directed the officer of the guard to go with Major Armes to his meals at the messhouse.

(Signed) EDWARD RANDALL,
First Lieut. Fifth Infantry,
Officer of the Guard.

Headquarters Fort Leavenworth, Kan., March 12, 1870.

Officer of the Guard:

The order of the court upon which Major Armes was arrested required that until he shall have purged himself of contempt of the court he would be confined in the room of the officer of the guard and not be allowed to have intercourse with anyone.

You will please see that that order be carried out.

Respectfully,

S. D. STURGIS,
Bvt. Maj.-Gen. Commanding.

(Endorsement.)
Main Guard, Fort Leavenworth, February 16, 1870.
Reply forwarded to Bvt. Major Armes, Captain Tenth Cavalry.
EDW. L. RANDALL,
First Lieut. Fifth Infantry,
Officer of the Guard.

The officer of the guard will permit Mr. Ketner, counsel for Major Armes, to have an interview with that officer, and as soon as it is over the Major will be sent in charge of a guard to the court-room.

(Signed) S. D. STURGIS,
Col. Seventh Cav.,
Bvt. Maj.-Gen., U. S. A.

March 12, 1870.

The trial was then resumed of Bvt. Maj. Geo. A. Armes' case, the question being on the challenge of the accused to Colonel Buel.

The court was cleared, Colonel Buel retiring, and the challenge to Bvt. Lieut.-Col. David H. Buel, Captain Ordnance Department, was sustained.

Whereupon the accused represented as follows:

"If the statement, as one of my reasons for objecting to Colonel Buel serving on this court, that 'I would not believe him under oath,' is construed to be disrespectful to the court, I hereby disclaim any intention of contempt, and without hesitation apologize."

I was then released from the guardhouse.

The Judge-Advocate asks the attention of the court to the fact that the statement was not made in any such manner or with any such apparent purpose as would indicate that it was the intention of the accused to offer it as one of his reasons for challenging Colonel Buel, but was offered as a gratuitous insult.

The accused was then asked if he objected any further to any member of the court. The accused then objected to Bvt. Maj. David H. Brotherton, Captain Fifth Infantry, on the grounds of prejudice.

The court was cleared, Major Brotherton retiring, and refused to sustain the challenge or excuse Major Brotherton.

The accused then objected to Bvt. Lieut.-Col. John S. Poland, Captain Fifth Infantry, as a member of the court, on the grounds of prejudice.

The court was then cleared, Bvt. Lieutenant-Colonel Poland retiring, and the challenge was not sustained.

The accused then objected to Bvt. Lieut.-Col. Franklin H. Hunt, Major and Paymaster of U. S. A., on the grounds of prejudice.

The court was then cleared, Bvt. Lieutenant-Colonel Hunt retiring, and refused to sustain the challenge.

The accused then objected to Bvt. Maj.-Gen. Saml. D. Sturgis, Colonel Seventh Cavalry, as a member of the court, on the grounds of prejudice, and having expressed his opinion.

Ques. Have you any bias or prejudice against the accused that will prevent your giving him a fair and impartial trial on the matter now pending, according to your oath and the evidence which may be adduced?

Ans. Not any—not the slightest.

At the request of the accused, General Sturgis was sworn by the Judge-Advocate and put on his "voir dire."

Ques. by Accused. Did you not say that I was not worthy to hold a position in the Army?

Ans. I have no recollection of saying anything of that kind. Major Armes has been discussed so publicly that I presume his name has been in the mouth of everybody in the vicinity, but I have no recollection of saying anything of the kind to anyone. I don't remember saying anything of the kind, but he has been so much discussed and so generally talked about, and his conduct so criticised, that some remark may have escaped me to the effect that if the things under discussion were true he was not fit to be in the service, but I have no recollection of saying even that much.

The court was then cleared, Bvt. Major-General Sturgis retiring, and the challenge was not sustained.

The members of the court were then duly and severally sworn according to law by the Judge-Advocate, and the Judge-Advocate duly sworn according to law by the president of the court, all of which was in the presence of the accused, who was then arraigned on the charges and specifications thereto already given.

(True copy of letter sent to Judge-Advocate-General of the Department.)

Leavenworth City, Kan., May 5, 1870.

Maj. D. G. Swaim,

Judge-Advocate, Department of the Missouri:

Sir—I have the honor to submit a brief statement of the facts in relation to the members of the court-martial before which I have just been tried, and ask of you if I could expect justice from its hands. I was told by parties who heard members of the court say at a certain gambling-house in this city that if I were brought before it for trial I would be dismissed from the service, as they were so prejudiced against me; that they felt it their duty to inform me of the fact, in order that I might prepare myself in time to avoid a trial from the court. Therefore, I objected to each member, in order that no particular one would be brought out as being counted with the plot to dismiss me, but after the court had been reduced to only five members, it objected to relieving any more. I had

just as good grounds for objecting to three of their five as I had to the four that were excused. I may have appeared to have acted in haste in my objecting to members, but how could I help it, when I had just cause to believe that the Judge-Advocate was doing everything in his power to find me guilty?

He was not satisfied with the facts as they would have been brought out, but would falsely represent matters in such a way that I could not expect justice, and some of the members of the court seemed so stupid or drunk that they did not appear to take notice of the Judge-Advocate's malicious attempt to find me guilty. I am told that charges have been preferred against him, and that he is trying to bring about certain influence to avoid a trial, and if he succeeds I cannot see where an officer can expect to find justice in the Army. As for what I have heard of his character, he will be found guilty if ever brought to trial. I have heard his name brought up and discussed in public and upon the streets as being "one of the d—d scoundrels in the Army" (I only repeat the words as they were used by an officer who has known him for years and who outranks him). I have been waiting for the promulgation of the proceedings in my case before forwarding the charges against Colonel Buel, but, in order that he may be brought to trial before the witnesses leave the post, I forward them today. If I had not preferred charges against Captain Graham I would not have been brought to trial at all. I do not expect that the reviewing authority can or will approve the finding of the court in my case.

Please inform me if there are any charges on file with you against me, and oblige your obedient servant,

(Signed) GEO. A. ARMES,
U. S. A.

I then had the members of the court that tried me arrested by the civil authority for false imprisonment and sent the following request for information upon which to base the prosecution:

Leavenworth City Ks
May 16th 1880

1st Lt Am Maryland
Adjt 7th Cav. & Post Adjt Ft Leavenworth Ks
Sir

I have the honor to request that the names of the Post Guard who were on duty March 12th 13th & 14th 1870 be furnished me, as I be allowed to copy them from the Post Guard Book.

Very Respectfully
Your Obt Servt
Geo L Arms
Capt 10th Cav.
Ft Mag Will

H. Qrs. Ft Leavenworth Ks
May 18th 1870

~~Respectfully returned~~
~~I cannot say what~~
~~legitimate use this in~~
~~formation can be put~~
~~to, and from [illegible]~~
~~established and [illegible]~~
~~reputation of the [illegible]~~
~~[illegible]~~

H. Qrs. Ft Leavenworth Ks
May 18th 1870

Respectfully returned — I know of no legitimate use this information can be put to and therefore decline to furnish it

C. D. Sturgis
Col 7th Cav.
Bvt Maj Genl
Cdg.

I desired the names of these men to use as witnesses in a civil court.

May 22, 1870.

I sent a set of charges against S. D. Sturgis to General Schofield, which I suppose will remain on file without action, he appearing to be one of the conspirators connected with Schofield in trying to ruin me if possible.

On November 19 I sent serious charges against Gen. A. D. Nelson, U. S. A., also an additional set January 27, he also being one of the conspirators. It is not likely any action will be taken by Schofield. In November, 1869, I preferred a set of charges against G. W. Graham, Tenth U. S. Cavalry, through Colonel Nelson, then my commanding officer at Camp Supply, I. T. He did all he could to shield Graham from trial. I also sent in a set of charges against Maj. M. A. Kidd, Maj. C. G. Cox, Captain Buell and Col. Lewis Merrill.

From the fact that I did not insist upon Cox being brought to trial charges were preferred against me for neglect of duty in not following up the case and being too lenient. Although charges I had preferred against Major Kidd, Lieutenant Kennedy and others had no attention paid to them, I thought I had a right to use my own discretion as commanding officer in forwarding or withdrawing charges. From this I am led to believe that General Schofield is at the head of those who are attempting to work my ruin.

I received the following letter from my brother:

Washington, D. C., June 5, 1870.

Dear George:

All is hopeless. We have done all that could be done, but Grant has approved the sentence. The Secretary of War took the case personally to him, with the recommendation that it be approved even after General Townsend had seen him (the Secretary), and did all he could to get him to consent to have your sentence commuted. The die is cast. I have been to the newspaper office and made them promise not to publish it, but some outside parties have gotten hold of it, and it will soon, I fear, become generally known.

I will write as soon as I return.

Affectionately,

(Signed) C. H. Armes.

The records show the sentence was never approved by President Grant.

Leavenworth, Kan., July 5, 1870.

Hon. W. W. Belknap,
Secretary of War,

Washington, D. C.:

Dear General—It is with considerable interest that I address you in behalf of Bvt. Maj. Geo. A. Armes. I was one of his counsel before the court which tried him and sentenced him to dismissal from the service. I really am surprised at the findings and sentence of the court. I know Major Armes to be a high-minded, moral and upright gentleman. He has a record for gallant conduct in action excelled by no officer in the Army. He is an officer I should think the service could ill afford to sacrifice on such a charge, so poorly supported. The witness, Ben Betten, I know to be a truthful boy, every way entitled to credit. He was not tampered with, as intimated by Colonel Merrill, the Judge-Advocate, but, on the other hand, there was such ill-feeling on the part of Merrill that he would hold no communication with Major Armes whatever, except through his (Armes') counsel.

This witness, Ben, positively contradicts the charges and specifications, and is corroborated by three other witnesses. The charge is sustained only on the testimony of three other witnesses.

Certainly, the preponderance of testimony in this case is in favor of the accused, and which, together with his unblemished character, should entitle him to an honorable acquittal.

I can further say, General, that I am quite well acquainted with the officers of this Department, and that there is great jealousy between them. It is not confined to ill-feeling alone, but is sometimes manifested in most dishonorable conduct. This is a case affected almost entirely by this feeling. I trust, General, you will give this case further consideration, and see that this officer is not ruined in his honor and standing by prejudice and jealousy.

I am, General, very respectfully, your obedient servant,

(Signed) Geo. H. English.

Iowa City Iowa July 8 - 1870

Gen W. W. Belknap
Secretary of War.

Sir

Permit me to bring to your notice Geo A. Armes late capt 10 Ms Cavalry. He visits Washington to request a hearing of his application to be reinstated in the Army from which he has been dismissed.

I know nothing of the cause of his dismissal or of the merits of his application to be reinstated, but I have known him personally for several years & he is distantly related to me by marriage. I think I know him to be a young man of strictly temperate habits, of truth & integrity and of bravery perhaps to the borders of rashness. He is hasty - perhaps violent in temper & hence probably his trouble. His father & family suffered severely during the war for the devotion to the Union Cause

For all these reasons I respectfully but earnestly ask that you will give him a hearing. That you will give him a fair one, if any, I know.

Very truly S. F. Kirkwood

Senate Chamber, July 13, 1870.

Sir—I would call in person to introduce Captain Armes, the bearer of this note, if my duties in the Senate chamber would permit. I wish you would see him and hear his case. He brings letters to me from valued friends, who think he has been unjustly treated.

With great respect, your obedient servant,

(Signed) JAS. HARLAN.

HON. MR. BELKNAP,
Secretary of War.

To show the indignity, arbitrary and disgraceful action of the president of the court and of General Schofield, who knew the sentence and expected it to be carried out, fearing that I might be able to bring some influence to bear in my favor, immediately ordered me to return to my post, hundreds of miles away, there to await the promulgation of the sentence. In spite of my appeals to be allowed to await the result at Fort Leavenworth the order was enforced, thereby causing me great inconvenience and putting me to the terrible expense of having to pay my own way from Camp Supply, I. T., to Washington city after the sentence of dismissal went into effect.

Upon the advice of counsel I brought a suit at Leavenworth City for ten thousand dollars damages for false imprisonment and the arbitrary treatment suffered at the hands of General Schofield, Sturgis and his court.

Gov. and Mrs. Kirkwood.

Immediately upon receipt of my order of dismissal at Camp Supply I was forced to sell everything I could convert into cash at a sacrifice, and after paying my counsed fees and the enormous debts that I had contracted in the effort to save my commission,

I borrowed money from the post trader, Mr. Wright, to pay my expenses home, and landed in Washington city without sufficient means to purchase a change of clothing. In the meantime I had written to friends, among them Governor Kirkwood, who sent me a letter, which I took in person to W. W. Belknap, then Secretary of War, asking a re-opening and reconsideration of the case; and after handing him this letter from the Governor, who had made him what he was, giving him a start in the Army by commissioning him as an officer of volunteers, he treated the letter with contempt, throwing it in the waste-basket and insultingly remarking to me that under no circumstances would he re-open the case or give any attention to it; that I had preferred charges against several of the best officers in the Army, and that an officer who would interfere with the actions of other officers was not fit to be in the service.

I stooped down and picked the letter up and said, "If you have no objections I would like to retain it." He said, "Yes, you may keep it if it will do you any good."

I then found it necessary to get employment of some kind. Meeting Judge Moore and Jessie Bright, a son of the late Senator, and after an explanation of my circumstances they kindly invited me into their office on Seventh street, between E and F, assigning me to a desk with all the stationery I needed, with the assurance that I need not feel uneasy about having to pay them for any courtesies extended until I was in a position to do so without embarrassment. Feeling thus encouraged, I started as a real-estate broker.

* * * * * * * * * *

Not being able to make arrangements with Chipman & Hosmer, I called on Judge T. W. Bartley (brother-in-law of General Sherman) of the firm of Bartley & Stanton, who took charge of my case, prepared an argument and called upon the Secretary of War, from whom they failed to get any satisfaction.

Then they submitted the case to the President, after which they informed me that the principal obstacle in the way was the suit pending against the court at Fort Leavenworth, Kan., and advised me that if I wished to be restored I should send out an application withdrawing the suit pending against the court, which I did.

Not having had any experience in the real-estate business, I found it rather an up-hill matter to succeed. My first encouragement was with Colonel Eaton, whom I had known for several years, applying to me for a loan, which I carried through, making a commission of three hundred dollars in cash, which greatly encouraged me to continue, it being the first money I had earned in my new pursuit.

Of course the first thing after paying a portion of my debt was to purchase a horse and buggy, which gave me an opportunity to take customers around and show them property, and in addition to my business matters I had an opportunity to take in social functions, being encouraged to visit and attend receptions at General Sherman's, whose daughter, Miss Minnie, introduced me to many of her friends, who entertained me, feeling that if received by the Sherman family my sentence of court-martial did not ostracise me from good society. I shall never forget the kind hospitality extended to me by Miss Minnie, who knew me well enough to know that the sentence of the court was unjust and brutal.

I received many letters of sympathy from friends all over the country, and was encouraged in my real-estate business by hundreds of capitalists and owners of property giving me the exclusive right to sell or rent their holdings, and it was not long before I purchased a house on Sixth street, between O and P, bought me a pair of horses, furnished my house and kept bachelor's hall, where I could entertain my friends to my own satisfaction.

In the meantime I secured letters of recommendation from many friends who had known me from boyhood, among them being Colonel W. G. Moore and others.

National Hotel (F. Tenney & Co.);
Washington, D. C., September 20, 1870.

To President Grant:

Sir—I take great pleasure in saying that from a personal knowledge of and acquaintance with Capt. George A. Armes, U. S. A., I believe him to be one of the most efficient officers that has been on duty on the plains, and that he is in every way worthy.

To be more particular, I was at Forts Laramie, Mitchell and Sedgwick during the winter of 1866-67, and know from personal

observation that the service that Captain Armes performed in the pursuit and punishment of the Indians, and recapturing citizens' stock, and General Cook's complimentary order to Captain Armes for his services so well performed in midwinter, caused much envy and jealousy towards Captain Armes, and I state that I heard many officers speak disparagingly of Captain Armes, owing, as I believe, to his great activity and persistence in his Indian campaigns.

Captain Armes bears the name and has the reputation of being a strictly sober and otherwise moral man, and in this respect far above the average of his fellow-officers.

I can but think this charge on which he was tried as the merest pretext. I will say that, in common with ten thousand (and more) other citizens of Kansas, Nebraska, Colorado, Wyoming and Montana, I earnestly trust your Excellency will restore Captain Armes to his rank and place in the Army, to date from the time of his dismissal, so that he may continue to serve or be at liberty to honorably resign the place he has so successfully filled.

If your Excellency requires it, in order to his restoration, I would engage to get such a number of signers to a petition as will show how Captain Armes is appreciated in the West, where he has served for four years, or nearly so.

Respectfully, your obedient servant,

(Signed) J. M. Chivington,

Member National Central Committee of the Soldiers' and Sailors' Convention.

To the President of the United States:

Capt. Geo. A. Armes of the Army of the United States has recently been tried by court-martial, and sentenced to be dismissed from the service.

The evidence was vague and contradictory upon which he was convicted, and can hardly be said to warrant a finding of guilty of the allegations. But we are satisfied that the whole matter has its origin in malice, and has no foundation in truth.

Major Armes is a most gallant officer, and has shown his bravery on many occasions. We respectfully ask that the sentence may be disapproved, and Major Armes restored to his position.

James W. Nye.
Luke P. Poland.
C. H. Van Wyck.
Lewis McKenzie.

I respectfully concur.

Amasa Cobb.

This officer is very highly recommended to me by gentlemen in whom I have the fullest confidence for his gallant services, both during the war and more especially during the Indian disturbance on the plains and in Kansas, and I ask for him the kindly consideration of the President, and that his meritorious services may be permitted to offset, as far as may be consistent, any irregularities that may be charged against him.

(Signed) E. G. Ross.

I concur.

(Signed) S. C. Pomeroy.

I know nothing of the facts, but hope this young man may have a hearing.

(Signed) John A. Logan.

I concur.

(Signed) R. S. Ayer.
(Signed) Wm. Milnes.

This is a case that ought to be reopened. There are strong reasons to believe that malice was at the foundation of this matter, and that this officer has not had a fair trial. I hope he may have justice done him.

(Signed) Sidney Clarke, M. C.

CHAPTER IX.

Washington, D. C., January 1, 1871.

I made the rounds New Year's, calling all day, and met many of my old friends whom I had not seen for several years; was snubbed by quite a number who, I thought at one time, were ladies, and who appeared as friendly and sociable as possible when I was an officer, but now, when I appear to be under a cloud, they seem ready to add another kick. My guests noticed the coolness displayed, but it made them more attentive to me, as they understood my case thoroughly, and nothing that could be said by anyone could change their opinion of me. If I had been in full uniform and on duty with the President I could not have received more attention than was given to me by Miss Minnie Sherman, who introduced us to a bevy of beautiful girls receiving with her. The Misses Mackey, daughters of Dr. Mackey; Miss Alice Bartley, daughter of Judge T. W. Bartley, whose mother is a sister to General Sherman, made my party feel at home and did all they could to make our visit as pleasant as possible, and so did Miss Julia Clephane, a sister of the Hon. Lewis Clephane, one of our leading and prominent citizens; also ex-Mayor M. G. Emory and his daughters, and the Misses Kidwell of Georgetown, the Misses Welch, Witherell, Woods, Newmans, Clarks, Polkinhorns were among those who made us feel like welcome visitors. It is now 12 o'clock, and after being assured by my friends of their enjoyment all day, we parted, to meet again soon, I hope.

January 2, 1871.

I have been in my office most of the day looking over old letters, bills and papers of last year, and find that of the nine officers against whom I filed charges at the War Department I have had the satisfaction of knowing that three have been court-martialed and convicted.

So I have no cause to complain when I consider the fact that I landed in this city without money enough to buy a change of clothing, disgraced and looked upon as an outcast by many who had been my pretended friends, but with the assistance of Judge Moore and Jesse Bright, whom I have mentioned heretofore as

taking me in their office, gave me encouragement and a good start in business, and the lady friends whom I mentioned as having called upon New Year's Day, set me all right in society, which braced me up with encouragement to persevere and seek redress from the officials in power to have the wrongs righted and render me the justice to which I am entitled. Members of Congress, Senators and other officials took a great interest in me socially, among whom I made many personal friends, as the extracts from a few letters submitted will prove. All the property that I had in the world had been sacrificed by me in trying to save my commission, except a few lots at the corner of Seventeenth and R streets, worth $5000, which I deeded to Judge Bartley, Stanton & Casey as their fees for taking charge of my case. They being big lawyers, naturally required big fees, but they earned all I gave them, and more, too, as they called on the President and Secretary of War, Judge-Advocate-General and many other officials in my behalf, making arguments and doing everything possible to have me restored. Finally, they made arrangements with Generals Grant and Belknap to have me reappointed as a Captain of cavalry on condition that I would withdraw the suit for $10,000 against the members of the court-martial pending at Leavenworth, Kan. Knowing I had a clear case and was sure to win, I at first hesitated, but upon their advice and explanation that it would put me right and in good standing before the world, and having made over $25,000 in my business since July, I felt as if I could easily sacrifice the $10,000 in order to have my record clear at the War Department, and therefore consented for them to go ahead.

Immediately after the said suit was withdrawn and dismissed Belknap sent for me and said, "I have decided to require your resignation before sending your name to the Senate for appointment as Captain in the Army." When I remarked that I did not see how it was possible for me to resign from a place I did not hold, he touched a bell and directed a clerk to write out a resignation, ordering him to leave it in blank, saying, "You sign that paper, Mr. Armes, and I can put the date in after you have been confirmed and commissioned." Upon the spur of the moment, without stopping to think of the predicament I would be placed in, I signed it in blank, but upon returning to my room began to consider the matter seriously, and felt that some underhanded means were on foot to use me in trying to stop the proceedings

at Leavenworth against the court-martial and save the War Department the scandal which that suit was liable to bring upon it. And feeling that it was only a trick and an excuse, and that I would be in a worse position in the end, being made to appear as if I could not remain in the Army, I immediately sent a letter requesting that the paper I had signed be returned to me.

Washington, D. C., January 4, 1871.

Hon. W. W. Belknap,
Secretary of War:

Sir—At the time when the President was about to send my name to the Senate, restoring me to my position as a Captain in the Army, you required me to deposit with you my resignation, with blank date, saying that otherwise I would not be nominated at all.

Under the compulsion of these circumstances, I was induced to do as you required, but I have since come to the conclusion that I committed an error in giving my resignation as the condition of my nomination. I therefore now withdraw my resignation, and if, in consequence of this, you should cause my nomination to be withdrawn from the Senate, I prefer that result to the present position of the matter. * * *

I have the honor to be, very respectfully,
Your obedient servant,
(Signed) GEO. A. ARMES,
Late Captain Tenth Cavalry.

Before the above letter had reached the Secretary of War my nomination had been sent to the Senate, but my letter recalling the blank resignation appeared to have offended the Secretary of War to such an extent that I was not confirmed, and soon discovered that the inducement offered to have me restored was only a ruse to get the suit at Leavenworth against the court withdrawn and dismissed. I immediately requested that a copy of any charges or reports that tended to reflect upon me be furnished in order that I might submit them to Congress for an investigation, which was refused and further correspondence with the War Department denied me.

Adjutant-General's Office,
Washington, January 10, 1871.

Mr. Geo. A. Armes,
Washington, D. C.:

Sir—I have respectfully to inform you that your application for a copy of all charges, specifications and reports on file against you

in this office is not favorably considered, and that the Department declines further correspondence with you on the subject.

It is proper to remind you that you are already familiar with all charges against you which have received official notice.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

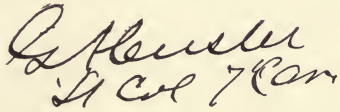
(Signed) E. D. TOWNSEND,
Adjt.-General.

The following letter addressed to an Army officer other than myself, is self-explanatory:

Fifth Ave. Hotel, New York, January 30, 1871.

My Dear Captain:

Being informed that Colonel Merrill while on duty as Judge-Advocate had solicited by letter, a fee from you for securing your acquittal, I very much desire a copy of this letter—or the original—to use in a certain quarter and hope you will kindly send it to me at your early convenience. Give me any further information you may have. I am, very respectfully,



While going on with my real-estate transactions I kept up a large correspondence all over the country, receiving letters of recommendation and endorsements from friends who desired to aid me in regaining my lost commission, among them the following:

March 8, 1871.

Hon. F. P. Blair, Jr.,
U. S. Senate:

Dear General—Permit me to introduce Capt. Geo. A. Armes, late of the Army, whom I well knew when serving on the plains as a gallant and efficient officer and a terror to the Indians. I know nothing of the charges which caused his dismissal from the Army, but have heard that they are of a trivial nature. Since my acquaintance with him I have never heard anything derogatory of his character. He desires your assistance in getting him restored to his former position, and should you, upon investigation of his case, find it as it has been represented to me, you will confer an obligation on me by giving your aid.

I am, most respectfully, your obedient servant,

(Signed) W. A. CARTER.

Mr. Belknap having failed to furnish me any copies of charges or anything that reflected upon my character on file in his office, I had to work somewhat in the dark, but in order that my resignation should not remain on file in blank I sent a second request for its return.

Of course no attention was given to it. In the meantime I got up a petition to the President of the United States, which was endorsed by those who had known me personally for several years, as follows:

Washington, D. C., March 4, 1871.

His Excellency, U. S. Grant,
President of the United States:

The Senate having failed to act on the nomination of Capt. Geo. A. Armes before the adjournment today, we respectfully request your Excellency to renew the nomination, as we are confident it will be confirmed at the present session. We feel great interest in the restoration of Captain Armes, as we know that he has been unjustly dismissed from the Army. The charge was trivial at best and the evidence contradictory, although it was plainly instigated by the malice of his accusers.

The faithfulness and good conduct of Captain Armes during the war, for which he was several times commended and promoted, and his upright character as a gentleman, entitle him to this act of justice at the hands of his country.

L. P. Poland.
Jno. C. Underwood.
F. E. Spinner.
A. M. McDonald.
J. B. Donley.
Jno. A. Smith.
Wm. Herring.
Jos. Casey.
T. W. Bartley.
O. H. Dockery.
Jno. A. Mitchell.
R. F. Van Horn.
Fred P. Stanton.
Sydney Clark.
Jas. H. Pratt, Jr.
Geo. P. Van Wyck.
W. P. Wylie.
R. M. Hall.
Amasa Cobb.
T. C. Theaker.
Saml. Ross.
B. F. Grafton.
Leroy R. Tuttle.
Geo. P. Fisher.
G. W. Sampson.
J. J. Johnson.
A. C. Bradley.
Geo. F. Wright.
S. H. Hoge, Jr.
Chas. O'Neil.
R. R. Butler.
Jacob C. Stevenson.
Leonard Myers.
C. H. Van Wyck.
Jno. Hill.
P. Filetus Sawyer.
J. Buffington.
Willis Musson.

Jno. Nye.	D. K. Carter.
W. D. Colt.	H. O. O'Connor.
Geo. Burgess.	W. B. Donoylien,
T. W. Ferry.	*New York Democrat.*
M. G. Emory.	Jas. Burr,
Chas. Ewing.	*Washington Chronicle.*
Allen Rutherford.	W. R. Collins,
J. S. Asper.	*Washington Star.*

I have known Captain Armes from his boyhood; he belongs to a good family, and has always borne a high character.

(Signed) S. B. Noyes.

I have the honor to state that if my name is sent up today I will abide by the decision of the Senate, and not again trouble the President.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

(Signed) Geo. A. Armes,
Late Captain Tenth Cav.

March 8, 1871.

Judge Bartley, Judge Stanton, Judge Casey and Judge Poland all called upon President Grant with the above petition and several strong letters, and after quietly listening to what my friends had to say, General Grant informed them that Mr. Belknap had stated that he would resign his office as Secretary of War before he would consent to my being restored to the Army, and he could think of no other resort but to apply to Congress and get a bill passed authorizing my restoration. I therefore had a bill introduced, which was referred to the Military Committee. In the meantime I received letters from Governor Harvey of Kansas, whom I helped to elect to his office; Judge Upsher, who was Secretary of Interior, endorsed by Treasurer F. E. Spinner, and also a letter from Hon. A. E. Garrett of Tennessee, the sentiments of which show that I had not lost their friendship on account of the action of the court-martial. I also submit one from General Sherman to his brother, which I requested him to write and which I have not had occasion to use in applying for any Government office, but secured his friendship and active co-operation and assistance as a Senator, who has since taken an active part in my behalf.

Headquarters Army of the United States,
Washington, D. C., April 3, 1871.

Hon. John Sherman,
U. S. Senate:

Dear Brother—The bearer of this, G. A. Armes, was an officer of the Army of good repute, but got into some scrapes that resulted in his dismissal. At this time I regard it as impracticable for him to regain his lost commission, but I know of no good reason why he may not undertake some civil affair or position, if he applies to you for assistance to this end. I know of no good reason why you should not give it.

Affectionately,
(Signed) W. T. SHERMAN,
General.

The following was from the Secretary of the Interior:

Washington, D. C., March 22, 1871.

Sir—I frequently met Capt. Geo. A. Armes on the plains in Kansas while he was in the military service.

He at all times bore himself like a gentleman, was neat and clean in his person and respectful in his manner. He always appeared devoted to and proud of his profession.

I hear with much regret the difficulty in which he has become involved, and join with his friends in the request that you will, if practicable, relieve him of the dishonor under which I cannot but think he is unjustly suffering.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,
(Signed) J. P. UPSHER,
Secretary of Interior.

The President:

Believing that Major Armes was unjustly removed from his position in the Army, and that he is a meritorious officer, I do hope he may be restored to his former position in the Army.

(Signed) F. E. SPINNER.

Having been dropped as a member of the Society of the Army of the Potomac on account of the action of the court-martial at Leavenworth, I could not but feel very sore, as we there had very interesting annual meetings and banquets, where we could meet each other and talk over the past. Being anxious to remain on the rolls, I sent a letter to Gen. George G. Meade, our President, for his views, to which he sent the following reply:

Headquarters Military Division of the Atlantic,
Philadelphia, May 1, 1871.

Geo. A. Armes,
No. 614 Twelfth street,
Washington, D. C.:

Dear Sir—Upon my return from an absence from home I find yours of the 27th ult. Under the constitution of the Society of the Army of the Potomac, your dismissal from the Army (whether just or unjust) would prevent your admission as a member. Should the Senate confirm your application this would be a reversal of the judgment of the court and would restore you to the status, rendering you eligible to election as a member of the Society.

Very truly, yours,
(Signed) GEO. G. MEADE.

The following is a portion of the correspondence in connection with charges and statements in relation to Maj. Lewis Merrill of the United States Cavalry, one of my principal persecutors in the Army, commencing immediately after the complimentary order of General Cooke was issued in relation to my successful raid and destruction of an Indian village, for which I was specially promoted over several hundred officers, causing Merrill to undertake to break me down through jealousy and envy, he being a graduate of West Point, and avoided running any risks of exposure during his whole career:

War Department,
Bureau of Military Justice, February 8, 1871.

Respectfully returned to the Secretary of War:

This person having recently been dismissed from the Army upon conviction of "Conduct unbecoming an officer and a gentleman," it is conceived that charges made by him against an officer of the Army in good standing, and presented in a general form, without specification or support, cannot be entertained by the Secretary of War. When the circumstances and details of the alleged offenses are fully exhibited, and the charges are so supported by the affidavits of credible witnesses (other than the writer himself), as clearly to indicate a *prima facie* case against the officer accused, the same may, in the opinion of this Bureau, properly be considered by the Secretary of War.

J. HOLT,
Judge-Advocate General.

Concurred in by the Secretary of War.
ED. SHRIVER,
Ins.-Gen.

The reader cannot help but observe from the endorsement of Judge Holt, the Judge-Advocate-General, that he was already prejudiced against me; therefore I could not expect justice or a

favorable opinion in the action of any case affecting me which was before him for investigation; and he had a great deal of weight with other officials who had a disposition to help me. Many were prejudiced by him until a personal investigation of facts convinced them that there was a conspiracy formed to force me from the Army, believing or feeling that I was too quick to notice the failings or dishonesty of officers.

December 31, 1871.

During the past year, in addition to the recommendations and correspondence submitted, events show that I took an active part in trying to defend myself against the persecutors who were determined that I should not be restored under any circumstances, but as my salary from the Government had to stop and I had no income from any source whatever, I gave a great portion of my time to real-estate transactions; was very successful in many, and was enabled to meet a good class of people, who became greatly interested in my behalf.

Hon. Frederic P. Stanton, attorney-at-law, 1303 F street, wrote:

Washington, D. C., May 27, 1871.

Gen. S. C. Pomeroy,
U. S. Senator:

Dear Sir—At the request of Capt. Geo. A. Armes I write this note to say that I have thoroughly examined the record of the court-martial which tried and dismissed him from the service, and am satisfied that great injustice has been done him. There was nothing developed in the whole case which in the slightest degree affected his honor and integrity. The charge on which he was convicted was, at the worst, only an indiscretion, which, even if he were guilty, ought not to have been punished so severely, but I am satisfied from the record of the trial, and also from my knowledge of the man, that he was not guilty, and that the whole prosecution was the result of malice and envy on the part of civil officers.

It is the universal testimony of leading officers of the Army that Captain Armes was a good soldier and distinguished for his energy and gallantry. I have talked with Major-General Hancock and some other officers on this subject, and derive my knowledge on this subject from them. I esteem Captain Armes as a gentleman of unusual freedom from the vices of young men in the Army, and I have no doubt he is well qualified for almost any civil employment he would undertake. It is with a view to some civil employment, as I understand, that he asks for this note. I have no hesitation in recommending him as worthy of confidence, in spite of the persecution he has suffered in the Army.

Very truly, yours,

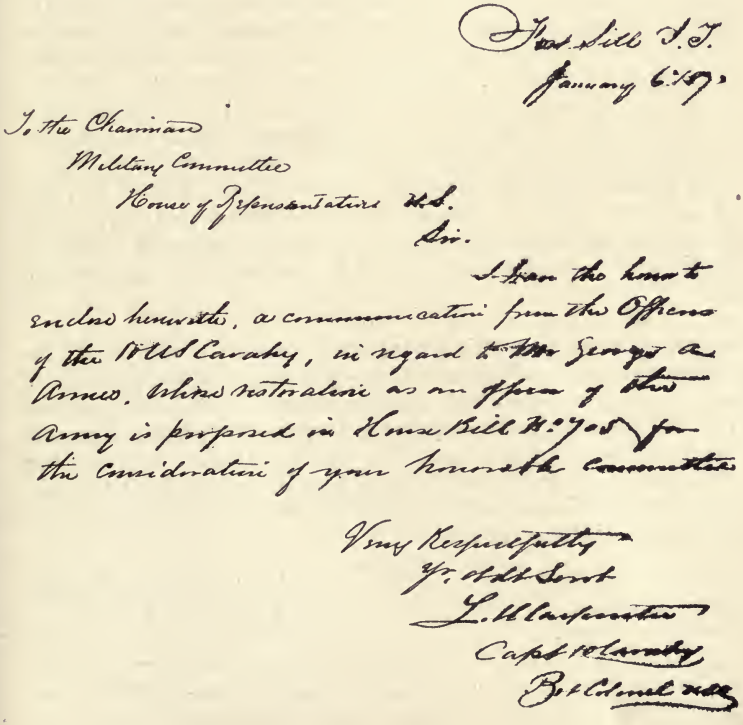
(Signed) Fred P. Stanton.

CHAPTER X.

January 1, 1872.

I drove my team around to the Arlington at 10 this A. M., when Mr. W. W. Batchelder, Judge Zering and Lieutenant Hardie got into my carriage, and we made New Year's calls. Of course we called on old friends and new acquaintances, as follows: The Misses Morgan, the Misses Larner and the ladies of the Cabinet, and made many other official calls.

Below are given samples of the efforts made by my enemies to accomplish my downfall:



Fort Sill, Indian Territory, January 3, 1872.

To the Honorable Chairman Military Committee,
U. S. House of Representatives,
Washington, D. C.:

Sir—Many of the officers signing this paper served for a number of years in the same regiment with the individual above mentioned, and they all know him intimately, personally or by reputation, and desire very respectfully to submit for the consideration of your honorable committee the following:

Mr. George A. Armes was formerly a Captain in the Tenth Cavalry, and he was notoriously incompetent for the position which he afterwards was dismissed from in disgrace by the sentence of a General Court-Martial for conduct unworthy an officer and a gentleman. He was incapacitated by want of education alone, being unable to write or even spell correctly, and a want of veracity and integrity of character in his ordinary dealings was apparent to those of his brother-officers who came in contact with him during the time that he remained in the service. Many of them, becoming disgusted with his general character, declined at length to associate with him, and, upon this, he afterwards raised capital and excited sympathy in some quarters by claiming that he was unjustly persecuted by his regiment, or that he was disliked because he came from Virginia. Both statements are entirely false and without foundation in fact. He received every consideration from his comrades until he no longer deserved anything at their hands.

In making the statements to your honorable committee the undersigned have confined themselves to facts which have become notorious, but they have been informed and believe that he was notorious for the same ungentlemanly and unofficer-like conduct in the Second U. S. Cavalry, where he served before joining the Tenth.

The officers signing this paper most earnestly represent that they have not been influenced by any vindictive spirit against Mr. Armes, or by any political reasons whatever in pursuing this course, but by the simple conviction that he is an unsuitable person to be commissioned as an officer in the Army. A number of them ranked him or were superior to him in grade, and all are desirous that these facts should be placed before you to forward the best interests of the service.

JOHN B. VAUDE VIELE,
Capt. 10th Cav.
P. LINDWELL LEE,
Capt. 10th Cav.
S. R. COLLODAY,
First Lieut. 10th Cav.
L. W. CARPENTER (Ret'd),
Capt. 10th Cav.
J. H. WALSH,
Capt. 10th Cav.
GEO. T. ROLINSON,
Capt. 10th Cav.

Jno. D. Myrick,
First Lieut. 10th Cav.
Silas Pepoon,
Second Lieut. 10th Cav.
S. L. Woodward,
First Lieut. and Adj. 10th Cav.
R. H. Pratt,
First Lieut. 10th Cav.
Wm. H. Beck,
First Lieut., R. Q. M., 10th Cav.
Thos. S. J. Spencer,
First Lieut. 10th Cav.
S. T. Norvell,
Capt. 10th Cav.
Thos. Little,
Capt. 10th Cav.
Alex. S. S. Keyes,
First Lieut. 10th Cav.
J. M. Kelley,
First Lieut. 10th Cav.
Chas. L. Cooper,
First Lieut. 10th Cav.
J. Will Myers,
Second Lieut. 10th Cav.
L. P. Hunt,
Second Lieut. 10th Cav.
Wm. R. Harmon,
Second Lieut. 10th Cav.
C. R. Ward,
Second Lieut. 10th Cav.
J. S. Morrison,
First Lieut. 10th Cav.

(Endorsement.)
Headquarters Tenth U. S. Cavalry,
Fort Sill, Indian Territory, January 6, 1872.

From what I know of Mr. Geo. A. Armes, formerly a Captain in my regiment, I consider him incompetent and totally unfit to be commissioned in the Army.

(Signed) B. H. Grierson,
Col. Tenth U. S. Cavalry.

At this writing only six of the officers who signed the above petition are now in active service in the Army, and if they were fully investigated I believe facts as to their character would be brought out showing they are unfitted to hold any place where a gentleman should be installed. That all but six of these officers have left the service in disgrace is comment sufficient.

During the month of February the State sociables were in full blast, each State trying to outdo the other in their grand entertainments with music and refreshments, dancing until sunrise in many instances. I will not forget the Illinois State Sociable, which gave a grand masked ball on February 14, 1872, and was attended by General Grant and most of the Cabinet.

I scarcely missed an evening during the social season from attending receptions, parties, weddings, balls, etc., among which I may mention a fine reception at Dr. Mackey's house, where I met the Hon. John Bozman Kerr, his wife and daughter, Miss Lucy Hamilton Kerr. The latter inspired me with special interest. I had a very pleasant conversation with her, and she gave me a cordial invitation to call, of which I assured her I would avail myself.

Among the friends with whom I made social calls during the months of February and March were General Barry of Mississippi, who finally became engaged to and married Miss Kate Thyson; Dr. Patterson; General Ryan of Cuban fame; Captain Collins, General Garrett, General Leach, Colonel McCarthy, William Dangerfield, Colonel Maish, Mr. Pulitzer (now of the *World*) and many others.

In 1871 I made the acquaintance of a young newspaper man named A. H. Dowell, Jr., of North Carolina, who was interested in the *Washington Transcript* with Mr. Grady, and we worked together in political matters for some months, and after receiving the following letter I bought out his interest in the paper:

Raleigh, N. C., July 2, 1872.

Col. Geo. A. Armes,
Washington, D. C.:

My Dear Sir—I am so situated I cannot return for several days, and regret it exceedingly, and wish you would favor me by letting my note, due on the 30th, be extended thirty days further, as I have had to meet some debts here and am troubled financially. I enclose you a letter from my friend, Mr. O. D. Barrett. Please call and see him, and write me the results.

Your friend,
(Signed) A. H. Dowell, Jr.

317 4½ St., Washington, D. C., July 12, 1872.

A. H. Dowell, Esq.:

Dear Friend—Ingersoll showed me your letter relating to the *Transcript*. Went to the office several times before I saw Grady. He wants $5000 for his interest, and is trying to convert it to an evening daily, and wants a stock company, with a capital of $50,000. The paper, as it is, is representing $5000 of the $50,000, the balance, $45,000, to be paid up to the extent of fifty cents on the dollar. With a few thousand dollars you can control the whole thing, taking a majority of the stock. A big thing can be made out of it if Horace Greeley wins, and it looks that way now. If you can command money you had better come on and post me in full, and I can work this into your hand.

Yours truly, in haste,
(Signed) O. D. Barrett.

I got control of the *Washington Transcript* and took a great interest in politics, advocating General Hancock for President, and attended the Baltimore Convention in his behalf, but soon

found that Horace Greely had the inside track there and that it was impossible to pull General Hancock through. I felt that it was a great mistake to nominate Mr. Greely, and believing he could not be elected, I supported General Grant, writing many letters in reply to correspondents, of which the following will show the general scope of my views at that time:

Washington, D. C., June 20, 1872.

Dear General:

On inspecting the enclosed slips (clipped from newspapers) you will see that you hold a foremost place in the minds of some of the best and ablest men in the country, who would like to see you occupy the highest position in the gift of the American people. I propose to take an active part in the Baltimore Convention, and if you will consent to let your name be used for that high trust I am convinced that you can get the Democratic nomination, and, if nominated, would make a clean sweep over the field. Without the Democratic nomination Mr. Greeley will be helpless and will withdraw, leaving the race between yourself and General Grant. Mr. Greeley giving you his support, gives you two in the race, with seven chances in ten that you are the next President.

I shall never forget the many kindnesses you have shown me, and if I cannot repay you in one way I will in another, and let you see that I am a true friend to him that stands by me in my troubles, and I assure you that you will never have cause to regret anything you have ever done for me. I am connected with friends of yours who will go together for you in a unit for our next President.

Hoping to hear from you soon, and that you will allow your name to be used. I remain, respectfully,

Your obedient servant and true friend,

GEO. A. ARMES,

Late Captain, U. S. A.

To MAJ.-GEN. W. S. HANCOCK,

St. Paul, Minn.

My Virginia friends were under the impression that in case I could not secure the nomination of General Hancock I would naturally espouse the cause of Mr. Greely, and the *Virginia Sentinel*, owned and edited by Col. Mott Delaney Ball, who had been Captain of my company before the Rebellion, and who had been captured at the slave-pen, with thirty-five of his men, in 1861 in Alexandria, became enraged at me, and made a fierce attack in his issue of Friday evening, October 18, 1872, coming out in large heading on the front page, "For President, Horace Greely of New York."

The editorial was as follows:

"A Great Accession.—'Colonel' Geo. A. Armes, having kept out of the newspapers for an incredibly long time (for him)—indeed, ever since the Saratoga tournament that he got up last summer, with the aid of the plow horses, etc.—has at last found a sheet willing to do itself the honor of reviving him. The *Huntington Man*, a new journal, fired with emulation, publishes a long letter from the 'Colonel,' setting forth what he knows about Grant's being the greatest man that ever lived. This Colonel Armes (so-called) is a fair exemplification of the causes that drive some men to the Grant party. He was at the Baltimore Convention a strong Hancock man, and busily engaged in 'lobbying' for that ticket. His advocacy did his man as much good as it will do here. Afterwards he became interested in and one of the publishers of the *Washington Transcript*, about as red-hot a Greeley journal as the canvass has seen. Finding the paper could not sustain itself by the vigor of its proprietary brain, or, what is more likely, having purchased his interest with the view of a political speculation, he at once applied to Mr. Greeley for a 'little testimonial,' in order to run the valuable 'machine' in his favor. Mr. Greeley did not see it in that phase of illumination in which it appeared to the 'Colonel,' and declined. Hence, doubtless, the advocacy of Grant and the long letter."

I immediately replied editorially in my paper, and the reply was copied in other papers throughout the South, as well as in Northern papers, reminding Colonel Ball of his having been caught asleep with his company at the slave-pen, which shut him up from any further attacks upon me. I said:

"Recriminations are in bad taste, yet we cannot refrain from commenting upon the vituperative leader of the *Virginia Sentinel* of October 18, 1872, wherein its accomplished editor is pleased to make free use of the name of the gentleman mentioned, detracting from the honorable distinction, ironically accorded by it, yet caused and merited, as can be substantiated by documentary evidence, accusing him of insincerity and of pursuing the course of action he followed from interested motives. It will take a more alert leader than that referred to to catch Colonel Armes while sleeping on his post. The asperity displayed, intended, no doubt, to show the *Sentinel's* zeal in the cause which it has espoused, indicates a jaundiced condition, doubtless due to the certain impending defeat of the Greeley party in the ensuing election. General Hancock has been a warm personal friend of Colonel Armes during and since the war. Hence it was natural that the Colonel should advocate the General's cause. It is hardly to be presumed that so accomplished and astute a politician as the editor of the

Virginia Sentinel can appreciate the situation, yet we can see the justness of the acknowledged diversion of the Colonel as an act, dictated by pure friendship, which, when found to be available, was cast aside, and the cause of General Grant, as the true and patriotic side of the political question, has since received his undivided support."

I have always felt that my judgment and my political course at that time was fully vindicated by results, and I will dismiss the subject.

My business matters, social functions and political affairs did not prevent me from still looking after my Army matter, and the more I thought over the trick played upon me by the War Department, which had induced me to withdraw the suit against the court-martial at Leavenworth, the more anxious I was to get my case further investigated. I wrote to Col. George H. English, my attorney, who replied on April 4 that "the Statute of Limitations had barred any further action in your case against General Sturgis et al. for false imprisonment."

The following petitions were adready before the appropriate committee of the legislative branches of the Government:

Washington, D. C., February 16, 1872.

Hon. John Coburn,
Chairman Committee, etc.:

Sir—We have the honor most respectfully to present to you the request that you consider favorably the H. R. bill No. 705, authorizing the restoration of Capt. Geo. A. Armes to his former rank in the U. S. Army. We are personally acquainted with Captain Armes and know him to be a gentleman above reproach. The charges against him are as false as trivial and the court-martial sentence not in accord with right and justice, in behalf of which we make this appeal.

Your petitioners will ever pray.

(Signed)

Jos. Casey.
T. W. Bartley.
Saml. B. Lauffer,
U. S. A.
Edw. P. Doherty,
Late U. S. A.
A. C. Widdecombe,
Late U. S. A.
Jas. T. Leary,
Late U. S. A.
F. E. Spinner.
Fred P. Stanton.
L. Z. Tuttle.
Geo. K. Walbridge,
Late U. S. A.
Allan Rutherford.
B. F. Grafton,
Late U. S. A.
D. K. Carter,
Chief Justice Supreme Court D. C.

JNO. K. SULLIVAN,
Late U. S. A.
CHAS. E. MALLAN,
MARK BROADHEAD,
WM. HERRING,
Late U. S. A.
CHAS. F. RAND,
Late U. S. A.
W. HELMICK.
J. W. WRIGHT.
S. W. JOHNSTON.
A. W. D. WYLIE,
Late U. S. A.
GENERAL BURNSIDE.
J. B. DONNELLY,
Late U. S. A. and M. C.

I am satisfied that Major Armes should not have been dismissed from the service. I have known him for some years, and am free to state that respect for great personal bravery and good service demand that he be restored.

(Signed) CHAS. EWING,
Late of the Army.

I have known Major Armes for some time and I concur in the request for this restoration.

(Signed) T. T. CRITTENDEN,
Late of the Army.

I have known Major Armes since early in year of 1861. I knew him to be a moral young man and at various times heard him complimented by President Lincoln for gallant services. He, being very young during the war, was looked upon by Mr. L. as a marvel for daring courage. I earnestly join in the request for his restoration to his rank in the Army.

Respectfully,
WARD H. LAMON.

Washington, D. C., June 14, 1872.

I have known Major Armes since 1864, and while I am not familiar with his case, I can state that I knew of no acts on his part to change the confidence I have always felt in him. Justice should be given him.

M. I. LUDDINGTON.

To the President of the United States:

Present:

Pardon me while I submit the following to your consideration and ask your interference in my behalf:

Let me premise that I am the Capt. Geo. A. Armes, late of Tenth U. S. Cavalry.

Your Excellency will recollect I was court-martialed and sentenced to be dismissed the service, but, you believing the whole matter did me an injustice, nominated me to the Senate for reappointment; but, Congress adjourning without acting on appoint-

ment, it availed me nothing. Since that time I have submitted my case to Congress for their action, and in consequence of their early adjournment it will not be acted upon this session. I am therefore thrown back upon my own resources.

As I am innocent of the charges upon which I was dismissed, I feel it due to my honor and past services to vindicate myself, and I feel confident of the sympathy of your Excellency and all honest-thinking people. And as I am compelled to stay here during the summer and the setting of the Congress next fall and winter in order to accomplish my purpose (unless your Excellency will re-nominate me to the Senate to my former rank), I would like to be earning my living.

I therefore respectfully ask that you give me some civil appointment in and about this city as special agent, or something same as Major Belger had while he was vindicating his character.

I ask this of your Excellency that I may be enabled to vindicate myself. I am, your obedient servant,

GEO. A. ARMES,
Late Captain, U. S. A.

I concur in recommending Mr. Armes for some position, without expressing any opinion as to the judgment of the court-martial.

JOHN A. LOGAN,
U. S. S.

JOSHUA HILL,
U. S. S.

I cordially concur in the opinions and recommendations of the appointment of Captain Armes to office.

CHRIS. C. COX,
Board of Health.

I carefully examined all the papers and evidence in Captain Armes' case, and I was fully satisfied he was wrongfully convicted and dismissed.

LUKE A. POLAND,
M. C.

I have not examined the case of Captain Armes, and therefore I do not know anything about it; but sign this paper upon the testimony of Mr. Poland.

JOHN F. LEWIS,
U. S. S.

I sympathize with the Captain, and hope he may be protected.

J. W. FLANNAGAN,
U. S. S.

I endorse this application, satisfied that Judge Poland is convinced of the wrong done Captain Armes.

FREEMAN CLARKE,
M. C.

I have reason to believe that Major Armes has been hardly dealt with, and join in recommending him to some position.

H. WILSON,
U. S. S.

ALEX. RAMSEY,
U. S. S.

JAMES W. NYE,
U. S. S.

N. P. BANKS,
M. C.

S. C. POMEROY,
U. S. S.

F. E. SPINNER,
Treas. U. S. A.

F. A. SAWYER,
U. S. S.

L. Z. TUTTLE,
Asst. Treas. U. S. A.

W. T. JONES,
M. C.

If you will comply with Captain Armes' request I will consider it a personal favor.

POWELL CLAYTON,
U. S. S.

WM. HELMICK,
Judge.

J. H. SYPHER,
M. C.

JNO. C. UNDERWOOD,
Judge.

I concur in the recommendation of Senator Wilson and others, and hope Major Armes may be given some appointment.

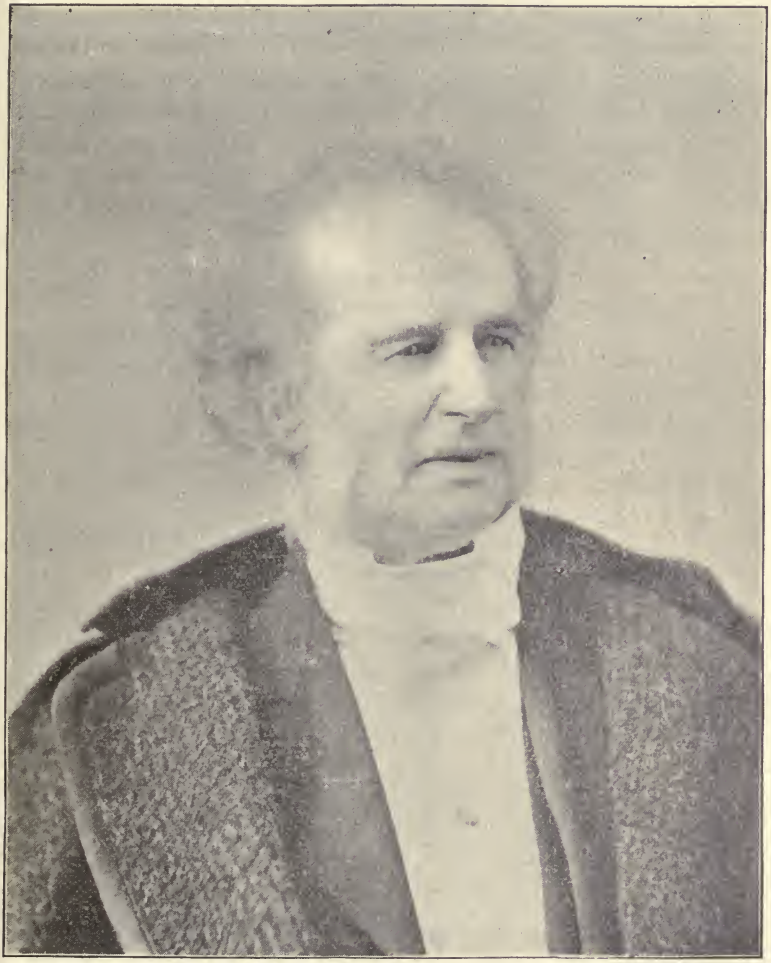
JAS. H. PLATT, JR.,
M. C.

FRANK MORREY,
M. C.

Being satisfied nothing could be done with the Secretary of War or the President, I took my summer vacation, meeting many relatives and friends, which proved beneficial to my health and financially, as I carried through several large transactions, and upon my return to Washington consulted my attorneys, introducing a bill for my restoration, which was referred to the Military Committee of the House for investigation and report. I continued to receive a great many letters enclosing descriptions of property to be placed in my hands for sale, and among my customers was Moses Kelly, a large real-estate owner and banker, with whom I had made a great many large transactions of financial benefit to both of us.

Saratoga Springs, N. Y., July 29, 1872.

After breakfast, between 11 and 12 o'clock, Commodore Vanderbilt, Gov. John T. Hoffman, Hon. Smith Ely, Mayor of New York; Gen. G. S. Batcheller of Saratoga, N. Y., and Gen. H. H.



COMMODORE VANDERBILT.

Wells, ex-Governor of Virginia, and Governor T. G. Alvord of Syracuse were all sitting on the veranda discussing horsemanship, when Governor Hoffman remarked that the Northern men

made better cavalrymen than the Southerners. I took exceptions to this at once, and after a short discussion, in which all seemed to take great interest, I suggested that he invite fifty young men from New York or any other Northern State he wished, and I would invite fifty young men from Virginia, Maryland and the District of Columbia and have a tournament, and pledged myself to crown the Queen of Love and Beauty and more maids of honor with my fifty young men than he with his fifty, or I would pay all expenses. Commodore Vanderbilt jumped up from his chair at this challenge, offering to furnish passes for all the knights to and from Saratoga. The proposition was immediately taken up, and we organized the following-named temporary committees:

COMMITTEE ON ORGANIZATION.

1. Gen. G. S. Batcheller, Saratoga, N. Y.
2. Dr. W. J. Lewis, New Orleans, La.
3. Col. Francis Copcutt, New York.
4. Col. D. F. Ritchie, Saratoga.
5. Capt. D. F. Judson, Saratoga.
6. Col. Geo. A. Armes, Washington, D. C.

COMMITTEE ON DECORATION.

1. Mitchell Bros., Saratoga.
2. Col. C. J. Van Horn, Philadelphia.
3. Messrs. Bennett & McCaffrey, Saratoga.
4. Mr. E. Reynolds, Connecticut.

THE TOURNAMENT.

"Grand Field Day at Glen Mitchell—Large Attendance—Lots of Sport—Saratoga, Her Beauty and Her Chivalry—A High Old Time.

"The elements conspired against 'the chivalry' of New York, Canada, Virginia, Maryland and Washington, but they conspired in vain. Sir George Armes said there should be no postponement on account of a little rain, and all the knights said, 'So mote it be,' and so it was. At 4 o'clock the knights assembled at the Grand Central Hotel, armed to the teeth and in full armor clad. Their gallant steeds, borrowed mostly from Saratoga agriculturists, pranced and neighed until the young ladies on the piazzas of the

Col. Geo. A. Armes and his Knights.

hotels went wild with excitement. Carriages were ordered out immediately, and forthwith Broadway was lined with equipages en route to the Glen. On account of the lateness of the hour, the cavalcade was postponed, the knights, with Marshal Armes and his aides, galloping briskly to Glen Mitchell, where Hon. James W. Huested, the orator of the day, in a few appropriate sentences, spoken from the judge's stand, welcomed the Knights of the South to a friendly trial of skill with the Knights of the North.

"The honors were as follows:

"R. C. Gwynn, Knight of Washington City, 9; E. M. Jackson, Knight of Fairfax, 8; T. E. Allen, Knight of Ontario, Canada, 9; R. Wallace, Knight of Marlborough, 7; J. F. McGregor, Knight of 'My Maryland,' 7; E. P. Gwynn, Knight of Baltimore, 6; W. H. Johnson, Knight of Troy, 9.

"The column of figures indicates the number of rings taken by each knight three tilts. It is but justice to state that some of the best riders were unfortunately afflicted with most awkward equines. And yet the general effect was quite inspiriting. The attendance of distinguished people was very large. The grounds were thronged with splendid turnouts. Among the carriages was that of Commodore Vanderbilt, occupied by the Commodore and his wife, and we noticed on the judge's stand Mr. Frank Leslie, Hon. James W. Husted, 'Eli Perkins,' E. O. Perrin and others, and large numbers of the elite occupied the elegant equipages and the grand stand. Considering the untoward circumstances and the powerful (?) opposition of some jealous churls in Saratoga, it was a very notable success, and we think that next year the Saratoga tournament will be still more of an event. It is due Col. Geo. A. Armes, who started the enterprise, to say that he labored manfully, but almost single-handed, in getting it up.

"The assemblage in the evening was one of the finest that Saratoga has seen this season. The attendance was large and brilliant, and the ceremony of crowning the Queen of Love and Beauty and her maids of honor was a fine spectacle. Each knight was introduced in turn by Mr. E. O. Perrin, who pronounced the title, in the order given above, the first crowning the Queen, and so on through the list. The chosen Queen of Love and Beauty was Miss Lillie Washington of Washington, who is, we believe, one of the nearest descendants living of the family of Gen. George Washington. Miss Washington was elegantly dressed in light-blue silk, court train, white Swiss overdress trimmed with the same, hair in chatelaine braids and curls. The maids of honor were Miss Jennie Miller of Brooklyn, Mrs. E. P. Smith of Saratoga, Miss Annie Morgan of New York, Mrs. E. J. Lewis of New Orleans, Miss Mary Donnington of New York, Mrs. Hicks (Sophie Sparkle) of New York.

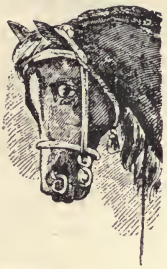
"After the coronation Mr. E. O. Perrin delivered the address, paying a high compliment to the Queen, her ladies and their chivalric knights. It was a very handsome effort, and was received with much enthusiasm. The address was followed by a grand promenade."

The whole press gave for several days all kinds of accounts of the tournament, as it was such a novelty to Saratoga. The duel also added considerably to the excitement of the visitors and residents. Being in the heart of the season, Saratoga was crowded, and the news of the duel went like wildfire and was the general topic of conversation. The circumstances were these: Mr. Gwynn, one of the finest-looking and most gallant knights at the ball, danced oftener with Miss M——— of New York than Mr. Frank Lord approved of, and he became very jealous, cautioning her not to be seen with that "young Virginia guerrilla" any more. Instead of Miss M——— objecting, she immediately told Mr. Gwynn that Mr. Lord had accused him of being a guerrilla and did everything he could to prevent her further acquaintance with him. Mr. Gwynn immediately reported the fact to me, when I told him I would assume the responsibility, and for him to go ahead and pay no attention to Mr. Lord's remarks. I immediately called upon Mr. Lord, demanding an apology and explanation to Mr. Gwynn in the presence of Miss M———. Mr. Lord declined to apologize. I therefore called on my friend, General Thomas, who took a note to Mr. Lord, and it was arranged for us to meet at sunrise next morning near Glen Mitchell and settle the affair in a gentlemanly way. General Thomas acted as my second, and I at once fixed up my affairs and packed my trunk, not expecting to return alive, as it was reported that Mr. Lord was one of the best shots at Saratoga; that he had been a sportsman at Saratoga, and took delight in displaying his skill by shooting a ten-cent piece with a bullet, every shot hitting the mark at ten paces. I had had a little practice myself, and was in the habit of snuffing a candle by firing at the blaze at a distance of fifteen to twenty feet, never touching the candle, but in most every instance putting out the blaze, and considered myself a pretty good shot. Under the circumstances I did not hesitate to meet Mr. Lord according to agreement, but after waiting on the ground for over one hour, to my great delight Mr. Lord and his second failed to show up. Then I returned to the hotel to inquire of their

Awaiting My Antagonist.

whereabouts. I was informed that Mr. Lord had been suddenly called to New York, and had left on the midnight train to attend to urgent business requiring his personal attention, taking with him his horses and carriages and servants. The duel, therefore, did not take place, but I was blamed by many and called the fiery young Colonel from the impetuous South who had challenged to mortal combat an inoffensive citizen of the frigid North.

After all the fun was over I furnished carriages for the boys to go sightseeing and enjoy themselves, and entertained them to the best of my ability, and, although it was understood and agreed by Commodore Vanderbilt, Governor Hoffman and others that all expenses should be paid by them if their side lost, my part came to $2240, and their expenses ran up into the thousands. None of us, however, regretted the expense, as it gave general satisfaction to us all, and the fact that my Southern boys crowned the Queen of Love and Beauty and four maids of honor out of the seven made me feel amply repaid for all my expenditure and troubles.



Grand Tournament.

Virginia and Maryland v. New York.

Chief Marshall,

Col. GEO. A. ARMES.

Aids:
Hon. A. J. ROGERS, New York.
FRANK LORD, New York.

Aids:
HARRY WRIGHT, Washington.
IKE COON," New York.

Ass'l Marshalls:
Col. D. F. RITCHIE, Saratoga.
Dr. W J LEWIS, New Orleans.

Aids:
Capt. W. W. FRENCH,
Dr. J. C. McEWEN.

Aids:
JAS. S. MORSE, Baltimore.
WM. W REARDON, do

Judges:

JOHN P. CONKLING,
R. H. SOUTHGATE,
CLARENCE KILMER,
MILO J. JENNINGS,
ISAAC SHERWOOD,

Maj. I. A. ROSEKRANS,
Capt. G. C. BYRNE,
Capt. B. F. JUDSON,
Col. W R. JOHNSON,
Mr. M. E. DeRIVAS.

Orators of the Days, at Glen Mitchell:

Hon. JAMES W. HUSTED, Peekskill, Westchester Co.
Hon. SMITH ELY, Jr., of New York.

Evening--Poem:

ELI PERKINS, of New York,
In the Grand Union Hotel Ball Room.

KNIGHTS' names will be given on a separate Programme at commencement of the exercises.

DAILY SARATOGIAN PRINT

SELECT

TOURNAMENT BALL,

AT THE

GRAND UNION HOTEL,

SARATOGA,

Wednesday Eve., Aug. 14, 1872.

Mr. ..... **and Lady**

are respectfully invited to witness the Crowning of the Queen of Love and Beauty, and her six Maids of Honor, also to participate in the evening exercises.

Compliments of .....

Committee of Arrangements:

Gen. G. S. Batcheller, - Saratoga,
Col. G. A. Armes, Washington, D.C.
Hon. C. H. Adams, - - - Cohoes,
Hon. I. V. Baker, Washington Co.,
Hon. Wm. Johnson, - Seneca Co.,
Dr. W. J. Lewis, - New Orleans,

Floor Managers:

M. Landon, - - - - New York,
Capt. W. P. Jarvis, - - Boston,
W. M. Smith, - - - New York,
Hon. Smith Ely, - - New York,
Hon. G. H. Mitchell, - - Saratoga,
Geo E McOmber - - Saratoga.

Prof. MANUEL, Master of Ceremonies.

Committee on Invitation:

Com Vanderbilt, - - New York,
Hon. J. T. Hoffman, - New York,
Hon. Fernando Wood, - New York,
Hon. A. McDonald, - Arkansas,
J. H. Breslin, Esq., - - Saratoga,
Gen. H. H. Wells, - - - Va.,
Hon. H. B. Anthony, U. S. S., Del.,
Hon. A. W. Palmer, - New York,
Hon. S. Ainsworth, - - Saratoga,
Gov. T. G. Alvord, - - Syracuse,
Col. Francis Copcutt, - New York,
Eli Perkins, - - - - New York,
H. S. Powers, - - - New York,
A. H Grachall, - - - New York,
Hon J H. Graham, - New York,
Hon. Wm S Dickinson, New York,
Judge I. S Spencer, - Syracuse,
Mrs. Pitman, - - - - Newport,
Hon. I. V. Baker, Jr., - Wash. Co.,
Hon. Wm. Johnson, - Seneca Co.,
Hon. Smith Ely, - - New York,
Hon. Jarvis Lord, - - New York,
Hon. H. V. Twombly, New York,
"Ike Coon," - - - - New York,
Capt. W. P. Jarvis, - - Boston,
Col. W. G. Grant, - - New York,
Mr. I. Sherwood, - - New York,
Hon. A. J. Rogers, - New York,
Mr. DeRivas, - - - New York,
Hon. J C Jacobs, - Brooklyn,
Hon D P. Wood, - - Syracuse,
A. X Parker, - - - - Potsdam,
Hon James Wood, - Genessee.
J. M Handley, - - New York,
"Sophie Sparkle, Evening Mail,
Miss Grandy, - - N. Y. World.

The above-named gentlemen have signed their names, or authorized me to use them in connection with the Tournament, and they are assigned as the Committee on Invitation.

Geo. A. ARMES, Chief Marshall.

Music by Mollenhauer's Orchestra.

The invitations were gotten up so as to have only those present who were invited by name, which made it a very select affair, and the guests were composed of the best people of New York and the other States of the Union.

It happened that Miss Morgan of New York, who had presented me with a beautiful silk sash, drove up by the side of my horse while I was at the head of my procession and handed me her yellow silk umbrella as it commenced to rain, remarking, "Do not let your silk sash be spoiled," and upon the spur of the moment I raised the umbrella, and the papers had to comment upon my action. But such a grand affair has never been at Saratoga before or since, and everyone was pleased and gratified, and will long remember the victory of the Southern boys. I remained in Saratoga ten or fifteen days, attending the hops at the different hotels, which occurred almost every evening, meeting many of the most fashionable and most finely dressed ladies of the country on those occasions. Among them were Mrs. Morrissey, who expressed much gratitude to me for allowing her son to ride at the tournament, and I had the pleasure of dancing two sets with her at the Grand Union. She was gorgeously dressed, her diamonds alone costing more than $100,000.

On my return to Washington I stopped over at Albany, N. Y., one day, meeting many of my old friends, among them General Farnsworth.

After my return to Washington I made several large transactions in real estate, and as soon as Congress met called on General Morey of Louisiana, who had charge of my military case, and was giving it every attention. General Barry of Mississippi proved to be a strong friend to me and appreciated my introducing him to Miss Katie Tyson, to whom he became engaged. At the close of the year I wrote:

"I have had a very eventful and pleasant year, and not allowed my troubles to worry me in the least. I have had enough to encourage me greatly, financially and socially, having cleared over $8000 in business, besides my losses in loaning money, speculations and expenses. Many invitations were extended me for State sociables, which were given by almost every State upon different occasions during the year. The victory I won at Saratoga and the intended duel made me quite a repute upon these occasions."

CHAPTER XI.

January 1, 1873.

Dr. Turpin, General Barry and General Ryan accepted my invitation to go New Year's calling with me this morning. My diary for the day included the following:

"We were highly entertained and welcomed by all, and my friends at their parting assured me they appreciated the entertainment as one of the best they had ever had, and at 12 we parted to meet again soon." Little did I then dream of the tragic death awaiting General Ryan.

As soon as Congress met I appeared before the committee, and soon discovered that it was impossible to have my bill passed restoring me to my full rank as a Captain in the active service. I therefore entered into a compromise with the committee to accept an honorable discharge with one year's pay. The committee said there would be very little trouble in passing the bill in that shape, and after that I would be in a better position to get what I was entitled to. The chairman of the committee further explained that there was such opposition at the War Department against my restoration that it would be a difficult matter to have a bill passed. Under the circumstances I thought it best to accept the proposition. General Morey, with his sub-committee, having thoroughly investigated my case, made the following:

House of Representatives, Forty-second Congress, Third Session.
Report No. 19.

GEORGE A. ARMES.

January 10, 1873.—Ordered to be Printed.

Mr. Morey, from the Committee on Military Affairs, made the following report (to accompany Bill H. R. 3372):

It appears from the record of the court-martial which dismissed Captain Armes that a considerable portion of the important testimony which was relied on was given by Capt. Charles G. Cox, Tenth U. S. Cavalry, who was, within two months thereafter, himself dismissed the service, cashiered, and sentenced to be fined and confined in a penitentiary. His evidence was contradicted point-

blank by another witness, and a portion of his evidence is conclusively shown to have been false. But there is nothing in the record, so far as can be judged from a careful examination thereof, that, according to military usage, justifies the sentence that was imposed. * * *

The bill then went to the House, and, after discussion, passed without a dissenting vote.

It had been subjected to the most thorough investigations of any case, perhaps, ever before Congress. It then went to the Senate and was referred to the Committee on Military Affairs. No sooner did Belknap become apprised of this than he, without being called upon for advice or suggestion, transmitted an official letter, which General Logan, the chairman, afterwards handed to me, as follows:

War Department,
Washington City, January 11, 1873.

Hon. John A. Logan,
Chairman Military Committee,
United States Senate:

Sir—I have the honor to direct your attention to the bill, H. R. 3372, which passed the House of Representatives yesterday and was submitted to the Senate, which in its direct terms directs the Secretary of War to give to Geo. A. Armes, late Captain Tenth U. S. Cavalry and Brevet Major, U. S. A., an honorable discharge from the service of the United States, to date June 7, 1870, and provides that said Armes shall be paid the same pay and allowances as if he had been discharged under the provisions of the third section of an act making appropriations for the support of the Army for the year ending June 30, 1871. I must officially protest against the passage of this bill, and would request that you call at this Department and examine the record in Mr. Armes' case, or, if that is not convenient, it can be sent to you upon a request to that effect. I am satisfied that upon a full examination of this record you will deem it the duty of the Committee on Military Affairs of the Senate to report adversely upon this resolution.

Very respectfully,

Wm. W. Belknap

Secretary of War.

This appeared to have very little effect in the end, as the bill was referred to Senator Clayton, now Minister to Mexico, who, after thorough investigation, made a favorable report, which was unanimously agreed to by the committee. In the meantime I obtained the following letter from General Coburn, chairman of the House Military Committee, who had so thoroughly investigated my case and passed it favorably, to Hon. O. P. Morton, the Senator from his State, in order to secure his assistance:

Washington, D. C., January 25, 1873.

Hon. O. P. Morton:

Dear Sir—I am requested to call your attention to the case of Capt. Geo. A. Armes, who was unjustly dismissed from the service, in my opinion.

The case was passed upon in the House, and met the approval of the Committee on Military Affairs and the House.

I think it has merits, and if you can find time I wish you would look at it.

Yours truly,

(Signed) JOHN COBURN.

I found it necessary to secure letters of introduction to several other Senators that they might become interested in the matter and offset the powerful influence of the War Department. Considering the reports, which explain themselves, and letters from a number of friends and acquaintances, many of whom had known me from boyhood, makes it unnecessary to go further into detail.

I continued my real-estate business during the year of 1873, becoming interested with Gov. A. R. Shepherd, Moses Kelly, John O. Evans and many of the largest capitalists in this city and throughout the country.

The following details which explain my success should be given, as a great many people were surprised and often wondered how I could keep so many fine horses, entertain, visit the watering-places, when it was generally known that I had not a dollar when I landed in Washington after my dismissal from the service, and in order that the reader may see that I was straightforward in my transactions, examples of my deals are given herewith:

Being successful naturally induced many large owners of property to place their affairs in my hands. Among these was Mr.

Paulus Thyson, one of the wealthiest gentlemen of the District of Columbia, who desired to dispose of square 444 on Seventh street, and authorized me to sell it for $35,000 as a whole. I figured the number of feet and priced it at fifty cents per foot, which amounted to $74,662.50. Returning to him, I suggested that instead of paying me the regular commission he give me authority to put my own price on it, and that he give me all over $50,000, when he seemed thunderstruck and stated that a number of brokers had been offering it for $35,000 and could not get a buyer. He seemed to think it would be impossible for me to sell it for any such enormous price. After a short argument, he agreed to let me have all over $50,000 and I immediately began to hunt customers. I brought Mr. Wheatley, one of the largest lumber dealers, and Mr. A. R. Appleman, who was largely interested in brick-kilns and vice-president of the Citizens' National Bank, together, suggesting that they buy the whole block between them, and after going through the details they decided to take it at fifty cents per foot, and I immediately closed the deal, taking in part payment certain properties, which was satisfactory to Mr. Thyson, and which gave me for my share $24,662.50, closing the transaction satisfactorily all round.

I afterwards took the Woodmount tract, containing about 2400 acres of land near Hancock, Md., and Berkley Springs, Va., putting a force of men to work getting out tan bark and ties; established a large grocery store there; bought several canal-boats and mules to run them back and forth to Georgetown, and would bring down boatloads of bark and ties and take back groceries and stores for the farmers.

By the 1st of January, 1874, figuring up my profits and speculations for the year of 1873, I found that I had made $63,000 in my business. Mr. Appleman and Mr. Wheatley were perfectly satisfied with their great bargain, and Mr. Appleman afterwards sold half of his portion of the block to Senator Hamilton of Maryland for $1 per foot, just double what he paid for it. Mr. Wheatley built a number of houses, which sold and rented at an immense profit. This proves that general satisfaction was given all around, including Mr. Thyson, who got $15,000 more for the property than he had been asking before placing it in my hands for sale.

The following is a sample of my correspondence during the year:

The following is a letter sent the President offering my services to avenge the death of General Ryan and his party, who were captured on the *Virginia* and taken to Cuba and murdered by the Spaniards:

Washington, D. C., November 17, 1873.

Gen. U. S. Grant,

President of the United States:

Sir—I have the honor to request authority to organize a command to avenge the death of those unfortunate men who have just been butchered by the Spaniards, who naturally supposed they would be held as prisoners until it was proven they had committed some offense justifying the inhuman punishment they received, or, at least, until arrangements had been made for their liberty, or they would have fought until the last one died before surrendering. As they were on the high seas, sailing under the American flag, they are justified in not showing resistance when overhauled, but naturally tried to escape from being captured and the embarrassment of ever being held as prisoners; but from my personal acquaintance with a few of the party, I do know if they had been on Cuban soil they would not have surrendered under any circumstances, or expected leniency from either Government. I am ready to organize a command of young, able and experienced veterans, who can take the field within fifteen days. I have no one but a father and brother to mourn my death, and they would rather see me die leading a gallant command on to victory than live suffering the disgrace of dismissal from the Army, while my true friends know the charges were without the slightest foundation.

Trusting, Mr. President, that you will grant this authority, I remain, Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

GEO. A. ARMES,
Late Capt., U. S. A.

CHAPTER XII.

January 1, 1874.

I made up a party this morning consisting of Colonel Maish, Judge Zering and Captain Howe and made the best of my usual New Year visits, bidding my friends good-bye, this being my last day to call as a bachelor. After a full day of enjoyment, we parted at half-past 11, and I have returned to my quarters. After the assembling of Congress I appeared before the committee of the Senate which had my bill before it for action, and found a great deal of opposition, not only from the War Department, but from those of the Tenth Cavalry whom I had never recognized as gentlemen while in the regiment, feeling myself above them.

The following is one of the letters from Secretary Belknap to Senator Powell Clayton of the Senate Military Committee, written for the purpose of trying to defeat favorable action:

War Department,
(1228.) Washington City, February 16, 1874.

Hon. Powell Clayton,
U. S. Senator:

Sir—In reply to your letter of the 9th inst., I beg to inform you that Geo. A. Armes was nominated to be Captain, U. S. Army, December 21, 1870. The nomination was sent to the Senate after all the court-martial proceedings in his case had been submitted and passed upon by this Department.

He is the same Captain Armes who was dismissed by sentence of General Court-Martial June 7, 1870. The Senate took no action upon the nomination.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

WM. H. BELKNAP,
Secretary of War.

The following are copies of letters from officers of good standing, who proved their friendship in offering me assistance in my efforts to secure justice:

Washington, D. C., January 14, 1874.

Geo. A. Armes,
Late Capt. Tenth U. S. Cavalry:

Dear Sir—* * * I met you at Fort Lyon, I. T., several times during the last half of the year 1868 on occasions of my periodical

pay tours, which involved brief sojourns at that post. I neither saw nor heard anything derogatory to your good private character. On the contrary, my recollection places you among those officers at the post whose personal conduct was exceptionally good. I never had occasion to learn of your character for general efficiency, but recollect well that you were reputed a brave man and a fine horseman. * * *

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

(Signed) C. L. LARNED,
Paymaster, U. S. A.

Washington, D. C., January 19, 1874.

Hon. Jno. A. Logan,
Chairman Committee on Military Affairs,
U. S. Senate:

Sir—I have known George A. Armes, late Captain Tenth U. S. Cavalry, personally since April, 1867. Have always found him to be a gentleman of good habits and honorable bearing. From those officers who served with him during the late war I have learned that his record was very good. He is certainly deserving and ought not to have his military record and future prospects blighted by the sentence of a court-martial, actuated and influenced by personal considerations, as I am satisfied the court that tried Captain Armes was.

I hope your Committee will give his case a careful investigation.

With great respect, your obedient servant,

B. F. GRAFTON,
Late U. S. A.

Washington, D. C., January 21, 1874.

Captain G. A. Armes:

Dear Captain—I learn you are trying to set yourself right before a congressional committee for the purpose of brightening the record which has been unjustly sullied. For the past ten years I have been personally acquainted with you, having served with you in 1863, and from that time to this have ever esteemed you as a gentleman. As to your military record, that is already recorded as one of the brightest in our history. That you have been cruelly wronged we truly believe, and I earnestly hope you may be righted. If any word I can say for you will be of service to you, you are privileged to use this, and as to my standing I refer to the honorable Senator from Texas, Flannagan.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

CHARLES F. RAND, M. D.,
Late U. S. A.

The letter of the Secretary of War dated January 11, 1873, to General Logan influenced the Senator to such an extent as to cause him to make an adverse report on my bill, which had passed the House and was before him as chairman of the Senate Military Committee, without any investigation being made by his committee. Supposing that would end the matter, the Secretary of War felt highly elated, believing that he had defeated my prospects for an honorable discharge, and although he did defeat it for that session, I waited until the reassembling of Congress, when I presented a petition.

The chairman of the Senate committee immediately brought my case before the full committee, and it was referred to Senator Clayton, who made the following report:

Your committee are well satisfied that the charges were preferred through motives of jealousy and revenge, and the proceedings show that there was a determination on the part of those officers who instigated the prosecution to have Armes dismissed at any cost.

It has been shown beyond a doubt that Captain Armes was a brave and gallant officer. He was mentioned in General Orders by Gen. Philip St. George Cooke, United States Army, and congratulated by letter by Maj.-Gen. Winfield S. Hancock, and recommended for promotion for energy and gallant and meritorious conduct on several occasions, both during the rebellion and in campaigns against the Indians, and was promoted Captain from a Second Lieutenant, and made a Major by brevet.

Gen. C. C. Augur, Gen. Nelson A. Miles, Gen. N. B. Buford, Gen. B. H. Grierson and a number of other Army officers bear testimony to the high character and efficiency of Captain Armes.

Numerous statements from responsible and well-known citizens also show that Captain Armes was considered an upright and honorable man by those who have known him longest and best.

Your committee report back the bill without amendment, and recommend its passage.

It was adopted unanimously, and the bill passed the Senate. Going to the House, it was re-examined again by a new committee and passed and went to the President, who referred it to the Secretary of War, as mentioned, who sent the following letter in order to defeat it if possible:

War Department, June 1, 1874.

To the President:

Sir—I have the honor to return herewith the Act (Senate 249) providing for the honorable discharge, with a year's pay and allowances, of Geo. A. Armes, late Captain Tenth Cavalry.

Geo. A. Armes was dismissed as Captain Tenth Cavalry by sentence of court-martial June 7, 1870. Numerous applications to the President and Secretary of War for the reopening of the case have been declined, but in December, 1870, the President directed the reappointment of Captain Armes, on condition of his tendering his immediate and unconditional resignation. He was accordingly nominated December 21, 1870 (having previously placed his resignation in the hands of the Secretary of War), but was not confirmed by the Senate prior to its adjournment. The many papers presented to the Department by Captain Armes since that date have been placed on file without action. This Act provides that Captain Armes shall "be paid the same pay and allowances as if he had been discharged under the provisions of the third section of the Act of July 15, 1870." He could not have been discharged under that act June 7, 1870, nor prior to the date it became a law, July 15, 1870, as it was not retroactive in its operation. The official circumstances of his case are entirely against the favorable action as provided for in the act, and the relief granted thereby is viewed as establishing a very bad precedent. The foregoing are viewed as objections and reasons why the Act should not receive the approval of the President. The Secretary of War, before leaving for West Point, directed the preparation of this letter as expressive of his views in reference to the case of Mr. Armes.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

(Signed) H. T. Crosby,
Chief Clerk.

After as thorough and careful an investigation of my case as was ever made before the committee, a unanimous report was made, and the House bill which had passed in 1873 was brought before the Senate and unanimously passed, giving me an honorable discharge, as set forth in the following special order of the War Department:

Special Order No. 136.

War Department, Adjutant-General's Office,
Washington, June 19, 1874.

(Extract.)

1. Capt. George A. Armes, Tenth Cavalry, dismissed the service by General Court-Martial Order No. 36, June 7, 1870, from Headquarters of the Army, Adjutant-General's Office, is honorably discharged the service, to date June 7, 1870, by the following Act of Congress:

"An Act authorizing and directing the Secretary of War to give to Geo. A. Armes, late Captain Tenth United States Cavalry, an honorable discharge, to date the seventh day of June, eighteen hundred and seventy.

"*Be it enacted by the Senate and House of Representatives of the United States of America in Congress assembled,* That the Secretary of War is hereby authorized and directed to give to George A. Armes, late Captain Tenth United States Cavalry and Brevet Major, United States Army, an honorable discharge from the service of the United States, to date June seventh, eighteen hundred and seventy, and that said George A. Armes be paid the same pay and allowance as if he had been discharged under the provisions of the third section of the Act entitled 'An Act making appropriations for the support of the Army for the year ending June thirtieth, eighteen hundred and seventy-one, and for other purposes,' approved July fifteenth, eighteen hundred and seventy.

"J. G. BLAINE,
"Speaker of the House of Representatives.
"MATT. H. CARPENTER,
"President of the Senate *pro tempore.*"

Received by the President May 28, 1874.

(Note by the Department of State.)

The foregoing Act having been presented to the President of the United States for his approval, and not having been returned by him to the House of Congress in which it originated within the time prescribed by the Constitution of the United States, has become a law without his approval.

When I applied for pay under the law the following endorsement was put on my paper:

Adjutant-General's Office, June 19, 1874.

Respectfully referred to the Paymaster-General. In his acceptance of original appointment in the Army as Second Lieutenant Second U. S. Cavalry in 1866 Captain Armes gave his residence as Annandale, Fairfax County, Virginia. His station June 7, 1870, was Camp Supply, I. T.

(Signed) THOMAS A. VINCENT,
Asst. Adjt.-Gen.

Major Vincent knew my address was Washington, D. C., and not at either place mentioned in his endorsement. This proves his treachery, which has been continued towards me ever since. Could meanness descend to lower depths?

The following correspondence further elucidates the events of the year 1874:

Leavenworth, Kan., June 29, 1874.

Maj. Geo. A. Armes,
Washington, D. C.:

Dear Sir—Permit me to congratulate you on your vindication of yourself, as I see by the *Army and Navy Journal* of June 20, p. 710, that you have been successful in obtaining your honorable discharge. No one rejoices more than I do in your success, which you deserve. God bless you and continue your prosperity.

Your friend, sincerely,
E. N. O. CLOUGH.

Treasury of the United States
Washington, July 11, 1874.

Dear Sir:

It is said that Falsehood runs miles before Truth can draw on its boots to overtake it.

In your case, Truth was very tardy in getting on her boots, and she travelled mighty slow afterwards, but made, though a long while about it, sure amends for the blunders that Falsehood had heaped upon you.—

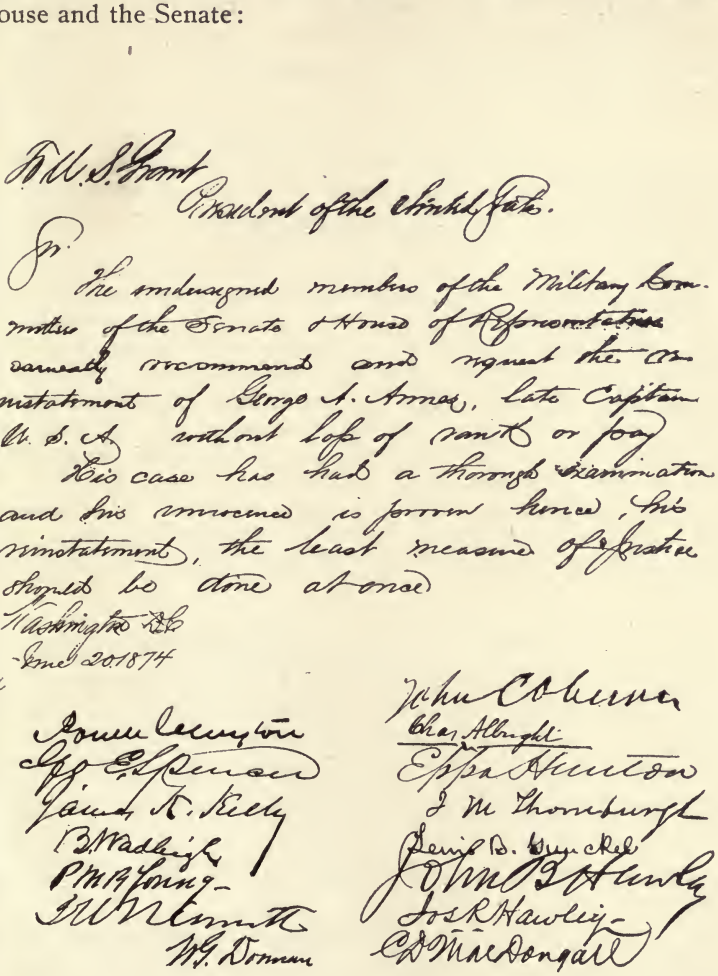
Even your friends, who ought to have known better, failed to close their ears against calumnies; but you stand to-day vindicated, not only before your friends, but before your enemies, and before all the world besides.—

You have my hearty congratulations.—

Truly your friend,
E. [illegible]

Capt. George A. Armes,
Washington, D. C.

Shortly after my case was thoroughly settled, the records were corrected so as to show I had an honorable discharge and the stigma of my dismissal wiped off, I applied to the President for renomination to my position as Captain, enclosing the following recommendations of the Military Committee both of the House and the Senate:



The President failing to act on the above, I took my summer outing, visiting my Woodmont farm, stopping over at Berkley Springs for a short time, at the same time transferring my real-estate business, and finally, purchasing a lot on Tenth street, I arranged to give up my bachelorhood and go to housekeeping with a partner. On the 14th day of October, 1874, I surprised my friends by getting married to Miss Lucy Hamilton Kerr, the following notice appearing in the *Evening Star:*

"Wedding in the First Ward.

"Col. George A. Armes, formerly of Fairfax County, Virginia, late of the United States Army, and now one of our successful real estate agents, was married yesterday morning at 10 o'clock to Miss Lucy H. Kerr, eldest daughter of the Hon. John Bozeman Kerr of this city. Colonel Armes is the young officer complimented in general orders and breveted Major in the regular Army for leading a charge at Hatcher's Run in 1864. Again mentioned in general orders, and brought to the notice and approval of General Grant, he was specially promoted in 1866 for capturing and destroying a village of hostile Indians in Dakota. On the staff of Maj.-Gen. W. S. Hancock during a portion of the rebellion, and successfully engaged with the Indians in 1868, this young officer was recommended for brevet Lieutenant-Colonel, U. S. Army both by General Hancock and General Sherman. The Colonel and his bride left in an early train yesterday for the North, and they carried with them the best wishes of many warm and true friends."

Immediately after my marriage a number of my friends escorted me to the Baltimore & Potomac Depot, where I took the train for Niagara Falls and a number of other resorts. Major Flagler, a brother of the late General Flagler, Chief of Ordnance, a custom-house officer on duty at Niagara Falls, who, with his wife, called upon myself and bride and took us in their carriage to all the places of interest at the Falls and in Canada. His kindness I shall never forget, as I was a stranger in that part of the country then.

Shortly after my return to Washington from my bridal tour I went to housekeeping at 714 Tenth street, where I established my office and carried on large transactions in real estate.

At the time of my marriage I was the owner of fourteen houses, the Woodmont tract, a hundred acres of land in Kentucky, a number of building lots at Huntington, Md., and a small piece of land

near Muirkirk Station, Md., in addition to $25,000 in stocks and bonds, making me feel more independent in worldly matters than I did when I arrived in Washington four years before without a dollar; and during the fall of 1874 I laid my plans to commence with Congress for restoration to my former rank in the Army.

Boonville, Mo., August 24, 1874.

Friend Armes:

Yours of the 17th inst. has been received. I imagine that you must be having a good time and enjoying yourself at that great pleasure resort, Saratoga.

My Maryland farm is for sale. Five thousand five hundred dollars will purchase it just as I left it, with a number of farming "requisites." I have a colored man living on the place to take care of it. This is less money than it cost me ten years ago, besides what I have spent on the place since. Anyone who desires a farm in the vicinity of Washington cannot get a better bargain for the amount of money.

The extreme hot weather that has prevailed here all summer has cut crops short throughout the State, and the prospects for business of all kind is anything but flattering.

I hope you may succeed in finding me a purchaser for the farm.

My family are all well.

Yours, very truly,

A. C. Widdecombe.

"Murderous Attack—Bold Attempt to Rob a United States Paymaster—Captain Irwin, Fifth Cavalry, Shot.

"Denver, Col., September 10, 1874.—A special to the *News*, from Hugo, Col., contains the following:

"A bold attempt was made at River Bend this morning to rob the United States Paymaster, Major Brooks, as he was going from the train to the camp of the Sixth Cavalry, about three miles from River Bend, to pay the troops. He got off the western-bound train early this morning, and was met at the station by Captain Irwin and Lieutenant Witmore of the Sixth Cavalry, with an ambulance.

"When a short distance from the station the ambulance was halted by two men on foot, who were masked. Three shots were fired by them from a shotgun, loaded with buckshot, one charge taking effect in Captain Irwin's back. At first his injuries were considered slight, but he has since commenced bleeding internally, and is now spitting blood. Another shot was fired by the robbers from a pistol, the ball passing across Major Brook's lap and through Mrs. Roberts' hand, making a painful wound.

"Lieutenant Witmore fired his pistol at one of the robbers, named G. W. Graham, formerly a Captain in the Tenth Cavalry at Fort Leavenworth. The ball passed through his body, just below his heart, and he is dying. The other robber, John Dick, formerly keeper of No. 1 Stage Station on the Atchison, Topeka & Santa Fe Railroad, escaped, but the cavalry are after him."

The following letter will show on what familiar terms I stood with the writer:

Headquarters Army of the United States,

Washington, D.C. Aug 28 1874

E. A. Ames,
Congress Hall -
Saratoga

Dear Ames

Yrs of Aug 20. is rec'd
I am just back from
Woodyoke — The Entire
lot is 115 feet X 315 —
House No 205. is 28 x 50
with back building 4
Stories & basement with
16 large Rooms & Away

Number of Closets — 4

Stable can accommodate

4 horses & 2 Carriages

House 207. is 32 ft front

4 Stories about 20 Rooms

with innumerable Closets

&c &c — Stable holds

4 Carriages & 10 horses

The original purchase

was 65 000 — I added

a new Hall & back build-ing

at 13.000 than expended

otherwise a couple thousand.

Have rented to Pruth

House No 205. at 150 a

month lease terminates on

the 1st of March or October

at the pleasure of either party.

My House will be vacant

Oct 15–20th

Yrs

W. T. Sherman

CHAPTER XIII.

After breakfast on January 1, 1875, I drove to the Arlington and invited Mr. Morris, Judge Zering and General Ross to make New Year's calls with me. We kept up until 9 o'clock, when I parted with my guests, who expressed themselves as having greatly enjoyed their drive.

During the month of January I overhauled and fixed up my house with all modern improvements and made it as comfortable as possible, expending more to remodel it than it would have cost to build a new house. My mother-in-law, Mrs. Kerr, who at first thought it was impossible to fix over an old house, finally inspected it and congratulated me for having made such a cozy place.

Mr. Waterman Palmer, a very wealthy gentleman who had purchased a large amount of property in Georgetown, entrusted his property and many of his claims to me to look after. His family seemed to take a great interest in my wife.

An agreement with General Negley is only one of the many transactions that I had with him while he was in Congress. Mr. Palmer paid him $3000 down to bind a bargain, and he immediately transferred that amount to me, my fee being $5000 in all.

I quote from my diary:

January 15, 1875.

Went to the Capitol today; had a very satisfactory interview with General Coburn, chairman of the Military Committee of the House; General Hunton, General Hawley of Connecticut and Mr. Hawley of Illinois, who assured me that they will do everything they can in my behalf, and I feel that I can rely upon them to make a favorable report on my bill; also saw Governor Shepperd about the Palmer trade, and Mr. Thyson and Moses Kelly.

January 16, 1875.

Met Judge Zering at the Arlington and Colonel Markland at the Ebbitt, then called on Generals Leech, Negley and Morey at the Capitol, who have taken a personal interest in my bill and assured me they would vote for it. General Leech and General Negley called on Belknap in my behalf, but got no satisfaction.

January 20, 1875.

Called on Mr. Ward, one of the most reliable real-estate abstracters in the city, and he fixed up the title for Moses Kelly and the Negley property, which transactions we had closed, amounting to $44,000.

January 21, 1875.

Mr. Eaton called on me last evening and made a proposition about his railroad switch, which I accepted. I paid him $2600 for his interest. Negley is also interested.

February 1, 1875.

The following are copied from the records now on the files of the War Department, duplicates being filed in the Houses of Congress:

Washington, D. C., February 11, 1875.

Hon. W. W. Belknap,
Secretary of War.

Sir—I demand that you substantiate the statement made to the chairman of the Committee on Military Affairs of the House of Representatives, dated "Fort Sill, Indian Territory, January 7, 1874," and transmitted by you to the Senate January 28, 1875. or retract same.

Respectfully, etc.,
GEO. A. ARMES,
Late Captain, U. S. Army.

Extract from Diary.—February 11, 1875.—General Coburn showed me the petition that General Davidson had sent him, dated Fort Sill, January 7, 1874, which worked me up so that I immediately rushed around among my friends, who signed the following petition as an off-set to sustain me in opposition to the petition gotten up by Davidson. I also sent a copy of it to the Secretary of War, and one to the House, and one to the Senate, with the request that they be copied and put on file with the official records of Congress.

[House of Representatives. Forty-third Congress, Second Session. Mis. Doc. No. 108.]

GEORGE A. ARMES. Papers transmitted to the Committee on Military Affairs, in the case of George A. Armes.

February 19, 1875.—Referred to the Committee on Military Affairs and ordered to be printed.

Washington, February 11, 1875.

To the Honorable Chairman Military Committee
of the House of Representatives:

We, the undersigned officers of the United States Army, now in Washington, and who personally know Capt. G. A. Armes, late of the Army, cheerfully join with his citizen friends and ask that he be reinstated to his former position as Captain in the Army. From what we know or have heard, we can say he is a gentleman above reproach.

Wm. Thompson,	W. H. Slater.
Captain Seventh Cavalry, U. S. A.	A. W. Adams.
Chas. T. Larned,	Fred. Koones.
Paymaster, U. S. A.	John L. Kidwell.
Edgar Van Horn.	Wm. G. Moore.
L. B. G. Miller.	Moses Kelly.
Robt. A. Phillips.	
J. F. Brodhead.	F. Spinner.
Fred. P. Stanton.	S. W. Johnston.
Geo. R. Walbridge,	Jos. Casey.
Late United States Army.	

The undersigned has known Captain Armes for some years, and though he has no knowledge of the special causes which resulted in his leaving the service, cannot but believe that a misconception of his character was the cause. Captain Armes, to my personal knowledge, is a brave, capable officer and a gentleman.

A. J. Dallas,	John Fletcher.
Major Twenty-third Infantry.	A. R. Appleman.
L. R. Tuttle.	A. Hart.
J. F. Evans.	Otis Bigelow.
Allan Rutherford.	J. T. Coldwell.
G. T. Chase.	Brainard H. Warner.

"Washington, February 11, 1875.

Sir—I have seen the petition which you and a few others, under date of Fort Sill, January 7, 1874 (5), have addressed to the honorable chairman of the Military Committee of the House of Representatives. The object of this malignant paper is to do me a wanton injury, but in the end it will fail of its intended effect. As for yourself, the evidence of your cowardice displayed during the war of the rebellion is on record; and the slanderous paper you have handed with your name, and no doubt instigated your associates to sign, is only the natural emanation of a base character.

Major Schofield is a weak-minded man, easily influenced by such as you. He is kept in place by the influence of relatives who happen to be in official position, and is naturally a toady. But that he should play that part toward you adds degradation to his insignificance.

Surgeon F. L. Town, Captain Carlton, Captain Beach, Captain Lawson, Captain Keys, Captain Norvell, and Captain Viele are persons whom I do not remember ever having seen. As I know nothing of them I presume they take their impressions of me, not from any knowledge of their own, but from your false representations. Capt. L. H. Carpenter is not to be depended upon by anyone who knows him. For his true character I refer to the officers of the Sixth United States Cavalry. Captain Kennedy is an Irish blackguard, who, within the last year, was arrested by the police of this city, and taken to the central guard-house for insulting ladies in the street. Lieut. J. M. Kelley is a weak and simple-minded creature, kept in the Army by relatives. He is not competent to earn a support in civil life. Smithers, Woodward, Orleman, Myers, and Van de Wiele are low-bred individuals, and I would take no notice of any of them if I did not feel it my duty to expose to the public the character of your instruments—the men whose names you have procured to your false and libelous petition. You know that you utter a falsehood when you state that you are acquainted with me, and that I am unfitted for a commission in the Army; also when you allege that I am unworthy in consequence of deficiency in education, intellect, morality, and the qualities necessary to constitute an officer and a gentleman; and when you say I was so illiterate that I could not indite the most ordinary official or personal communication without making it apparent in the diction and the spelling; when you allege maladministration in the affairs of my company you are guilty of an unmanly lie, which you aggravate with your natural malignity when you attribute the alleged failure to an unevenly balanced mind. You lie when you say I made no effort to vindicate my character in 1868 at Fort Riley, Kans., when a set of Army loafers, like yourself, were trying to crush me, and you well know the absolute falsity of the charge made against me in the court-martial to which you refer with so much malignity. You reach the lowest depths of hypocrisy and lying when you pretend that you act from a sense of duty to the Government and the Army in making the above false charges, when you must be conscious, if you have any conscience at all, that you yourself deserve the fate which so justly befell your worthy comrades and associates, Cox and Graham.

I defy you to substantiate the statements you have made in your infamous petition. No one knows better than you that it was false testimony which put me out of the Army. The president of the court, Col. Sam. Sturgis, was a drunken loafer, and any other action could not be expected from him, as it would be vain to expect from you anything honorable or truthful.

GEO. A. ARMES,
Late Captain and Brevet Major, U. S. A.

J. W. DAVIDSON,
Lieutenant Colonel Tenth Cavalry, U. S. A."

War Department, Washington City, February 13, 1875.

Hon. John Coburn,

Chairman Committee on Military Affairs,

House of Representatives:

Sir—I have the honor to transmit to you for the consideration of your honorable committee a copy of a letter received by me from Geo. A. Armes, late a captain in the Army. His letter refers to a communication made by me to the Senate (Senate Ex. Doc. No. 21, Forty-third Congress, second session) transmitting a petition of officers protesting against his reappointment in the Army. In sending forward the petition I remember that "the Department concurs in the views expressed in this petition," and in order that no misunderstanding may arise as to the meaning of this language, I beg to state that I agreed with those officers that "either through personal knowledge or testimony of others we are satisfied that he is utterly unfitted for a commission in the Army," and my knowledge, personal and otherwise, is based upon the record of a general court-martial dismissing Armes from the service, upon the testimony of the Army officers who have signed the petition in question and upon his personal bearing and action before this Department since his dismissal. As to the facts which the petition sets forth as occurring elsewhere, I wish to say that my knowledge is, of course, confined to the statements of the petitioners as far as they may be supported by the records of the Department.

A copy of the petition referred to was sent by me to the House on the 28th ult. and referred to the Committee on Military Affairs on the 3d inst.

Very respectfully,

W. W. BELKNAP,
Secretary of War.

I enclosed a copy of the foregoing letter with the following:

Washington, D. C., February 16, 1875.

Colonel Nolan or Lieutenant Davis:

Please forward through the gallant and manly Adjutant of the Tenth U. S. Cavalry the enclosed opinion I publicly express of those who think they have ruined me. I sent the original to the Secretary of War, and enclose this copy for those who are interested to sleep over, get drunk over or think over, just as they feel inclined. I think Davidson must have been hard up for names when he had to get seven creatures whom I don't know and who I think never saw me. Tell them I say "Go ahead;" they are welcome to all they can make on me, and the future will show for itself.

Yours truly,

GEO. A. ARMES.

P. S.—Please acknowledge receipt, etc. If there is anything I can do for you here let me know.

The most powerful of my antagonists returned to the assault with the following:

War Department, Washington City, February 20, 1875.
Hon. John Coburn,
Chairman Committee on Military Affairs,
House of Representatives:

Sir—In reply to your letter of the 19th inst, requesting on the behalf of the Committee on Military Affairs of the House of Representatives that all papers on file in the War Department relating to the standing of George A. Armes, late Captain, U. S. Army, as an officer, be transmitted to the committee for its information, I beg to say that these papers are quite voluminous and of such a character that they could not be copied within a short period. In my opinion it would not be consistent with the public interest to permit the originals to pass out of the possession of the Department for a reason which I can, if desired, explain to you personally. But I shall be most happy to show all the papers and records in question to the committee or to any member thereof who may be chosen for the purpose.

Very respectfully,
(Signed) Wm. W. Belknap,
Secretary of War.

I now resume my diary:

February 20, 1875.

Met General Coburn at the Capitol, who showed me the letter from General Belknap protesting against his favorable action on my bill, but proving himself my friend by allowing me to keep the letter. He will pay no attention to it, as he is satisfied that I am being persecuted.

Shortly after my reply to the petition sent in by Colonel Davison and others the officers of the Tenth Cavalry got up a scurrilous affidavit, which was sworn to by a negro named William Johnson, who could not read or write, and had it fixed up by these officers and forwarded to the committee with the hope that they might be influenced to report against my bill, but after a thorough investigation it was thrown to one side with other scurrilous and false representations.

February 23, 1875.

While at the Capitol today General McDougal of New York, who had always been my friend while in the field and ever since, while in Congress, handed my papers to me in order that I might get them in print.

February 25, 1875.

While looking through the morning papers before breakfast I noticed the death of my brother's mother-in-law, Mrs. Beard, and after breakfast Lucy and I went up there to tender our services.

March 4, 1875.

After breakfast Lucy and I went to see Senator Alcorn of Mississippi, then to the Capitol, where I was admitted to the floor of the House and watched the old Forty-third Congress die, standing near Speaker Blaine during his short address to the House, thanking it for the honor of retaining him as Speaker for six years. I never saw a man receive such tremendous applause as Blaine when he announced "the House is adjourned." Tears came in his eyes, he was so affected, and hundreds came to congratulate him and bid him good-bye. It was a great sight to witness the sad expression on each member's face as he left his seat, many never to return.

March 15, 1875.

Sent off a large number of my printed documents with my reply to Davison's petition to the officers of the Army throughout the country.

March 22,1875.

Closed a large transaction with Mr. Gilbert and Waterman Palmer of property in Chicago, receiving a commission of $1300.

March 27, 1875.

After breakfast I called on Senator B. F. Rice at his office on Fourteenth street. He and his wife and I drove out to look at some houses, and they seemed very much pleased with one on Corcoran street. The Senator is one of the friends of my bill.

Baltimore, Md., April 14.

I made quite a deal here today with Mr. Gilbert, and have taken four houses in the transaction. Met Senator Hamilton and Charley Kerr, my wife's uncle, who married Miss Ella Johnson, youngest daughter of Reverdy Johnson. I have been very handsomely entertained while in Baltimore.

April 18, 1875.

Lucy and I attended St. Matthew's Church again this morning. We have not missed a Sunday since our marriage. We usually meet Colonel Berrett, one of the principal members. Senator Kernan and family of New York are also members of this church and occupy a pew near us.

April 30, 1875.

Sold Mr. Gibson of New York a house on Corcoran street, receiving a commission of $550.

Hancock, Md., June 24, 1875.

I have found it necessary to make a visit to my farm here, and have been very busy all day with my foreman, Mr. Hall, going over it. He has not made it very profitable to me so far. This afternoon I visited Berkley Springs and met quite a number of Washingtonians who were spending the summer there, among them Judge Wright, who owns a cottage.

July 12, 1875.

Took a drive with Orville Grant, the President's brother, this afternoon. He is very anxious to purchase my trotting horse, Frank.

July 15, 1875.

Took Commissioner Johnson of the customs driving this afternoon and introduced him to Fred Grant, who has purchased considerable property lately. Mr. Grow, Fred Grant and myself went out to look at the houses.

July 19, 1875.

I had a long talk with Fred Grant today with regard to his houses; also took Mrs. General Boynton to see one of them; then introduced Max Wilder to Fred Grant, and tried to get him to purchase the Fifteenth-street house. While on the drive we met General and Mrs. Capron, and this afternoon Fred Grant and I called on Mr. Wilder.

August 1, 1875.

Last night we had quite a tea party at the house. I sent for Dr. Muncaster and my wife's mother and Aunt Ray, who were all called, and this morning my little girl was born at 10 o'clock.

August 24, 1875.

After I returned from market this A. M. Mr. Kelly called and paid me $1400 cash for lot 5 in square 465 on Mr. Ward's abstract of title.

October 17, 1875.

I rented one of Col. Fred Grant's houses on Vermont avenue today for $50 per month, and had quite an interview with Senator Vance and Governor Sheppard, with the latter of whom I am interested in large real-estate transactions.

November 6, 1875.

Senator Hitchcock of Nebraska and I drove out to look at property this afternoon and had a long talk. He became very much interested in my case. I also took Secretary Bristow of the Treasury Department to see Mrs. Gen. Morgan L. Smith's house, for which she wants $8000 rent. Finally, after a little discussion in regard to what Secretary Bristow thought was an enormous rent, he agreed to take the house.

It would not have been in accordance with human nature had I not read with interest the following, which has just reached me:

(*Colorado Miner and Advertiser* of Friday, October 22, 1875.)

The *Pueblo Chieftain* says: A gentleman from Rosita who was present at the capture of Major Graham states that Graham begged so hard to be released, offering to go back to penitentiary at Canton for life or to leave the country immediately. He was told that he might run for his life, which he proceeded to do, attempting to grab a shotgun from one of his captors as he started. He was soon riddled with bullets. Our informant says that Graham was a coward and a bully, and took part in the mining difficulty from pure meanness, with the hope of obtaining an opportunity of shooting someone. His great aim seemed to be to rule the whole camp, but he finally died with his boots on, as most men of his stamp do.

November 8, 1875.

While at breakfast I received a letter from Secretary Bristow declining Mrs. Smith's house, which was quite a surprise, as he had decided only Saturday, the 6th, that he would take it at her price. After receipt of his letter I called on the Secretary in person to try and find out why he withdrew his offer, when he smiled and said in a joking way he had talked the matter over with his wife, and they had not been able to discover any way of disposing of the other thousand dollars of his salary, and if he should give $7000 for the house there would be a thousand extra left. He finally admitted, however, that $5000 per year was as much as he thought he cared to pay for the rent of a house, but didn't wish to jew Mrs. Smith down.

November 13, 1875.

It was 1 o'clock A. M. before Lucy and I retired, as we attended A. A. Birney's wedding reception, and danced until 12 o'clock. There were at least seventy-five or one hundred persons present, and it was as happy and pleasant a gathering as I ever saw assembled. The bride looked beautiful, and Lex looked like a bashful boy. After congratulating and wishing them all success and a happy future, we parted at a little after 12 o'clock.

November 16, 1875.

Mrs. George Davis, mother of Lewis Davis, the banker, has given me the care of quite a large amount of her property, and I have been quite busy having her house, corner Eleventh and G, remodeled.

November 29, 1875.

Called on Captain Hayes of theFifth Cavalry at the Ebbitt last evening. Met General Fitzhugh Lee and Major Conrad of Virginia, and spent a very social and pleasant evening. General Lee is a special friend of Captain Hayes, who used to be his bugler before the war.

December 3, 1875.

Sold one of Mr. Cammack's houses on Corcoran street, who paid me $200 on account of commission; also sold Gunston & Co. one of Col. Fred Grant's houses on Vermont avenue for $5000.

December 4, 1875.

The first thing after breakfast I called at Colonel Grant's bank. He got in my buggy, and we drove to Colonel Wilder's house, then to Governor Sheppard's by way of my office, then to Gunston's, then from there to the city hall, to Colonel Plowman's, to Orville Grant's, who is sick, and from there I drove Fred to see his father at the White House.

John Sherman is a partner in the bank of Sherman & Grant, and I am one of their depositors, doing quite a large business. A great many contractors and business men are patronizing their bank, getting large discounts carried through, and some of their customers, I notice, are sharpers, and if the firm of Sherman & Grant are not very careful they will be taken advantage of.

Senator John Sherman seems to be one of the principal advisers, and is at the bank a great part of his time.

December 19, 1875.

Last night I called on my father a short time, then went to see Mr. Baker from Indiana in relation to a house; also spent an hour or two with Mr. A. C. Buell, who sent a letter that we fixed up in regard to Mr. Belknap's running for the Senate that will defeat him, as I have taken quite an active part with my friends in Iowa, showing his underhanded work against me.

December 21, 1875.

After dinner Dr. Woodbury came in for a short time, and we went to the Ebbitt House and Willard's, then called on General Banning, who had just been appointed chairman of the Military Committee, and is also a friend of mine. I then went to the office of the *Chronicle*, where we had a long chat with Colonel Corkhill, who handed me a check for $50 on a transaction we are interested in.

December 22, 1875.

Called at Sherman & Grant's bank and met Speaker Kerr, whom I drove to the Capitol and got him very much interested in my case. I am satisfied I may rely upon him as a friend.

December 24, 1875.

General Babcock, General Grant's private secretary, and I drove around to look at his houses, which he gave me to sell. He has proved himself a strong friend during my military troubles.

December 25, 1875.

On my return from the Ebbitt House last evening I stopped in a book store and bought a valuable copy of Shakespeare, and came home and hid them until after Lucy had retired, and this morning she found them as a Christmas present.

December 28, 1875.

I am now spending a great deal of time getting my evidence in regard to Secretary Belknap's crooked transactions, and have just written a letter to General Sherman for points.

December 30, 1875.

Formulated quite an interesting set of charges against Belknap, and have General Clarke of Iowa, Gen. Charles Ewing and others to back me.

December 31, 1875.

This being the last day of the year, I have been busy making collections and settling up my affairs, getting ready for the new year, to make New Year's calls tomorrow.

I have had a very prosperous year; my wife, baby and myself are enjoying good health; have three carriages, four horses, five servants, and our house comfortably furnished and in good condition for entertaining our friends, so that I have little to complain of, execpt that I have not been able to get justice from the War Department, but I propose to follow it up until I do.

CHAPTER XIV.

January 1.

Lucy and I commenced the new year as we did last year—by saying our prayers before breakfast—but we had one more to pray for this morning than before. Our little Cecilia is five months old today. After breakfast I called on my father, and, with Mr. A. C. Buell, made thirty-four New Year calls. The weather is like summer, and we rode without overcoats.

January 9.

Spent most of last evening with Governor Walker of Virginia and Mr. Lewis of Alabama. The latter has taken quite an interest, and is assisting me to get Belknap's case investigated.

January 10.

Took Hon. B. B. Lewis driving and to see a number of houses. We again talked over the Belknap case, and he has agreed to go to see Mr. Randall the first chance that occurs. I also took Mr. Adams to see a number of houses belonging to Moses Kelly, but did not close any trade.

(*St. Louis Daily Times* of Monday, January 10, 1876.)

ARMES' CHARGES AGAINST SECRETARY BELKNAP.

Washington.

George A. Armes, who is now pursuing the profession of a claim agent in this city, will shortly prefer charges against Secretary Belknap, if he can get a hearing, and if not will endeavor to have congressional action taken upon his case. The following is a synopsis:

1. That W. W. Belknap did borrow money to pay his personal expenses and debts at the time he was made Secretary of War, not owning any real estate in this city or anywhere else at that time, but is now the owner of over $40,000 in real estate, stocks, bonds, etc., and living at an expense of over $10,000 a year upon a salary of $8000.

2. That W. W. Belknap did cause applications for post-traderships to be made to a certain party in Washington city, who had them appointed for certain considerations.

3. That W. W. Belknap received an amount of money for giving out contracts for headstones for soldiers' graves.

4. That he received money or its value for giving subordinate positions in the Government departments.

5. That he wrote letters and made statements for members and Senators in Congress which he knew to be false, tending to disgrace the character of a young officer whose reputation is unimpeachable.

6. That he employs one or more private servants, falsely reporting their duties.

January 11.

Had a long talk with General Hazen, Chief Signal Officer, who has the names of witnesses and evidence enough to impeach Belknap if we can get his case up before Congress. Mr. Lewis and I called on Mr. Randall and made an appointment for an interview.

January 12.

Spent a portion of last evening with Mr. Lewis and agreed to meet Mr. Randall at 7 o'clock tomorrow evening.

January 13.

Mr. Lewis and I spent several hours with Mr. Randall last evening, going through the whole case of Belknap's transactions, and he directed us to call and put the matter before General Banning, chairman of the Military Committee, whom we called upon today. After going through the details, General Banning declined to bring the matter before his committee, stating that General Hazen had presented the same charges in substance, and for many political reasons he could not afford to make a fight on the Secretary of War, and we had to give up all hopes of gettting the matter brought up before his committee.

January 14.

Called on Mr. Lewis last evening and appointed a time to call on Mr. Randall again.

January 15.

Mr. Lewis and I drove to Mr. Randall's this morning. He appeared quite provoked at General Banning's declination to investigate the Belknap matter, and referred us to Mr. Clymer, chairman of Expenditures of War Department.

January 16.

Mr. Lewis and I called on Mr. Clymer, who agreed to look into the matter and bring it before his committee.

January 17.

After breakfast called on Governor Walker, who is very anxious to purchase a large house, at his hotel; also called on Mr. Clymer, who seemed to be very indifferent about the Belknap matter.

January 20.

Went to the Capitol, calling on General Williams of Michigan, who has promised to bring my bill before the committee, but failed to get action. Wrote Secretary Belknap a letter of defiance today.

January 21.

Spent last evening with Mr. Lewis, who informed me that Mr. Clymer had been talking with Belknap, who advised him to pay no attention to any charge that I would make. He said he had decided not to go any further in the matter, but requested me to give him any letters of reference and any further proof I had of Belknap's crooked transactions, which I agreed to do.

January 22.

Had a long talk with Generals Banning and Williams of the House Military Committee, and they agreed to refer my papers to General Glover of Missouri of the Military Committee for further investigation.

January 24.

I satisfied Mr. Lewis today that I could substantiate every charge I made against Belknap, and he called upon Mr. Clymer, informing him that if he did not have the matter investigated immediately he would ask a resolution of the House. I then called on Senator Bayard, who went with me over to the House, where we had a long talk with Clymer. Mr. Bayard is a very strong friend of mine, anxious to see my persecutors brought to justice and agrees to aid me in every way possible.

House of Representatives U.S.

Washington D.C. Jany. 14 1876

Hon Hester Clymer
Chr in of Comm't of Military Ex'ts
My Dear Sir

This will be handed to you by Capt Geo A Armes formerly of U.S Army. The Capt was during the war an aid to Gen Hancock, is a rehable gentleman and has certain information concerning the doings of the Sec'ty at war which may prove of service to you and our party. I should have called with Capt Armes but am suddenly called away to N.Y.

Yours respectfully
B B Lewis M.C.
of Ala.

January 28.

General Williams turned all my papers over to General Glover of Missouri today, who has agreed to get me an inteview and to help me all he can. Saw Mr. Lewis for a few moments. He is satisfied that Mr. Clymer will investigate. I referred him to General Hazen and gave him a list of all the necessary witnesses to examine before he calls up the case. Lucy has spent several hours in helping me to write letters, proving herself to be a devoted wife. Spent last evening with General Glover, who will make a report as soon as he can get further information from the War Department. I wrote to Belknap for all papers in connection with my case. Called on Senator Spencer at the Arlington, who agrees to take an interest himself.

January 31.

Was at the Capitol today and made an appointment to meet Mr. Clymer at 10 o'clock tomorrow. Saw Senator Spencer about my bill, which he agrees to introduce. General Glover informed me that he had quite a long talk with Belknap, who agreed to send him all my papers immediately.

February 1.

Called on General Glover last evening; also on Senator Clayton, who was playing chess, and not wishing to disturb him, I left, returning after an hour or two, remaining in the room with him until 12 o'clock before I could have any talk with him about my bill. Met Mr. Clymer and Mr. Lewis today, and we all sat down and drafted charges against Belknap in order that he could be brought before the committee.

February 2.

I was before the Clymer committee this A. M.

February 9.

I went before the Clymer committee to day. Mr. Clymer was very much vexed about Hester, who has proved himself very unreliable. Saw Mr. Springer of Illinois, who is one of my friends.

February 11.

Met Senator Spencer last evening at the Arlington, and called on General Logan also, who appeared to be more friendly than he had been heretofore. Judge Clymer sent for me today. Saw the Judge-Advocate-General, who pretended to be very friendly, but I doubt him, as he is doing what he can to keep me down.

February 13.

I attended the meeting of the Maryland Committee at Willard's and was elected one of the delegation to visit Baltimore in attendance at Reverdy Johnson's funeral, of which Dr. C. C. Cox was made chairman. We all left on the 9.45 train, and made our headquarters at the Eutaw House. The streets were blocked, thousands of people surrounding Mr. Johnson's house, and it is said that such a gathering was never known to be assembled at the funeral of anyone in Baltimore before. After it was over Senator Pinckney Whyte invited the Chief Justice and a number of United States Senators and our committee to his house to lunch,

which was one of the most elaborate I ever saw served. Terrapin, champagne and everything the market could afford was gotten up in the grandest style.

February 15.

Spent several hours with General Hazen, who has most of the evidence and names of the principal witnesses in the Belknap case. He is one of my strongest Army friends and one of the most honorable and conscientious officers in the Army. He is only anxious for the good of the service and to see that thieves and dishonorable men are exposed. Saw Judge Clymer of the committee, who has collected some valuable information. He acknowledged to me that he believed Belknap was guilty of every charge that I had brought against him.

February 16.

Mrs. Governor Thomas of Virginia called on my wife today. She remains a true friend to me, and appears to cherish no ill feeling on account of the part I took against her relatives and her son, who was a neighbor of mine in Virginia. She is a sister to James W. Jackson, who killed Colonel Ellsworth in Alexandria in 1861 at the Marshall House. General Glover turned over the proceedings furnished by Belknap against me to the committee, but they had no effect.

I wrote my persecutor as follows:

Washington, D. C., February 18, 1876.

Hon. W. W. Belknap,
Secretary of War:

Sir—It might be exacting too much of your time, under daily pressure of official station, as among the Cabinet officers, to right what the stinging wrongs against the good name of one faithfully, honestly and satisfactorily performing his every duty would really justify. Commissioned an officer and then breveted over and again, with wounds enough in a boyish haste to be on the side of the country and its Government, may I not ask you to spare me the burden of the inference you would have members of Congress draw from heated and hasty votes. It does not belong to the true soldier to deal in threatening words or to be muttering about his revenge. Of all the general officers under whom I have served and whose strong testimonials bore me along from brevet to brevet not one could be found willing to let my name be coupled with acts of a blackmailing object. God knows I am open and above-board, and in no case more so than in trying eagerly to

awaken your sense of magnanimity towards an abused and injured young officer. Though from Virginia, there were some distant family associations with the Northwestern State of Iowa, and I was looking ahead for a time when your election to the Senate of the United States and thence to something else might be backed if not altogether balked.

No, sir; not from me, humbled and disgraced as your persistent course has tried to keep me, that I did not wait for your public avowal of ambitious aims towards the Senate and know further that the straightforward, honest statement of a Union soldier, maligned by a set of disreputable miscreants, shown to have been so by your own records, and therefore entitled to sympathy and official rescue, when the truth had reached the Department, did help to defeat you for the Senate through honest-hearted Iowa ballots, not threatening paper bullets of my over-excited brain. Here was my "revenge," and ought we not to be at quits. No, sir. Make them at the War Department erase from the rolls and records all entries and statements set there—of course, not by or through you—but wholly through a set of perjured and disreputable witnesses, before a burlesque of justice and right, as shown now by subsequent developments in and out of courts, civil or military. Cease to be a partisan advocate of a bad cause where the good name of a young man is in the balance, with the confidence and kindly regard of some of the noblest military men in the annals of American history tendered to Congress in his behalf, and you rise far beyond the reach of so mean a thing as this reputed revenge on my part, under your construction of my letters. That you may be able to triumph over yourself and your own prejudices in this matter between a former but wronged officer of the Army and yourself in your high position as head of the War Department is the only revenge sought by,

Your obedient servant,

(Signed) GEO. A. ARMES,

Late Capt. Tenth Cav. and Bvt. Maj., U. S. A.

February 21.

Went to the Capitol and saw Senator Spencer, who managed to get my bill referred to him by General Logan for investigation.

February 22.

This being General Washington's birthday, the President and Congress ordered that it be observed as a holiday. The Fifth Maryland from Baltimore was received by Col. William G. Moore of the Washington Light Infantry, when they had a parade. This was a grand day for Washington. Colonel Moore is a leading citizen and considered one of the most popular gentlemen in the District.

February 23.

After breakfast I called on General Morey and drove with him to the House. We saw Senator Spencer, who told me that General Logan had requested him to make an adverse report on my bill. Saw Senator Clayton, who has also been prejudiced, but would not say on what ground. I then went to the War Department and obtained court-martial's orders in Majors Cox and Graham's cases. General Townsend seemed to be under Belknap's orders, treating me very coldly, although he had always been friendly heretofore. He declined to give me any information that would be of advantage to me.

February 24.

Saw General Glover again today, who told me that he had failed to get all the information in my behalf he wished, but is still trying to get it. Had a long talk with Senator Merriam of North Carolina, who is anxious to procure a house. While showing Senators and members houses I have a good opportunity of explaining my case to them.

February 26.

I met Senator Merriam and Governor Scales of North Carolina in the Senate chamber at 11 A. M. They are both very much interested in my behalf.

March 2.

Called on Senator Merriam and Governor Scales this morning, and they informed me that Mr. Clymer was very anxious to save Belknap from impeachment. He called on Belknap last evening with the information that the charges I had made were so strong that if he appeared before his committee he would have to be impeached, and in order to save impeachment he advised him to tender his resignation as promptly as possible. Upon Mr. Clymer's advice Belknap went to President Grant this morning before 9 o'clock and tendered his resignation as Secretary of War. Great excitement prevails this evening all over the city, and I have been congratulated by hundreds of people during the afternoon, who give me the credit for exposing him.

March 3.

Last evening I went around to the hotels to see several of my friends, and there was a general handshaking by almost everyone except Belknap's friends. They looked daggers at me and, from their appearance, would like to have seen me quartered.

Of the sensation I cannot better convey an idea than through comments of the press:

THE CREDIT OF THE BELKNAP EXPOSURE.

(The *Alexandria Sentinel.*)

We have ceased to be amazed at the discovery of speculations and dishonesty in officials, or the shameful disclosures of the venality and indecency which has so long disgraced the War Office would strike us with terrible force. As it is, we can only give the disgraceful details as they are developed and conjure our citizens to strive, by every man's devotion personally, as far as he can, by voice and vote and in every possible way, to bring forward the happy day when no man will dare to face the indignant frost of public opinion with a stain of official dishonor on his brow, and when such a new era shall prevail in politics as that the schemers and the intriguers may no longer be able to lure the people into evil ways and the support of unworthy men.

Having some time since referred to the charges of Col. Geo. A. Armes against Secretary Belknap (of which we had heard an intimation) in terms of ridicule as without any foundation, we hasten now to make the amends to the gentleman by whose energy and courage this mass of sordid corruption has been removed. Against the might of authority and the damning suspicions which from his own position his efforts naturally drew upon himself he has triumphed bravely and stands vindicated and meriting the thanks of the country. We give the following statement from the *Washington Tribune:*

"The investigation into the subject is said to have originated in the following manner: B. B. Lewis, a member of Congress from Alabama, was in search of a house in the early part of the session and was referred to Col. Geo. A. Armes, a real-estate agent of this city.

"During the negotiations for the house Armes told Lewis that he was formerly in the Army and was in possession of facts against Belknap that would force him to resign his position as Secretary. He said that he had been dismissed from the Army on account of the personal enmity of Belknap, and that if some member of Congress would take hold and help him he would in sixty days force Belknap to leave his position.

"Lewis tendered his services and laid the matter before Mr. Randall, who advised that the matter be laid before Mr. Clymer for his committee to unearth. Armes furnished a list of witnesses, but as they testified to but a few facts, Mr. Clymer began to suspect that he was dealing with them in bad faith, especially as when Belknap was notified of the matter he informed them that Armes had offered, if he could be reinstated in the Army and certain other conditions were complied with, that he would drop the matter. This looked a little like blackmail, but Mr. Lewis urged

that inasmuch as a list of witnesses had been furnished by Armes it would be best to summon them all and see what there was in it. Among the witnesses was Mr. Marsh, and after some difficulty his attendance was secured with the result already known to the world.

"Armes has had a grievance for half a dozen years. He comes from Fairfax county, Virginia; was an officer in the volunteer service during the war and was afterward appointed in the regular Army and was assigned to duty on the frontier and distinguished himself and was promoted for it in a fight with the Indians. He preferred charges against some of his superior officers, when they turned around and preferred charges against him, and with the aid, as he alleges, of Secretary Belknap got him dismissed. He, however, followed up his charges against the officers, got them convicted, and two of them are now serving out sentences in prison on this account, and every session of Congress since he has been before both houses for redress, and he charges that the Secretary of War has opposed him at every step.

"By perseverance he has, however, carried all his points except being restored to the Army, and only a couple of weeks ago Senator Spencer introduced into the Senate a bill for that purpose. He has had many bitter personal wordy altercations with the Secretary; has defied him, and in language more forcible than polite has informed him that he would yet defeat him and get his rights.

"He seems to have accomplished all but getting his own rights, and he is now in a fair way to accomplish that."

March 4.

While at the Ebbitt House and Willard's Hotel last night I was the subject of attraction and pointed out by almost everyone as having taken the most conspicuous part in the case of Belknap's downfall. Was up to the Capitol today; had quite a talk with General Glover, who is going to make a favorable report on my bill.

March 5.

The *Sunday Capital* came out in a terrible attack upon me this morning, but it did not prevent me from attending St. Matthew's Church with Lucy. After the services I called upon Colonel Don Piat, proprietor and editor of that paper. After a short interview he seemed very sorry that he had reflected upon me, and promised to make a correction in his next issue.

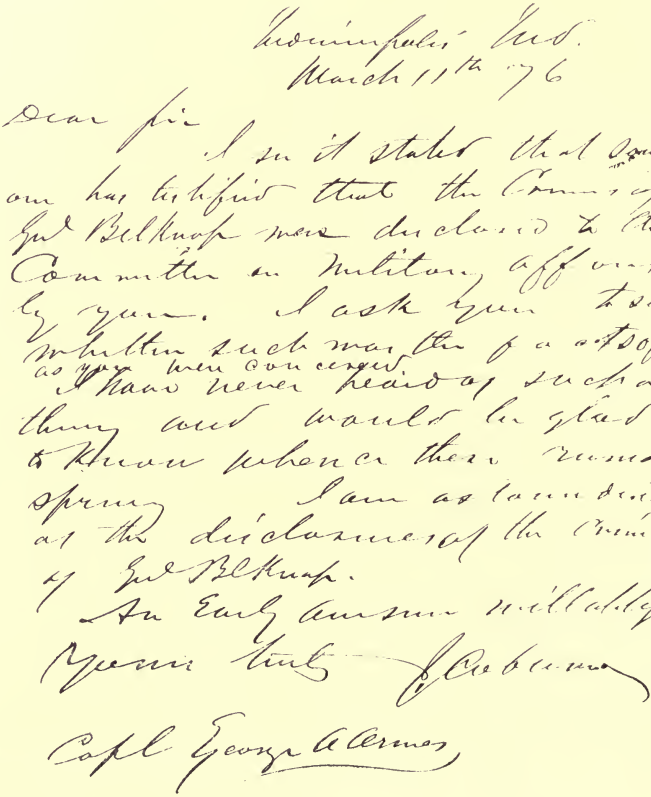
Baltimore, Md., March 7.

I came over here this morning after taking General Glover to the Capitol and fixed up some press dispatches in which I had

been misrepresented by my enemies, writing a long letter of explanation and stating the facts about Belknap, etc. I met Mr. Hardesty, with whom I am interested in some large transactions in this city, and closed one in the purchase of four houses for myself.

March 9.

Spent most of the day at the Capitol and gave General Robbins of Clymer's committtee a list of names of post-traders and other witnesses in the Belknap case, as they have decided that the matter must be exposed, and proposed to bring it up in spite of Mr. Clymer trying to make Belknap believe that if he resigned it would prevent his exposure.



Indianapolis Ind.
March 11th 76

Dear Sir

I see it stated that some one has testified that the Crimes of Genl Belknap were disclosed to the Committee on Military affairs by you. I ask you to say whether such was the fact so far as you were concerned. I have never heard of such a thing and would be glad to know whence these rumors spring. I am as lounded at the disclosures of the Crimes of Genl Belknap.

An Early Answer will oblige

Yours truly J. Cobourn

Capt George A Armes

March 13.

The first thing this A. M. called on General Glover at his house and drove with him up to the Capitol, where I remained several hours talking with members and Senators in regard to my matters.

March 18.

I met Mr. Meeker of the *New York Herald* at Willard's, who invited me to an oyster supper. We then fixed up a letter for General Coburn, which was signed by quite a number of my friends.

March 20.

Spent last evening with ex-Governor Crawford of Kansas and Colonel Moonlight, and today Mr. Ellis of Louisiana called with me at the War Department, where we met Judge Taft, who read Senator Sherman's letter with great interest and treated me as if I had been his own son, assuring me that anything he could possibly do in my behalf he would do.

March 21.

Was up to the Capitol today and had a short talk with Mr. Clymer, who was very cool because I had given further information to get Belknap before the committee.

March 22.

Was with General Glover until almost 12 o'clock last evening, and again met him at the Capitol today. He fixed next Friday for bringing my bill before his committee, having made a favorable report on it.

March 25.

Last evening I invited General Glover to an oyster supper, where we went all through my case, and today we brought up the report before General Banning, who agrees to bring it before the full committee at his first opportunity.

Col. Lewis Merrill, one of my worst enemies, is here with Belknap working to defeat me.

March 29.

Called on General Terry last evening and made an appointment with him in regard to Colonel Merrill; also saw Senator Bayard, who gave me some points in the Belknap matter.

March 30.

Called at the Arlington last evening, where I had a long talk with General Custer. Was up to the Capitol and on the floor of

the House. Saw several others and talked with a number of friends, who are doing what they can on my bill and about investigating Colonel Merrill.

March 31.

General Custer and I went to the Military Committee room, where we had a discussion with the members of the committee in relation to the Merrill charges.

April 1.

Had a long talk with General Custer today. He, as well as myself, is very anxious to have Colonel Merrill brought to trial, but his political friends appear to be shielding him.

April 12.

While at the Capitol today Senator William Stewart of Nevada put his castle in my charge with the request that I have it fixed up and procure him a good tenant or purchaser.

April 20.

I rented Mr. Franklin's house on C street today. Spent some time last evening with General Boynton, who is one of my friends. Senator Stewart and I called at the War Department. The Secretary of War got in my park phaeton and we drove to the castle. Mrs. Taft is very much pleased with it, and there is no doubt but that negotiations will soon be made.

April 28.

After leaving Lucy last evening I called on Dr. Brockenboro of St. Louis and Mr. Lloyd Williams of Baltimore. Saw Senator Spencer and Judge Poland. Appeared before the Military Committee of the House, and after explaining matters, answered all questions. The case was closed, Glover's report adopted, and the bill will now go on the House calendar.

May 15.

While at the Capitol today I obtained a season pass to visit the floor whenever I wished. Remained there two hours, hoping my bill would be called up.

May 22.

Met Governor Walker at the Capitol, who made me an offer for the Harrington house, owned by Governor Sheppard, which offer the latter accepted.

May 23.

Called on Wedderburn, who went to Willard's with me to see Governor Walker, and we all called on Governor Sheppard, who

ordered an abstract made. I am about to make an exchange for Judge Helmick's house on K street.

May 30.

While at Willard's last evening I was informed that the Senate had decided by eight majority to try Belknap. This being Decoration Day, the city is crowded, and thousands have gone to Arlington and other cemeteries to take part in the ceremonies.

Mr. Glover, from the Committee on Military Affairs, reported the following bill as a substitute for the bill H. R. 906: "A bill for the restoration of George A. Armes to the rank of Captain in the cavalry arm of the service."

House of Representatives, Forty-fourth Congress, First Session, Report No. 620.

GEORGE A. ARMES.

June 1, 1876.—Committed to a Committee of the Whole House and ordered to be printed.

Mr. Glover, from the Committee on Military Affairs, submitted the following report (to accompany H. R. 3634):

The Committee on Military Affairs, to whom was referred the bill (H. R. 906) for the restoration of George A. Armes to the Army, with the rank of Captain, have had the same under consideration, and beg to submit the following report:

The records of the War Deartment show the following facts: That George A. Armes entered the military service of the United States as a private in Company B, Sixteenth Regiment Virginia Volunteer Infantry, September 1, 1862; was appointed Second Lieutenant in the same regiment December 8, 1862, and was appointed Captain in the Second Regiment New York Artillery October, 1864. On the 14th of December, 1864, he was mentioned in "general orders" for meritorious conduct by General Miles for leading the charge at Hatcher's Run, Virginia. Upon the recommendation of Generals Hancock, Auger, Griffin, Mott, Miles and Pierce he was appointed Second Lieutenant in the Second United States Cavalry. Soon after he was appointed Captain in the Tenth United States Cavalry, and his commission was dated back, upon the recommendation of Gen. Philip St. George Cooke, with the approval of Gen. U. S. Grant, as a recognition of merit. March 2, 1867, he was breveted Major in the regular Army for gallant services, having been previously breveted Major of Volunteers.

On the 12th of November, 1866, the following general order was issued:

Headquarters Department of the Platte,
Omaha, Neb., November 12, 1866.
(General Order No. 20.)

The Commanding General announces to the Department that Lieut. Geo. A. Armes, Second United States Cavalry, being sent with twenty-five men of his regiment from Fort Sedgwick October 23 in pusuit of a war party of Sioux Indians which had driven off the previous day several hundred head of stock, found and followed their trail, under the difficulties of crossing two wide rivers, forks of the Platte, and of darkness, *ninety-eight miles*, from 5 o'clock A. M. to 11 o'clock P. M.; then he surprised the party, instantly attacked, killed and wounded nearly all their superior numbers, captured twenty-two Indian horses, burned their camp and brought off safely most of their stolen stock. Thus the young officer has set a fine example to the Department of overcoming difficulties that would have discouraged and stopped many without loss of credit, of bold determination to succeed and of striking without stopping to count his enemies, and has presented to the profession perhaps the greatest cavalry feat heretofore recorded.

By order of Brevet Major-General Cooke:

H. G. Litchfield,
Brvt. Maj., U. S. A., Aid-de-Camp, Acting Asst. Adjt.-Gen.

On the 20th of August, 1867, he was recommended by Generals Sherman and Hancock for the brevet of Lieutenant-Colonel for hard and heroic services against the Indians, by whom he was wounded during an engagement.

This is only a portion of the very meritorious and gallant conduct of this young officer to this date in his military history, which seems to have challenged almost the universal respect and confidence of the officers under whom he served.

In the Forty-Fourth Congress, on June 1, 1876, Mr. Glover made another favorable report.

June 3.

After breakfast called on Dom Pedro of Brazil at the Arlington Hotel and made an arrangement to take a drive.

June 11.

Lucy went to St. Patrick's Church alone this A. M. for the first time since we have been married. Shortly after she left I happened to look out of my window and saw a gentleman suddenly drop down. I ran across to the Congregational Church and found it to be Mr. James G. Blaine. His wife and little girl were standing over him. He appeared to be perfectly dead. I rushed back across the street and brought a pitcher of ice water and a napkin, which I laid over his head. I then called a 'bus, and three gentlemen helped to lift him in it. We then started for his house

on Fifteenth street. Mrs. Blaine took his head in her lap as he lay stretched out on the long seat. Before reaching the house I inquired who her physician was, and she replied, "Dr. Pope." I immediately requested her little girl to go after him, and by the time we arrived at the house Dr. Pope came in, and we laid Mr. Blaine out on the parlor floor. As the doctor did not appear to revive him, I suggested that I call on Surgeon-General Barnes, which Mrs. Blaine consented to. I discovered General Whittlesey's carriage at the door, which he loaned me to go after the Surgeon-General. Not finding General Barnes at his house, I drove to his office, where I was informed by a messenger that he had just gone to Epiphany Church. Driving there, I sent the usher to the front seat with the information that a gentleman wished to see him immediately. He came out, when I explained what I wanted. He quickly jumped into the carriage, and we drove in a gallop to Mr. Blaine's house, where he took charge of the case. There was soon great excitement; hundreds of people came to the house. The news of his collapse spread like wildfire all over the city. It was some time before he was conscious. He seemed perfectly lifeless. Mrs. Blaine appreciated my help very much.

Blaine's Attack of Vertigo.

June 14.

While talking with Governor Sheppard today he suggested that I sell the house now occupied by Belknap.

June 17.

Waited on the floor of the House for some time hoping my bill would be reached on the calendar, but had to come away discouraged.

June 24.

Took lunch at the Capitol today with Senator Spencer, who has agreed to make a report in my case on Monday if he can, and this evening I called on Mrs. General Barry, accompanied by the Senator.

July 11.

Was up to the Senate again today, but unable to get my case called up. Mr. Gobright assisted me to draw up a nice letter at our meeting at the National Hotel last evening to send to Mrs. Custer regarding a resolution on the death of General Custer.

July 12.

We called another meeting last evening at the National Hotel and appointed a full committee to solicit subscriptions for a Custer monument. Major Duggan acted as chairman in the absence of Major Finley.

July 19.

While at the Capitol today I had a very long talk with Gen. Joe Blackburn, who has taken a great interest in exposing the frauds of Belknap. If it had not been for him it is likely the exposures would not have been made so public. He is an honest and upright man, and one who ought to be returned by his constituents as long as he lives.

Washington, D. C., August 1.

Upon my return I called on Governor Sheppard, who informed me that he had not seen Governor Walker. I immediately called on the latter at Willard's and closed a trade with Governor Sheppard for the Belknap house.

August 11.

While at the Capitol today I had a pretty spicy time with Senator Logan. Senator Spencer took my part, but was unable to have my bill brought up before the committee.

August 12.

Walked home with Senator Logan last night, and he finally admitted before reaching the house that Belknap had insisted on his not allowing my bill to go through and that he could not do anything in my favor, so I now see I cannot rely upon him for support. Called on Senators Clayton and Spencer today, who finally admitted it was impossible to get the bill through this session against General Logan's opposition. During the day deeds were passed between Governor Sheppard and Governor Walker for the Belknap house; consideration, $85,000.

August 13.

While with Governor Walker last evening he handed me a check for $350 as compensation for working in his property in exchange for the Belknap house.

September 2.

Called with Mr. E. M. Smith on the Japanese minister, who went with us to look at Mr. Smith's house, which he has agreed to take as soon as the papers are made out. Mr. Smith agrees to pay me $300 for my part in the transaction.

September 16.

Called on Governor Sheppard today, who handed me a check for $175 on account, also a delicious cigar, and seemed to take an appreciative interest in what I had done in regard to his real-estate matters.

In conversation with Governor Sheppard in regard to giving Governor Walker possession of his house occupied by Belknap, I shall never forget Sheppard's smile when I suggested that I notify Belknap to vacate the house. The Governor remarked, "Armes, I will try to get somebody else to do that, as I think you have done your share. You routed him out of his office, and not being satisfied with that, you have sold his house over his head, and under the circumstances I do not think you had better put him out of the house. I will get somebody else to see him about getting possession." I have found him to be one of the ablest business men I ever had any dealings with, and we would soon have one of the grandest cities in the world with more men like him.

October 14.

General Tompkins came in from Rockville today and gave me $2500 in part payment of the Twenty-first street property.

October 15.

I had a very pleasant interview with Attorney-General Williams, who is very anxious for me to sell or lease his house on Rhode Island avenue. I took the Japanese minister through it, but he decided it was too large for him. Mrs. McFarland authorized me to lease her house for $1500 a year.

December 16.

Last night while at the Ebbitt House one of my Virginia friends, Col. John Fairfax, was attacked by the ex-doorkeeper of the House, Snell, and stabbed in the neck very badly. I secured a room, helped to carry him there and sent for a doctor, who decided that it would not be very serious, although the injured man would be laid up for some time.

December 17.

Spent several hours at the Ebbitt House today with Colonel Fairfax doing what I could for him. His son came over from Baltimore and has full charge. The doctor thinks he will be all right in a few days.

December 29.

Called to see General Banning last evening at the Riggs House, and he agreed to do everything he possibly could for me when Congress met. Met Colonel Maish of Pennsylvania, who is also one of my best friends.

December 31.

I have been settling up my accounts and affairs during the day for the year, and am very much disappointed in not having my bill passed, but my chances are very favorable for next year, having been successful in getting rid of several of my enemies, who, after investigation, have been found guilty and disposed of.

CHAPTER XV.

January 1, 1877.

Lucy and I started the new year with another addition to the family, which now consists of four. After breakfast I ordered my carriage and invited Colonel Maish, General Williams and Mr. Corcoran to make New Year's calls. We had seventy-three names on our list, but stopped at twenty-five, my usual friends.

January 6, 1877.

Yesterday afternoon General Banning called up my bill in the House. Mr. Conger of Michigan objected and threw it out for the time, but Colonel Maish and Colonel Phillips finally got him to withdraw his objections, when General Garfield and Mr. Wilson of Iowa killed it for the day.

January 13, 1877.

Took a lot of papers in my military case last evening to Senator Cockrell, who looked through some of them, requesting me to call and see him again Monday evening.

January 16, 1877.

Senator Cockrell gave me two hours of his time last evening going through my papers. Went to the Capitol yesterday and saw several members and Senators in regard to my bill.

January 23, 1877.

Called on Senator Cockrell last evening, and we went to the Arlington, where we met Senator Randolph, when he agreed to help all he could on my case. Saw Senator Spencer today, who told me he was unable to have the bill brought up.

January 24, 1877.

Was on the floor of the House today and tried to get General Glover to bring up my case; also had quite a talk with J. J. Noah, who is clerk of the Senate Military Committee and a great friend of mine.

January 27, 1877.

Called on Secretary of War Taft today, who assured me he would do all he could in my behalf.

February 13, 1877.

Visited the Capitol again today and did my best to have the Senator call up my bill, but he said it was impossible to do so at present.

February 22, 1877.

Spent last evening with Gen. Innes Palmer, Colonel of my old regiment, Second Cavalry, who has taken a great interest in my behalf and put himself on record as an honest and fair-minded man.

March 2, 1877.

I have been on the floor of the House all day, and this afternoon my bill was called up under a suspension of the rules. After a short discussion the yeas and nays were called, and it came within eight of passing. Mr. Garfield, in the interest of Belknap and the War Department, is doing all he can to kill it.

Saturday, March 3, 1877.

I went to the House again this morning and got some twenty-five or thirty members interested in my bill. It was again brought up and defeated by only one vote in spite of Mr. Garfield's doing all he could to defeat it. General Glover still sticks to me, with Mr. Hamilton, Colonel Maish and many others.

March 4, 1877.

After dinner last evening I went back to the Capitol and got Hon. Henry Watterson of Kentucky interested. After explaining the situation he put his hand on my shoulder and said, "Armes, I think I can manage Mr. Garfield all right." He immediately went on to the House floor and invited Mr. Garfield over to the Senate restaurant, where he got into a very interesting conversation, made more so by disposing of several bottles of cham-

Watterson Entertaining Garfield.

pagne ere they were through. During his absence my friends on the floor of the House had my bill brought up, and it passed unanimously at 2 o'clock this A. M. I shall always be indebted to Mr. Watterson of Kentucky, Hon. Carter Harrison of Chicago, Colonel Glover, Colonel Maish, Randolph Tucker and General Banning for their efforts.

The following is a reply to my letter in regard to what took place during the passage of the bill:

W. N. HALDEMAN, PRESIDENT

HENRY WATTERSON, EDITOR.

LOUISVILLE COURIER-JOURNAL Company.

BUSINESS DEPARTMENT. INCORPORATED.

Louisville, October 10, 1899.

My Dear Major Armes;

My share in passing your bill through the House was very slight and is hardly worth particular mention. It consisted chiefly of "holding" Gen. Garfield whilst your friends "skinned" the measure of your restoration. The process was exceeding simple. I asked Gen. Garfield to join me and our friend John Randolph Tucker at luncheon in the Senate Restaurant on the other side of the Capitol, an invitation Gen. Garfield was not the man to decline. We lunched abundantly, we lunched copiously, and we lunched protractedly. When we got back to the House your bill had passed. It had passed during our absence. Gen. Garfield accepted the result with christian resignation and afterwards in a moment of effusion assured me that he was glad I had taken advantage of his love of good company and good living. He was as you know a man entirely free from sustained malevolence, and in your case I think had been set upon by some outside pressure foreign to any real feeling of his own.

Yours Truly

Henry Watterson

Major George A. Armes,
1405 F Street,
Washington, D.C.

March 5, 1877.

I was greatly disappointed in General Grant's declining to sign my bill, which had passed the House and Senate, and only lacked his signature to make it a law, restoring me to my full rank on the active list, and when he came out of the room known as the President's room at the Capitol I informed him that whoever had induced him not to sign it had willfully lied and misrepresented me, and he only remarked that it was too late now, that he was no longer President.

I spent a portion of last evening with General Logan, who had a large number of friends with him talking about the new Cabinet. He expressed himself as disappointed at not being made Secretary of War, and I am glad he was not, because he has not taken the interest he should in my case.

It may not be out of place in this connection to supply the reader with a few letters and documents bearing on the subject of my bill:

Washington, D. C., January 29, 1877.

Gen. U. S. Grant,

President of the United States:

Sir—I am only one of the many who have received disgrace and punishment through the misrepresentations of persons unworthy of confidence, and I respectfully call your attention to the fact that it is still in your power, and will be for a few days longer, to mend a wrong that has caused me to suffer more than I can express. The records of the War Department will show that I always fulfilled my duty with satisfaction to my superior officers, and the troubles that I had, in every instance, were brought about by Army officers unworthy of the name, some of whom have already been justly convicted.

And now, Mr. President, I again submit my case, trusting that you will grant me a hearing and release me from the burden of an unjust sentence.

Respectfully, your obedient servant,

GEO. A. ARMES,
Late Captain, U. S. A.

Dear General Banning:

Can you not, without much trouble, get Captain Armes' bill up? I can send you report, and it does appear to me that some injustice was done the Captain. This is his last chance this year, and I feel that if I can do anything to assist him I ought to do so. Of course, I know how busy you might be at this time, but if you can find time to say a word in this case I hope you will do so.

Very truly, yours,

(Signed) I. N. PALMER.

Washington, D. C., March 22, 1877.

Hon. Geo. W. McCrary,
Secretary of War:

Sir—I have the honor to request that the Judge Advocate General of the Army be authorized to reopen and report on the merits of my case as soon as convenient, and that I may be permitted to appear before him with additional evidence.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

(Signed) Geo. A. Armes,
Late Captain, U. S. A.

War Department, March 26, 1877.

Respectfully referred to the Judge Advocate General of the Army for his opinion as to whether a reopening of the case would be in accordance with established usage, and if so, whether it is desirable in this case.

(Signed) Geo. W. McCrary,
Secretary of War.

Bureau of Military Justice, March 27, 1877.

Respectfully returned to the Secretary of War, with opinion that unless the applicant shall produce written evidence in regard to the merits of his case of a clearly material and controlling character a reopening of such case would neither be in accordance with established usage nor desirable. The case has been heretofore most fully and patiently considered, and a most decided final opinion arrived at and expressed by the Secretary of War and the President, that the reappointment of this party to the Army could not properly be granted. Repeated unfavorable reports have been made in the case by the Judge Advocate General, and, on January 31, 1876, a very elaborate review of the facts and law, with extended exhibits, was prepared at this Bureau by the request of Honorable Secretary Belknap, a copy of which is herewith enclosed for reference. The conclusion of this review will be seen that Armes was justly dismissed, that the course pursued by him since his dismissal had been such as to forfeit any claim that he might have had upon the clemency of the Executive by reason of his services, and that he had by his conduct rendered it impossible for the Secretary of War to recommend his reappointment. It is repeated that unless he shall produce in his favor entirely new and genuinely written and sworn evidence of a clear, positive and convincing character, as to the merits of his case as tried, his application for a reopening of the same shall not be entertained.

It may be remarked that as the trial of Armes took place in March, 1870, any alleged new evidence upon the merits, now first offered, must be received with extreme caution.

(Signed) W. M. Dunn,
Judge Advocate General.

~~To the Hon. Geo. W. McCrary~~
~~Secretary of War.~~

Sir,

The Undersigned officers of the Army and Navy, now in Washington and who are personally acquainted with Capt. Geo: A. Armes, late of the U.S. Army, Unite with some of his citizen friends in respectfully recommending his case to your consideration, as they believe from some knowledge of the facts, that injustice has been done him.

Yours respectfully

T. J. Robertson — Richard McAllister

H. M. Watterson

Washington D.C. March 29. 1877 — Wm. J. Moore — [illegible]

[illegible] Chf. Engr. U.S.N.

[illegible] — Charles Ewing

[illegible] — [illegible]

[illegible] — Wm. V. Wolfe — [illegible]

J. C. McKean — [illegible] — [illegible] P. A. Eng. U.S.N.

John Boyd — [illegible]

[illegible] — Geo. T. Jones — [illegible] 1st Lt. 3d Cav.

[illegible] — Geo. McDermott — W. B. Shaw

[illegible] — [illegible]

[illegible] — John A. [illegible]

[illegible] — [illegible]

John J. Johnson — W. H. Clarke

[illegible] — W. V. S. Wilson — [illegible]

I recommend the reopening of the case of Capt. Armes — William Stickney.

From what I know of this case, I believe justice requires that it should be opened.

[illegible] — E. C. Ingersoll

John [illegible] — Columbus Alexander

W. B. Moore — James H. [illegible]

I hereby concur in the foregoing recommendation. — [illegible] Bowles, Late Lt. Col. U.S. Vols.

H. H. Blackburn — Rees B. Edmondson

I know all the facts [illegible] Capt. Armes' case, and believe him to have been most unjustly treated. He ought to be restored to his place in the army and I most earnestly recommend him to the favor of the government. Apl. 5, '97

Fred. T. Stanton

J. F. [illegible]

I fully concur in the above — and from a careful examination am satisfied gross injustice has been done Col. Armes —

Jos. H. Casey

I have been personally acquainted with Capt Geo. A. Armes for over ten years, and during that time I have always found him a gentleman, in the most honorable appellation of the word. As a most gallant soldier and comrade I hope he may receive the just recognition of his merits

[illegible] Clark of Iowa
[illegible]

I knew [illegible] Capt Armes while serving on Genl. Hancock's staff in 1864, and observed that he was energetic and zealous in the performance of his duties

[illegible]

I have examined the facts of the case of G. A. Armes, and am clearly of the opinion That justice requires that he shall be restored to his rank in the Army

Chas J. Faulkner

I hope the Bill of Capt Armes will pass. I helped him last winter

S. B. Elkins

I have been intimately acquainted with Capt- Geo. A. Armes during the last ten years and know him to have been one of the most- zealous efficient- young Officers in the Army

His command was stationed in western Kansas while I was governor of that State and in all our Indian wars of that time- no officer displayed more vigilance courage and skill than did Capt- Armes

The charges upon which he was tried were in my opinion baseless and untrue, and the evidence adduced, wholly insufficient- (when considering the general character of the witnesses) to warrant the finding and sentence ~~of the Court Martial before whom~~ in his case which he was tried

I hope therefore that he may be speedily restored to his place in the Army as a simple act of justice to a gallant young Officer and a gentleman The following is a copy of ~~a~~ one of a number of dispatches received from Gen. W S Hancock belonging to Capt- Armes

E J Crawford

I have examined the
case - court-martial
proceedings - by which
Maj. Armes was dismissed
the service - and believe
he has been grossly
misused - and ought
to be fully restored
to the service -
Matt H. Carpenter
Counselor at Law
Dec 27, 1877.

(Extract from a letter of Wm. H. Penrose, Bvt. Brig.-Gen., U. S. A., dated February 22, 1876.)

Major Armes has been known to me since 1868, and prior by reputation, serving under my command during the Indian campaign of 1868-69. I found him an officer of strictly moral habits, and to the best of his ability performing all of his official duties; and as to his special accusers, Captains Cox and Graham, they were both known to me. The former was a personal enemy of Major Armes, and did not hesitate whenever opportunity offered to injure him by word or deed. The latter, who, I believe, preferred the charges against the Major, was a man of the lowest instincts—a murderer at heart, as was proved by his attempt on the life of the Paymaster, the presence of ladies not deterring him from his nefarious intent. His associates were of the lowest character; his resorts, the barroom and gambling-houses.

WM. H. PENROSE,
Bvt. Brig.-Gen., U. S. A.

I have known George A. Armes, late Captain Tenth U. S. Cav., personally since April, 1867. Have always found him to be a gentleman of good habits and honorable bearing. From those officers who served with him during the late war I have learned that his record was very good. He is certainly deserving, and ought not to have his military record and future prospects blighted by the sentence of a court-martial, actuated and influenced by personal considerations, as I am satisfied the court that tried Captain Armes was.

B. F. GRAFTON,
Late U. S. A.

(Extract.)

I knew you (Captain Armes) in active service as Second Lieutenant Second U. S. Cavalry, in the Department of the Platte, in the year 1867. Your personal character and courtesy was above reproach as it came under my notice, and you were held by my friends in the same estimation. Knowing you as well as I did, I must confess it is hard for me to believe you guilty of the charges under which you went out of the Army.

I never knew a truly brave and gallant officer, such as you were, and as you stand recorded, who was as base as you should be to be found guilty of charges such as were preferred against you.

I cannot, knowing you as I do, but hope that the investigation you are pursuing will end in clearing your reputation as an officer and gentleman from the only stain I know that rests upon it.

A. J. Dallas,
Major Twenty-third Infantry.

Washington, D. C., April 9, 1877.

Sir—I have the honor to submit herewith a statement of facts relative to my dismissal from the Army, June 7, 1870, and also the following papers relative thereto:

I was advised by several officers, who were my friends, to object to certain members of the court, who, with the exception of Colonel Poland and Captain Yates, had publicly expressed themselves against me. When challenging Colonel Buell as an unfit member of the court, he denied under oath the accusation, or that he was prejudiced in any way. Some threatening words passed between us, when General Custer, a spectator in the courtroom, came to my rescue and stated to the court that he had heard Colonel Buell give expression to language tending to show that he had formed an unfavorable opinion of my case. This excitement caused the court to be cleared, but within a few minutes the doors were opened, when charges had been prepared for contempt of court and read, to which I pleaded not guilty.

I was forced to trial at once. Buell was allowed to sit as a member of the court, which sentenced me during trial to the common guardhouse for enlisted men, deserters, thieves, and denied all communication with anyone except my counsel, and even he was not allowed to communicate with me unless by special permission of the president of the court. Had I been placed in close arrest in my quarters the act would not have been such a disgraceful and arbitrary one, but more in harmony with military law, as I had not, prior to that time, been in close arrest or broken my parole. It was while undergoing this illegal punishment that I, upon the request of my counsel, signed a paper prepared by the court, termed an apology, but verbally protested.

When released from guardhouse I had the entire court arrested by the civil authorities, and brought suit for damages for my false imprisonment and their gross violation of law in taking advantage of their official position to avenge their personal spite by forcibly placing me in a degrading and humiliating confinement. Bail was given for their appearance at the next term of the Circuit Court, and upon their reassembling my trial proceeded, which resulted in my dismissal.

I think that the court-martial records will show, and should, that one of the members of the court had publicly expressed himself prejudiced against me before the trial, and that the remonstrances of both myself and counsel did not prevent him or them from sitting with the court, although acknowledging the fact when objected to.

Before receiving the order of dismissal I was sent from Fort Leavenworth several hundred miles southwest to Camp Supply, I. T., by General Sturgis, who knew the sentence of the court, when I did not receive the above order until June 23, 1870, which came through Lieut.-Col. A. D. Nelson, commanding officer of the post at "Camp Supply," with an order from Nelson directing me to leave the post within twenty-four hours after its receipt—thus cast out of the Army in disgrace after nine years' active and honorable service, without money or friends, many hundred miles from my home, to work my way back as best I could.

Being without means, and unable to obtain employment of any kind, I was obliged for a time to wear a portion of my uniform, which I altered to citizen's dress as nearly as possible by taking off shoulder-straps, brass buttons and stripes on the trousers. The War Department, through the agency of some courageous martinet, officially notified me I was not allowed to wear any part of it, but failed to mention where I could obtain a suit of citizen's clothes without the necessary funds. Soon after arrival here I went to the Department and presented a letter of introduction to Secretary Benknap from Governor Kirkwood, requesting a rehearing of my case, but received no encouragement, after which I employed Messrs. Casey, Bartley & Stanton, attorneys, who examined the records and brought it to the notice of the President, with the additional fact that Graham, who had preferred the charges against me, had been convicted upon charges made by myself against him several months after I was arraigned for trial. My counsel informed me that if I would withdraw the civil suit pending against the military court at Leavenworth the President would renominate me to my former position in the Army. I accordingly did so, and sent him the order of the court. I was requested to call on the Secretary of War, who informed me of my nomination, but demanded my resignation in blank before he would consent to my name going to the Senate. I gave it to him very reluctantly, and recalled it, stating that I would rather have

the matter remain as it was than be forced in an underhanded manner. Seeing my nomination in the newspapers, with other appointments for confirmation, I considered it my duty to register my name and address at the War Department according to custom. I was not confirmed. In 1871 a bill was introduced in the House authorizing the President to restore me to the Army, and in 1873 the Military Committee substituted a bill directing the Secretary of War to give me an honorable discharge, which passed January 10, 1873. When this bill reached the Senate it was referred to its Military Committee, whose chairman received a communication from the War Department, dated January 11, 1873, protesting against the passage of the bill. The chairman, Senator John A. Logan, thereupon made an adverse report, without any examination of my record or inquiring into the facts, or even referring it to any member of his Committee, taking for granted that Belknap's request to make an adverse report was all that was necessary.

At the next meeting of Congress the same bill was introduced in the Senate, when the Military Committee made a unanimous report in my favor. The bill, however, did not become a law until May 28, 1874, and then without the approval of the President, who had received an unfavorable report thereon from the War Department, dated June 1, 1874, which in some respects I know misrepresented the facts. I made no agreement with the President or anyone to resign, as stated in that report. The blank resignation on file in the War Department was forced upon me by Belknap *after* my nomination was made by the President. As an instance of hostility shown me by the War Department, I cite the fact that when I was dismissed it was made public by *General Order*, but when my record was corrected by an Act of Congress it was promulgated through a *Special Order*, of which no publicity was given. And when a history of my former regiment was being written, several months after my honorable discharge, the author, General Rodenbough, was unable to procure from the War Department any other evidence than that I stood on the record as a dismissed officer, and in that way I appeared in his book.

Soon after receiving my honorable discharge a bill was introduced in the House authorizing and directing the Secretary of War to restore me to the Army. The Secretary sent an infamous and libelous protest to the Senate, signed by a number of officers, many of whom were unknown to me. So my bill, in consequence of this petition, was reported adversely without examination.

At the opening of the Forty-fourth Congress another bill was introduced in both Houses and referred to the Military Committees. The House Committee's report I invite special attention to, as it shows that the Committee had thoroughly and carefully examined the records of the War Department. This bill passed both Houses at the last session, and had it received the President's signature* would have become law.

*General Grant's show of spite by refusing to sign my bill, after so thorough an investigation of my case, because I had brought charges against his Secretary of War, Belknap, which drove him (Belknap) from power, shows a weak spot.

I entered the Army as a private soldier at the beginning of the war, a boy of but sixteen, when nearly all my classmates and associates joined the Confederates, and when it was almost considered a crime in Virginia to be loyal. I fought in nearly all the battles of the Army of the Potomac, and earned my promotions and brevets without the aid of family influence, social considerations or political friendships.

I have been several times wounded in actual battle and twice on the plains fighting Indians. Have been six times complimented in general orders and by letter for personal bravery in the field by general officers with whom I served. At twenty-one years of age I was appointed in the regular Army, and won my promotion to a Captaincy.

I went into the war from a sense of patriotic duty, and took pride in the profession of a soldier, and it is unreasonable to suppose that I would part with my record for the flimsy and infamous charges which were brought against me. I have spent seven years at the Capitol in seeking, not a favor, but justice, in endeavoring to remove the stigma of disgrace cast upon my name, which I feel can only be done by placing me back in the position from which I was unjustly removed. It has been my fixed purpose from the day on which I received sentence to devote so much of my life as may be necessary to accomplish that end. I need not assure you of my sincerity and earnestness in this matter. I incurred the displeasure of Secretary Belknap, and he obstructed my efforts to be reinstated, but not from any lack of respect due his position; he took his stand against me upon the misrepresentation of men wearing the uniform of officers of the Army, but who would have been more at home in prison garb.

I now renew my application before the Department, reinforced with further evidence, and feeling assured that you will give my case your considerate attention.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

GEO. A. ARMES,
Late Captain, U. S. A.

714 Tenth street N. W.

The above was addressed to the new Secretary of War, Hon. George W. McCrary. I now resume extracts from my diary:

April 10, 1877.

Senator W. P. Kellogg went with me to see some property today. He is one of my friends, assisting me to get justice, and

has helped me without fear or favor from the Secretary of War. Quite a number of Senators and members have been out with me to look at property.

April 19, 1877.

Went out during the afternoon with Mr. Weston, and our conversation drifted on the subject of building flats. He thought it was very singular that we had not such buildings in Washington, when I remarked that it needed some one of enterprise to start anything of the kind, and that we would have to go out of Washington to find capitalists who had energy and foresight sufficient to carry on such an enterprise, as Washingtonians had not yet acquired those qualities. I finally suggested that he purchase that block between L street and Thomas Circle on Fourteenth street and erect such a building as had been spoken of, then others would follow his example; that all that was needed was some one to "start the ball rolling." He hesitated, saying that he had retired from business fifteen years ago; but after a short argument, during which I reminded him that we had good architects and that the experiment would be a good pastime for him, he agreed to undertake it. Architect Cluss was selected to draw his plans, but was unable to secure the whole triangle, as Mr. Burchell and other owners of the property asked too much for their portion when it was discovered that Mr. Weston had concluded to build.*

*My conversation with Mr. Weston that afternoon resulted in the building of the Portland Flats at Thomas Circle on Vermont avenue and Fourteenth street, one of the finest and most substantial fireproof buildings in this District, and the first of its kind ever built in the city of Washington.

May 3, 1877.

Called on General Hancock and Colonel Mitchell today at Wormley's. They seemed glad to see me. The following is self-explanatory:

Washington, D. C., May 8, 1877.

Gen. Chas. W. Ewing,
Attorney-at-Law,
Washington, D. C.:

Sir—I have the honor to request that you take charge of my case and have me restored to my proper rank as Captain of cavalry, U. S. A., within the next four months, or before the assemb-

ling of Congress. I will give you 50 per cent. of all money that is due and paid to me by the Government up to the date of my recognition as Captain, provided you will assume all expenses of printing, etc., in connection with the case and never bring any charge against me for services in this case if you fail.

If you accept my terms, let me hear from you at once, and oblige,

(Signed) GEO. A. ARMES,
Late Captain, U. S. A.

August 21, 1877.

A messenger called on me today stating that Mr. Frederick W. Seward would like to see me. When I called he said that he had spoken as favorably as possible to the President, and that he was anxious to see me get justice.

August 24, 1877.

Was at General Ewing's office today. He gave me a letter to present to Mr. Rogers, who told me to tell General Ewing to call on him at his first opportunity.

August 25, 1877.

General Ewing and I having come to an understanding, he sent me the following agreement:

Dear Captain:

It is understood that if you are not nominated to the Senate before the first day of December next I will surrender my contract for a fee in your case.

Yours truly,
CHAS. EWING.

CAPT. GEO. A. ARMES.

September 7, 1877.

Met Mr. Elkins and his father-in-law, Senator Davis, at the Riggs House, and I went around to look at some property. I finally leased them house 1413 K street.

September 20, 1877.

Gen. Don Piatt went with me to see the Corcoran street house, and is deeply interested on acount of his nephew, General Runkle. We closed the transaction for $6500, he paying one-half cash.

November 23, 1877.

Colonel Don Piatt called with me today on Postmaster-General Key. The latter agreed to go to the President, bringing my case before him, and has volunteered to do everything he can in my behalf. I also gave General Banks my bill, to which he has agreed to give his personal attention.

November 24, 1877.

Postmaster-General Key informed me that he spent some time with President Hayes in regard to my case, who sent for the Secretary of War, and after a careful investigation they decided it would be best to have the matter brought up before Congress, and if Congress acted favorably they would do their part. Considering that there is no law to warrant his restoring me to my full rank except through Congressional legislation, this news was very encouraging, for I believe now that honest men are in power who intend to give me justice.

November 27, 1877.

General Banks has introduced a bill in the House for my restoration. While at the Capitol today I saw General Banning, and he told me he would refer the bill to Colonel Maish of Pennsylvania for investigation. Senator Christiancy introduced a bill in the Senate yesterday to restore me.

December 14, 1877.

Had a very pleasant conversation with Senator Maxey of Texas, who is a member of the Senate Military Committee. My bill has been referred to him to investigate. He is a graduate of West Point and served as a Major-General in the Southern Army. He is considered as one of the most honorable, upright and fair-minded men in the Senate, and I have full confidence in his judgment and ability to investigate my case.

December 27, 1877.

Saw Senator Wallace last evening. He is a good friend of mine, and made me an offer for 1025 Vermont avenue.

SENATOR WALLACE.

December 28, 1877.

General Ewing, having made an agreement with me in regard to my case, has taken an active part to secure my restoration to the Army without action of Congress.

December 31, 1877.

I have been very busy looking over my accounts and in settling up the past year's affairs. I find I have no cause to complain of my success. Although I have not made any very large transactions in bulk, I have rented and sold more houses during the past year than, perhaps, any five real-estate brokers in the city; and all this without interfering with my military matter. In fact, my profession aids to a certain extent in getting access to officials to whom it is necessary to explain the details of my case. My prospects are bright for my restoration to the Army next year, as most of my accusers and those who have opposed my restoration have been left at home or have had their crooked transactions exposed to such an extent that what they say or try to do will have no effect with my friends, who are now in power and have shown a disposition to do me justice.

CHAPTER XVI.

January 1, 1878.

I left my wife and babies with my mother-in-law this A. M. and called on General Batchelder, Colonel Maish, the President and Cabinet, Postmaster-General Key, Secretary Thompson, Dr. Harland, Governor Sheppard, Carpenter, the Hancocks, Schurz, Colonel Moore, Secretary Sherman, General Jeffreys, Biddle, Babcock, Larner, Douglass, Rogers, Weston, Stewart, the Clephanes, Humphrey, Admiral Stanley, Denver and at least twenty others, greatly enjoying our visits.

January 19, 1878.

Drove around to look at houses with Hon. Clarkson Potter, and finally decided on a New York avenue house. Senator Wallace of Pennsylvania is still undecided in relation to closing the large deal we have on hand. He made an offer of $15,000 worth of coal land in part trade for No. 1025 Vermont avenue. Was also out with Senator Randolph today.

January 22, 1878.

Spent a portion of last evening with Colonel Marsh of Illinois, who is interested in my case. Saw General Maxey of Texas, who is taking a personal interest in my behalf.

January 26, 1878.

Had a short talk with Senator Maxey today and obtained a pass from Speaker Randall for thirty days, admitting me to the floor, where I have an opportunity of talking to my friends.

House of Representatives,
Washington, D. C., January 25, 1878.

Dear Sir—I enclose pass for thirty days. The Speaker will not grant to anyone for a longer period, but it may be renewed.

Respectfully,
W. J. SOUTHARD, M. C.

January 27, 1878.

About 7 o'clock this A. M. the bell rang several times, and Albert and Kenneth, my wife's two brothers, brought the informa-

tion that her father had suddenly died at 6 A. M. We hurried through breakfast and drove to the house, where we met a large number of Judge Kerr's friends. His death was so sudden that almost everyone was paralyzed for the time being.

January 28, 1878.

After taking Lucy home yesterday afternoon I returned to the house, where I met Governor Swan of Maryland, Judge Richardson, Admiral Stanley, General Coberton, Colonel Watson, Prescott of South Carolina, Dr. C. C. Cox, Dr. William Gunton, president Washington Bank, and quite a number of my father-in-law's old, substantial friends, who had called to pay their respects to Mrs. Kerr. The following appeared in the *Washington Post*, January 28, 1878:

FROM A PARTY TO THE GRAVE.

THE SUDDEN DEATH OF JOHN BOZMAN KERR—SKETCH OF HIS LIFE.

The Hon. John B. Kerr, for many years a resident of this city, died very suddenly at his residence on Twenty-first street, at 6 o'clock on Sunday morning, of angina pectoris. He attended Horatio King's literary party on Saturday evening, and retired to rest in apparently excellent health. Mr. Kerr was a son of the late John Leeds Kerr, and was born in Talbot County, Maryland, in 1809. He graduated at Harvard University in 1830 in the same class with Charles Sumner. He was admitted to the bar in 1833, and subsequently elected to the Legislature and to Congress. In 1850 he was appointed by President Filmore *Charge d'Affaires* to Guatemala, where he resided until 1853. Returning to the United States, he took up his residence in St. Michaels, on the Eastern Shore of Maryland. After the breaking out of the civil war he removed to Washington, where he held for some years the post of Assistant Solicitor of the Court of Claims. For several years before his death he had been law clerk in the Sixth Auditor's Office. Mr. Kerr was an accomplished scholar in ancient and modern lore, an ardent student of history, and especially of the history of his native State, a well-read lawyer and a most agreeable and instructive companion. By his death his wife and nine children are deprived of a most affectionate husband and father. He was in every relation of life a man of admirable qualities of head and heart, and sincerely admired by a very large circle of friends.

Baltimore, Md., January 29, 1878.

After breakfast I drove up to Judge Kerr's house; to St. Paul's at 3 P. M. Left Lucy at her mother's, and Mr. Charles Kerr, my

wife's uncle, with Leeds and Arthur, her two brothers, brought the remains of the Judge over here, and we are now waiting for the boat to take them over to Easton, Md.

Easton, Md., January 30, 1878.

Yesterday afternoon Charles Kerr invited us to dine at his house in Baltimore, after which the remains were placed in the boat, and we left at 11 o'clock, reaching Easton at 6 A. M., where we were met by Mr. Tilman with the carriage and hearse, and Judge Kerr's remains were taken to the same church where he was married on this day twenty-eight years ago, a singular coincidence. Mr. Kerr represented this district in Congress for a number of years, succeeding his father, John Leeds Kerr, who represented this part of Maryland in the United States Senate. Mr. Tilman invited us to breakfast, after which we took the remains to the old family burial-ground. My wife's oldest brother, Leeds Kerr, was overcome and fainted, and it was some time before Dr. Earl could bring him to. In going through the old homestead I found quite a number of old letters and newspapers published and written over a hundred years ago, which I brought back home as interesting souvenirs.

Baltimore, Md., January 31, 1878.

After our return from the old homestead burial-ground Mrs. Shreve, Captain Tilman's sister and Lucy's cousin, invited us to dine, and we left on the 8 o'clock boat last evening; but we were stuck on a sand bar for several hours before reaching Baltimore, and did not arrive until about 2 o'clock, when Uncle Charley Kerr invited us to lunch.

February 7, 1878.

While at the Capitol I learned that General Bragg was to make a big fight against the passage of my bill. I did my best to see him before it was called up, but he would not discuss the question with me. When the bill was called he raised a point of order, and it was postponed until next Tuesday.

February 9, 1878.

General Ewing having failed to get my matter settled with the President, it is necessary to resort to other means to procure the passage of a bill.

February 12, 1878.

Had a talk with General Banning last night. Mr. Wilson told me that they would do what they could to get the bill called up tomorrow. Commissioner Johnson is taking a personal interest also, and informed me that it would be reported favorably by the committee. Was at the Capitol today at 11 o'clock with a large number of my friends on hand to help me. Judge Dibrell of Tennessee took a personal interest in the matter, trying to get Colonel Maish to bring up the bill, but there was no chance.

March 1, 1878.

Senator Randolph and I drove up to the Capitol this morning together. While there I had a long talk with Colonel Maish, who thinks he can call up my bill next Tuesday, and has made a favorable report. He says General Bragg will do his utmost to kill it.

March 5, 1878.

Spent last evening with Senator Harris of Tennessee, who went all through my case, and has agreed to stand by Senator Maxey, who made a favorable report on the bill today.

March 12, 1878.

General Dibrell of Tennessee, who is on the Military Committee, took an active part in helping Colonel Maish to get my bill through the committee, and he and Colonel Maish are now fixing the report so as to call it up in the House and put it on its passage at the first opportunity.

Monday, April 1, 1878.

Was out with Captain Howgate to look at property, and have a large deal on hand which I hope to get through. Father White, who married me, died at 8 o'clock this A. M.

April 4, 1878.

Colonel Grierson of the Tenth Cavalry sent a protest to the Senate and House today opposing my restoration, but I am satisfied that it will have very little effect, as the case has been so thoroughly investigated that anything Grierson will say or do will be without avail.

April 10, 1878.

Went up to the Capitol and had a large number of members interested. General T. T. Crittenden has agreed to defend me in the House against General Bragg.

The following was sent him later:

Washington, D. C., April 12, 1878.

Hon. T. T. Crittenden:

Sir—Having just learned that letters I have written in the past few years to W. W. Belknap, late Secretary of War, have been severely commented upon, I find it necessary to explain my motive for writing in the manner I did. I deny that I offered to compromise with the late Secretary of War in any of my letters to him. One dated January 20, 1876, he used against me, and endeavored to make it appear that I would withdraw all charges against him, provided he would cease opposing me. Such was not my meaning, nor can I see how so absurd an idea could be formed. My intention at that time was, if he should make any further misrepresentations against me to make it a personal matter with him. The dates of all charges I made against him will show they were published over my signature before the letter he tried to make so much capital of against me was submitted. By reference to the *St. Louis Times* of December 22, 1875, it can be seen my charges had been given as much publicity as was necessary to show that I was in earnest, and my request to Mr. Clymer to write to General Hazen, who sent him the facts in the matter, was made before I wrote the letter alluded to. I have aimed from my youth to lead an honest, straightforward career, and am willing to have every transaction I ever made fully investigated. I do not begin attacks for the sake of notoriety, but I do resent them when it is necessary. My training in the regular Army taught me to be respectful to superiors, but my letters to W. W. Belknap may seem to the general reader threatening and insulting, but I was fully justified, and had good cause for every word I wrote. Some persons will submit to injustice and abuse, but I will not from any man, no matter what his position is. Enclosed you will find papers, to which I call your attention.

Respectfully, your obedient servant,

GEO. A. ARMES.

I had copies of Colonel Maish's report put on all the members' desks, and at 12 o'clock my bill was called up. General Bragg of Wisconsin at once took the floor and began to speak against it. After he was through General Crittenden of Missouri replied, and you could almost hear a pin drop, he had such attention, and after

several hours' discussion the bill was passed, creating considerable excitement. I was congratulated by hundreds, there having been such opposition by the Army and administration and officials who were determined it should not go through if it could be prevented. It was a great victory for me.

The following portion of the debate is taken from the official report as printed in the *Congressional Record:*

The Speaker. The unfinished business of the morning hour coming over from last Friday is the bill (H. R. No. 4242) to authorize the restoration of George A. Armes to the rank of Captain.

Mr. Bragg. I regret exceedingly to be obliged to oppose a report of a majority of the Military Committee, who have recommended the passage of this bill. I only do so because I think, upon a question of principle, this bill ought not to pass.

Irrespective of the question of the merit or demerit of the officer whom this bill seeks to restore, there is a question of public policy underlying all, which controls my judgment in my vote in opposition to the passage of this bill, and that is this: It has already been announced semi-officially to this House that in the opinion of the Military Committee there are already in the neighborhood of 800 supernumerary officers in the military service of the United States.

Mr. Haskell. I have but a word to say in regard to this case. I do not desire to enter into a long discussion of the general principles involved in it. But inasmuch as this officer at one time in his life was in command of Kansas troops upon the frontier of my State, and distinguished himself by gallantry and soldierly conduct in several engagements, and inasmuch as he has received favorable mention from so many of the prominent citizens of my State, I deem it to be but fair, when a bill concerning him is pending in this House, to make some statements in reference to the causes which led to his dismissal from the Army.

I state as a fact that cannot be controverted, that notwithstanding the action of that court-martial, this officer was dismissed from the service upon a set of charges not one of them having in the most remote degree one single particle of truth in it, not a word.

This gentleman is a Virginian, a young man who, at the age of sixteen, entered the Army of the Union, who, unaided by any official influence or any power of prominent relatives, worked his way up to an honorable position in the regular Army. While in the discharge of his military duties he was assailed by an unjust and absolutely untrue set of charges and dismissed from the service.

The bill, as I understand, does not restore him arbitrarily to the Army. However just, in my opinion, such an act would be, that is not the object of the bill. It simply permits the President of the United States to appoint him to his old rank of Captain in his old

regiment whenever a vacancy shall occur in that regiment. Absolute discretion in regard to the appointment is lodged with the President. That is all there is in the bill. Mr. Armes will receive no pay under the bill and no rank. The President is simply authorized, if he so desires, to appoint Mr. Armes whenever a vacancy of his rank occurs in his former regiment.

As to the character of the man, nothing can be said against it, and, as part of my remarks, I desire to have read from the Clerk's desk a testimonial from the former Governor of my State and from General Hancock, showing the services of this officer and his good character, giving him only a just meed of praise.

I ask the Clerk to read first the letter I have sent up, and afterward the bill pending before the House.

Now, Mr. Speaker, knowing as I do the gallant conduct of this young officer upon the border of my State in protecting it from the ravages of the Indians, knowing the meritorious service that he performed for my people in protecting their homes, and knowing that he was dismissed from the service on a set of charges not one word of which was true, I believe that the small and insignificant compensation allowed him by the terms of this bill is an act of justice that the House will not hesitate to accord him.

Mr. Crittenden. Mr. Speaker, I believe that the report of the Committee on Military Affairs should be sanctioned by this House. I have examined with some care the evidence that has been produced against Captain Armes. I have also examined the various reports that have been made by three or four committees, not only of this House, but of the Senate, in his favor. In each case the committee has uniformly reported that Captain Armes should be restored to the service on certain conditions.

Unfortunately for Captain Armes, he fell under the disapprobation of a certain gentleman whom I do not suppose anyone will undertake to defend in this or any other Congress. This gallant young officer was persecuted and prosecuted with industrious hatred by one who was then Secretary of War—W. W. Belknap—whom none will defend now; none who will do him such reverence now as in former days. As long as Belknap was Secretary of War young Armes was oppressed and stood no chance to vindicate himself. It would have been well for that Secretary had he not carried his immense power in harassing this young officer so far and vexing him so long. He at last drove him to despair, and that officer, who had won the admiration of a Hancock, a Palmer and his associate officers on the bloodiest battlefields, turned upon the Secretary and unearthed those acts and charges which soon drove him from power. After eight years of suffering, Congress is at last about to do justice to young Armes. He should be restored at once, as recommended by the Committee. Justice is often slow, but she ever travels apace, with her scales evenly balanced, dealing out good for good and evil for evil. Her steps may be checked by crime and wrong for a time, but, as sure as a God reigns, she will move onward and grind to powder those who oppose

Mr. Chairman, I call the attention of this House to what General Hancock said of Captain Armes. The name of Hancock commands the warmest respect of every American citizen. He was a true, bold, steady and brilliant fighter on the battlefield, and since peace has returned to our land he has been as true, bold and sturdy a follower of the law. A true soldier always makes a true citizen.

Captain Armes was convicted, I say, by the persecution of the Secretary of War upon the evidence of four men and a woman of bad repute. Three of the men were discharged from the public service and sent to the penitentiary; as to the fourth, I know not where he is, but he was of equally bad character. Are we to cast this cloud of odium upon this young officer on the testimony of such characters, merely to accommodate the past prejudices of a retired Cabinet officer? I hope not.. I say for one I will not do it by my vote, unless that evidence is corroborated by other evidence than that of these five notorious and disreputable characters. I will stand by the report of the Committee. If Captain Armes is restored to his military character it will be but a simple act of simple justice, much to our credit as fair and impartial lawmakers, unmoved by other impulses than right and justice.

Mr. Frye. I wish only to say this, that I have read with care every word of the report of the Military Committee on this case. Many gentlemen have it before them, and there is no minority report; and I say that when gentlemen of this House read the statement of facts reported by this Committee there ought not to linger the shadow of a single doubt as to the merits of the case. If these facts are true that this Committee have reported they would be sufficient to grant a new trial in any criminal case that was ever tried in this country. If the reported facts are true—and of course we must accept them as true, there being no minority report—why, under the sun, any man in this House can vote against this little meed of justice which this Committee so carefully and guardedly recommend should be granted to this man who has been thus abused by perjurers, murderers and burglars, as the Committee show, I cannot for the life of me see. I hope that the House will sustain the report of the Committee with unanimity.

Col. Levi P. Maish.

Colonel Maish's report was read during the proceedings.

I felt impelled to submit the following:

Washington, D. C., April 15, 1878.

Sir—In answer to the communication of Col. B. H. Grierson, Tenth U. S. Cavalry, protesting against the restoration of any officer to his regiment, no matter how unjust his dismissal may have been, which was referred to your Committee, I have the honor to call attention to the fact that the Colonel does not mention my name, nor does he directly or indirectly make any charges against me as a soldier or a gentleman.

This was as fully known in my regiment as it is now to you, and yet Colonel Grierson asked you to deny me simple justice for the reason that he does not want any officer restored to his regiment. This certainly is not sufficient even to justify Colonel Grierson in writing his protest, and will, of course, have no weight with your Committee. I will here take the liberty of asking whether or not it is advisable for commanding officers of regiments to urge the Secretary of War, the General of the Army and the Adjutant-General, in the language of Colonel Grierson's protest, to use their influence to procure or prevent legislation that a Committee of Congress has determined upon.

Does not Colonel Grierson request these high officers to lobby against the bill you have reported favorably to the Senate for the relief of Captain Foulk, Lieutenant Spencer and myself?

I have the honor to be, very respectfully,

G. A. Armes.

To the Hon. Geo. E. Spencer,
Chairman Military Committee U. S. Senate.

April 16, 1878.

While talking to Senator Johnson last evening he told me he understood that Senator Conkling had been requested by General Grant to do what he could to defeat my bill in the Senate, and with the aid of Senator Edmunds they would be two strong men to oppose; that I had best request Senator Spencer, chairman of the Senate Military Committee, to have a private talk with Senator Conkling before my bill was called up and try and prevent him from working against it. I took his advice, calling on Senator Spencer today, who, after an interview with Senator Conkling, told me he would not oppose it; that he was glad to know both sides of the question, and he would let Senator Edmunds do all the fighting as far as he was concerned. Senator Spencer also informed me that the Senate had decided to take up the calendar

tomorrow, and for me to be on hand with all the friends I could muster to help carry the bill through, as Senator Edmunds had made great preparations to defeat it.

April 18, 1878.

Last night Senator Spencer told me to be on hand early this morning; that he had also had a long talk with Senator Blaine, who had promised to help in opposition to Senator Edmunds. I was on hand at 11 o'clock, and at 1.30 P. M. the bill was reached on the calendar, when Senator Edmunds of Vermont and Senator Plumb of Kansas took the floor against it. Senator Maxey of Texas and Senator James G. Blaine of Maine defended the bill in opposition to Senators Edmunds and Plumb. After a lengthy discussion on the floor the yeas and nays were ordered, and Senator Blaine carried the whole Senate, with the exception of six votes, which were all that Senator Edmunds could command. Senator Kellogg of Louisiana took an active part in my behalf, together with Senators Conkling, Conover, Spencer, Maxey, Cockrell and, in fact, all the Senate, with the exception of Senators Edmunds, Plumb, Wadleigh, Morrill, Anthony and Davis of Illinois. I was so overcome with joy at my great victory that I could not help but show it, and have been the subject of congratulation all the evening.

The proceedings of the Senate are reported as follows in the *Congressional Record:*

Mr. Maxey.—Mr. President, every Committee which has examined this case as lawyers examine a case has arrived at the same conclusion. Congress twice arrived at the same conclusion, once by setting aside the order of dishonorable discharge and granting him an honorable discharge; next a bill was introduced, what for? To restore him to the Army? Not at all, but to place him as near as may be where he was before, so far as the power of the President is concerned to promote him. With the laws in force prohibiting promotion except by seniority, the President, if he believes that wrong and injustice have been done, may under this bill nominate this gentleman, send the nomination to this body, and then it will be for the Senate to say whether or not he shall be confirmed. Not a dollar of pay is given, but it simply restores him as near as may be.

Mr. President, I have only to say that if I had been the reviewing officer those proceedings never would have received my sanction. I can state that so far as the papers have been shown to me, I do not believe they ever did pass under the review of the President of

the United States, although the law was mandatory that proceedings in review should be had by him, and his order and decision made thereon. But Congress did, as near as they could, attempt to relieve him. They ordered an honorable discharge to be granted him, and passed another bill, which is exactly the same as the one now pending. That bill passed both Houses. Whether designed on the part of the President or not, I do not know, but being at a very late day of the session, it failed to receive the approval of the President, and thereby it fell. It seems to me that this is simply a case of pure, naked justice. Some may have thought that I have bad blood toward all those of our kith and kin who turned against us. No such feeling can actuate me in this case. This man fought under the flag of the Union from his youth up. It is not to be supposed that I would have bad feelings toward him on that account, or that that would specially commend him to me; but I have made this defense in behalf of this young man because the eternal principles of justice ought to be maintained. All we can do is to restore him to the position which he was honorably given, and of which he was unjustly deprived.

Mr. Edmunds. Mr. President, there seems to be pretty good reason to believe from the statement of the Senator from Texas that the judgment of this court-martial was an error, although it appears that the other people who accused Armes were convicted and that the people whom Armes accused were convicted. They were convicted all around, and what we should find if we reviewed the court-martial proceedings in the other cases as to their regularity or illegality we do not know. I am not making these remarks as preliminary for asking that this case go over. I have no objection to its being voted upon. But the danger in respect of this kind of legislation is, as it appears to me, that the Congress of the United States, having provided by courts-martial to try matters of this character, and regulated all their proceedings in the Army, just as we do in private affairs, by a judicial system, now is sitting at this moment as a court of review of the findings of a court-martial (not upon the ground, which would have some force in it) that it appears to us that the members of that court were corrupt, and so the court had not any honest jurisdiction, because they were unfit to try the case, but because, although as the Committee say, they have no imputations to make upon the officers who composed that court-martial, who might be able to vindicate themselves if they had a hearing possibly, but because they committed an error. That is a very dangerous ground for legislation to stand upon. In the history of this Government, and respecting men now living, there are no doubt thousands of cases of hardship, of error, where injustice has been done to gallant men by the error of a court deciding against them when it ought to have decided, as we might think, in their favor. There is the instrinsic danger of steps

of this character. Of course, this proceeds upon the principle that it is a part of the business and the duty of Congress to rectify the errors of courts-martial, not to rectify their wrongs when it turns out that the members of the courts were themselves prejudiced and unfit or corrupt, but where, as in this case, the members were upright, the court was duly formed, but unhappily for the victim made a mistake, as we think. Mr. President, I do not wish to commit myself to that ground. I must be excused from doing so, as much as my sympathies have been affected by the statement of the Senator from Texas.

Now, let me come to a second point.

Mr. Maxey. Will the Senator from Vermont permit me a moment?

Mr. Edmunds. If it does not come out of my five minutes, Mr. President.

Mr. Maxey. The Senator knows very well that I dislike to interrupt anybody. The record does not appear in the report, but it appears in the proceedings that Captain Armes upon trial objected to one of the members of the court because he had expressed an opinion in regard to him and his case. That objection was one of the most serious charcter; he had said that he would not believe him on oath, and so on. The court overruled the objection and permitted the trial to go on. I do not think that could occur in civilized life.

Mr. Edmunds. Mr. President, that very often happens in civil life, where a man objects to a judge, but it unhappily happens that the Committee have told us from their investigation that they have no reflections to make upon the court except that they committed an error.

Mr. Maxey. The Committee do not reflect upon the honor of the court. What we complain of is that it was an error of judgment.

Mr. Edmunds. But the Committee has not stated in its report, if I correctly understood it, and I listened very attentively, that it finds that this objection to this member of the court was well founded, because the objection if well founded was that he was a scoundrel, that he was a man whose oath to try that case honestly could not be believed. Perhaps that officer would like to have a fair hearing in this court of review before we condemn him.

Mr. Maxey. I do not think the Senator understood me. I said that this member of the court so charged Armes, not that Armes had charged him.

Mr. Edmunds. Ah, very well.

Mr. Maxey. And the point Armes made was that this member of the court had already formed an opinion and had expressed such an opinion, and, therefore, was incompetent, which in my country at least would be a very good objection.

Mr. Blaine. Mr. President, I think the ground taken by the Senator from Vermont proves too much. If he objects to having the findings of courts-martial ever reviewed by Congress, I think he would take off one of the most salutary restraints upon the license to which courts-martial might run that now exist. There is no service, military or naval, in any country that does not have a little bit of tendency to run into cliques, sometimes a very great one, and there have been instances in which very grave injustice has been done to the best of officers under such influences. There is no danger that Congress is going to launch forth into the general business of reviewing courts-martial. From the foundation of the Government to this time very few officers have been restored by any action of Congress—I mean very few in comparison with those who have suffered at the hands of courts-martial. At the same time I have no doubt that the power of Congress to do it and its entire discretion to do it at any time has been a very wise and salutary restraint upon the care and circumspection with which courts-martial are conducted, and if you once establish it that, no matter what finding of a court-martial may happen to get approved, there is no possible appeal here, I say *God help some officers of the Army in future years.*

Now, the fact that this man got a certificate of good character, an honorable discharge in 1874, as the Senator says, only proves to my mind that very gross injustice was done him. The very fact that Congress granted that proves the injustice of the court-martial. You could not possibly have granted that without absolutely trampling on it, and by that very act saying it was unjust. If we are willing to say that a thing was unjust, do not let us stop at half measures. If we put it as a matter of record that this man was entitled to an honorable discharge, then surely he ought not to lie under the censure of having been guilty of so grave an offense as to call for that punishment which to a soldier is equal to death, being cashiered.

I do not pretend to have examined with any very great care the case of Mr. Armes, although I have casually known of it for a great many years; but we are all more or less governed by the findings of committees, and we have to trust them. I find that this case has been examined with the utmost care by Committees in both branches of Congress without the slightest regard to party. I find that such men as Powell Clayton, George E. Spencer, James K. Kelly, P. M. B. Young, W. G. Donnan, J. M. Thornburgh, John B. Hawley (the present Assistant Secretary of the Treasury), John Coburn (for a long time chairman of the Committee on Military Affairs of the other House and one of the most careful men I have ever known in legislative affairs), Charles Albright, B. Wadleigh (present Senator in this body), J. W. Nesmith, Eppa Hunton, Lewis B. Gunckel, Joseph R. Hawley and C. D. McDougall have

been in favor of this measure in the past. You have had favorable reports from those who have given the utmost care and attention to this case, and I have no doubt that it would be a very serious injustice to this man to deny this relief: an injustice that we cannot afford, not simply with regard to him, but with regard to ourselves and still more with regard to the vast number of officers who in the future in the Army and in the Navy are liable to suffer from causes which we need not specify, and which we may not go into, from the summary punishment of courts-martial. It is a wholesome and good thing to hold the power of review in Congress, to exercise it, of course, always with discretion, but in meritorious cases to exercise it with absolute power.

The following extracts are from the *Washington Post* and *Union* of April 19, 1878:

Senator Preston Belisarius Plumb made another great speech yesterday in opposition to the bill to restore Captain Armes to the Army. On this occasion Mr. Plumb was able to muster six negatives. His oratory is improving. Generally, when he makes a labored effort, he is only able to command his own vote.

The bill to restore Capt. Geo. A. Armes to his position as Captain of cavalry has passed both Houses, in spite of the lobbying efforts of all Belknap's friends. Captain Armes was most outrageously treated by Belknap, but he has been vindicated.

To resume my diary:

April 19, 1878.

Immediately after breakfast called on Senator Blaine to thank him for the active and noble part he took in coming to my rescue as he did. He appeared to feel proud of his grand victory in defeating Senator Edmunds, who represented the administration, and he assured me that I could rely on him in the future for any assistance I might need.

April 20, 1878.

Met Mr. Frederick Seward last evening, who gave me a card requesting the Secretary of War to make my case special and assist me in getting my commission as soon as possible. I thanked and congratulated all who had defended and assisted me. This has been a very lucky day, as I closed the trade with Captain Howgate and Mr. Evans, resulting in a commission of several thousand dollars.

April 22, 1878.

I am everywhere congratulated on the success of my bill. Senator Paddock of Nebraska got Mr. Ferry to sign it and Mr. Hazelton of Wisconsin and Mr. Raney of South Carolina to accompany me to the President to get his signature to the bill; so it is now a law, and all I lack is my nomination and confirmation to be in active service.

April 23, 1878.

Got a certified copy of my bill from the State Department, took it to the Secretary of War, who said he would have my nomination made out and take it to the President at once. Called on Mr. Rogers at the White House, who assured me he would get the nomination before the Senate as speedily as possible.

A letter that had much to do with my restoration follows:

Washington March 29 1877

Capt. Geo A. Custer

Washington

Dear Sir.

In reply to your letter of yesterday, requesting me to state what your record was in the 2d Cavalry, I will state that during your whole service in that regiment I claim you had the reputation of being an energetic gallant and able officer. I may well recollect the complimentary notice of your conduct in General Orders from the Head Quarters of the Department of the Platte. Although you were not under my immediate command I of course knew your general reputation

Of your conduct after you were promoted out of my regiment I cannot speak as I was entirely separated from you

But in the matter of your trial I was very sorry to see that any weight should be given to the evidence of Capt. Graham whom I knew to be one of the most unprincipalled villains in the country, and who was not only ignominiously dismissed from the service for great crimes, but who was afterwards convicted of being a common highwayman and a murderer. I have heard and I believe it to be a fact that Graham was at one time a convict in one of the New York Penitentiaries

Of Capt. Cox who was also a witness against you I can only say that he had a very bad reputation and his subsequent career and fate in the Army plainly showed that he was not a man to be believed on his oath

You are at liberty to make any use of this you may choose.

Very respectfully yours

J. N. Palmer
Colonel 2d Cavalry

April 24, 1878.

Went to the White House this A. M., and was disappointed to find that President Hayes had gone out of the city, failing to send the nomination in before leaving. I then went to the War Department and learned that General Townsend had my case to report upon, and that there was no show to get anything done until the President's return.

April 26, 1878.

Drove by Colonel Rogers' house this morning. He got in my carriage, and we drove to the White House. He appears to be a good friend of mine, doing what he can to urge my matter along. He gave me a cordial invitation to come to the White House to see him whenever I felt like it without any ceremony, showing a great interest in my behalf. Among the letters of congratulation received was one from Col. James G. Faulkner, who was our minister to France at the outbreak of the Rebellion and is now a member of Congress from West Virginia. He lives like a king at Boydsville, his beautiful home in Martinsburg. He congratulates not only me, but all the friends who assisted my restoration, and extends a cordial invitation to them to his house. There he will entertain Congressmen, Senators, the President and all who took an active part in my behalf.

April 30, 1878.

While at the White House Postmaster-General Key informed me that my case had been referred to the Judge-Advocate-General for his report.

May 1, 1878.

Gen. T. T. Crittenden went with me to see the Judge-Advocate-General this morning. We learned that Major Winthrop, who was directed to make the report, had made one favorable to me.

May 2, 1878.

This A. M. I met the Secretary of War at the President's house. After a short talk I walked with him to the War Department. He assured me that he would bring up my matter in the Cabinet meeting tomorrow.

May 3, 1878.

I went to the War Department and sent my card in to the Secretary of War, who sent word to me that my name would go to

the Senate on Monday. Met General Coburn of the House, who has proven one of my strongest friends and one of the most reliable and honest men I have met. Received a telegram from Hon. Charles J. Faulkner from Boydsville, W. Va., requesting me to invite President Hayes and as many of his personal friends as he could induce to come with him to his house to dine and be entertained as a reward for their friendship to me. Last night I called on President Hayes, but was informed that he was engaged with some friends and impossible for me to see him. I insisted that my card should be sent up, when his son, Webb Hayes, came down to know if there was anything he could do, as his father was very busy. I explained about the telegram I had received from Mr. Faulkner, handing him the telegram, which he carried up to his father, who excused himself to his friends and came down stairs. Inviting me out on the portico, he sat down, engaging in a long conversation in regard to his war experience, saying that there was no place on earth he would rather visit than that of Hon. Charles J. Faulkner and accept of his hospitality; but under the circumstances, Congress being about to adjourn, it was impossible for him to leave the city. Before parting he placed my hand on his head, requesting me to feel the furrow that a bullet had made through his skull while in an engagement on Mr. Faulkner's estate, remarking that to visit such a man under the circumstances would be a very great pleasure to him if it were at all possible to get away. Mr. Hayes became so interested, recalling so many incidents that had passed, that he seemed to forget the friends he had left upstairs, who, I reminded him, might have more important business than I. He replied there was nothing so important as to talk over the past. Thanking him for his many kindnesses to me and shaking hands with him, I left him, and he returned to his friends.

Boydsville, W. Va., May 4, 1878.

The President, members and Senators whom I had invited at Mr. Faulkner's request to make him a visit not being able to leave their duties, I invited Admiral Stanley of the Navy to accompany me here. We arrived at 10 P. M., and were met at the depot by Capt. Charles J. Faulkner with a carriage. We were driven to his father's mansion, and there welcomed and entertained in the old Virginia style with mint juleps, etc. We were

then invited to a table supplied with every delicacy, from which we did not rise until 11 o'clock.

Boydsville, W. Va., May 5, 1878.

Reaching our rooms at the late hour of 2 o'clock A. M. for the purpose of retiring, we found a silver tray on a center table in each room which was loaded with refreshments. We had beautiful and spacious rooms, to which we were shown by an old-time servant. The bedsteads were the old-fashioned canopied rosewood or walnut, which were made accessible by steps. This morning when called to breakfast we found our boots polished ready for us to don. During the afternoon Colonel Faulkner took us in his carriage all through the surrounding country, which is a most interesting drive.

Washington, D. C., May 6, 1878.

After breakfast Capt. Charles J. Faulkner (since United States Senator), the colonel's son, took us all through the armory, to the springs and to all places of interest, and after an elaborate lunch we were driven to the depot. We were delighted with the royal entertainment we had receivd.

May 8, 1878.

I called on Senator M. C. Butler of South Carolina today, who told me he would see the Secretary of War and President about my nomination.

May 9, 1878.

I went to the President's house today, where I received word that my name had been sent to the Senate, and was advised to go there immediately and look after it. After reaching the Capitol Senator Spencer and General Butler informed me that they thought there was no doubt about my being confirmed immediately. I learned that I was confirmed.

May 11, 1878.

Went to the War Department to see Mr. Crosby, the chief clerk, who told me that he had orders to have the commission made out at once, which he handed to me. I took it to President Hayes, who signed it. I was immediately sworn in, and am now a Captain on the active list of the Army.

May 12, 1878.

Yesterday, after I had received and accepted my commission, I called on the Secretary of War to thank him for his kindness in

being so prompt in signing the necessary papers and the privileges he had granted me in the matter. General Burnett, Senator Spencer, Judge Noah and Colonel Crittenden dined with me today, and a happier party I do not believe ever sat at a table. All seemed as glad of my success as I am myself.

May 13, 1878.

General Crittenden called with me on the Secretary of War and arranged that I might delay reporting to my regiment until June 10, the Secretary fixing the time himself, and showed his friendship by offering many courtesies. I did not realize that I had so many friends until my bill passed doing me justice.

Fifth Avenue Hotel, New York City, May 16, 1878.

Arrived here at 7 o'clock this A. M. After breakfast I purchased my uniform and called on General Hancock at Fort Columbus, who congratulated me and seemed as much interested as if I were of his own family.

May 28, 1878.

Called on President Hayes today and thanked him for his many courtesies. He wished me success, and assured me that if he could do anything for me I could rely upon him. I have made up my mind that he is the most honorable of men.

New York City, June 13, 1878.

Arrived here at 7 A. M. and reported to Major Bush, who told me to get ready to go by the steamer on Saturday via Key West and Galveston. I immediately called on General Hancock and staff, where I met Col. J. F. Kent (now Brigadier-General), who is going in command of the detachment.

On the Atlantic, June 15, 1878.

We left New York at 8 this A. M. on the steamer *Texas*. Colonel Kent, my commanding officer has extended every courtesy possible to make us comfortable.

In the Gulf of Mexico, Ninety Miles
from Key West, June 21, 1878.

We had a calm sea all the way from New York and a splendid trip. Arrived at Key West at 4 o'clock this A. M., where the vessel remained several hours, giving us an opportunity to visit all the places of interest.

Galveston, Texas, June 22, 1878.

At 2 o'clock P. M. we began to sight land, and by 4 o'clock were on the bar about ten miles out. After landing I received orders to go to Fort Griffin instead of Richardson.

Fort Worth, June 27, 1878.

Met Col. E. J. Strang, the Quartermaster, who had wagons fixed up for me to go to Fort Griffin, and not having an ambulance or spring wagon, I telegraphed to headquarters at San Antonio for one, but not being able to get an order for it, I purchased a strong ambulance and harness.

June 28, 1878.

Colonel Strang, the Quartermaster, was very kind and obliging in fixing up seats in the ambulance and putting it in a condition to use during the long journey.

Rocky Creek, Texas, July 1, 1878.

The mules gave out last night, and Lucy and the children were obliged to sleep in the wagon. One of the most terrible rainstorms I ever knew came up about 4 o'clock, and when we reached this creek found it impossible to cross it, so we have gone into camp.

Fort Griffin, Texas, July 4, 1878.

We left Hubbard creek about 7 o'clock this A. M. Had a good road all through until we reached the creek near the post, which was so full of mud that it seemed almost impossible to cross it with teams. While in the center my ambulance stuck fast, breaking off the tongue and leaving Lucy and the babies in the ambulance. It took us several hours to get them all out. Upon our arrival here we were met by Colonel Lincoln, who invited us to his quarters, introducing us to Mrs. Lincoln, who made us feel at home, assigning us to a nicely furnished room and preparing a splendid dinner.

Near Mason Creek, Texas, July 8, 1878.

We had breakfast at 8 o'clock this A. M. and drove into Fort Concho at 10. We were met by Colonel Grierson, who pretended to be very polite, shaking hands and introducing me to the Quartermaster and several others whom I had never seen before. However, he had neglected to have any preparations made to receive us, in spite of my telegraphing ahead the day that we ex-

pected to arrive. After requesting that I be assigned to quarters, he finally directed that Lieutenant Maxen's room and kitchen be turned over to us until transportation could be gotten ready to take us to Fort Stockton, several hundred miles further west, where my company was stationed. Upon calling at the postoffice for my mail I was informed that Lieutenant Smithers had ordered it all forwarded to Fort Stockton, a very mean transaction, knowing, as he did, that we were expected here and would be very anxious to receive news from home, having directed all our mail to be sent to this post.

Camp Eighteen Miles West of Concho, July 31, 1878.

Captain N. S. Constable, the Quartermaster, was very kind in getting us started this morning, and had us supplied with everything necessary for our comfort. Major McLaughlin, in command of the detachment, is about as mean a man as I ever served under.

Camp on Concho River, about Forty Miles
West of Fort Concho, August 1, 1878.

Major McLaughlin ordered the command to move at 6 o'clock this A. M., and we had to get up very early so as to be through breakfast in time. The heat has been terrible all day for a march through these dusty and sandy roads, the air being filled with mosquitos.

Camp on the Pecos, August 4, 1878.

All our kegs, demijohns and canteens were filled with water last night, as orders compelled us to start at 4 o'clock this A. M., but it was almost 5 o'clock before we pulled out. The country is full of rocks and the mountains very difficult to cross over. We have to lock both hind wheels of the vehicles in going down the steep mountains.

August 11, 1878.

I was at the reveille roll-call this A. M. and met Major Andrew Geddes, who spent last evening at my quarters.

August 12, 1878.

While at the post-trader's last evening who should drop in but J. W. Clarke, to whom I loaned a thousand dollars thirteen years ago, which remains unpaid. He is on his way to San Antonio, stopping over here for the night. I went on duty as Officer of the

Day for the first time in eight years, relieving Lieutenant Beck. and I was also put on a board to examine commissary stores

October 5, 1878.

Since my arrival at this post my duties have consisted of drilling my company, scouting and shooting at targets—the same thing over and over almost every day, going on board to survey and on duty as Officer of the Day, which has occupied the whole of my time. I have looked after every detail, having been watched by several officers, who have been playing the spy for General Grierson and Captain Smithers. So far, however, they have not been able to find any grounds for charges.

October 8, 1878.

Last night, a short time before 11 o'clock, Lucy presented me with a fine boy, whom I at once named George Kerr Armes.

October 18, 1878.

Major Geddes relieved me as Officer of the Day this morning. Major McLaughlin tried to find fault about the detailed men, but discovered no grounds for charges. He sent Lieutenant Glenn with orders to take the blinds off the windows of my quarters, a very mean act for a commanding officer.

Fort Stockton, October 19, 1878.

About 10 o'clock today Lieut. O. G. Sweet, Post Adjutant, came to my quarters with his sword buckled on and handed me a special order from Major McLaughlin placing me in close arrest (Arrest No. 20). So far I have been unable to find out any reason for it.

Fort Stockton, October 20, 1878.

Major Geddes, Dr. Hall and Lieut. H. B. Quinby called to see me today, and are very indignant at Major McLaughlin's action, knowing there are no grounds for such an arbitrary act.

Fort Stockton, October 26, 1878.

Major Keyes spent last evening with us. He was as full as a tick—his usual condition. I made a demand of Colonel McLaughlin for release or to be furnished with a copy of the charges, and this evening I was served with a copy of manufactured malicious charges that won't hold water.

Fort Stockton, November 10, 1878.

Lieutenant Easterly came in this morning with the information that Major McLaughlin had ordered him not to allow any of the enlisted men to do any duty around my quarters. He is doing everything in his power to make things unpleasant for us.

Fort Stockton, November 15, 1878.

A telegram came from General Vincent last night giving me the limits of the post, together with the request for an explanation, which I sent him, as follows:

Fort Stockton, Texas, November 14, 1878.

Adjutant-General, Department of Texas,
San Antonio, Texas,

Through Post Headquarters:

In answer to your telegram, 13th inst., received at 2.20 this P. M., I submit briefly the facts as nearly as I can remember without an opportunity of referring to records:

The whole mistake seems to have been caused by Dennis' name appearing on guard report instead of Dean. The Adjutant suggested to me to enter under head of remarks in guard report book the names of the men who took the place of two sick men. I looked at the pass, which I had put in that morning, October 18, for the old guard, and saw Dean's name, and not Dennis', and knowing Dean was one of the old guard, and knowing Parker had reported to me the night before as being sick, and Dennis' name being on the company morning sick report, I supposed the sergeant of the guard had neglected to report to me or to put his name on the guard report. He had not reported to me whether he had obtained anyone in place of Parker and Dennis, who had been relieved by Dean or Dickerson, as the names of Parker and Dennis were on the guard report and sick book, and without calling the sergeant of the guard I made the entry in the guard report, as appeared to me correct.

Since my arrest I have questioned the sergeant of the guard in the presence of a commissioned officer, and he tells me the name of Dennis was written in the guard report instead of Dean's, and that this was his own mistake.

Respectfully,
G. A. Armes,
Capt. Tenth Cav.

Fort Stockton, November 23, 1878.

A telegram came this morning ordering me to report to Capt. J. W. Clous of San Antonio, Texas, by November 29 for trial.

Fort Stockton, November 23, 1878.

To the Post Adjutant:

Sir—I have the honor to request to be informed whether any additional charges have been preferred against me, and if so, I would respectfully ask that I be furnished with a copy of them, in order that I may be able to see the witnesses I may require before leaving this post.

Respectfully,

G. A. Armes.

Pecos River, on the Stage, November 24, 1878.

Dr. and Mrs. Hall were as true to the last as a couple could possibly be, and helped Lucy pack up my valise and get me off, and I left at 10 o'clock P. M. last night for San Antonio. Five or six of the witnesses are on the stage with me.

I did not need the counsel contained in the following letter, but it was none the less acceptable:

United States Senate Chamber,
Washington, November 19, 1878.

My Dear Major:

Yours per Mr. Ray received. I did not see him, for he left for Boston to attend the funeral of his father. I went up to see the Secretary of War, and had a long and satisfactory consultation with him on your affairs. I put the case strongly as to the persecutions to which you have been subjected. He responded like a man and a gentleman, and I am authorized to say that he is watching your matters, and will personally see to them and that you do not suffer. By his advice I wrote General Ord today, calling attention to your case, as requested by Senator Spencer, and forwarded to him certified copy of Adjutant Smither's letter asking documents and my reply thereto. If General Ord is friendly you will doubtless hear more of this. The appeal to him was to put a stop to the persecutions of your wife and yourself, etc. Keep quiet; let your enemies go on and hang themselves with their own rope. The Secretary is watching matters, and intends to act promptly and effectively at the proper moment. The charges against you are weak, and show vindictiveness. I hope there is no foundation to the charge of making a false guard report. Keep cool; do not be betrayed into any violence. Keep your own counsel. Smile away any and all attempts to anger you. Meet your accuser politely, but firmly, and you will come out all right. I think Smither will hear from General Ord, and quite likely will be court-martialed for having written that letter in violation of peremptory general orders. When the Committee meet I will lay the matter before them and try to have them request that you be relieved and sent to the Artillery School at Fort Monroe.

Very truly, your friend,

J. J. Noah.

(Court-martial No. 6.)

Orders from Department Headquarters:

A General Court-Martial is ordered to convene at San Antonio, Texas, on Monday, December 2, 1878, at 10 o'clock A. M., or as soon thereafter as practicable, for the trial of Capt. G. A. Armes, Tenth Cavalry, and such other persons as may be properly brought before it.

Detail for the Court—Col. G. L. Andrews, Twenty-fifth Inf.; Lieut.-Col. L. C. Hunt, Twentieth Inf.; Lieut.-Col. M. M. Blunt, Twenty-fifth Inf.; Maj. J. E. Yard, Twentieth Inf.; Major James McMillan, Second Art.; Capt. J. H. Patterson, Twentieth Inf.; Capt. Lloyd Wheaton, Twentieth Inf. Capt. J. W. Clous, Twenty-fourth Inf., is appointed Judge-Advocate of the court.

The Potato Lady.

San Antonio, November 29, 1878.

At 10 this A. M. I reported to Captain Clous, who read McLaughlin's and Sweet's statements. He talked as if there would be no trial, pretending to be my friend. I soon explained that there were no grounds for a trial, as Colonel Grierson had investigated the case before, and everything was in my favor, but that I had no objection to a trial. I requested a thorough investigation, however, of the false and malicious charges that had been

fixed up by Grierson, McLaughlin, Smithers & Co., who were a set of conspirators trying to force me out of the regiment. Having sent all the particulars to Judge Noah in Washington, a special friend of the Secretary of War, I felt assured that some steps would be taken to prevent any further persecution by those in authority at San Antonio.

December 2, 1878.

Captain Clous, acting as Judge-Advocate of the Department, went through my case today, and soon saw there was nothing in it, and with instructions from Washington naturally could not insist on a trial.

December 3, 1878.

General Ord sent for me this morning, informing me he had dismissed the charges on the ground that Colonel Grierson had investigated the matter in July, and that there was no sufficient reason for bringing me before a court. He gave General Vincent orders to have me released from arrest and returned to duty, but did not mention that he had been instructed from Washington.

Fredericksburg, Texas, December 6, 1878.

After making a number of purchases yesterday afternoon, Colonel Millspaugh insisted on my calling to see Miss Saunders, a young lady with whom he is very much in love. After a visit of an hour we started back, when he spoke of purchasing a gold watch or diamond breastpin for her, as he said he wanted to give her something to remember him by. I advised him not to do it, but to select a handsome bouquet in place of the jewelry, as I thought it would have more effect. He followed my advice and sent her the bouquet.

Fort Stockton, Texas, December 11, 1878.

Have just arrived here after nearly 500 miles' stage ride, night and day, and of course am pretty well tired out. Was met by Lieutenants Easterly, Quinby, Chaplain Baldridge and others, who seemed delighted at my victory. My quarters were illuminated and an elegant dinner fixed up for my reception. I had just set down to the table when my first sergeant brought the whole company to serenade me.

December 24, 1878.

Lieutenant John McMartin relieved me as Officer of the Day, when I went to Mr. Corbit's and bought a large sheep to take home to my first sergeant for a Christmas dinner for the men.

December 25, 1878.

My company had a dinner consisting of the whole sheep, roast pigs, cake and wine; in fact, almost equal to dinners gotten up in the East.

December 31, 1878.

Major McLaughlin gave as thorough an inspection of my quarters and men today as he possibly could, but was unable to find fault with anything. The company is looking well, and I am on good terms with all the officers and ladies at the post, with the exception of Major McLaughlin, Lieut. O. G. Sweet, Captain Robe and Lieutenant Easterly.

The memoranda, letters, orders and telegrams which follow are added to more fully illustrate the occurences of the year so eventful to myself and those whose fate is closely linked with mine:

Washington, D. C., April 24, 1878.

Maj. Geo. A. Armes:

Dear Old Friend—I heartily congratulate you, and I congratulate the United States Army. You deserve all the favors you receive from the United States Government. If I had it in my power I would put Sitting Bull and all the Indian interests in your hands, and I would give you a full division, with the rank of General of Division. Kind regards to Madam Armes.

Your old friend and brother-officer,

M. J. Gonzales.

(Telegram.)

June 4, 1878.

To Hon. Chas. J. Faulkner,

Martinsburg, W. Va.:

Impossible to visit you Saturday. President Hayes sends regards and thanks for invitation. I will write particulars.

(Signed) G. A. Armes.

Washington, D. C., June 12, 1878.

Gen. J. S. Mason,
San Antonio, Texas:

Dear General—I introduce to your consideration Captain Armes, Tenth Cavalry. I have found him amiable and agreeable, and all courtesies you can extend will be much appreciated. Introduce him to our dear Brown, who, like yourself, is always kind. Mrs. L. joins me in warm regards to you, Brown, John and other friends.

Very truly yours,
HERMAN SCHREINER.

(Telegram.)
Fort Stockton, Texas, October 26, 1878.

Adjutant-General, Department of Texas,
San Antonio, Texas,

Through Post Adjutant:

Major McLaughlin has held me in close arrest eight days, and just furnished a copy of groundless charges, which I think the General Commanding Department will disapprove, as the malice is so plainly exhibited. Until the General Commanding Department can act I respectfully request a suspension of my arrest.

G. A. ARMES,
Capt. Tenth Cav.

Headquarters Department of Texas,
San Antonio, Texas, December 3, 1878.

Special Orders No. 255.

* * * * * * * * * * *

V. Capt. G. A. Armes, Tenth Cavalry, is released from arrest, and will return to his post for duty.

* * * * * * * * * * *

By command of
BRIGADIER-GENERAL ORD.
THOMAS M. VINCENT,
Asst. Adjt.-Gen.

Official: (Signed) HUGH G. BROWN,
Aide-de-Camp.

CHAPTER XVII.

January 19, 1879.

Lieutenant-Colonel Blunt, Twenty-fifth Infantry, arrived on the stage this A. M. and relieved old McLaughlin as commanding officer. He does not look to me as if he will be much improvement.

February 18, 1879.

For the past few weeks I have had mounted drill in addition to target practice almost every day. I fixed a number of posts with straw heads, where I practiced some men with their sabers in riding and knocking them off the posts, which is very interesting for the spectators who assemble afternoons when I drill.

March 14, 1879.

The truth is coming out at last in regard to Colonel Blunt. He is shielding Orleman against Major Geddes, whom he appears to be trying to get into trouble, and he seems to be under the influence of Colonel Grierson and Lieutenant Smithers. With the assistance of Lieutenant Sweet, they appear to be doing everything they can to find excuse to bring charges against him.

March 31, 1879.

As the Indians are committing depredations throughout the country, I have been ordered to hold my command in readiness to take the field. A citizen by the name of Price has received orders to report to me as contract Surgeon while I am in the field. I hope to prevent his being assigned with me, as he is a spy and mischief-maker.

April 4, 1879.

My company was relieved from duty at the post today. I had all my sabers packed and moved this afternoon. Having an independent command, I encamped about a mile from the post.

Camp Ritchie, in the Field, April 8, 1879.

Moved with my company at 9 this A. M., with Dr. Price as Assistant Surgeon and Calvin Easterly as Second Lieutenant.

Camp Santa Rosa, Texas, April 9, 1879.

After our arrival in camp last night Lieutenant Glenn, Post Quartermaster, Captain Van Valzah and his wife, with the quartermaster-sergeant, drove out with a supply of bread for my command, the last I expect to have for several months.

Camp Nolan (Dry Camp), Sand Hills, Texas, April 15, 1879.

Corporal Ridley reported last evening signs of Indians near, and we started early this morning with thirty-two men, thirteen pack-mules and five days' rations; crossed the Pecos at Little Falls, expecting Sergeant Richards with another detachment to meet us there. We killed a few antelopes, and after a march of forty miles we have gone into camp.

Camp Maxey, April 16, 1879.

We camped in the sand hills without water or grass last night, and moved at 6 o'clock this morning. Found a number of pony tracks, which it is impossible to follow very fast for want of water and on account of the deep sand.

Camp Lee, on the Pecos, April 22, 1879.

We have had quite a long scout through the sand hills, but have not been able to overtake any Indians, and are now back in camp on the Pecos, where we have plenty of good fishing. A great many cowboys called on me this evening and supplied us with all the fresh meat we wanted.

Camp Ridley, near China Pond, April 23, 1879.

I crossed the Pecos at Horsehead today, marching fifteen miles below, and came through Castle Gap, making a march of forty-six miles. The cowboys are very glad to see us looking out for their protection and much encouraged.

Camp Turner, on the Pecos, April 25, 1879.

Moved at 5 o'clock this A. M.; marched through the sand hills and down the Pecos to the north of Horsehead Crossing, arriving in camp at 6.30 this P. M.; plenty of antelopes and jack-rabbits, of which the men have killed several.

Camp Hayes, on the Pecos, May 6, 1879.

We marched at 7 this A. M. at Emigrant Crossing, on the Pecos; watered and rested my command for a couple of hours. Marched thirty-two miles today.

May 7, 1879.

Dr. Price started to build a fire last evening to make some coffee. As Indians are supposed to be near, I did not propose to have the fire made at that time of night, and declined to allow him to make it, when he appeared very much vexed.

Camp Seward, on Toga Creek, Texas, May 9, 1879.

I started out at daybreak this morning, and have made a forced march, trying to overtake the band of Indian marauders who have been stealing cattle through this section. Marched seventy-five miles, and have plenty of water tonight.

Camp Maish, on the Pecos, May 12, 1879.

We had a dry camp last night; no water for the animals, and very little for the men.

Camp Blaine, on the Pecos, May 13, 1879.

Marched at 7 o'clock this A. M., and the men are very tired. I went into camp early, giving them an opportunity to catch fish and kill a few jack-rabbits.

Camp M. C. Butler, on the Pecos, Texas, May 14, 1879.

Marched at 7 this A. M. Crossed the Pecos at Popes' Ford; halted at Beckwith's Ranch a short time. My company killed forty rabbits this evening after going into camp.

Camp Grenada, New Mexico, May 15, 1879.

Turned out at 6 P. M. with five days' rations. Stopped at Mr. Nash's ranch on the Pecos for an hour or two. He killed one of his finest beeves and presented it to my command. I returned the compliment by giving him a side of bacon. Plenty of water, but no fresh signs of Indians.

Camp Hazelton, May 17, 1879.

Started at 7 this A. M. and obtained twelve sacks of forage for the animals from Mr. Gardiner, who owns a very large ranch. He supplied the command with all the milk they wanted, and was pleased to see us in this section of the country. He lives like a hermit, and owns more cattle than anyone in this section.

Camp J. B. Gordon, Texas (in the Sand Hills), May 23, 1879.

Mr. Roberts, an old ranchman who has been here for years, accompanied the command today. We are now in camp without any water or signs of it, although we have dug through the sand several feet.

Camp Santa Rosa, May 27, 1879.

Sent Lieutenant Easterly to the post with a small escort after the mail and with instructions to bring my family out tomorrow, as we have established a permanent camp here.

May 29, 1879.

After breakfast took an escort and rode out to meet my family. Met Brooks with the mail, who informed me that Colonel Blunt refused to allow my family to leave the post. Lieutenant Easterly, one of the mischief-makers of the regiment, has made some misrepresentation to Colonel Blunt.

May 30, 1879.

Sent Galvin, my guide, in to the post with a letter to Colonel Blunt in relation to his refusing to allow my family outside the post.

May 31, 1879.

My wife and children all came out to camp today with Dr. and Mrs. Hall.

June 9, 1879.

Dr. Price excused Corporal Siggles and Private Sails from duty and sent them to the post without my knowledge today.

June 11, 1879.

I took an escort and rode in to the post this afternoon and requested Dr. Woodruff, the Post Surgeon, to give a thorough examination of the men that Dr. Price had excused from duty.

June 12, 1879.

I returned to camp last night and received a note from Dr. Woodruff stating that he would order the men back to duty. Under the circumstances I annulled Dr. Price's contract, subject to the approval of higher authority, sending him out of my camp for insubordination and making misrepresentations.

Camp C. J. Faulkner, June 18, 1879.

Report came to me at 5 P. M. that Indians had been at Horsehead on the Pecos. I at once saddled up and ordered the command in a gallop, following the trail for twenty miles with fifteen cowboys who joined my command, but the Indians have scattered into the mountains, and it is impossible to find them.

Camp F. M. Cockrell, June 19, 1879.

During the march my horse fell, and I was badly hurt, but would not give up. We marched sixty miles during the night, following the Indian trail to Castle Gap.

Fort Stockton, Texas, June 30, 1879.

Captain Van Valsah sent out for me, and I came in by relays today. It is understood that I am to go to San Antonio as a witness in the Geddes case.

July 11, 1879.

Took tea with Major Geddes at the Menger Hotel and spent most of the evening in his room. There seems a determination to force him out of the Army if possible on the false charges they have trumped up against him.

July 12, 1879.

Lieutenant Glenn was on the stand most of the day. He appears to be a strong friend to Major Geddes.

July 16, 1879.

Was before the court-martial at 12 o'clock today in Major Geddes' defense. My testimony seemed to offend Captain Clous, the Judge-Advocate. I am satisfied he will watch his chance to get me the first opportunity that occurs.

July 19, 1879.

Being through with the court, I was ordered back to my station. Desiring a piano, I purchased one, and drove around with my ambulance, giving instructions to have it loaded on. The clerks and proprietor of the store worked for over half an hour trying to find a way to load it, and finally decided it would be impossible. In the meantime quite a crowd began to assemble, many expressing astonishment that anyone would think he could possibly carry a piano on an ambulance. I ordered some 4 by 4's put on the axle and made fast; had the piano lifted up and fastened on the hind part of the ambulance with ropes extending over the top of

it to hold it in place. By the time I was ready to start the streets were crowded, and the police had to clear the way for me to drive out. I was cheered by hundreds, who seemed to think that it was the most remarkable way to carry a piano that had ever been undertaken.

Fort Concho, Texas, July 26, 1879.

Reached this post at 7 this A. M.; horses and mules pretty well tired out. I am now the guest of Lieutenant Davis and wife. Found quite a large mail here for me. Everyone seemed surprised to think that I could bring this piano from San Antonio, over two hundred miles, without a mishap, and it is the general talk of the post.

Fort Stockton, July 31, 1879.

Rode nearly all night; reached here safely. Found my family all well. Found my company in rather bad shape, as Lieutenant Easterly had been very careless and let the men do mostly as they pleased, racing the horses nearly to death.

August 14, 1879.

Colonel Blunt and Lieutenant Sweet have been secretly investigating a few of my men who have been punished and are trying to fix up a set of charges against me. As soon as I found out what they were doing I told Colonel Blunt that if he desired any information in regard to Dr. Price I had no objection to his questioning any man he wished, provided he would send for him in the proper manner, but it had a demoralizing effect to allow Dr. Price and Lieutenants Easterly and Sweet to mingle among them for the purpose of trying to find grounds for charges.

September 7, 1879.

After a mounted inspection I went to the post hospital to see Trumpeter Simmons, who died at 7 this A. M. of consumption.

September 21, 1879.

At 3 P. M. Colonel Blunt came to me while I was sitting on my porch and ordered me to hand him my sword, placing me in arrest (arrest No. 21) by order of the Department Commander. After he left me I took my shoulder-straps off and sent them to him by my orderly, with my compliments and the message that as he had my sword and was evidently trying to put me out of the regiment he might as well have the shoulder-straps. To this he replied that he did not wish them, and therefore sent them back to me.

October 1, 1879.

I requested that a copy of my charges be furnished or that I be released from arrest, and was furnished with a lot of stuff which is all bosh. It is easily seen that they are manufactured and fixed up for the purpose of trying to force me out of the regiment. Lieutenant Easterly gets command of the company by making a false representation in order to get me under arrest.

October 11, 1879.

The Adjutant-General of the Department sent for all the papers in connection with my case. Lieut. George E. Albee, retired, is here in the interest of the Hotchkiss gun. He looked over my defense, and did not hesitate in saying that it was a put-up job. I learned today that General Ord had telegraphed to the Secretary of War that the charges against me were very serious.

October 21, 1879.

The Dutchman is here with General Stanley and the rest of the court. Clous is going among my men manufacturing all the evidence he possibly can to win the case. He has sufficient control of those negro soldiers to make them swear to anything that he may fix up.

Trying to Procure Evidence.

October 22, 1879.

Sent a telegram requesting permission to take my wife home and then come back and stand trial, Dr. Woodruff giving a certificate recommending that such be done. Colonel Blunt reprimanded me today because I did not salute him. I look upon him as a cowardly sneak and an imbecile.

October 30, 1879.

Major Courtney arrived last evening from Fort Davis, and is helping me on my case.

The following-named court was convened under Special Order No. 210 at Fort Stockton, Texas, on Monday, the 30th day of October, 1879:

Detail for the court.—Col. D. M. Stanley, Twenty-second Infantry; Lieut.-Col. N. B. Sweetzer, Eighth Cavalry; Lieut.-Col. J. E. Yard, Twenty-fourth Infantry; Capt. J. H. Patterson, Twentieth Infantry; Capt. John Hartley, Twenty-second Infantry; Capt. De Witt C. Poole, Twenty-second Infantry; First Lieut. G. F. Foote, Regimental Quartermaster, Eighth Cavalry. Capt. J. W. Clous, Twenty-fourth Infantry, was appointed Judge-Advocate of the court.

Maj. Joseph Bush, Twenty-fifth Infantry, was detailed as a member of the court, vice Col. J. E. Yard, Twenty-fourth Infantry, relieved. This was court No. 7.

After making arrangements with Major Courtney of the Twenty-fifth Infantry, stationed at Fort Davis, to act as my counsel, we appeared before the court at 10 o'clock, October 30, 1879, and I could only with the greatest difficulty be persuaded by my counsel not to object to every member of the court, as I was confident they had been specially selected for the purpose of convicting me whether the charges were substantiated or not. The well-known reputations of Col. David Stanley and Major Bush were sufficient grounds to convince me that I could not expect justice at their hands. Captains Patterson and Poole and Lieutenant Foote were merely figureheads that could easily be handled by Clous, who generally selected such characters for details away from their command. They looked upon it as a "soft snap" when detailed on a court-martial where they could draw their mileage and commutation of quarters or have a change of duty from ordinary garrison life. There is generally a class of officers of that description in the Army ready to serve their superiors in any way to

satisfy such men as Clous, who was also detailed from his regiment to act as Judge-Advocate of the Department, drawing his mileage, commutation of quarters and extra pay, all of which naturally encouraged him to make up a case that would appear serious and select such officers for his court as he supposed he could handle and beget confidence in the Department Commander as being a very valuable officer who apparently was working for the interest of the service by having his victims found guilty and published as an example and warning to others in the Army.

After Clous arrived at Fort Stockton he connived with Colonel Blunt, Dr. Price, Lieutenant Easterly and several negroes who were in the guardhouse or who had been punished and concocted a set of false and malicious charges which they all knew were not true and brought in such negroes as they could induce to perjure themselves in order to make the record show that I was guilty of overmarching my men while on a scout after Indians and for not giving them sufficient rations, causing sickness and death.

I proved before the court by witnesses of the best character and standing in the community, both in the Army and civil life, that all the rations that the Government had issued to me had been carefully distributed among the men; that no man was required to march any further than I did; that I shared the same hardships and fatigue on the scouts; that I lived pretty much on the same rations as issued to them. The Post Surgeon, Dr. Woodruff, who thoroughly investigated every soldier who was reported sick by this contract Surgeon, Dr. Price, testified that these men were shirks and malingerers; that he had immediately returned them to duty, and that no man had died or been injured through any neglect or arbitrary action on my part as commanding officer. The settlers sustained and upheld me in doing my duty and protecting a large strip of country several hundred miles long and fifty or one hundred miles wide, stocked with thousands of cattle, horses, mules and ponies, and that I so distributed my command throughout that section in detachments and kept them so employed and on the move that the Indians dare not come into that section while my command was on duty there. No stock from any ranch was lost or stolen by the Indians while I was on duty in the field in that section of the country.

I wish to mention an underhanded and villainous act of Capt. J. W. Clous, the Judge-Advocate, during my trial of which I have since secured evidence through the kindness of Colonel O'Brien, who was temporarily in command of Fort Stockton, and gave me authority to get copies of records from the Adjutant's office, the following being an official copy furnished by the Post Adjutant:

("Confidential.")
General C. M. Rooms,
Fort Stockton, Texas, November 10, 1879.

Commanding Officer,
Fort Stockton, Texas:

Sir—I wish you would please inquire of Capt. Geo. A. Armes, Tenth Cavalry, if he has any records of Company "L," Tenth Cavalry, in his possession, and, if he answers in the affirmative, to cause him to surrender them to the commanding officer of that company. If he desires to use them in his trial he can obtain them by proper summons.

I have reason to believe that Captain Armes has in his possession a morning report book of the company, which I would like to examine, but for obvious reasons do not wish to summon from him a record of which he is not the legal and proper custodian.

I have the honor to be, sir, very respectfully, your obedient servant,

(Signed) J. W. Clous,
Capt. Twenty-fourth Inf., Judge-Adv., G. C. M.

P. S.—Please do not refer this to Captain Armes.

A true copy from the records of this office.
(Signed) H. L. Ripley,
Second Lieut. Twenty-fourth Inf., Post Adjt.

I had a copy of my morning report book made in a condemned book which I had stored away. This book I could have burned up with a lot of other papers supposed to be useless, but thinking perhaps I might need to refer to my scout some time in case I should ever write a book, I made a true copy. When I went before the court I found that misstatements and misrepresentations were being made by the Judge-Advocate to members of the court in such a way that I found it necessary to bring my copy to refer to and to use as proof to show that my company report book, turned over to my successor, had been altered after it had gone out of my possession.

Upon the discovery by Captain Clous of this book in my possession he knew that he would lose his case unless that book could be taken from me, and finally I received an order from the Post Commander to deliver it over to the court, as was more fully explained subsequently in a statement by my brother, Charles H. Armes, with all the facts before him, in which he set forth the minutest details affecting the matter of the duplicate report book and the necessity of my having it to use as evidence.

The following are extracts from my diary:

October 31, 1879.

The court met at 10 this A. M., and I pleaded to the first charge on four specifications, and then put in a plea of bar of trial on the first.

November 1, 1879.

The court met in the old building at 10 this A. M. Major Courtney put in a plea of bar of trial on the second specification, but it was overruled, and the one for the seventh was accepted in my favor. Lieutenant Glenn was on the stand today, also Lieutenant Easterly, who testified contrary to facts.

November 3, 1879.

Court met again at 10 this A. M. Major Bush, who is on a drunk, was excused on acount of sickness. Lieutenant Easterly was questioned by Captain Clous two or three hours, and then turned over to Major Courtney and me. I have no confidence in the court, and consented to not challenge on the advice of my counsel, Major Courtney. Colonel Grierson came by the post last night, hobnobbing and conniving with the members in order that they may convict me.

November 6, 1879.

Dr. Woodruff was before the court today, and his testimony was in my favor.

November 13, 1879.

Lieutenant Glenn was called before the court and contradicted Lieutenant Easterly. Sergeant Hill was on the stand most of the day, and was questioned in regard to company matters.

November 18, 1879.

The court met at 9 this A. M. Siggles, Brooks and Scales were summoned, but Clous would not allow anything said that reflected upon Dr. Price.

November 23, 1879.

General Stanley, Major Bush and Captain Poole left for their posts today. Major Bush has been on a drunk most of the time since he has been at this post. Some are of the impression that I have been honorably acquitted, but knowing Clous as I do and his underhanded way of managing cases and picking his courts, I feel that I have been found guilty and sentenced to dismissal, and propose to head them off in Washington as soon as possible. Clous is a man I cannot expect any justice or fair dealings from, and having full control of the court, he handles the members as if they were his puppets.

November 28, 1879.

Colonel Bentzoni called on me last evening, and we had quite a talk in relation to saluting Colonel Blunt, and finally, on his advice, I agreed to salute him hereafter. The Colonel is an old soldier and a good friend of mine, and thinks it best to humor Blunt, considering that he is a sort of an imbecile.

The following selections from the communications which passed during the year just closed will throw light on the motives that prompted my prosecution, or, more properly speaking, my persecution:

Post Hospital,
Fort Stockton, Texas, August 15, 1879.

To the Post Adjutant,
Fort Stockton, Texas:

Sir—I have the honor to report the case of Bugler William Simmons, Company "L," Tenth Cavalry. He is suffering from acute dysentery, which has now become chronic and does not yield to remedies.

Repeated examinations have been made which prove that the patient is also suffering from tubercular deposit in apex of left lung, with symptoms of dullness on percussion; sibilant rales and cough slight; expectoration, with pain over upper region of left lung.

I am, sir, very respectfully, your obedient servant,
(Signed) EZRA WOODRUFF,
Asst. Surgeon, U. S. Army.

Headquarters Company L, Tenth Cavalry,
Fort Stockton, Texas, August 15, 1879.

A. A. A. General, Fort Concho, Texas,
Through Post Headquarters:

Sir—In compliance with orders received by me yesterday requesting a full explanation in regard to dismounting the escort

furnished me and using the public horses in my private conveyances, I have the honor to submit for the information of the General commanding the district the following facts: When within a short distance of the water hole between Camp Charlotte and Grierson Springs one of my horses began to fag, and, with the consent of the corporal of the escort, his horse was put with mine, and he rode in the ambulance with me to the water hole, where we halted, watered, grazed and fed our horses, remaining two or three hours, when my own horses were hitched up, and which I drove to within eight or ten miles of the spring, when signs of a storm appeared, and one of my private horses being fagged, and thinking I could not reach water that night unless I had the corporal's horse, I again asked him to let me hitch him with mine, and I drove on to the spring, reaching it about dark. The horse was not injured, and I only used him in order that I might be able to reach water that night. Considering it for the interest of the service to care for the Government horses as well as my own, the use of the horse in question for the short distance was a necessity, as no injury whatever was done. Having driven him myself, I feel confident the General commanding the detachment will find no fault now that the emergency of the case is truly explained, showing one horse only was used for a short time during the day, instead of horses, as reported.

Respectfully, your obedient servant,

G. A. Armes,
Capt. Tenth Cav., Comdg. Company.

(First Endorsement.)

Headquarters Fort Stockton, Texas, August 16, 1879.

Respectfully transmitted to the A. A. A. General of the District of the Pecos, Fort Concho, Texas.

D. D. Vanvalzah,
Capt. Twenty-fifth Inf., Comdg. Post.

(Second Endorsement.)

Headquarters Department of the Pecos,
Fort Concho, Texas, September 18, 1879.

Respectfully returned to Capt. Geo. A. Armes, Tenth Cavalry, through commanding officer, Fort Stockton, Texas, for further report. Attention is invited to within enclosure, together with endorsements thereon, these papers to be returned.

By order of

Col. B. H. Grierson.
Robt. H. Smither,
First Lieut. and Adjt. Tenth Cav.

Received telegram of my father's death and obtained leave of absence, as per following order :

Headquarters Department of Texas,
San Antonio, Texas, September 1, 1879.

Special Orders No. 186.

* * * * * * * * * * *

III. Leave of absence for one month, with permission to go beyond the limits of the Department, is granted Capt. G. A. Armes, Tenth Cavalry, Fort Stockton, Texas.

* * * * * * * * * * *

By command of
BRIGADIER-GENERAL ORD.
HUGH G. BROWN,
Capt. Twelfth Inf., A. D. C., in charge.

Just as I had arranged to leave the post the cold-blooded villain Blunt stopped me, not only preventing me from having an opportunity to take a last look at my father, but caused me a loss of thousands of dollars.

War Department,
Signal Service, U. S. A.—United States Telegraph.
Fort Stockton, Texas, November 22, 1879.

Send the following message: O. B.

To Hon. G. W. McCrary,
Secretary of War,
Washington, D. C.,

Through the proper military channels:

My request to General Ord for thirty days' leave to take my sick wife home and to attend to important business in connection with my father's death not having been approved, I respectfully request that you grant me the privilege, as the court finished my case today, and I am now waiting the promulgation of its decision.

ARMES, Captain.

Headquarters, Fort Stockton, Texas, November 23, 1879.

Respectfully returned to Capt. G. A. Armes, Tenth Cavalry. The Commanding Officer declines to send this telegram, as the leave asked for has been refused by the Department Commander.

If Captain Armes wishes to appeal from the action of the Department Commander he can make his appeal to the Division Commander.

By order of
LIEUTENANT-COLONEL BLUNT.
(Signed) OWEN JOY SWEET,
First Lieut. Twenty-fifth Inf., Post Adjt.

State of Texas, County of Pecos, *ss.:*

Personally appeared before me, the undersigned authority, John C. H. Galvin, who, being duly sworn according to law, deposes and says that the following statement is true that he served in the field with Captain Armes as guide to his command; that he has known and had dealings with Contract Doctor M. F. Price off and on since May 15, 1879, and from what he knows personally of him, in addition to his general reputation for truth and veracity in this section of the country, he would not believe him under oath.

(Signed) JOHN C. H. GALVIN,
Post Guide.

Sworn and acknowledged to before me this 22d day of December, 1879.

(Signed) H. B. QUIMBY,
First Lieut. Twenty-fifth Inf., J. A. G., C. M.

CHAPTER XVIII.

Fort Stockton, Texas, January 6, 1880.

The telegraph operator handed me a dispatch today from a friend, who stated that the court had dismissed me and my papers had gone to Washington. I immediately telegraphed the facts to my brother.

January 15, 1880.

Judge Frazier gave me a long letter to Congressman Upson. Dr. Woodruff, Post Surgeon, also gave me a strong statement, which I sent to Washington tonight.

February 13, 1880.

Lieutenant Easterly is acting as meanly as he possibly can. He went so far as to take every soldier away from my quarters, refusing to allow them to work or do anything around the house, and as he passed by my quarters this evening I remarked that West Point could not make a gentleman out of a scrub. He at once reported the matter to Colonel Blunt, who put himself on the same footing with him, took advantage of his authority, without any investigation of the facts, and revoked the limits of the garrison, requiring me to remain in my quarters.

February 17, 1880.

I made a request today that I be allowed to take my wife and children for a short drive for exercise, but it was disapproved by the gallant Colonel Blunt.

March 9, 1880.

During the past few weeks I have been obliged to take care of my own horses, help with the cooking and housework and look after the children, as my wife's health is so impaired it is impossible for her to do it all. There being no civilian servants or anyone that could be hired, all the officers use enlisted men as such. They are detailed from their companies and excused from their military duties by Colonel Blunt and the company commanders, some of the officers having as many as from six to ten men excused from legitimate duties to act as their servants. Legally I had just as much right as any of the rest, but power invested in a mean man can make it very inconvenient for those under him.

April 3, 1880.

Paymaster Robinson arrived last evening and paid the troops today. At 10 A. M. I managed to get Lucy and the children comfortably fixed in the ambulance, and he has kindly invited them to be his guests during the march to San Antonio. Colonel Blunt refused to let me go to camp this evening, only a short distance from the post, to see that my family got started safely and comfortably and properly provided for. Dr. Woodruff did all he could for us all. My wife seemed pleased to get away from Blunt, and hopes she will never see or hear of such a man again. She thinks that West Point must be hard up for material when they supply such men as Blunt to the Army and call them gentlemen.

April 6, 1880.

I have been so worried since my family left on account of Colonel Blunt's tyranny that the doctor has been required to treat me for nervous prostration. I have been refused permission to go to the post-trader's or to have my limits extended for my meals. Dr. Woodruff has invited me several times to dine with him. I have been obliged to cook my own meals and attend to my horses, as Colonel Blunt declines to allow any enlisted man to come to my quarters.

April 17, 1880.

The past few days a great deal of my time has been spent in preparing a set of serious charges against Colonel Blunt, Lieut. O. J. Sweet and Lieutenant Easterly, the conspirators who are trying to force me out of the regiment. First Sergeant Turner gave me a good strong affidavit today. Judge Frazier and Judge Blacker called and went through my brief, and say it is impossible for me to be found guilty by an honorable court on such charges.

April 20, 1880.

Judge Blacker gave me a splendid letter to Senator Maxey. Mr. Ray copied the charges I preferred against Colonel Blunt for me last night, and I sent them to San Antonio in this morning's mail.

April 22, 1880.

Had a splendid letter from Surgeon Woodruff, which I have forwarded to Washington. General Portis came to see me twice today, and has taken a great interest in my case. Colonel Blunt

refuses to allow me to go out of the garrison after my meals, and I have to get them the best way I can. Consequently from twenty to thirty hours pass without my being able to obtain anything to eat.

April 29, 1880.

General Portis and Judge Blacker spent last evening with me and examined my whole case very thoroughly. Judge Blacker referred to the Knox court-martial and a letter written to Mr. Lincoln in regard to getting General Grant released. While attending the grand jury I have an opportunity to get some good meals at the Hotel Johnson.

April 30, 1880.

Colonel Blunt has detailed Lieutenant Loughborough, his Adjutant, to try to play the spy for him and watch to see if I go beyond the limits requiring my attendance on the civil court, but he is not the man to do the dirty work that Lieutenant Sweet used to be guilty of. I shall not forget how anxious Lieutenant Sweet was to get up charges. A few weeks ago he went so far as to take a stick and stir up the slops in the barrel, where he found a few grains of corn, and reported the matter to Colonel Blunt, who had it immediately investigated, finding that the man who milked my cows had scraped up a peck or half bushel of sweepings by authority of the Quartermaster and put it in the barrel. This shows how desperate Blunt and his conspirators are to force me out of the regiment because I happen to be a restored officer who they propose shall not remain in the service if they can prevent.

May 1, 1880.

Since my services before the civil court are ended Colonel Blunt has declined to allow me out of the garrison, even to get my meals.

May 4, 1880.

Judge Blacker left yesterday for San Antonio. General Portis did not get off with him as he expected, but spent a portion of the day with me, and has advised me to bring a civil suit against Colonel Blunt for inhuman and brutal treatment.

May 26, 1880.

I received a telegram from my brother Charles stating that my sentence has been commuted to one year on half pay and to be confined at the post where my company was stationed.

May 28, 1880.

Sent an application for an extension of limits of arrest on account of sickness from being so closely cooped up. Dr. Woodruff made a strong endorsement in my behalf.

May 31, 1880.

Governor Sheppard and Paymaster Watson arrived today on their way West. Governor Sheppard is interested in a large silver mine in Mexico, and is traveling in grand style with his ambulance, wagons and escort.

July 14, 1880.

Colonel O'Beirne approved my request to take copies of records from the Adjutant's office and look through the files, which was the means of giving me some information which will prove valuable to me in the future. General Vincent telegraphed today, saying that I would be ordered to Fort McKavett for trial on July 26.

July 16, 1880.

In going through the records at the headquarters today I found some valuable papers regarding actions of Colonel Blunt, and in one volume in regard to false reports sent to General Ord, which caused my trouble.

July 21, 1880.

Colonel O'Beirne gave me orders to go by stage to Fort McKavett, and I am preparing to leave in the morning. Sent my ambulance, horses and buggy and such dishes and furniture as I could not dispose of in charge of Lieutenant Davis to take through.

Pecos Crossing, July 22, 1880.

Left Stockton on the stage yesterday at 12 o'clock. Lieut. H. L. Ripley bade me good-bye and wished me success. He has been very gentlemanly and obliging since I met him.

Fort McKavett, July 27, 1880.

Reached this post at sunrise. Met Lieutenant Mosher at the post-trader's. He pointed me to Dr. Wolf's headquarters. Dr. Waters, Post Surgeon, could not but notice my nervous condition, and excused me from appearing before the court today. Captain Little called on me this afternoon; also Mr. Tesson and Lieutenant Morrison, who treated me as kindly as possible. Clous came in to get some information, and I expressed my opinion of him and Colonel Blunt rather severely. [Court-Martial No. 8.]

Headquarters Department of Texas,
San Antonio, Texas, July 13, 1880.
(Special Orders No. 139.)

* * * * * * * * * * *

II. A general court-martial will convene at Fort McKavett, Texas, on Monday, the 26th day of July, 1880, at 10 o'clock A. M., or as soon thereafter as practicable, for the trial of Capt. George A. Armes, Tenth Cavalry, and such other persons as may be properly brought before it.

Detail for the Court.—Col. T. H. Neill, Eighth Cavalry; Lieut-Col. A. J. Dallas, Twenty-second Infantry; Maj. A. L. Hough, Twenty second Infantry; Surg. W. S. Waters; Capt. C. J. Dickey, Twenty-second Infantry; Capt. Francis Clarke, Twenty-second Infantry; Capt. C. W. Miner, Twenty-second Infantry; Asst. Surg. M. K. Taylor, Medical Department; First Lieut. W. H. Kell, Twenty-second Infantry.

Capt. J. W. Clous, Twenty-fourth Infantry, is appointed Judge-Advocate of the court.

The court is authorized to sit without regard to hours.

* * * * * * * * * * *

By command of
BRIG.-GEN. ORD.
(Signed) THOMAS M. VINCENT,
Asst. Adjutant-General.

July 28, 1880.

Dr. Waters came over, and thought it best not for me to appear before the court today. He therefore requested until Monday morning to enable me to get counsel on the ground that I was not able to go on with my own case. The court adjourned until Monday or until I was ready to go before it.

July 31, 1880.

Appeared before the court at 10 this A. M. Objected to Lieutenant Kell, Dr. Taylor, Clous, and, in fact, the whole court, but was not sustained. I objected to Clous on the ground that he was not a gentleman or a man who could be relied upon under any circumstances.

August 2, 1880.

Received a telegram from Mr. Paschal stating that he would leave San Antonio Wednesday as my counsel. Major Courtney was over to see me, and appears very anxious to shield Colonel Blunt. Sent in a plain statement of facts in regard to Colonel

Blunt's treatment and brutal actions, but he being a West Pointer and a special friend of Generals Ord and Vincent, will be shielded in his disgraceful actions.

August 7, 1880.

Mr. Paschal came in at 6 A. M. on the stage, and at 1 o'clock we appeared before the court, where he was admitted as my counsel. He advised me not to object to any more of the members of the court after Dr. Taylor and Kell were allowed to remain.

August 9, 1880.

The court met at 10 o'clock and commenced with Captain Little as a witness. His testimony did not amount to much. Lieutenant Maxon was called, but did not show that the book was a blotter.

August 10, 1880.

Appeared before the court this A. M. Colonel Blunt was called as a witness for the prosecution and kept the stand all day. He said everything he could possibly against me and lied so plainly that any fair-minded person could see his hostility.

August 12, 1880.

Dr. Woodruff called on me yesterday and seemed very glad to see me. Major Courtney was before the court as a witness. The court closed my case with Dr. Woodruff's and Mr. Paschal's testimony and adjourned until 5 P. M. tomorrow to hear Mr. Paschal's argument.

August 13, 1880.

Mr. Paschal appeared before the court and read his argument. It was very interesting, and I do not see how it is possible for the court to get around it, but it is not necessary that I should be guilty in order for the court to find me so, as there is no doubt their minds were made up before meeting as to what they would do, having been picked and entirely controlled by Clous. He selected old Colonel Neil, who is in his dotage and can be handled by almost anyone.

August 20, 1880.

I was assigned quarters in an old building that had been used as a hospital, and Dr. Waters declined to allow me any of the hospital bedding, but Lieut. M. C. Martin, Post Quartermaster, sent over an old dirty iron bunk; no chairs, mattress or blankets.

August 23, 1880.

Before breakfast this A. M. I wrote a long spicy letter to Major Hough in reply to his endorsement about hospital property. He being a member of the court, naturally knows what my sentence is, and from his actions is taking advantage of the condition he thinks he has placed me in.

August 25, 1880.

Received a splendid letter from Lucy today stating she would leave Washington tomorrow. Lieutenant Mosher, Post Adjutant here, is beginning to put on airs and show his self-importance in a very insulting manner.

August 26, 1880.

Received authority to go to San Antonio, and have made arrangements to start in the morning. In the meantime my horse and ambulance had come in to Concho, and after packing everything and storing it away I left McKavett at 2 P. M. on my pony.

Kerrville, Texas, August 28, 1880.

Did not sleep much last night. Started out at 5 this A. M. and rode forty-nine miles today.

San Antonio, August 30, 1880.

Left Birney last night at 8 o'clock; took the right-hand road instead of the left, and went eight or ten miles out of the way before I was informed that I would have to return to Birney and start again. This I did, reaching San Antonio at 7 this A. M. Called on Major Robinson, who was very glad to see me; gave me a splendid room and invited me to be his guest. At 3 o'clock a 'bus drove up from the depot with my wife and three children just from Washington. All look well, but tired. We had an early breakfast this A. M., and I applied for an ambulance this A. M. to take my family to McKavett, but Colonel Vincent only furnished a six-mule wagon. Under the circumstances I had to purchase an ambulance for that purpose.

San Antonio, September 2, 1880.

Lucy went around with me shopping, and we bought quite a number of necessaries to establish ourselves in quarters on our arrival at the post, where I am ordered to remain while serving out the balance of my sentence.

September 15, 1880.

Received a telegram from Concho stating that my ambulance and three horses were at the post. Colonel Hough, the Post Commander, refused to allow me outside the garrison to try to find some one to go after my ambulance.

October 17, 1880.

The man I had engaged failing to appear, I was obliged to go to the woods and haul wood for my family. Most of my time is taken up in taking care of my horses, building fires and helping with the housework.

November 15, 1880.

I was up early this A. M. Went to market, made fire, hired a woman by the name of Mary Jones today, tended to my horses and helped to get my breakfast. Cut and hauled two cartloads of wood, Major Hough declining to allow the prisoners or enlisted men to cut wood for me.

November 28, 1880.

Received my patent today from Father Hobon for 320 acres of mineral land in El Paso county.

November 30, 1880.

Paymaster Dodge arrived here last night and paid off today. I made a written request to Major Hough for the prisoners to cut me some wood, but he disapproved it.

December 4, 1880.

As the weather is getting so cold, I require a great deal of wood to keep my quarters warm, and Major Clark kindly sent me two or three men to assist in getting and hauling it.

December 11, 1880.

The news of General Ord's retirement was received here today with general satisfaction. At least 10,000 signatures could have been obtained requesting his removal from this department, as he seemed to be despised by almost every honest man.

December 14, 1880.

I had quite a time today. Our trusted cook, Sallie Thompson, has gotten into the sideboard and drank up a bottle of whiskey. She started to broil the steak and let it burn up. Upon going to the kitchen my wife found her dead drunk and on the floor, so that I had to turn in and help get dinner, after pouring a few pails of water over the cook's head to sober her up.

December 29, 1880.

We find it very difficult to keep warm in spite of the fires that are kept going day and night. The thermometer registers seven degrees below zero. I suffered a great deal with neuralgia, and can scarcely rest in any position.

December 31, 1880.

I was up nearly all last night reading Sherman's book. Figuring up my accounts, the cost of getting my family to Washington and back and the sacrifices I had to make on account of my arrests, expenses of counsel for court-martial, etc., I find that I have had to pay out $2130, causing me to sacrifice my cattle, which I had purchased before leaving Stockton, entailing a loss of several thousand dollars. I find that during the year, in speculations and selling property, I had taken in $17,000 without interfering with any of my military duties. This has been a great help in getting my case properly presented before the court, which was specially selected to convict without regard to evidence.

The following extracts from statement prepared in August, 1880, to be submitted to the authorities in Washington, followed by letters and extracts from communications made during the year, will serve to convey a clearer idea of the difficulties which environed me:

State of Texas, County of Pecos, *ss.:*

Personally appeared before me, the undersigned authority, Lewis Pascon, who, being duly sworn according to law, and says:

That he has been a citizen of Pecos over ten years; that he is largely interested, with other men, in raising stock on the Pecos river above Fort Stockton, Texas, in this county; that he has frequently applied for assistance from the post for protection against the Indians, who are constantly raiding on his lands and stealing horses and cattle; that none of his requests have received any attention; that he appealed to Colonel Blunt, the commanding officer at Fort Stockton, yesterday for protection, the Indians having stolen a number of his horses and cattle; that Colonel Blunt answered him as he has done others, as follows:

"That he could not protect the whole country, and that if people wanted protection they must move in nearer the post," or words to that effect, and refused his assistance in spite of his having four companies of troops lying idle at the post—two companies of cavalry and two of infantry—which have not been scouting for several months, and when informed that any men sent for the protection of our people would be furnished with beef without cost to the Government, and flour, too, if necessary, as an inducement to send a few men to our protection, he still persisted in his refusal.

That he can furnish a number of affidavits to the same effect if necessary.

(Signed) LEWIS PASCON.

Sworn and subscribed to before me this 31st day of January, A. D. 1880.

E. W. BATES,
Clerk County Court, Pecos County.

(Copy.)

State of Texas, County of Pecos, *ss:*

Personally appeared before me, the undersigned authority, Sergeant William Turner, Company L, Tenth Cavalry, who, being duly sworn according to law, deposes and says that Lieut-Col. M. M. Blunt, Twenty-fifth Infantry, commanding the post of Fort Stockton, Texas, did speak to him in the following manner, to wit: "I have sent for you to sign a statement against Captain Armes, and as first sergeant of the company it is your place to do it, and I will see that you are protected," or words to that effect. And when the said Sergeant Turner, Company L, Tenth Cavalry, declined to sign or swear to the statement prepared and fixed for his signature, saying that he had been in the Army a long time and was never in any trouble, and that he did not wish to mix up in any officer's matter, and that he had never had any cause to complain against Captain Armes, and that he never had complained to anyone against his Captain, the said Colonel Blunt ordered or compelled the said Turner to sign and swear to the paper in question against his will. Further, when Captain Clous and Lieutenant Easterly called him before them (after the court had met to try the Captain) for the purpose of using him as a witness for the prosecution of Captain Armes, that he did not say anything to them that would give the least ground for calling him as a witness against Captain Armes, and that he was not called.

Further, that there is not a man in the company who would volunteer to enter a complaint against the Captain, with the exception of four or five whom Captain Armes had justly preferred charges against, and who, he believes, only complained to escape a trial.

Further, Lieutenant-Colonel Blunt and Lieutenant Sweet, Twenty-fifth Infantry; Lieutenant Easterly, Tenth Cavalry, and Contract Doctor Price were continually sending for and talking with men of the company, and had some of them so mixed up and frightened that they only signed or swore against the Captain for fear of punishment.

Further, Captain Armes has always been kind and just to all the men of the company without ever showing partiality, no complaint ever being made by the first sergeant of the company for any man but what it was promptly looked into and justice rendered by Captain Armes.

Further, none but the worst characters in the company were selected to help sustain the trumped-up or manufactured charges against him, and such men as were willing to perjure themselves if persuaded by some of the Captain's enemies, it was for their interest to do so.

(Signed) WILLIAM TURNER,
Sergeant Co. L, Fourth Cavalry.

Sworn to and subscribed before me, this 17th day of April, 1880.

(Signed) E. W. BATES,
Clerk County Court, Pecos County.

A true copy.

(Signed) G. A. ARMES,
Captain Tenth Cavalry.

Headquarters Fort Stockton, Texas, April 15, 1880.

Capt. George A. Armes, Tenth Cavaly, Fort Stockton, Texas:

Sir—The Commanding Officer directs me to inform you that your extension of limits per endorsement from these headquarters April 7, 1880, is for the purpose of going to Mr. Johnson's to get your meals, and you are prohibited from visiting any other place in the village.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,
(Signed) R. H. R. LOUGHBOROUGH,
Second Lieutenant, Twenty-fifth Inf., Post Adjt.

Headquarters Fort Stockton, April 22, 1880.

Capt. George A. Armes, Tenth Cavalry, Fort Stockton, Texas:

Sir—The Commanding Officer directs me to inform you that the limits which were extended to enable you to get your meals in the village adjoining the post are hereby restricted to the post proper.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,
(Signed) R. H. R. LOUGHBOROUGH,
Second Lieutenant, Twenty-fifth Inf., Post Adjt.

In the District Court, A. D. 1880.

The State of Texas, County of Pecos:

To the Hon. Allen Blacker, Judge of the Twentieth Judicial District of the State of Texas:

The petition of George A. Armes, a resident citizen of the county of Pecos, State of Texas, complaining of M. M. Blunt, also a citizen of the county of Pecos and State of Texas, in an action of false imprisonment, most respectfully represents that on or about the 24th day of September, in the year 1879, at the place known as Fort Stockton, in the county of Pecos, the said M. M. Blunt, then and there being the Lieutenant-Colonel commanding said post and of the Twenty-fifth Infantry of the United States

Army, did then and there without proper consideration and with force and arms did then and there seize and take the sword of him, George A. Armes, then and there the Captain commanding Company L of the Tenth Regiment of the United States Cavalry, and with great force and violence the said M. M. Blunt did then and there upon divers and sundry false and unfounded charges and specifications place the said George A. Armes in custody and confinement without authority of court and with great damage to him, the said George A. Armes, namely: In the sum of ten thousand dollars ($10,000). The said George A. Armes for further course of action says that the said false imprisonment of him, the said George A. Armes, Captain of Company L of the Tenth Regiment of Cavalry of the United States Army, by M. M. Blunt, the Lieutenant-Colonel of the Twenty-fifth Regiment of Infantry of the United States Army, did then and there by reason of the detention of the said G. A. Armes of and from his private affairs in and about the District of Columbia in the United States of America, did then and there cause and procure of, from and about the private affairs of the said George A. Armes great injury and loss, to wit: In the sum of ten thousand dollars ($10,000).

Now the facts all considered, your petitioner, George A. Armes, prays your honor that the said M. M. Blunt, Lieutenant-Colonel commanding the Twenty-fifth Infantry of the United States Army, be cited to appear at the next term of the District Court of Pecos county to answer this complaint, and that he then and there be condemned to pay your petitioner the sum of twenty thousand dollars and all costs for general relief, and as in duty bound petitioner will ever pray, etc.

(Signed) D. S. Portis.
Attorney for P. C.

Fort Stockton, Texas, June 30, 1880.

To the Post Adjutant:

Sir—I respectfully request that I be furnished with a copy of Colonel Blunt's letter, dated June 23, 1880, in relation to my request for thirty days' permission to leave the Department.

Respectfully, your obedient servant,
(Signed) G. A. Armes,
Captain Tenth Cavalry.

First endorsement.

Headquarters Fort Stockton, June 30, 1880.

Respectfully returned to Capt. George A. Armes, Tenth Cavalry, disapproved.

By order of
Capt. J. M. Kelley.
(Signed) L. P. Hunt,
First Lieut. Tenth Cav., Post Adjutant.

Fort Stockton, Texas, August 5, 1880.

To the Adjutant-General of the Army, Washington, D. C.:

Sir—I respectfully request that you inform me with as little delay as possible if there is any order or regulation requiring Captains of companies to keep two morning report books, and if the morning report book sent to the Post Adjutant every morning is the one to be kept in a company. I also wish your opinion as to whether a Captain of a company has a right to take a copy of the original morning report and retain it as his private property.

Respectfully, your obedient servant,

(Signed) G. A. ARMES,

Captain Tenth Cavalry.

HEADQUARTERS OF THE ARMY,

ADJUTANT GENERAL'S OFFICE,

WASHINGTON, Aug. 15-80

Dear Sir.

I have yours of the 5th Inst asking me to state my knowledge of your services as a Company Commander. In reply. I have to say that during the months of July and August 1867. You served under my immediate Command at the Post of Fort Hayes Ks. Your conduct during that period was good. So good as to invoke the favorable comment of our Commander Emperor. Very respectfully your obedient servant

H C Corbin
Adjt Genl

To Capt Armes
10th Cav 2

CHAPTER XIX.

Fort McKavett, Texas, January 3, 1881.

The weather is quite cold and a furious snowstorm raging. I was obliged to go two miles after milk for the children and to help haul my wood for the fires.

January 21, 1881.

Spent two or three hours with Colonel Shafter last evening. He has assured me that he will do everything in his power to help me with the President in getting justice, and I sent a request to the President to remit a portion of my sentence, which Colonel Shafter approved.

Spitz Clous Station, January 24, 1881.

Orders came for me to report before a retiring board at San Antonio, and after an hour's talk with Colonel Shafter, I left McKavett on the 3 P. M. stage, reaching this place at 6 P. M., expecting to go on at 9.

January 27, 1881.

At 11 A. M. received a telegram stating that the President had countermanded the order for me to appear before the board, which is quite a surprise for my enemies, who had a job fixed up for me.

February 2, 1881.

Major Weeks, one of the most popular and leading citizens of San Antonio, is a strong friend of mine and doing what he can in my behalf.

February 7, 1881.

Colonel Shafter came in last night and leaves tomorrow. He has been very kind and a true friend to me, wanting me to transfer into his regiment.

February 18, 1881.

Colonel Shafter invited me to call on him at his office, which I did today, and he went all over my case. He has assured me of his support.

March 1, 1881.

Arrived at McKavett some days ago. Capt. T. M. Tollman has furnished me a copy of the order from the President amending my sentence so as to allow me full pay, which was very important to me.

April 11, 1881.

Have been fixing up deeds and papers to my New Jersey avenue property which I am deeding to Col. Belden Noble. Mr. Tesson has helped me some. Captain Richards has taken quite an interest in assisting me with my papers and transfer of property.

May 16, 1881.

Had a welcome letter from Father Hobon this A. M. informing me that bituminous coal had been found on my land in El Paso county. Lieutenant Whitall of the Sixteenth Infantry was greatly excited over it, and desires to come into partnership with me in developing the coal.

May 20, 1881.

I telegraphed the Adjutant-General today requesting him to delay the action of the board in my case until after my application for transfer is settled.

May 22, 1881.

My orders to appear before the board came this A. M.

May 23, 1881.

Made application for transportation to take my family to San Antonio, and have been packing up, disposing of what I cannot carry at a great sacrifice.

Bear Creek, Texas, May 26, 1881.

Settled up all my accounts this morning. We left here at 1 P. M. in a four-mule ambulance which Quartermaster Richards has kindly loaned me.

San Antonio, June 3, 1881.

Arrived here yesterday. Reported to the board, consisting of Dr. Middleton, Colonel Martin and Dr. Smith, president of the board, who told me to appear at 10 A. M. tomorrow. Colonel Martin has known me well ever since boyhood. I applied to have my horses kept in the Quartermaster's stable, but application was disapproved.

June 4, 1881.

Appeared at 10 A. M. before the board, which adjourned until Tuesday, 7th. It was decided it will sit with open doors. I have been refused quarters or commutation for them.

June 7, 1881.

Lucy and I appeared before the board this A. M., and I was questioned as to age, service, eyesight, hearing and temperature. It was a very thorough and interesting examination, quite laughable for the spectators.

June 10, 1881.

We were again before the board at 10 o'clock, where I was allowed to read a number of letters and orders in connection with my service in 1862 and 1863.

June 14, 1881.

Took a number of deeds and papers before the board showing my real-estate transactions during the last eight years. Colonel Newcomb and Mr. Gifford of the *Evening Light* were present and commented on the case in their papers this evening.

June 16, 1881.

I appeared before the board at 10 A. M., and was notified that my case is closed. From what I can find out, the report was a favorable one to me.

June 22, 1881.

Col. James Newcomb of the *Evening Light* and I had quite a conversation, during which he said he did not take any stock in Clous, and proposes to go for him in his paper whenever his actions warrant it.

July 4, 1881.

I made one of the most interesting and profitable trades in a small way today that I ever made with Mr. Regan Houston, who had been out several times driving with me, appearing very anxious on several occasions to become the owner of my pony and buggy. Today he proposed the trade of several building lots, and I closed with him. I bought my pony for $15, had ridden it several hundred miles, drawing nearly $100 for transportation that I was entitled to if I had come by stage; bought the buggy for $30 and harness for $10, and sold the outfit to Mr. Houston in part payment for his lot for $500, and we both appeared to be perfectly satisfied with the trade.

July 12, 1881.

My sentence in the morning report book case was commuted to half pay and to serve the sentence out at Fort Concho, Texas, the

headquarters of the regiment. I have been trying to get transportation for my family there, but find it impossible.

July 13, 1881.

Went around with Lucy today to look for a house, and found a small one not far from the postoffice, which I propose to rent and go to housekeeping. Mr. Paschal got up a petition signed by the principal citizens requesting that my sentence be remitted. Colonel Terrell, Paymaster-General of the Department, being a good friend of mine, has aided me in every way possible. He loaned me his horse and buggy today to look around further for houses. We finally decided to take the one corner Eighth avenue and C street at $15 per month.

Fort Concho, Texas, July 20, 1881.

Arrived here at 12.20, and was immediately assigned to an unfurnished room in the quarters of Lieutenant Davis, who invited me to dine with him. I had not been here but a few hours when Colonel Grierson issued an order forbidding me from entering any building at the post except my own room and refusing to allow me to dine with Lieutenant and Mrs. Davis; but Mrs. Davis sent my dinner into my room. Before leaving San Antonio I did my utmost to get permission from General Vincent to allow transportation to bring my family from San Antonio to Concho, but he appeared to be in collusion with Colonel Grierson and anxious to make everything as unpleasant for me as possible, denying my request and ordering me sent to Concho to serve out the balance of my sentence.

July 21, 1881.

I applied to General Grierson today for authority to get my meals at the hotel, but it was disapproved. Dr. Carter, the Post Surgeon, loaned me a bedstead, etc., from the hospital.

July 22, 1881.

I sent in my application for transfer to the First Infantry. Chaplain Weaver kindly sends my meals to me for the present.

July 24, 1881.

Chaplain Weaver loaned me some books and papers from the library today. Undertook to send a dispatch stating my condition, but General Grierson gave orders to the telegraph operator forbidding him to send my dispatches.

July 26, 1881.

Chaplain Weaver and Lieutenant Davis call in to see me frequently, and are doing everything possible to make me comfortable. As my orders forbid me to visit any building, officer or citizen at the post, I am obliged to remain in my room.

July 28, 1881.

I got hold of a Mexican boy, and have hired him to bring my meals from the post-trader's (Colonel Millspaugh) to my room.

July 31, 1881.

Colonel Grierson returned the application of Captain Walker and myself for transfer yesterday at 2 P. M. disapproved. I have been very sick most of the day and greatly disheartened.

August 1, 1881.

I have a great deal of trouble in getting my meals here. I have not had anything warm to eat for the past two weeks.

August 9, 1881.

Mr. Delany sent me a present of a fine large watermelon, which, with a few hardtack and a pint of milk, I have made out very well today.

August 12, 1881.

Mr. Miller sent me six nice birds last night, but not having any stove to cook them on, I made a fire in the fireplace with some paper and trash, and after picking put them on a stick and broiled them, giving me the first warm meal I have had for several weeks.

August 22, 1881.

I wrote a strong letter to Department headquarters today against Colonel Grierson's unjust and brutal treatment.

September 10, 1881.

Major Schofield left in the stage this A. M. for Fort Davis to sit as a member on the Lieutenant Flipper court. I wrote a long letter to General Auger today.

September 15, 1881.

Chaplain Weaver and Dr. Carter spent last evening with me, giving me points in regard to Grierson's effort to make another charge against me on the ground that I have broken my arrest, etc. He also gave orders to the Chaplain not to allow me to have books and papers from the library.

October 3, 1881.

I was very nervous all night, and have been obliged to take powders for the past few weeks in order to be able to sleep. The Chaplain was with me when I weighed at the Commissary's today, and I only weighed 136 pounds. which is quite a reduction from my weight when I arrived at this post.

October 10, 1881.

Dr. Carter called, and appears to be very friendly. He sent me a dozen more powders today to make me sleep, but in my nervous condition sleep is impossible.

October 19, 1881.

Gave a telegram to the Adjutant to send Colonel Terrell last evening, but he returned it today, saying General Grierson would not allow it to go over the wires.

November 12, 1881.

Orders came today changing me to Fort Stockton.

November 15, 1881.

I rode all night, and scarcely had any sleep. Met Major Wasson within eight miles of the post en route back to Concho. Lieutenants Colloday and O'Connell met me at the station. Major Walker invited me to his quarters.

November 16, 1881.

Captain and Mrs. Spencer were the only ones who invited me to dine upon my arrival last evening. I advised him to start for Washington as quickly as possible and head off the confirmation of Smithers, who has been doing all he could to get him or me out of the Army in order to get the position for himself.

November 23, 1881.

Had an interview with Col. J. W. Forsythe today. He assumed a great deal of dignity, and I soon saw that he was no friend of mine and that I could not depend upon him to assist in any of my affairs.

December 8, 1881.

A raffle for Captain Spencer's piano came off last night. I threw 34, Mrs. Bates 42, Lieutenat Davis 37 and Captain Callahan 42, making a tie between Mrs. Bates and Captain Callahan. They finally settled it by Mr. Bates paying Captain Callahan $200 for his throw, and he gets the piano.

December 31, 1881.

It is almost a miracle that I am alive after having gone through the mental worry and physical strain on account of the arbitrary and brutal actions of Gen. B. H. Grierson, Maj. Thomas M. Vincent, General Ord, Col. M. M. Blunt and the Dutchman. They seemed to do everything they could to make life disagreeable in the regiment and to force me to tender my resignation simply because I happened to have been restored by an act of Congress. But I have made up my mind to submit to everything and not allow myself to be forced out of the regiment without just cause, knowing that I had committed no offense and given them not the slightest grounds for their persecutions, but hoping that time would bring out the truth and expose the characters of these men who had been fostered in the Army. General Ord, who everyone knows had a very good reputation some years ago, seems to be in his dotage and entirely handled by his subordinates, who were enemies of mine. They induced him to agree with them on everything they would recommend. He has become so weak-minded that he should not be entrusted with any responsibility whatever; but of course I have to submit to the orders of my superior, no matter how unjust. My sole object is to do what is right, just and honorable as long as I have strength to keep up. When I arrived at Fort Concho to undergo my sentence I weighed 175 pounds, and when I left I was reduced to ninety-five pounds, all brought on by persecution of Colonel Grierson and those interested in helping him to carry out his vile purpose.

Having made application for a reduction of my sentence, Gen- Shafter approved, and that part of the sentence putting me on half pay was remitted.

The following communications and extracts during the year just closed will throw additional light on my difficulties and their cause:

WAR DEPARTMENT,

Office of the Chief Signal Officer,

Washington, D.C., March 16. 1881.

My dear Sir:

I hope we can effect something in your case before long. Can you furnish me a reliable statement that could be substantiated if necessary, of the times and occasions that Gen. Stanley has been openly and scandalously drunk within the past six months.

Of course I don't want to know when he or any man has been on a public, but when he has done so in a way to bring scandal and disgrace to the Service.

Yours friend

J. B. Hazen

THE ARMES CASE.

(*San Antonio Evening Light*, June 13, 1881.)

This morning we dropped into military headquarters, where Captain Armes was undergoing a sort of examination, as we take it, before a board of experts upon some feature of a previous trial, the sentence in which trial has not yet been promulgated. The gentlemen constituting the board or commissision were taking matters very comfortably. Dr. Smith seemed to be the presiding genius, while Dr. Middleton and Colonel Martin seemed to be side partners in the firm.

Captain Armes was reading letters from prominent persons in civil and military life touching upon transactions connected with his history, which would form an interesting chapter in a book. The court occasionally asked a question or scanned a letter from some important person as if to satisfy themselves if it was genuine, but on the whole seemed to be bored by the Captain's statement, which was a concise history of his life in the Army and out of it. Colonel Martin remarked at one stage of the statement that he had never heard Captain Armes' integrity as a man questioned, and he did not see that the numerous letters produced showing Captain Armes' high standing had anything to do with the matter in hand. As the reporter had no explanation of the matter in hand, the letters seemed pertinent enough so far as they went to show that Captain Armes enjoyed the confidence and respect of the best men in the nation.

It is a strange proceeding and not explainable upon any rules laid down in civil tribunals. When a party is charged with any offense the rule in all tribunals in this free country is that the burden of proof lies with the accuser. In this case it seems that Captain Armes is the culprit and is compelled by his own statement and presence to prove the falsity or truth of the charge to be investigated. The court is judge, jury, prosecutor and witness.

We anticipate an entire acquittal of the Captain upon the matter of his sanity, so far as the court of inquiry is concerned, just from what we know of the high standing of the gentlemen composing the court.

In this connection we will say that Captain Armes seems to have made himself conspicuous in the charges that ousted Secretary Belknap, and that he has been in hot water ever since. Captain Clous, the Judge Advocate General of this Department, has kindly handed us a copy of the findings of proceedings in the court-martial which sentenced Captain Armes to be dismissed from the Army, the Captain remarking that we should be posted about this man before we made any publication in the case, and that one of the charges embraced the murder of a soldier in his (Armes) command. We desire to say that we shall be cautious in espousing the cause of a man who was arraigned and dismissed

the service upon such a serious charge, and shall fully investigate the matter and give our readers our conclusions so far as they may be of interest to the general public.

SAN ANTONIO SIFTINGS.

(The *Tom Green Times*, Saturday, July 23, 1881.)

Capt. George A. Armes left this morning for his post at Fort Concho in compliance with court-martial orders of last week. The treatment Captain Armes has received is shamefully unjust and a disgrace to the United States Army. The members of the court-martial that promulgated such a sentence are more deserving of dismissal from the service than is the victim of their persecution, and we hope to see the day when the odium of their acts will cause them to hide their heads in shame.

Fort Concho, Texas, July 20, 1881.

To the Post Adjutant:

Sir—Having reported here in compliance with G. C. M. Order No. 42, Adjutant-General's Office, Washington, July 1, 1881, I respectfully request that my limits be assigned so as to include the Nemitz Hotel, as that is the only place where I can obtain my meals that I am aware of at present.

Respectfully, your obedient servant,

(Signed) G. A. ARMES,

Captain Tenth Cavalry.

(First endorsement.)

Headquarters Fort Concho,

Fort Concho, Texas, July 20, 1881.

Respectfully returned to Capt. Geo. A. Armes, Tenth Cavalry, disapproved. The limits of his arrest as designated in letter to him of this date cannot be changed. Captain Armes must make arrangements for his meals within the limits assigned him.

By order of

COL. B. H. GRIERSON.

(Signed) I. O. SHELBY,

First Lieut. Sixteenth Inf., Post Adjutant.

Fort Concho, Texas, July 21, 1881.

To the Post Adjutant:

Sir—I respectfully state for the information of the Post Commander that I have not had a mouthful of food to eat since yesterday about two o'clock, and that was kindly sent to my room by Lieut. and Mrs. Davis. I desire to know whether or not your order assigning my limits prevents my going to Mr. Millspaugh's premises to try and get necessaries or to the reading-room at the post.

Respectfully, your obedient servant,

GEO. A. ARMES,

Captain Tenth Cavalry.

October 5, 1881.

Dear Major:

I have been thinking very much about you and your present troubles, and the more I think of it the more I am led to believe that your only chance is to get out of the Tenth Cavalry and enter some other regiment. I have been informed of the action taken on your proposed exchange into the First Infantry by the Department Commander. He simply forwarded the application without any recommendation. This being the case, I am more than ever convinced that the suggestion I made to you in my last letter if acted upon by you would result more favorably.

* * * * * * * * * * *

If you will send an application to me to hand to Captain Russel to exchange with him I will sound him before saying anything to commit you about it. If he should invite the proposition I will then submit it. I am satisfied that he would be glad to exchange to a regiment serving in this department, and I did not think General Grierson would oppose the exchange if he thought he would get him into his regiment and that General Auger would favor it.

* * * * * * * * * * *

Truly yours,

C. M. Terrell.

CHAPTER XX.

January 6, 1882.

Colonel Wade had the five companies turned out to the funeral of Private Starks yesterday. Chaplain Baldridge conducted the services. All the officers and ladies attended. My sentence being almost out, I am now preparing for duty. Have greatly improved since arriving at this post, considering that I have been allowed so few privileges and recreations.

January 18, 1882.

I met my first sergeant at the stables this A. M. and gave him orders to bring the morning report book to me for signature. I signed it and reported for duty to Colonel Wade at guard-mount. He then began to show his hostility by informing me that I had no right to report for duty until he had given me written orders, in spite of my general order showing that my sentence had expired. He finally ordered me out on drill, however, and tried his best to catch me in some mistake upon which to ground another charge, although I had not drilled for many months.

January 20, 1882.

Spent last evening with General McClerry, Adjutant-General of the State; Mr. Callahan, Mayor of San Antonio, and Mr. Smith, a capitalist of New Orleans. After mounted drill I invited them, with Captain Heiner, for a horseback ride, calling on Mr. Rooney, one of the prominent ranchmen in the neighborhood. Upon our return to the post Major Walker got up an elaborate dinner and invited Judge Frazier to dine with us.

January 21, 1882.

Last evening after I received the report of my company Colonel Wade sent for me to report to him, when he reprimanded me for associating with citizens, and demanded the names of the gentlemen who were my guests, informing me such action reflected upon the Army, doing his best to cause me to say something that would warrant charges, but I was on my guard, answered his questions, saluted and left him.

January 22, 1882,

Mr. Rooney called on me today and stated that he would take the Colorado tract which Lieutenant Davis had given me to sell, and would pay me $3200 cash for it. I immediately telegraphed Lieutenant Davis.

On Road to Pecos Railroad Station, January 27, 1882.

Colonel Wade sent me a copy of a telegram from headquarters granting me a leave, and I at once started for the station.

San Antonio, Texas, January 29, 1882.

Arrived at 4 this A. M., and took Lucy and the children by surprise. They show the effects of anxiety and worry during the past six or eight months' hardships which they have undergone at the hands of Augur, Grierson and Vincent, whom I look upon as brutes instead of human beings.

January 30, 1882.

Colonel Andrews gave me a pass for myself and family to Houston. I have been packing up ready to start for Washington as soon as possible.

New Orleans, February 7, 1882

Colonel Andrews gave me a letter to Captain Burton for a pass, and upon arriving here I got special rates through to Washington.

Washington, D. C., February 10, 1882.

Yesterday I visited the War Department and registered; also called on Generals Drum and Hazen, Major Beebe and Colonel Corbin.

February 17, 1882.

Called on General Drum, who says he will help me in every way he can; also Inspector-General Baird, a friend of Captain Walker, who promised to do what he could to help our transfer. General Hazen and Major Beebe helped me to fix up a letter to the Secretary of War. Saw Major Geddes for a short time. Captain Little's bill failed to pass today.

February 19, 1882.

Spent the most of last evening with Senator Coke and Mr. Upson of Texas, who are helping me in every way they can with my transfer.

February 20, 1882.

Congressman Upson went with me to the War Department and had quite a long talk with General Drum, but we are not able to accomplish anything.

March 25, 1882.

For the past few weeks I have been busily engaged in getting my new houses built on the Tenth street lot. Colonel Plato in-

troduced me to General Bee of Texas, who became interested with me in a patent stone. He introduced me to Colonel Shaw of Galveston and Colonel Swisher of Austin, who called with me on General Swaim and Colonel Rockwell, when we fixed up a stock company to purchase the patent for Texas.

April 6, 1882.

Captain Edwards, Adolph Zadeck, Governor Davis and I went to a drugstore and bought material for making stone. I called on Senator C. B. Farwell at the Arlington, who is one of the company interested in building the State Capital at Austin, and is trying to arrange to build it of our material.

April 8, 1882.

In spite of getting the cement, sand, etc., the men from Colonel Thorpe's works failed to go to work, and I had to hire green hands. Have been at work all day trying to make a specimen of the stone after the patent. My application for extension of leave of absence was returned here today disapproved by Grierson, Augur, Wade and Sheridan.

April 29, 1882.

Had a long talk with General Hancock at Wormley's last evening; also met Major Mitchell, his Adjutant-General, who is on a visit here with him.

May 1, 1882.

Had quite a long talk today with Secretary Blaine in regard to coal mines which Governor Hunt of Colorado has induced me to become interested in.

May 3, 1882.

Called on General Ingalls with Miss Tillman, and he gave me a strong letter of introduction, marking it "special," to Commissioner Dudley.

May 15, 1882.

Met Col. Robert G. Ingersoll at his house, who went with me to see General Swaim, where he and Colonel Rockwell got in a carriage with me and drove out to see some building lots on Meridian Hill, after which General Swaim and Colonel Ingersoll went with me to see Secretary Teller about having me detailed as an Indian instructor, etc. Ingersoll also saw General Drum in my behalf, who objected to my applying for a detail, which caused me to believe he was playing the traitor, when he had always appeared to be my most trusted friend, but I believe him now to be a snake in the grass.

May 25, 1882.

I have been very busy all day with my friends in trying to get my leave extended, but it looks now as if General Sherman will not approve it.

May 26, 1882.

Was at the War Department again today and had a long talk with Colonel Corbin, Major Barber and General Swaim, but it seems useless for me to try to have my leave extended, as Colonel McKeever has misrepresented me in such a way that anything I can say or do will have no effect upon Mr. Lincoln, who appears against me.

At Baltimore & Ohio Depot, May 29, 1882.

Saw Col. Robert G. Ingersoll this A. M., who was just starting for New York to deliver an address at the Academy of Music. He wished me success and assured me that I could always rely upon him as one of my best friends, and not to hesitate to call upon him. I then bade Senator Farwell, General Hazen, Arthur Kerr, Colonel Schull and my brother good-bye. Went to the house and gave my foreman instructions in regard to the building, kissed my wife and four darlings good-bye, and left on the 8.40 P.M. train for Texas.

Abilene, Texas, June 4, 1882.

Arrived here at 7 this A. M., and no transportation on hand. The car was left for my men to use as quarters. Train stopped twenty minutes for breakfast, and, bidding Judge Hancock and wife and Mrs. Rush and a party of prospectors good-bye, we resumed our journey at 11 o'clock. Lieutenant Cooper arrived to take command of the troops, and I telegraphed the Adjutant-General of the Department for further orders.

Fort Stockton, Texas, June 7, 1882.

Upon arrival here found that Colonel Wade had sent his transportation back to Stockton and had gone East. Lieutenant Bullis kindly shared his blankets with me last night on the floor in the postoffice, but neither of us could sleep. At 3 o'clock the stage arrived, and we started on the 25-mile ride which was to bring us to Victoria, J. Morrow's ranch, where he branched off for Fort Davis, and I arrived here at 7 P. M., reporting to the Post Adjutant, William Lassiter, who introduced me to Major McClellan of my regiment, a good, honest, fair-minded soldier.

June 9, 1882.

I assumed command of my company yesterday and took Lieutenant Morrison's quarters, who has made out receipt to Lieut. P. E. Tripp of my regiment for my company property and funds. Major McClellan inspected my horses and stables today, picking out eight to be condemned.

June 14, 1882.

My company and a portion of G serenaded me about 11 o'clock last night, and at 2 o'clock this A. M. I was called out to quell a disturbance at St. Gaul, where one man was shot.

June 18, 1882.

Went on duty as Officer of the Day this A. M. and relieved Lieutenant Morrison.

July 3, 1882.

The past few weeks I have been engaged at target practice, drilling and attending to and getting my company in shape. Major McClellan left me in command of the post. Captains Smithers and Kelly are here on a visit and acting as spies on me.

July 4, 1882.

I got up a big affair today. Invited ranchmen and cowboys to take an active part in the performances. My company put up a greased pole, and we had a pig shaved and greased. Got up a wheelbarrow race and sack race, Major McClellan excusing his whole command in order that they might enjoy the fun. Had several splendid horseraces. In fact, we had one of the liveliest entertainments that was ever held in this section of the country. I treated the cowboys to plenty of beer, made a short speech and invited them to vote for Hon. John Hancock as the best man they could send to Congress. He was duly elected.

July 31, 1882.

Colonel Wade ordered me to have every man of my command ready for inspection today, but saw nothing to find fault with.

August 1, 1882.

Went on duty as Officer of the Day, relieving Captain Lee. Major Dodge and Russell arrived at 10 A. M. Had orders to bring my company out for mounted inspection at 6 P. M.

August 3, 1882.

Major Dodge paid the command yesterday afternoon, after which I had mounted drill, and was complimented by Major Russell for handling my men in the skirmish drill, which he said could not have been done better by anyone. The Major inspected my quarters, company, books and records, and, although Colonel Wade was with him a portion of the time, they seemed to be unable to find any fault with my management or the condition of the company or records.

September 8, 1882.

The actions of Colonel Wade since his return from Fort Davis have worried me very much. He also questioned a number of enlisted men of my company, trying to find grounds for involving me in trouble.

September 10, 1882.

Sold my ambulance, harness and horses for $400 less than they were really worth to Richards, finding it necessary to raise cash in order to pay my family's expenses back to this post.

September 15, 1882.

Dr. Powell ordered me on the sick report today; also ordered hot baths and a special attendant to take care of me on account of my weak and nervous condition.

September 18, 1882.

Colonel Wade, having failed to find any good grounds for preferring charges before, thought he made such a discovery today in regard to a few books not having been sent to Davis, but after a short explanation he was satisfied.

September 25, 1882.

I asked Colonel Wade to allow me my man Robinson today to do some writing for the company, when he very insultingly accused me of only wanting him because he had detailed him at his office. He is doing everything he can to prevent my having assistance in keeping my company in condition, encouraging the men to be insubordinate, etc.

November 2, 1882.

I applied again to the Adjutant-General of the Department for a sick leave, but Dr. Carter, who is sort of a "boot-lick" for Colonel Wade, is entirely under his thumb. As Wade doesn't want me to have it, Dr. Carter will not report in my favor.

November 4, 1882.

Sat up with Lieutenant Ward. He has been under the weather for some time, and is one of my best friends among the officers in the regiment. My application was returned today at 10 o'clock with Dr. Carter's endorsement, failing to express an opinion, which convinced me that he had been directed by Colonel Wade not to do so.

November 8, 1882.

Lieutenant Ward spent last evening with me trying to cheer me up, doing everything he could to prevent me from paying any attention to Colonel Wade's brutal action. Went on duty as Officer of the Day this morning.

November 15, 1882.

Sent a telegram to Colonel Terrell last night, who answered it today, saying, "Leave sent to Washington approved." Lieutenant Ward is assisting me in every way he can.

November 23, 1882.

Relieved Lieutenant Colloday as Officer of the Day. Received telegram from General Drum saying General of the Army disapproved my leave. Made a request to the Department Headquarters for seven days, with permission to apply for thirty days, and Colonel Wade returned it not favorably considered. Dr. Carter still gives me powders to try to make me sleep.

November 25, 1882.

General Drum telegraphed that Secretary of War declined to give me leave or allow my application to go to the President.

November 30, 1882.

Colonel Wade sent a note to the officers last evening that full-dress inspection, mounted, would take place at 9.30 this A. M. I was on time to the minute with my command, and although Colonel Wade did everything possible to find fault with something, he failed in every instance, my records and troops being in the best condition.

December 14, 1882.

After breakfast I went to the Commissary Department and bought a lot of stores for the use of my troops. Went to target practice and fired from 600 to 1000 yards, making an excellent score.

December 22, 1882.

Mr. Eugene McCrohan took breakfast with me this morning, and after a drive to Torris Ranch we made a big land deal, in which he agrees to pay me $14,800 in cash. The agreement was signed and accepted. Mr. Carnegie and Mr. Torris both dined with me today. News of the death of Colonel Schofield came today. It is reported he shot himself while in one of his insane moods.

December 24, 1882.

I bought some pigs and presented them to my company, which they will have roasted tomorrow, as they expect to have one of the finest dinners at the post. My first sergeant invited me down to look at the tables today, and several of the officers and ladies of the post accompanied me there. They complimented me on having one of the finest and best-arranged tables of any company that was ever known to have had a Christmas dinner at this post. A number of roast pigs with apples in their mouths, roast chickens, trays full of doughnuts eggnogg, potato and lobster salad, splendid cake, chowchow, fruit, raisin pudding with brandy sauce, chocolate, tea, coffee, etc.

December 31, 1882.

Orders were issued for muster and inspection at 9 this A. M., but were countermanded, and we did not have it until 1.30 P. M., and then in full dress. Had two long letters from Mr. Fisk and Colonel Shafter, Had my muster-rolls all ready and company in perfect order. No fault was found by the mustering and inspecting officer.

In settling up my accounts for the past year I find that I have made between $15,000 and $16,000 in speculations and commissions in spite of my persecutions and the trouble and annoyances I have had with Grierson and his clique. I also have nearly completed two houses in Washington at a cost of $18,600, which I presented to my wife. They were built by Mr. John Frazier, the architect who built the houses of the British minister and Mr. Blaine. I am still in command of my company in spite of every effort to bring charges against me.

As in previous chapters, I append a series of self-explanatory communications and extracts covering the year just ended:

Fort Quitman, Texas, January 9, 1881.

Capt. Geo. A. Armes, Fort Stockton, Texas:

Captain—Your very kind letter of the 30th inst. found me here instead of at Davis.

I have telegraphed Mr. Shields, who is a personal friend of mine, to telegraph you the information desired, and no doubt he has done so ere this.

I know, or have the best reasons in the world for believing, I am acquitted of embezzlement entirely. Of the second charge I am doubtful, but I hope for the best. It is laid under the —— Article of War. As to the final result I have no fears. If you can get any information pending the case please be kind enough to communicate it to me. The gentlemen from your post who were on my court stood by me, as I believe, like true men. I can never thank Captains W. and H. too much for their kindness.

* * * * * * * * * * *

Yours most sincerely,

HENRY O. FLIPPER,
Second Lieut. Tenth Cavalry.

San Antonio, Texas, January 30, 1882.

Hon. C. Upson, Washington, D. C.:

Dear Sir—Capt. Geo. A. Armes, whom you know, desires, in accordance with the wishes and judgment of his friends, to be transferred from the Tenth Cavalry to the First Infantry. Captain Armes has rendered arduous service to Texas, and has many friends among the people of your district, who will be gratified by any personal exertion you may make, either alone or in conjunction with General Maxey, in furthering the object he has at heart.

Believe me, yours most truly,

HENRY C. KING.

San Antonio, Texas, January 31, 1882.

Hon. C. Upson, Washington, D. C.:

Dear Sir—The bearer, Capt. Geo. A. Armes of the Tenth Cavalry, is a gentleman well known to the writer and to some of the best citizens of San Antonio, who all speak in the highest terms of him as an officer and a gentleman, and I feel assured that any assistance you can give him will be appreciated by your constituents who are acquainted with Captain Armes, besides being bestowed on a worthy gentleman.

Respectfully,

J. C. COCHRAN,
Editor *Times*.

Washington, D. C., February 16, 1882.

To the Honorable the Secretary of War
(Through the Adjutant-General, U. S. A.):

Sir—I have the honor to respectfully invite your attention to the following facts relating to my efforts to effect a transfer from the Tenth Cavalry to the First Infantry, and to appeal to your authority that justice may be done me and the transfer be made.

On May 18, 1881, I signed an agreement of transfer with Fergus Walker, Captain First Infantry, herewith enclosed, bearing the endorsement of Colonel Grierson, Tenth Cavalry, and accompanied by Colonel Shafter's remarks upon the subject.

On August 7 an application for transfer was made by Captain Walker and myself and sent through regular military channels to the Adjutant-General, which was not favorably considered by the General of the Army.

In a recent interview with the General of the Army he informed me that he had disapproved my application for transfer in consequence of the disapproval of my regimental commander, Colonel Grierson, who again in a telegram to the General of the Army on the 16th inst. "emphatically refused" to approve the transfer. I am denied copies of the endorsements in this case, and am not permitted to know the reasons for the unfavorable consideration given it by Colonel Grierson.

I have respectfully to inform the Honorable Secretary that since my restoration to the Tenth Cavalry in May, 1878, charges most trivial in character and unworthy of consideration have been repeatedly manufactured and preferred against me in order, as I believe, to render my life in the regiment too miserable to be borne, and this system of persecution has been followed with so much vindictive bitterness on General Grierson's part as to make a transfer from his regiment my only hope for happiness, or comfort even, to myself and family or for the best results from my efforts to render myself an efficient and useful officer of the Government. This hostility of General Grierson towards me is notorious, and I most earnestly and hopefully appeal to the Honorable Secretary.

It is my full belief that General Grierson's desire for my present retention in his regiment is not the result of a wish to benefit the service, but that he hopes to drive me from it eventually, thus creating a vacancy for the promotion of his own son and other favorites. I am told that he has made the boast that the "result of the next court-martial" would compel me to leave the service.

I state plainly that General Grierson is not friendly to me, as is well and notoriously known, and that he can have no friendly reason for desiring my retention in his regiment, but, on the contrary, in my opinion, his desire is to keep me there for unfriendly purposes, and my only and last hope for ending the difficulties

and persecutions from which I have suffered under his command is to be permitted to serve elsewhere, where I can prove to the Army and its General that I am worthy of their confidence, and this is my only purpose in making this request.

I am, very respectfully, your obedient servant,

(Signed) GEO. A. ARMES,
Capt. Tenth Cavalry, U. S. A.

Through the assistance of a Senator I obtained the following endorsements from the War Department:

(Endorsements on the foregoing.)

It is the uniform practice in dealing with mutual applications for transfer from one regiment or corps to another to regard favorably the recommendations of regimental commanders. Acting upon this, the General of the Army, without other consideration, disapproved the transfer.

Unfortunately for Captain Armes, his military career has been such as not to entitle him to that high consideration bestowed on the personal applications of more worthy officers.

Respectfully,
(Signed) R. C. DRUM,
Adjutant-General.

February 20, 1882.

Headquarters of the Army,
Washington, D. C., February 23, 1882.

Respectfully submitted to the Honorable Secretary of War, disapproved.

Captain Armes is commissioned to the Tenth Cavalry. Transfers from cavalry to infantry and vice versa are only usual on mutual application of the parties approved by the Colonels. In this case Colonel Grierson disapproved, and on my applying to him by telegraph in the interest of Captain Armes, present in Washington, Colonel Grierson most emphatically disapproves.

(Signed) W. T. SHERMAN,
General.

War Department, February 28, 1882.

This application has been submitted to the President and is disapproved by him.

(Signed) ROBERT T. LINCOLN.
Secretary of War.

War Department, Adjutant-General's Office,
Washington, March 2, 1882.

Capt. George A. Armes, Tenth Cavalry, Washington, D. C.:

Sir—I have the honor to inform you that your communication of the 16th ult. renewing your request for transfer to the First Infantry, etc., has been returned to this office by the Secretary of War endorsed by him as follows: "This application has been submitted to the President and is disapproved."

The following gentlemen composed the Texas Stone, Marble, Tile & Paint Co., which I organized March 25 to build the State capitol of Texas; capital $5,000,000:

Gen. W. B. Hazen, U. S. A., Washington, D. C.; Hon. James B. Shaw, Galveston, Texas; Hon. Hamilton P. Bee, San Antonio, Texas; Hon. John M. Swisher, San Antonio, Texas; Maj. Geo. A. Armes, U. S. A., San Antonio, Texas; Mr. John Frazier, Washington, D. C.; Col. A. F. Rockford, U. S. A., Washington, D. C.; Col. H. C. Corbin, U. S. A., Washington, D. C.; Gov. Edward J. Davis, Austin, Texas; Hon. John C. Brown, St. Louis, Mo.; Hon. C. B. Farwell, Chicago, Ill.; Hon. Branch T. Matterson, Galveston, Texas; Hon. Morgan R. Wise, Waynesboro, Pa.

My being ordered to my command prevented me from going ahead with the enterprise, and it finally fell through, all of us losing what money we had invested in it.

Washington, D. C., April 17, 1882.

Gen. R. C. Drum,
Adjt.-Gen., U. S. A., Washington, D. C.:

Sir—My application for an extension of leave not having been granted, I have the honor to request that my application to transfer to the First Infantry, with Capt. Fergus Walker, be reconsidered by the Hon. Secretary of War, in view of the fact that it is an impossibility for me to live in peace in the Tenth Cavalry. Therefore, I again most earnestly appeal, not only in my own interest, but in that of the public service, for the transfer I request.

Respectfully, your obedient servant,

G. A. Armes,
Capt. Tenth Cav.

Washington D.C., Apl 17th 1882

Hon. R. T. Lincoln Secy of War

I have known Capt. Armes a long time & of his restoration to the service by act of Congress & hope that his request be granted. He has been an active & gallant officer & has also had so many personal conflicts with those in his own regiment that I think he ought to be transferred and that justice to him requires it. I cordially recommend it as a favor to him & ask it as a favor. Yours very truly John Coburn

I concur in the recommendation of Genl. Coburn and sincerely hope that Capt. Armes will succeed. Yours [illegible]

From personal knowledge and general report I feel convinced that in simple justice this transfer ought to be made. I have been told and believe that the Col. of the 10th Cavalry has repeatedly made the threat that he would force Armes out of the army, and not to grant this transfer would seem to afford the opportunity for him to endeavor to execute his threat.

W. B. Hazen
Chf. Sig. Offr.

I have no doubt but the best interests of the service require that Capt. Armes be permitted to serve where there is not such a deep rooted prejudice against him as evidently exists against him by many of the officers of the 10th Cavalry. I have known Capt. Armes for years, and believe under favorable circumstances he would have no trouble. D. G. Swaim J. A. G.

Washington, D. C., May 4, 1882.

Capt. Robt. G. Heiner,
First U. S. Inf., Washington, D. C.:

Dear Captain—You and I having known each other a number of years, and served together at the same post, I would like to have your opinion as to my transferring with Capt. Fergus Walker of your regiment, and whether or not it will meet the approval of the officers of your regiment.

Yours truly,

G. A. Armes,
U. S. A.

Washington D.C.
May 4, 1882

During the latter part of the war of the rebellion I knew Capt. Armes slightly, while serving with him in the 2d. Corps. He then had the reputation of being a gallant and subordinate officer. I know nothing, except by general report of his latter ~~year~~ troubles.

Jno C. Tidball
Brit. Bry. Genl U.S.A.

Capt Armes served under my Command at Fort Sedgwick as St and post adjutant. He was a good officer and I had no trouble with him. He left my post on account of promotion for gallant conduct in an engagement with Indians.

Richd I Dodge
Col. r.a.d.c.

I think the service will be benefitted by the transfer of Capt Armes to some other Guardian. I hope this may be done.

Geo A. Gaston

Washington, D. C., May 5, 1882.

Captain Armes:

Dear Sir—Should you effect a transfer into the First Infantry I shall be happy to welcome you into the regiment. I have heard no officer express himself unfavorable to the transfer.

I am, very truly yours,

Robt. G. Heiner,
Capt. First Foot.

(First Endorsement.)

Post of Fort Stockton, Texas, October 11, 1882.

Respectfully referred to the Post Surgeon, who will examine Captain Armes, and report whether, in his opinion, Captain Armes' condition, either mental or physical, is such as to require his being relieved from any or all of his duties. This paper to be returned.

J. F. WADE,
Lieut.-Col. Tenth Cav., Comdg.

E. B. 328—82.

War Department, Adjutant-General's Office,
Washington, D. C., December 22, 1882.

Capt. George A. Armes,
Tenth Cavalry, Fort Stockton, Texas,
(Through Headquarters Military Division Missouri):

Sir—Referring to your communication of the 4th inst., addressed to the President, appealing from the adverse action of this Department on your recent application for leave of absence, and requesting that you be granted two months' leave, I have the honor to inform you that the Secretary of War does not deem it necessary to submit your request to the President, and declines to grant the leave asked for.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

(Signed) R. C. DRUM,
Adjutant-General.

CHAPTER XXI.

Fort Stockton, Texas, January 1, 1883.

I went on duty as Officer of the Day this A. M., and at 11 o'clock invited Colonel Wade, Dr. Carter and the ladies of the post to see the dinner I had prepared for my troop. I dined with Mr. and Mrs. Corbit this afternoon, after having made a number of calls with Dr. Carter and Lieutenant Tripp.

January 4, 1883.

Yesterday Colonel Wade, Lieutenant Colloday, Dr. Carter and I compared muster-rolls and found that quite a number of mistakes had been made by my company clerk, and at 11 o'clock today Colonel Wade re-examined them, with the company fund account, approving and passing everything as satisfactory in spite of his zealous effort to find fault.

January 9, 1883.

Sent my wife a long letter today, registered, enclosing $1030, with instructions for her to pack up everything and bring the children out here the first opportunity.

January 12, 1883.

Colonel Wade returned the application that I made yesterday to be relieved on acount of my health from my hard and extra duties, saying that he had no authority to relieve me from duty. I also received a telegram from General Vincent requiring me to pay for an official telegram that I had sent to the Chief Paymaster, when I am as legally entitled to the use of the wires as any other officer. My application not being approved, of course required me to remain on duty, and I am doing the best I can under the circumstances, and have to keep a vigilant watch out.

February 7, 1883.

I have my troop in very good condition, and look after all details in person daily, superintending kitchens, the cooking of each meal, issuing the rations, and even watch the horses to keep the men from running them when they go to water, which they will do unless carefully looked after by an officer. Lieutenant Colloday relieved me as Officer of the Day, as I am now on duty as Judge-Advocate of a general court-martial, and have had a

good deal of work to do on the Johnson case. Sixteen years have elapsed since I was Judge-Advocate of a court-martial before. I drilled my troop, mounted and dismounted, and had target shooting today.

The following extract shows that I had not been idle in my real-estate affairs in spite of my persecutions in the Army:

(*Washington Republican*, February 10, 1883.)

THE BUILDING BOOM.

Additional Houses Which Will Be Erected in the Spring—Detailed Description of the Proposed Portland Extension—Capitol Hill to be Improved by Many New Dwellings.

* * * * * * * * * * *

IN THE CENTRAL PORTION OF THE CITY.

The most noticeable improvement is the two beautiful houses, now ready for occupancy, owned by Mrs. George A. Armes and finished under her supervision. Both of the houses have been leased upon terms which pay handsomely upon the investment. The fronts are moulded pressed brick, with bay windows, having three stories, with furnace-room below, and kitchen in the rear basement, with stationary range, and the upper stories contain four spacious bedrooms, with bathroom and linen closets. They are finished throughout in oak, with open grates in every room. The arrangements for light and ventilation are very complete. John Frazer was the architect, and S. M. Plumley the contractor.

General Vincent appearing so anxious that I should pay for any little messages sent over the wires, I obtained the following frank from General Hazen, Chief Signal Officer. (See Vincent's letter, March 7):

No. 609.

U. S. Military Telegraph Lines.
Office of the Chief Signal Officer,
Washington City, March 1, 1883.

A frank for sending social messages is granted Capt. Geo. A. Armes, Tenth Cavalry, until December 31, 1883, unless sooner recalled, subject to the conditions printed on reverse side of this card.

W. B. HAZEN,
Chief Signal Officer.

Washington, D. C., March 6, 1883.

My Dear Armes:

I enclose the pass. I was glad to get your letter. I don't think the old set will do much mischief, although they would do a great deal if they could. We are both very much pleased with * * *

Let me know of any special and well-defined information you may have.

Respectfully,

W. B. Hazen,

Although there were several companies of troops at the post who had been idle for some time, the moment that news of an Indian outbreak came into the post Colonel Wade sent me, without the assistance of any other officer, after the marauding, thieving and most desperate band of Indians that inhabited that section of the country, who were committing murders and depredations upon the settlers whenever an opportunity occurred.

Fort Stockton, April 14, 1883.

Captain Armes:

Move with your troop as rapidly as possible, without hurting your stock, to Pear's Spring, Mussey's Ranch. From Pear's Spring there is a trail to Independence Creek, fifteen miles. If possible, get Mr. Mussey to send a man with you as guide. If you should find fresh Indian trail before reaching Independence Creek, you must, of course, follow it and use every endeavor to overtake and punish Indians. If you do not find trail, go to Independence Creek and shut valley. Notify stockmen, and endeavor to get information of direction taken by Indians and movements of other troops, and act as seems best under the circumstances. If the trail from Pear's Spring to creek is not practicable for wagons, leave your wagon at Mussey's and take pack mules. If you should, after scouting the country about Independence Creek, find the Indians have not been there, and be unable to get news regarding them, send to the railroad at Thurston's Station and ask by telegraph for further orders. Should you follow a trail, or for any reason require more rations or forage before you return, you will be supplied by sending word either by telegraph or by a detachment, as may be most convenient, and saying when you will be at some point to meet them.

Respectfully,

(Signed) J. F. Wade,
Lieut.-Col. Tenth Cav., Comdg.

The importance of my mission is another proof that Colonel Wade looked upon me as one who was fully competent to perform my duty physically and mentally as well as, if not better than, any other officer at the post—a fact which is in direct conflict with his own statements made to Department Headquarters representing me as an officer who should not be entrusted with a command.

Escondida, Texas, April 14, 1883.

Lieutenant Colloday relieved me as Officer of the Day, and at 1 P. M. Colonel Wade rushed into my room with orders for me to start after the Indians immediately. I had four mules packed, and left with forty-two men and fifteen days' rations, and have marched twenty miles this evening, but have a poor outfit to accomplish anything in case I should meet a war party of Indians, the packers all being green and inexperienced and most of the men raw recruits.

On the Pecos, Sixteen Miles from Pecos Springs,
April 15, 1883.

Left at daybreak; marched ten or fifteen miles, and stopped to graze my animals at the old stage ranch Escondido. Reached McCrohan's ranch at 2 P. M., where I rested an hour, and have just arrived, at 8 this P. M., making a march of fifty-five miles today.

Camp Bullis, April 16, 1883.

Pulled out of camp at daybreak; reached Pecos Springs, where I halted a short time, and dined with Hart Mussey, who sent one of his cowboys by the name of Long as scout and guide. I made splendid headway today, considering the terribly rough country and the cañons and mountains we had to pass over, marching thirty-four miles.

Geddes Ranch, April 17, 1883.

Discovered quite a number of fresh pony-tracks, which were scattered in the mountains, where the Indians are watching an opportunity to ambush me if possible. Therefore I had to be on my guard. Halted a short time at Mr. Ramey's ranch. He marched with my command as far as Weaver's ranch, which we found deserted and a note left on the table by Mr. Weaver stating that he had left for Mayer's Springs. We found quite a large sup-

ply of dried beef in his ranch, which I ordered my commissary sergeant to divide, and just as he was about to issue it Mr. Weaver and his cowboys returned, stating that he had heard that soldiers had been sent out to their rescue. He immediately presented us with the beef and a sack of flour, and joined us for the rest of the march this evening. We are now in a splendid camp, plenty of water and grass, and have marched forty-five miles.

Upon arriving at Thurston Station, Texas, the first telegraph office I had come to after leaving Stockton, I sent the following dispatch:

Thurston Station, Texas, April 18, 1883.

Adjutant-General, Dept. of Texas, San Antonio:

Scouted to Musil's Ranche, where I sent wagon back; then scouted to Independence Valley. Saw a few pony tracks. Ramsey lost one horse—rope cut from stake. Indian horse found on his range. Guides furnished from each ranche by Richland Valley and Getty's Springs to Meyer's Springs. Saw two mounted men in Richland Valley from top of mountain; supposed to be Indians, there being no cattlemen in neighborhood. Marched nearly 200 miles. Horses in good condition. Leave tomorrow for Eagle's Nest with two Seminoles. Scout up Rio Grande to Shafter's Crossing, to try and intercept Indians that may be crossing, expecting to reach Haymond on 23d inst.; from there to Pena, Col., for rations and forage, and on to Stockton, subject to approval.

(Signed) GEO. A. ARMES,
Capt. Tenth Cav.

Information having reached Department Headquarters that the Indians had all gone into Mexico, the following dispatch was sent in reply:

Headquarters Department of Texas,
San Antonio, Texas, April 18, 1883.

Captain Armes,
Thurston:

Commanding General authorizes you to return to Stockton by most direct and advantageous route.

Recent information renders it unnecessary for you to take route mentioned in your telegram this date.

VINCENT,
Asst. Adjt.-Gen.

Mayer's Springs, Texas, April 18, 1883.

Mr. Ramsay joined us at 10 last night, and being familiar with the mountains, assisted me in finding the paths and getting

through them. Several of my horses fell and rolled down the mountains, but I have not lost any animals today. It was an interesting sight to see one of the pack mules slip and roll over and over several hundred feet and land at the bottom of the mountains, and then get up and look around as if he was surprised at his extra performance. We have marched about fifteen mile today. I marched out across the Rio Grande and over into old Mexico, where the Indians have taken refuge, as I had driven them out of Texas, but do not consider it policy to follow them very far into that country, and returned to my camp.

Sanderson Railroad Station, Texas, April 20, 1883.

After marching about thirty-five miles, I went into camp near this station, and as a passenger train passed by newspapers were thrown out by the dozen, the first news we had seen for nearly two weeks. There is a California company here which has bored for water over 900 feet and hasn't found it. There are only two women in the entire village. The men do their own cooking, milk the cows and do their housework.

Maxon Springs, April 21, 1883.

Left Sanderson Station at daybreak this A. M., and reached this place at 1 o'clock. Met Colonel Fisher and Mr. Gallagher, who are going to San Antonio, just over from Fort Stockton. My horses have stood the march well, and are looking fine. There is a steam engine here that pumps water, forcing it through pipes to the railroad tank, running night and day, between one and two miles from the station.

While absent from my company some false charges in regard to property were sent in to the War Department, and my pay was stopped for $11.80, which I soon explained and was vindicated.

Ellis Ranch, Texas, April 22, 1883.

Marched this morning at daybreak, reaching Hegmond Station at 10 o'clock, where I halted at 3 P. M., giving the men a good dinner, and met Mr. H. D. Lincoln, who invited me to dine with him. Sent Sergeant Cole and two men after deserters.

Fort Stockton, Texas, April 23, 1883.

Marched at sunrise, reaching this post at 2 P. M., without the loss of a man or a horse. The animals are in good condition, not one lagging back.

May 25, 1883.

Colonel Wade has gone to Cincinnati, leaving me in command of the post until the arrival of Colonel Van Vliet, and I have had an opportunity to get copies of a number of letters and endorsements from the post records which cannot but bring discredit upon any officer of the Army who has been guilty of framing such wilful lies and misrepresentations about me.

May 29, 1883.

This is my thirty-ninth birthday, and Ethel was the first to hug and kiss me thirty-nine times, then Cecily, and ,lastly, George and Lucy. Lieutenant and Mrs. Tripp and I drove to the post garden with the children, where we had refreshments and a grand setout. Sergeant Gowans had fixed up tents and awnings, which made a beautiful little camp for my invited guests, and all had a delightful time swinging, etc.

Having left Private Watson at a ranch to take charge in place of the owner, who volunteered to assist me in following the trail of the Indians, it was understood that said Watson was to do his own cooking and look after the affairs of Mr. Ramsay during his absence. Upon his return to the post he made a false statement in regard to my requiring him to work for this man, and when I preferred charges against him for making a false report over my head to the Post Commander, Colonel Wade refused to bring him to trial, when I immediately sent copies of affidavits from reliable witnesses sustaining my charges, but Colonel Vincent refused to have him brought to trial, and required me to pay for the acknowledgment of the affidavits in addition, which proves his prejudice and failure to sustain me in my military duties.

After getting access to the post records I found that Colonel Wade had made a number of misrepresentations to Department Headquarters, doing his utmost to force me out of the regiment. Not being able to obtain any evidence against me that would warrant a court-martial, he resorted to another mode by trying to have me put on the retired list, which caused me to send the following letter, which I will admit looked rather unmilitary, but I found it necessary to speak the truth, which I could sustain:

To the Adjutant-General of the Army:

In reply to an application of Lieut.-Col. J. F. Wade, Tenth Cavalry, dated Fort Stockton, Texas, June 28, 1883, recommending me for retirement, I have the honor to state that any man holding an office of trust under the Government of the United States who would deliberately take advantage of his office, and the little power or authority extended to him, to misrepresent, try to injure and sneakingly villify a gentleman whose character is above reproach, without the least cause, is not only a coward, but a creature who disgraces the position a gentleman is supposed to fill. Colonel Wade well knows he uttered an untruth when he said I was incompetent to perform the duties incident to my rank and position in the Army, when he knows he has not been able to find one flaw in the management or administration of my company affairs that would hold water after an investigation of facts, although he has acted in the capacity of a spy, or detective, towards me more than like an officer or gentleman. When he asserts it would be a grave injustice, and unsafe to entrust a command, or officer, or volunteer, now under me, he states what is not true, and I defy him to show an instance, during his acquaintance with me, where any action on my part towards any one of my command will give him the least ground to base such a charge. When Colonel Wade goes on to say that the administration of the affairs of my troop and dealings generally with officer, soldier and citizen is such as to bring discredit upon the service, he is guilty of an unmanly lie, and I defy him to prove his statement.

In order to try to sustain his report, he connived with the Assistant Surgeon, Dr. Carter, to make the following statement, which is contradictory to the statements previously made, and which are submitted to substantiate what I charge:

Fort Stockton, Texas, June 28, 1883.

Adjutant-General, Department of Texas:

Sir—I have the honor to recommend that the necessary action be taken to have Capt. Geo. A. Armes, Tenth Cavalry, ordered before a retiring board, with a view to his retirement from active service. I make this recommendation, as, in my opinion, Captain Armes is incompetent to perform the duties incident to his rank and position in the Army, and I believe it to be a grave injustice to require officers or enlisted men to serve under his command, that it is unsafe to entrust him with a command that rightfully belongs to his rank, or with any independent command. Captain Armes is not a dissipated man, but his administration of the affairs of his troop and his dealings generally with officers, soldiers and citizens is such as to bring discredit upon the service and make him the laughing-stock of the community. I think the records at Department Headquarters and the War Department will

show Captain Armes' incapacity to properly perform his duties more fully than anything I can say. If witnesses are wanted I would refer to any officer, soldier or citizen who has been at this post during the past year or more. I am fully convinced that the interest of the service demands that Captain Armes should not be kept on duty, and I earnestly request that action be taken in his case as early as possible.

Attention is respectfully invited to the endorsed statements of Assistant Surgeon J. L. Powell and Wm. F. Carter, and to the enclosed extracts from the post records.

(Signed) J. F. WADE,
Lieut.-Col. Tenth Cav., Comdg.

Pages 63, 64 and 65.
P. L., Lieutenant.

Fort Stockton, Texas, June 23, 1883.

Lieut.-Col. J. F. Wade, U. S. A.,
Commanding the Post:

Sir—In compliance with your intsructions of the 22d inst., that I should report to you my professional opinion as to the mental and physical condition of Capt. G. A. Armes, U. S. A., I have the honor to state that I have known Captain Armes for several years, and that he has come under my professional observation at two different periods. My first acquaintance with Captain Armes was in 1881, while he was serving a sentence of suspension at Fort Concho, Texas, then the headquarters of his regiment (Tenth Cavalry). During the period of his stay at Fort Concho Captain Armes was almost constantly under treatment. His general health was bad—nervous prostration, with excitement, mental irritability, habitual insomnia, loss of appetite and general loss of strength, conditions originating, in my opinion, in the worry and mental anxiety incident to his situation. His condition became so serious at one time that I had made up my mind to recommend a speedy change in his case, believing firmly that Captain Armes' mental condition was becoming alarming, and that my duty required that I should interpose my professional advice. There was an amelioration, however, in his condition under the influence of anodynes and nerve tonics. These were necessary to secure for him anything like a sound sleep. Upon his change of station he passed from under my observation until September 25, 1882, when I assumed the duties of Post Surgeon at this post, then and at present Captain Armes' station. I found Captain Armes' condition improved, as might be expected, for here the same causes which operated against him during the first period of my acquaintance with him did not exist, the surroundings here being, I believe, quite as favorable to him as they could well be; yet, in my opinion, the same conditions of mental excitability, more or less nervous prostration and impaired general health exist, though, as

I said before, in a less degree. A careful analysis and study of these conditions prove conclusively to my mind that they may be traced to (are merely symptoms of a permanent nervous derangement) a shattered nervous system. Captain Armes at different times has been excused from duty and treated for nervous headache and neuralgia, and has frequently complained of and been treated for rheumatism. These troubles in most cases are apparently induced by a little unusual exertion of mind or body. I have no hesitancy whatever in declaiming my belief that Captain Armes' condition is such as to render him unfit for the responsibility and duties incident to the service, even as they occur in the comparatively easy and regular routine of ordinary garrison life, and positively incapacitates him to meet and discharge any weighty responsibility that might arise in any emergency.

I have the honor to be, very respectfully,

Your obedient servant,

(Signed) W. F. CARTER,

Asst. Surg., U. S. A., Post Surgeon.

After Colonel Jewett took command of the post I again applied for a leave of absence on acount of my health, not because I wanted to get away from Colonel Jewett, who was one of the best commanding officers I had served under for some time, and if I had continued to serve under him I could soon have recovered my health; but knowing that upon the return of Colonel Wade I would again be subjected to almost inhuman treatment, I found it necessary to do my utmost to get relieved from some of the duties of an officer of my rank until I might be ordered before a board for retirement. Colonel Jewett approved the application and asked that leave be granted as soon as practicable.

Finally a board was assembled to meet at San Antonio, two members of which had hitherto been members of a court-martial and had violated their oaths, finding me guilty of charges trumped up by Grierson and his clique to force me out of the service. I felt that Colonel Sweitzer and Major Hough had been specially selected to force me out of active service, but after they had sworn they were not prejudiced I allowed them to remain and submitted my case.

August 1, 1883.

Made an application to be relieved from all duties or responsibility with my troop, requesting that an officer be designated to receipt to me for all property.

August 10, 1883.

Lieutenant Davis of my regiment has receipted to me for all my property, having, after a careful examination, found everything in perfect order, and I turned my troop over to him. I am away ahead on the company fund, and everything is in good shape. I have missed scarcely a day from duty this year, being alone a great deal of the time and doing from two to four officers' work.

In the meantime this board was secretly and arbitrarily ordered for the purpose of forcing me on the retired list before an opportunity has been given to receive the benefit of my leave and to recuperate, as recommended by the Post Surgeons.

That I was on duty up to the day of being ordered before the retiring board is evidenced by the following order:

Fort Stockton, Texas, August 6, 1883.

Orders No. 67.

III. To enable him to hold himself in readiness to appear before the Retiring Board, in compliance with S. O. No. 167, July 21, 1883, A. G. O., Capt. G. A. Armes, Tenth Cavalry, is hereby relieved from command of Troop "L," Tenth Cavalry, and will transfer to First Lieut. Wm. Davis, Jr., Tenth Cavalry, all property, funds and records pertaining to the troop, taking proper receipt for the same.

IV. First Lieut. Wm. Davis, Jr., Tenth Cavalry, will assume command of Troop "L," Tenth Cavalry, and receipt to Capt. G. A. Armes, Tenth Cavalry, for all property, funds and records pertaining to the troop, taking proper invoice for the same.

By order of

MAJOR JEWETT.

(Signed) JNO. B. MCDONALD,
Second Lieut. Tenth Cav., Post Adjt.

CAPT. G. A. ARMES,
Tenth Cavalry.

Haymond Railroad Station, August 13, 1883.

At 11 o'clock today a telegram was received at Department Headquarters ordering me to report to the president of the retiring board, and I immediately packed up and left Fort Stockton at 3 P. M., and drove over in an ambulance to this station. Colonel H. C. King, a lawyer from Fort Ringgold, is one of my traveling companions.

San Antonio, Texas, August 15, 1883.

We arrived at 7 this A. M. and took rooms at the Maverick Hotel. Met Colonel Van Vliet at the hotel and reported to Dr. Joseph R. Smith, retiring board, at 11 A. M.

August 16, 1883.

Appeared before the board at the post, and found everyone ready for me at 11 o'clock, with the records all spread out on the table, and I was asked if I had any objections to any of its members. I told them I had, as two of the members, Colonels Sweitzer and Hough, had been on the court-martial which tried and found me guilty of charges that they knew were not true and had been fixed up at the instigation of Grierson and his clique. I was naturally opposed to their remaining as members of a board which was organized to go through the form of getting me out of the regiment if possible, but I was finally persuaded by Dr. Smith to allow them to remain, as they both stated under oath that they were not prejudiced in the least against me. The board as then constituted consisted of Colonel Sweitzer, president; Lieutenant-Colonel Hough, Sixteenth Infantry, and Dr. Joseph R. Smith and Dr. Middleton, Surgeon; Major Van Vliet, Tenth Cavalry, members. After the recorder had read the record furnished by the War Department, I objected to it as not being complete, and was granted until tomorrow to fix up one as it should be.

I met quite a number of my friends, and all seemed to treat me very kindly.

In order to complete the record in my case I furnished a complete statement of my military services.

August 17, 1883.

I appeared before the board at 11 this A. M. Although I had sat up until 12 o'clock last evening with Mr. Fisk and a few friends, I did not have my record entirely completed, so the board took a recess for an hour to let me finish it, and Major Russell sent me a clerk to copy it. Colonel Terrell, Chief Paymaster of the Department, came in and helped me sort out papers, advising me which were best to present. After my statement was read, I presented a number of orders and letters of General Hancock and others to substantiate the facts as I had set them forth. After an hour or two, I was examined and the doors were closed. I then returned to the hotel and went out on some real-estate business.

August 18, 1883.

I met General Augur on the street, and he invited me to ride up to the post with him. We had quite a pleasant chat, and he seemed as friendly as a man could possibly be. Dr. Smith informed me today that the board had recommended me for retirement for disability contracted while in line of duty, but that it would be a good while before my case would be reached, as it would have to go through the Department Headquarters and on to Washington before action could be taken. I am satisfied, provided I am allowed to await orders until after my promotion to Major. It will take place then in the next few weeks unless some underhanded move is made to force me on the retired list before being promoted.

August 20, 1883.

Mr. Lock finished his surveying of ninety-six building lots and brought in a bill, which I promptly paid. It was only $25, the usual rate being $10 per lot, so that I have no reason to complain of his liberality in the matter.

August 21, 1883.

Colonel Hough called and shook hands with me today. He tried to make me believe that he is a true friend of mine, and seemed to be ashamed of his past brutal actions to me while he was in command of Fort McKavett. I shook hands and treated him very politely.

Fort Stockton, Texas, August 25, 1883.

Arrived at this post at 7 this A. M., after driving all night. Found my family about as well as I could expect to. All were delighted to see me return in such good spirits.

August 29, 1883.

Knowing that I have been recommended for retirement, it is not likely that I will be in command of my troop much longer, and I am trying to dispose of my property and preparing to take a leave of absence to await orders of retirement.

The following letters addressed to the commanding officer of the post at Fort Stockton, with endorsements thereon, show that Col. James F. Wade, my commanding officer, had wilfully misrepresented me to the War Department:

Fort Stockton, Texas, August 28, 1883.

To the Post Adjutant:

Sir—In order that I may leave the post feeling that my conduct as an officer and a gentleman has been above reproach, that the administration of my troop and post duties gave entire satisfaction, and that no complaints of any nature whatever have been made by a man of my troop, I respectfully request that the Post Commander, in reply to this, state whether he can bear witness to the above facts. The peculiar situation I am placed in makes it my duty to keep a record of facts that cannot be impeached.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

G. A. Armes,
Capt. Tenth Cav.

Fort Stockton, Texas, August 31, 1883.

Respectfully returned. I have been in command of this post since July 7, 1883. During the time of my command the conduct of Captain Armes has been as stated within, and no complaints of any nature have been made against him by the men under his command.

(Signed) Horace Jewett,
Maj. Sixteenth Inf., Comdg.

Fort Stockton, Texas, August 31, 1883.

Since I have been stationed at this post I have inspected the troop of Captain Armes twice, and found it in good condition. No fault could be found with his administration in any particular. No complaints of any kind have been made by the men or anyone else. In drill and target practice they have been as good as the best.

(Signed) Jno. B. McDowell,
Second Lieut. Tenth Cav., Post Adjt.

Fort Stockton, Texas, September 1, 1883.

I have served at this post with Captain Armes since July 6, 1883, and during this time his conduct, officially and socially, has been, so far as I have observed, entirely correct.

(Signed) Geo. H. Palmer,
First Lieut. Sixteenth Inf., Comdg. Co. F.

Fort Stockton, Texas, September 2, 1883.

I have known Captain Armes over fifteen years, and have served under and with him at times, and believe I know him as well as any officer of the regiment. I never knew him to commit an ungentlemanly or dishonorable act, and his record for duty in the field and as an Indian fighter is equal to any.

(Signed) Wm. Davis, Jr.,
First Lieut. Tenth Cav., Comdg. Co. L.

Fort Stockton, Texas, September 4, 1883.

I have served at this post with Captain Armes for about one year and a half, and during that time have never known him to be guilty of any action which could be termed ungentlemanly. Having had no connection with his troop while he was present with it, I cannot make any criticism, but think it compared favorably with other troops of the regiment.

(Signed) P. E. TRIPPE,
Second Lieut. Tenth Cav., Comdg. Troop G.

August 31, 1883.

Major Jewett had muster and inspection at 8 A. M. He has proven himself a true friend of mine and one of the best commanding officers I have had for some time.

On the Road to Haymond Station, Texas,
September 12, 1883.

I had the trunks and packages all loaded in the wagon this morning, and started them in advance. At 3 P. M. Lucy, my children and myself got in the ambulance and left the post, after bidding our special friends good-bye.

On Train to San Antonio, September 13, 1883.

I had to leave a good deal of my baggage back at the station, not being able to get it on the train today, which I never yet received.

San Antonio, September 14, 1883.

Reached this city safely at 7 this A. M. and selected two large rooms at the Menger Hotel. After breakfast Generals McClerry, Fisk, Gordon and Berry called upon us.

September 17, 1883.

General Augur notified me that I was retired on the 15th and ordered home.

Washington, D. C., September 17, 1883.
Commanding General, Department of Texas,
San Antonio, Texas:

Capt. George A. Armes, Tenth Cavalry, is retired September 15 and ordered to his home. Please notify him.

(Signed) R. C. DRUM,
Adjutant-General.

Official copy respectfully furnished Capt. George A. Armes, U. S. A. (retired).

(Signed) THOMAS M. VINCENT,
Asst. Adjutant-General.

Headquarters Department of Texas,
September 17, 1883.

I immediately sent a telegram of protest, as it had been agreed that I should have a six months' leave until after my promotion as Major. I had same information from General Drum and permission from Secretary of War to visit Mexico. I propose to go to Washington immediately.

On Sleeper En Route to St. Louis, September 18, 1883.

I called on General Augur, Dr. Smith and Colonel Terrell last night and obtained a copy of my retirement order, and had a long talk about the underhanded arbitrary act. I have a great many friends who are sympathizing with me and denouncing the officials who have proved so traitorous. After bidding my friends good-bye, I secured a drawing-room on the sleeper and left San Antonio at 7.40. There being a dining-car next to mine, we are traveling very comfortably.

St. Louis, Mo., September 20, 1883.

We arrived here this A. M. and engaged nice, large rooms at the Southern Hotel, one of the finest in this city, and the children are greatly enjoying themselves. General Glover of the *Globe Democrat* called on us today; also A. W. Gifford, who has taken a special interest in my case and called with me on several prominent men, among them Judge Vailant and Mr. Wright.

Upon my return to the hotel I met Governor Crittenden and several friends. Took Lucy and the children to the theater this evening, where she saw Edwin Booth for the first time.

Washington, D. C., September 24, 1883.

Called on General Drum, but could get no satisfaction. Received my mileage from Stockton. Saw General Whittaker, my agent, and this evening called on Mr. Murray, the correspondent of the *Globe Democrat*.

Knowing that a number of officers who had been ordered on the retired list had been furnished transportation for their horses

and allowance of baggage, I made my application accordingly, but was refused, showing the prejudice of Mr. Robert Lincoln, who had unfortunately been made Secretary of War.

October 16, 1883.

During the past few weeks I have been doing everything possible to get the order of retirement revoked, and find it necessary to appeal to Congress next session. Called on General Hazen this afternoon, who went with me to see President Arthur. The President was very pleasant and agreeable and listened to my statement very attentively, and said he would refer the matter to the Secretary of War and Judge-Advocate-General and give the whole matter personal attention immediately. He seemed to joke about the newspaper misstatements and acted so friendly that General Hazen was gratified with the interview as well as myself. Before leaving I made formal request in writing that the order placing me on the retired list before promotion be revoked, which was as follows:

Washington, D. C., October 15, 1883.

To the President of the United States,

Washington, D. C.:

Sir—I have the honor to state that during the month of July past my health was such that I applied for a sick leave. Soon after I was ordered to appear before a retiring board. Before appearing I was assured that General Augur would approve my application without regard to the action of the board, and I was confident that I would attain my majority within a short time. The board recommended my retirement for disability incident to the service. One month's leave was granted, and my request for five months' extension was approved by General Augur. I had just availed myself of the leave when I received a telegram announcing my retirement as Captain. I have since applied to the War Department to revoke the order retiring me as Captain, and to allow me to await orders at home until my promotion. Not receiving a favorable reply, I appeal to you for the justice the circumstances of my case will warrant. If any reason should be given you inferring the order retiring me as Captain should not be revoked I respectfully request that the Judge Advocate General of the Army be directed to examine and report upon the legality of my request.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant.

GEO. A. ARMES,
Capt., U. S. A.

To which General Drum replied as follows:

War Department, Adjutant-General's Office,
Washington, November 9, 1883.

Capt. Geo. A. Armes,
U. S. A. (retired),
1405 F St. N. W., Washington, D. C.:

Sir—Referring to your letter of the 15th ulto., addressed to the President, requesting that the order placing you on the retired list be revoked, and that you be permitted to await orders at your home until promoted to the rank of Major, the Secretary of War directs me to say that he is not aware of any provision of law, even if it were considered advisable by him, to have you restored to the active list, under which the order placing you on the retired list could now be revoked.

On the subject of promotion, you are referred to paragraph 36 of the Regulations, from which it will be seen that, having been found physically disabled for duty, you of necessity come under the excepting provision of that paragraph.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

R. C. DRUM,
Adjutant-General.

And the following is my reply to the President:

Washington, D. C., November 10, 1883.

To the President of the United States,
(Through the Adjutant-General of the Army):

Sir—* * *

I respectfully invite attention to the fact that several officers have been recommended for retirement on account of disability, and have been awaiting a vacancy on the retired list for months before I was ordered before a board, and the fact that six months' sick leave was recommended by my Department Commander should certainly have prevented such an injustice as has been done by placing me on the retired list first, although the last recommended.

N. B.—I request that no act be done in this connection that may jeopardize my promotion, and if any such has been done that it may be revoked.

I wrote General Drum as follows, explaining what took place in my interview with the President when in company with General Hazen:

Washington, D. C., November 15, 1883.

Gen. R. C. Drum,

Adjutant-General of the Army, Washington, D. C.:

Sir—General Hazen and I called on the President October 16 and requested the revocation of the order retiring me as Captain. The President at first objected to interfere with the actions of the Secretary of War in the matter, but after a short discussion, said if any suggestion could be made that would warrant him to act he would like to hear one. General Hazen suggested that the Secretary of War be directed to refer my application to the Judge Advocate General for opinion as to legality of my request. The President said he would do so, and took my letter, and I now respectfully ask you to let me see or have a copy of the endorsements thereon.

Respectfully, your obedient servant,

G. A. Armes,
Capt., U. S. A.

The above is exactly stated as I remember it.

(Signed) W. B. Hazen.
November 6, 1883.

After an early breakfast took my children and Lucy in the carriage to Vienna, where I met Mr. Bomon, with whom I used to board when I was a boy going to school in Fairfax. We then drove to Fairfax C. H. and had my deed recorded for the Anderson farm, which I bought from Mr. Biglow some time ago, after which we returned via Falls Church.

November 25, 1883.

General Swaim, the Judge-Advocate-General, has taken quite an interest in my case, and has proven himself a true friend and fair-minded man. I have made several sales lately, and am doing well in the real-estate business.

November 27, 1883.

Gen. J. W. Denver has taken an interest in my case, and called with me last night on General Hancock. I have a deal on hand with Colonel Ingersoll and General Swaim.

December 13, 1883.

Received a dispatch from Mr. Firman from San Francisco, Cal., and one from Father Hobon, who is in Baltimore. Saw Judge Hancock in regard to silver mines; also Mr. Ellis and Forney in regard to claim.

December 26, 1883.

Leased a house, No. 1216 Sixteenth street, and moved in today, and have gone to housekeeping, and are very comfortably fixed.

CHAPTER XXII.

At 10 o'clock January 1 reported to the War Department in full uniform, marched over to the White House and called on the President and paid usual calls on official and citizen friends.

During the past year I have been largely engaged in real-estate transactions, in addition to the great amount of time consumed in trying to get justice at the War Department, making many friends among Senators and members of Congress, who took an active interest in my behalf. Senator John R. McPherson of New Jersey has been interested with me in making several large deals. One very important transaction which I carried through was the securing of an order from the War Department appointing the board of ordnance officers to examine into the patent of Captain Powlett for the Pneumatic gun carriage. After a thorough investigation into the merits of the case, the board recommended that $10,000 be appropriated for the purpose of testing it, which I managed to get through Congress, and the contract was given to the South Boston Iron Works Co. for the purpose of building it. Mr. Creecy was so well satisfied with my services that on November 1 he handed me $3000 worth of stock for securing the order and procuring the adoption of the patent.

During the month of November Gen. D. G. Swaim was brought to trial before a court-martial, of which General Miles was president. General Swaim being a special friend of mine, I took quite an interest in his case.

During the month of December I was appointed on the military committee for the inauguration of Mr. Cleveland, and took a very active part in the organization of a cavalry command, which made a fine display in the parade. Col. William G. Moore was chairman of the committee, and we called a meeting at the National Hotel, bringing the old organization of the President's mounted guard together. General Beverly Robertson was elected Captain and William Dickson First Lieutenant. Afterwards Robertson withdrew, and I was made Captain and organized a company.

Having employed Gen. J. W. Denver as my counsel to assist me in getting justice before the Senate in regard to my arbitrary retirement, he sent the following letter to the military committee:

Washington, D. C., January 8, 1884.

To the Chairman Committee on Military Affairs, U. S. Senate:

Sir—The name of First Lieut. Chas. L. Cooper, Tenth Cavalry, has been sent to the Senate for confirmation as Captain, vice Armes, retired.

I respectfully request that no action be taken on the nomination for promotion of said Cooper until the legality of the retirement of Captain Armes is further investigated and examined, and that I be permitted to appear and submit reasons why Captain Armes should not be retired, as ordered by the War Department.

Very respectfully,

J. W. DENVER,
Attorney for G. A. Armes.

After getting my case before the military committee of the Senate, I was denied by Mr. Robert T. Lincoln, the Secretary of War, any evidence at his department that he thought would be of any service to me. I reported these facts to Senator Cockrell, who requested that what I wished be sent to me, which was done upon his application.

In order to strengthen my case before the military committee I wrote to General Mason, Inspector-General of the Department of Texas, and received the following reply, which confirms the report and statements made by the officers at Fort Stockton that my company records were in good condition:

Respectfully returned to Major Armes. So far as I can recall without reference to my notes, I found your troop in good condition at the inspections made at different times. I do not think that any complaints were ever made to me.

Your books and records were well kept and complete.

JOHN MASON,
Col. Ninth Inf.

Feeling that a re-examination before a medical board would be in my favor, I made an application to the Adjutant-General that I be ordered before one for this purpose, to which I received a reply denying my request.

During the month of March I got Senator Beck of Kentucky thoroughly interested in my case. He prepared a bill which was in my favor, and which, if it had passed, would have been of great benefit to officers who are forcibly placed on the retired list arbitrarily, containing a clause which would have authorized the

President to revoke the order forcibly retiring me without just cause. This caused the opposition of Captain Bacon of the Ninth Cavalry, who had been a Colonel of General Sherman's staff, and he applied to both his Senators, Beck and Williams, as one of their constituents, representing to them it would be of great damage to him and prevent his promotion.

Senator Beck, instead of introducing the bill himself, handed it to Senator Williams, who introduced it without noting its purport, and upon reading an attack in the press, I immediately sent a letter to Senator Williams and received the following reply:

United States Senate,
Washington, D. C., March 8, 1884.

My Dear Sir--In making the motion in the Senate yesterday to relieve the Committee from further consideration of the bill regulating the retirement of Army officers, nothing was further from my purpose than to cast any injurious imputations upon anybody. I expressly stated that the bill was introduced by mistake. The first intimation that I had of such a bill was in a letter from a constituent of mine, who protested against it, because he said it would delay his promotion. I then looked into the matter and found the facts as stated by me in making the motion. I am sure that no sharp practice was attempted by you or anyone else in this matter, and do not think the facts will cast any injurious reflections upon you or the gentleman who prepared the bill. It was simply a mistake.

Very truly, yours,
JOHN S. WILLIAMS.

After the receipt of Senator Williams' letter I called on Colonel Bacon and asked him how it was that he was interfering and trying to prevent me from obtaining justice at the hands of the War Department, when he remarked that "it was natural; he had to look out for No. 1," and then went on with the details, explaining that he and General Sherman called on the Secretary of War and requested him to order me retired in order to make a vacancy for his promotion to a majority, as he did not wish to return to his company as Captain after having served so long as a full Colonel on the staff of General Sherman, and that General Sherman was very anxious to obtain his promotion, remarking to the Secretary of War that in case I should be promoted out of the Tenth Cavalry into a new regiment there was no doubt but that I would stick, and under the circumstances Captain Bacon might have to

serve for a long time as a Captain in his regiment before receiving his promotion. Upon these representations Mr. Lincoln ordered my immediate retirement, although there was a large number of officers who had been recommended months before awaiting a vacancy, and although I was about the last recommended and the leave of absence approved for six months to await orders, the leave was revoked and I was arbitrarily placed on the retired list as a senior Captain of cavalry and Major Ball retired, promoting Captain Bacon to a majority, the place I was legally entitled to. These are facts that can be substantiated by the records of the Department and other evidence.

In connection with my attempt to obtain justice at the hands of the War Department General Rosecrans took a very active and friendly interest in my case and introduced the following bill:

GEN. W. S. ROSECRANS.

A Bill to Regulate the Retiring of Army Officers.

1. Be it enacted by the Senate and House of Representatives of the United States of America in Congress assembled, That from and after the passage of this Act all officers of the Army of the United States who have been or may hereafter be recommended for retirement for disability by a retiring board shall be placed upon the retired list in the order in which they are recommended by said board of retirement.

Sec. 2. That the President be and hereby is authorized to revoke the order, September fifteenth, eighteen hundred and eighty-three, by which Capt. George A. Armes, Tenth U. S. Cavalry, was retired, and that said Armes shall only be retired in his order, agreeably to the foregoing provisions of this Act.

In self-defense I found it necessary to send the following letter to the President on account of the harsh, unjust and arbitrary treatment received at the hands of Robert Lincoln, Secretary of War:

Washington, D. C., March 13, 1884.

To the President of the United States:

Sir—I respectfully call your attention to the action of your Secretary of War, Robert T. Lincoln, in his unjust treatment and misrepresentations of myself. He has said to me that he told you the statement I made to you in relation to his letter to me, which I alluded to in the interview you kindly granted me last Saturday, was a falsehood. This statement of his is not in accord with the facts.

The following is a true copy of an extract from his communication to me on the subject of promotion: "You are referred to paragraph 36 of the Army Regulations, from which it will be seen that, having been found physically disabled for duty, you of necessity come under the excepting provision of that paragraph."

Paragraph 36, Army Regulations, referred to, reads as follows:

"All vacancies in established regiments and corps to the rank of Colonel shall be filled by promotion according to seniority, except in case of disability or other incompetency."

The disability referred to in this paragraph refers to disability occasioned through the commission of crimes or offenses. Now, I complain that if that was one of the grounds upon which my hasty retirement was made, which unjustly deprived me of the promotion to which I am entitled, I have never improperly interfered with others, but as an officer of the Army and a citizen of the United States I feel it my duty to bring to public notice the dishonest actions of two prominent Army officers and one Cabinet officer, holding the position of Secretary of War, who were found guilty, or, in effect, confessed the truth of the charges I made, and the three went out of office in disgrace. Since their downfall repeated efforts have been made to ruin me, if possible, and I, as well as my family, have been compelled to suffer untold wrongs at the instance of dishonest persons who have had it in their power to do so, and so far have been unable to get any redress.

It is true that I have several times been tried before courts-martial and found guilty, but all that was brought about by conspiracies and persecutions such as few officers, if any, ever had to contend with, and the charges were so frivolous that under other circumstances a just commanding officer would have cast them aside as unworthy of notice. No charge was ever made against me which I could not have disproved had I been allowed an opportunity to do so, but this was not permitted. Every possible advantage was taken of me, first by giving me no time to meet the charges, which were suddenly changed, and, second, by excluding

my witnesses and evidence. The conspiracy against me fully developed itself when I was ordered to return to my regiment in 1878. When the telegram announcing this was handed Col. B. H. Grierson, I am told by an officer who was there present he declared it would not be three months before he would have me out again, and this he set about to accomplish. I was subjected to every possible annoyance, and charges were trumped up to send me before courts-martial or before boards, and, unfortunately for me, he and his coadjutors succeeded in poisoning against me the minds of those higher in authority.

During the whole time of my service in the Army no inspecting officer ever reported me as deficient in the control or administration of my command, and the fact that I was several times recommended for brevet for gallantry in the field, and mentioned in orders a number of times, shows that I have not been inefficient while on duty.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

(Signed) G. A. Armes.

My military troubles did not prevent me from carrying on an energetic and profitable business, of which the following letters from prominent men are evidence:

The Ebbitt House,
Washington, D. C., September 3, 1884.

Maj. Geo. A. Armes:

Dear Sir—I will be glad to drive with you this afternoon to look at some houses. I have an idea of purchasing a residence in this city, and will be pleased to have you show me around.

Your obedient servant,

Wm. T. Harney,
Bvt. Maj.-Gen., U. S. A.

Washington, D. C., June 14, 1884.

Hon. John B. Alley,
Washington, D. C.:

Dear Sir—I have known Maj. George A. Armes for several years. He has transacted a considerable amount of business for me, and has always done it promptly and well. He has a very large acquaintance, and has been very successful in making sales. I think he would manage your business promptly and correctly if entrusted in his care.

Yours respectfully,

David L. Morrison.

CHAPTER XXIII.

Washington, D. C., January 1, 1885.

I commenced the first of the year by putting on my uniform, meeting the General of the Army at the War Department and marching with the long line of officers who had assembled there in full-dress uniform. After shaking hands with President Arthur and a large number of friends, many of whom I had not met for over twenty years, I invited Captain Heiner of the First Infantry to make calls.

January 17, 1885.

Captain Heiner called at my office this A. M. We had quite a long interview with the Secretary of War as to his appointing a board to look into the merits of my unjust retirement as a Captain. I told him that his action was one which would leave a stain upon his character that could never be wiped out. I also told him I would appeal to the President, and left him in disgust and contempt.

January 19, 1885.

Judge Shellabarger made a splendid argument in defense of General Swaim today. I called at the War Department and had a long discussion with General Drum about the Secretary of War, handing him a letter for President Arthur in regard to the injustice which Secretary Lincoln has inflicted upon myself and family.

January 21, 1885.

General Grosvenor made a very able argument in the defense of General Swaim today which ought to convince anyone that General Swaim would be cleared.

January 27, 1885.

Saw General Miles today a few minutes. He is still engaged on General Swaim's court. Ex-Governor Stanton of Kansas called to see me about his thirty thousand acres.

January 31, 1885.

Called on Mrs. Governor Swan with a letter of introduction from Governor Price. Had a very pleasant conversation in regard to real estate, of which she is a large owner.

After failing to obtain justice from the Secretary of War, who seemed fully controlled by my enemies, composed of a clique in the War Departmen who are bent on keeping me from receiving justice, I found it necessary to send a letter to the President of the United States, which Mr. Lincoln declined to let him see, sending me a letter dated January 31 as his excuse. The reader can easily see prejudice cropping out. Although an officer of the Army, I have found it necessary to run the risk of being court-martialed in order to bring out the facts and expose those in authority. But in spite of my making myself liable, it is impossible to get them to order a court to investigate my case for fear of their own exposure.

February 2, 1885.

Upon arriving at my office this A. M. I found the names of Colonel Woodbury and his son on my desk. They returned at 1 P. M., when I invited them to drive around the city and to my house to dine. They are now my guests.

February 3, 1885.

Last evening Colonel Woodbury and I called on Senator Sherman, Mr. Blaine, Mr. Edmonds and General Hazen.

February 4, 1885.

This A. M. Colonel Woodbury, his son Charlie and myself went to Manassas Station, Virginia. The Colonel hired a team and we drove over the ground of Bull Run, where he lost one of his arms in 1861. We picked up several cannon-balls near the place where his arm was shot off and brought them back as mementoes.

February 17, 1885.

Met Captain Home of England at the National Hotel last evening. Spent an hour with Senator McPherson in trying to persuade him to purchase the Jackson House. Saw General Miles in relation to Mr. Hill's offer of $30,000 for his land. Had quite a talk with Senator Voorhees of Indiana, who is one of my supporters.

February 24, 1885.

I sent a letter to the President enclosing copy of letter of January 19, which the Secretary of War refused to deliver.

March 1, 1885.

I met a large number of friends at the Ebbitt House and Willard's last evening. Kept open house for my friends who are interested with me in the mounted organization which is to turn out on the 4th.

March 4, 1885.

Met General Batchelder and Major Vanderburg, who had charge of receiving the troops. A number of my mounted men came in this A. M. Mr. Randolph, clerk of the War Department, gave me a few blank tickets to admit friends to the Department. I invited Mr. Jackson and his family, the Misses Drew and children, obtaining a very nice place where they could witness the parade. After my command had passed in review I joined my friends in the War Department and had a misunderstanding with Colonel Barr, who informed me that he was acting Secretary of War in the absence of Secretary Lincoln. He took possession of the room where my friends were and tried to prevent me from going in, but I soon let him understand I had authority to be there. The Grenadier Band serenaded General Hazen and then came around to my house and serenaded my family and friends.

March 9, 1885.

Called on the Secretary of Navy, Mr. Whitney, at 9 A. M., who made an appointment to look at Stewart's Castle this afternoon, which I offered to rent him for $13,000 a year.

March 16, 1885.

Took Secretary and Mrs. Manning to see the Weston house, which they seemed to like better than any they have examined. Secretary of War Endicott requested me to find a good house for him today.

March 19, 1885.

Senator Edmunds gave me his house to sell today at $30,000. Admiral Jewett gave me a card of introduction to Mr. W. H. Vanderbilt, who is visiting the city for a few days. Took Secretary Manning and his wife to the Weston house at 5 o'clock P. M., and on my return to the Arlington Senator Stanford's carriage smashed into mine; no one hurt.

March 17, 1885.

Informed Secretary Manning today that if he did not immediately decide on the Weston house I would rent it to someone else. He said he could not make up his mind what house to choose at present, so I rented it to Congressman Gay of Louisiana.

April 11, 1885.

Called on Gen. M. C. Clark last evening, who was very anxious to have Judge Swett purchase his house. I then called on Senator Payne of Ohio, who has just leased Justice Wood's house. Met Captain King at the Arlington last evening; also Judge Sunderland, who has a large real-estate interest in this city, and has placed a good deal of his property in my hands for sale.

April 15, 1885.

Sold John Magruder the Stewart house on Sixteenth street this afternoon for $7000 cash.

April 16, 1885.

Senator Windom gave me his house to sell today; also had quite a talk with Senator Don Cameron, who also gave me his house to sell for $100,000. I took Mr. D. P. Morgan and his wife through the Cameron house at 4 P. M.

April 18, 1885.

Called on Mrs. Blaine last evening in regard to her house, which she wishes to sell in case Mr. Leiter will give up his lease, which does not expire for three years. Telegraphed Mr. Morgan's offer of $80,000 to Senator Cameron. Took Vice-President Hendricks and his wife through Mr. Clark's house this afternoon.

April 21, 1885.

Took Mr. Morgan through the Cameron house again, and he raised his offer to $90,000 cash, without the furniture. Secretary Whitney decided that he would not pay over $7000 a year for the Stewart Castle and take a lease for four years, which I submitted to Senator Stewart.

April 22, 1885.

Mrs. Stewart appeared to be greatly vexed at the offer of $7000, but decided she would let it go for nothing less than $8000. The Secretary would not pay more than $7000, and failed to close the transaction.

April 27, 1885.

Called on Mr. Morgan today and informed him that Mr. Cameron declined the offer of $90,000. I advised him to split the difference, making it $95,000, when he said he would look at another house. I then took him and his wife through General Hazen's at 2 P. M.

May 1, 1885.

Judge Merrick gave me his house to sell for $100,000. He gave me a full description of it, and was very anxious I should show it to Mr. Morgan. Took General Black and his wife and little daughter through several houses today. Mr. Morgan offered me $60,000 for the Ray house, which was declined; also saw Mr. Pollock, who wanted me to sell his house for $120,000. I called with him to see Mr. Morgan, but the house did not appear to suit him as well as the Cameron house.

May 4, 1885.

Mr. Morgan went with me to see the Pollock house again. Took Governor Crawford to see the General Clark house.

The following is an extract from a letter of General Ingalls showing the confidence that he placed in me as one of his business and social friends:

New York, May 18, 1885.

Dear Major:

I will communicate with Mr. Holliday as soon as mail will allow. Were the property mine I should be glad to have the Secretary's family occupy the house, but Mr. H. is peculiar. When answer is received I will write you; meantime I would suggest you look elsewhere.

Yours, hastily,

(Signed) Rufus Ingalls.

May 12, 1885.

Rented General Black one of the Shedd houses on Rhode Island avenue. Mr. Morgan has closed the trade with Senator Cameron at $95,000 cash.

May 22, 1885.

Mr. Washington McLean called to see me today and told me that he wanted to purchase No. 4 Lafayette Square for his son John. Took Postmaster Dalton and Vice-President Hendricks driving this afternoon. Met Mr. John R. McLean today, who made an offer for the Jeffreys house. Received a letter from Hon. J. Kasson making an offer of $22,000 cash for the Alley house. Mr. Jeffreys declined Mr. McLean's offer.

May 27, 1885.

Spent last evening with General Ingalls, who has given me the Holliday property to sell. Saw Mr. McLean and General West, but failed to close the transaction.

May 29, 1885.

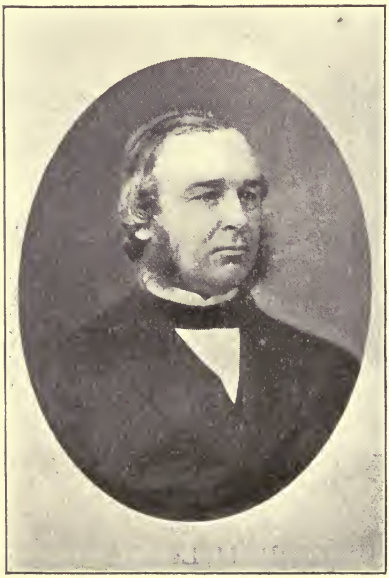
Senator Pugh made an offer for the Riggs lots. Senator Dolph of Oregon made me a written offer today for the Clark house. Took General Morey out to look at the Nineteenth street houses, for which he wishes to exchange some building lots.

June 1, 1885.

Went out with Senator Pitt Kellogg and Mr. Morey today, and have quite a large transaction on hand. Mr. Hunt of Louisiana made me an offer of $28,000 cash for the Clark house, which Mr. Clark declined.

June 11, 1885.

Capt. Edward Dougherty, who made himself so famous in the capture of Booth, took a drive with me yesterday. Closed the transaction with Mr. McLean and General West.



DR. LORING.

June 12, 1885.

Dr. Loring and Dr. Radcliff came together in regard to the exchange of the K and F street houses, involving between $70,000 and $80,000.

Monday, June 15, 1885.

Mr. Blankman called at my office today and offered $50,000 cash for the Frisby square.

June 16, 1885.

Called on the Mexican minister after breakfast and went out looking at several houses with him. He was very much pleased with the Lindsey house, corner Thirteenth and K streets, making an offer for it.

June 28, 1885.

I took the Secretary of the Navy, Mr. Whitney, driving on the Rock Creek road this afternoon to look at property. He greatly enjoyed the drive, and is anxious to lease a house in the suburbs.

June 29, 1885.

Mr. Blankman paid me seventy-five dollars to bind the bargain for the Sixteenth and T streets lots.

July 1, 1885.

Took Secretary Whitney through ex-Secretary Robeson's house today.

July 2, 1885.

Wrote a long letter to Secretary Robeson in regard to exchanging his house with Mr. Washington McLean for property at Newport News. Made quite a large transaction today with Mr. Blankman and Samuel Maddox.

Hygeia Hotel, Old Point Comfort, Va.

Mr. McLean has a large interest at Newport News, and I am investigating and examining his property.

July 10, 1885.

Called on Secretary Whitney today and closed the transaction for Mr. Means' place. Judge Dean authorized me to sell his property on the hill for $100,000.

July 11, 1885.

Mr. Means finally accepted the offer of Mr. Whitney of $30,000 cash for one hundred acres. Secretary Whitney paid me $500 down to bind the bargain, and I gave him a receipt on account until the title is examined.

On the Train to Cape May, July 25, 1885.

Before leaving Washington I called on Secretary Whitney with abstract of title and deed, accompanied by Mr. Barnard (now Judge Barnard), Mr. Means' lawyer. Mr. Whitney counted out $29,500 in cash, handing it over with the deed, which he requested me to have recorded. After packing up and settling matters I took the excursion train at 10 o'clock this P. M.

New York City, July 25, 1885.

Had quite a long talk today with Mr. C. P. Huntingdon and Col. William Brown. The latter is very anxious for me to sell his Ogle Tayloe property in Washington. Called on Mr. Weston, also quite a number of friends in Brooklyn.

Burlington, Vt., August 21, 1885.

I have had a very pleasant visit with a number of my friends and relatives in Massachusetts and New York. I am now the guest of Governor Woodbury and family, who are entertaining us by driving through the country, showing us everything to be seen around Burlington. The Governor drove us to Dr. Webb's place, Mr. Vanderbilt's son-in-law, who has one of the most attractive country seats in the United States.

JOHN VAN DYKE.

Saratoga Springs,
August 22, 1885.

Governor Woodbury had quite a party at his house last evening. We had music and dancing. Cecily took quite an active part by singing and playing several pieces, and she greatly distinguished herself.

Stamford, N. Y.,
August 26, 1885.

After seeing everything possible at Saratoga, we came over the Adirondack Mountains, and are now stopping with our cousins, the Vandykes, who have taken us driving since our arrival over the mountains, showing us the grand sights to be seen.

September 22, 1885.

Spent last evening with Judge Carter, who has authorized me to sell his house for $30,000.

October 29, 1885.

Mr. Levi P. Morton has authorized me to try and purchase the whole block on H street between Vermont avenue, Fifteenth and

MRS. VAN DYKE.

I streets, and I have submitted an offer to Judge Carter today for his house. The prospects are very favorable of my carrying this large transaction through. I have secured an option on every lot in the block and submitted the prices to Mr. Morton, who does not offer what is asked. Under the circumstances there will be delay before we can secure the property.

November 4, 1885.

Took Mr. and Mrs. McCrarey and Mrs. Justice Field through the McPherson house today. The Senator wants $80,000 for it, and before leaving Mr. McCrarey offered him $70,000 cash.

November 9, 1885.

Senator McPherson, with Mr. and Mrs. McCarey, went through the house again. He advanced his offer to $75,000 cash, but the Senator declined and went back to New Jersey.

November 12, 1885.

Mr. McCrarey made his final offer of $76,000, which I telegraphed Senator McPherson, but he declined. I then took Mr. McCrarey to see Colonel Ingersoll's house on K street, which I offered for $50,000, with horses and carriages. He was very much pleased with the house, and not needing horses and carriages, made an offer of $45,000 cash, which I telegraphed to Colonel Ingersoll, and he accepted.

Washington, D. C., November 25, 1885.

Gen. M. A. Reno:

Dear Sir—Having been informed that you were a member of the court which tried Captain Lauffer some years ago in New

Mexico, I desire to know whether Maj. Lewis Merrill was the Judge-Advocate, and the particulars as to how he conducted the case and any facts as to his character and reputation as an officer and gentleman.

Yours truly,
(Signed) GEO. A. ARMES.

Washington, D. C., November 25, 1885.

Maj. G. A. Armes:

Dear Sir—I was a member of the court-martial in Santa Fe, N. M., and of which Maj. Lewis Merrill, Seventh Cavalry, was Judge-Advocate, and which tried Captain Lauffer, A. Q. M., on charges preferred at the headquarters, Department of Missouri. During the session of the court I called its attention to the fact that the prosecution was not being prosecuted with energy, and that documentary evidence in the case was suppressed by Major Merrill, Judge-Advocate. Being unable at the time to substantiate my charges, no action was taken by the court. I afterwards, and when too late for action, was informed that Captain Lauffer had paid to Merrill several hundred dollars to secure his acquittal. This I could have proven by documentary and parole evidence. Major Merrill was never a gentleman, and is a notorious coward and shirk.

Hoping that my letter conveys to you the desired information, I am, etc.,

(Signed) M. A. RENO,
Late Maj. Seventh Cav.

November 24, 1885.

Mr. Morton came over last evening with Justice Carter and closed the transaction for his house for $25,000, allowing him a free rental of it for one year before taking possession.

December 23, 1885.

Met General Strong last evening, who went over my long list of property. Mr. Moses gave me 28,000 feet of ground to sell today at $30,000.

December 29, 1885.

Had quite an interview with Dr. Vanreypin (now Surgeon-General of the Navy) last evening about a lot next door to him. Mr. Post of Wyoming Territory wishes to purchase. Congressman Post is a very popular gentleman, and owns one of the largest ranches and stock farms in Wyoming.

CHAPTER XXIV.

January 1, 1886.

I reported at the War Department and marched with the rest of the Army officers in full-dress uniform to the President's house, General Sheridan leading. We remained in the East Room after shaking hands with the President, meeting many friends whom I had not seen for over twenty years.

Had a very pleasant interview with President Cleveland this afternoon.

January 8, 1886.

Mr. William Walter Phelps authorized me today to sell his square near Dupont Circle for $125,000. Called on Attorney-General Garland and Colonel Lamont in relation to Major Merrill.

January 23, 1886.

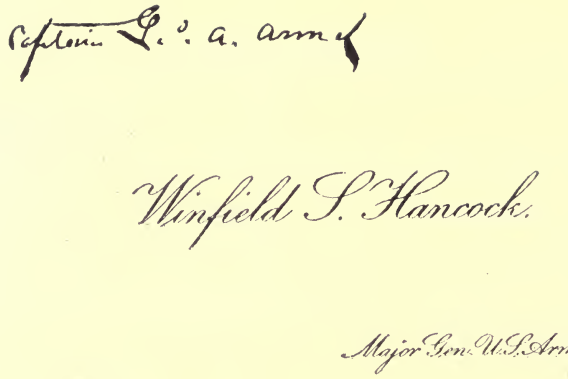
Closed the sale of Sixteenth and L streets lot to Gen. Henry Strong. He will remain in Washington and build, instead of going to Florida this winter.

January 25, 1886.

Met General Strong at 9 o'clock A. M. at Mr. Warder's office, who ordered the deed made out for L street lot.

February 9, 1886.

Met Colonel Carpenter at the Ebbitt last evening, whom I had not seen for fifteen years. He pretended to be a very true friend, and seemed glad to see me. General Hancock died at 2.50 this P. M. His death was quite a sudden shock to me. I had parted from him at Wormley's Hotel a few evenings since. I shall not forget the circumstances of his coming into the hotel with the blood running down his neck. I pulled his silk handkerchief out of his coat pocket and tied it around his neck to keep the blood from running down his shirt, when he remarked, "Oh, Mr. Armes, that is nothing; it is just a little lancing of a carbuncle." While walking with him to the carriage to bid him good-bye I suggested that he be very careful and not catch cold, when some gentleman friend who was with him remarked that the General was too old a soldier to pay any attention to a little scratch of that kind. It turned out very seriously, as he caught cold, from which he died.



GENERAL HANCOCK'S CARD.

The following is from my friend, the celebrated and famous engineer, Capt. L. T. Eads:

Washington, D. C., February 10, 1886.

A. E. Touzalin, Esq.,
President C., B. & N. Ry.:

Dear Sir—This will introduce to you Maj. Geo. A. Armes of this city, who wishes to see you in reference to introducing an improved stock car on your road.

Yours truly,
(Signed) L. T. EADS.

(From *Washington Star*, February 16, 1886.)

NOMINATIONS WITHDRAWN.

The Army Promotions Owing to the Retirement of Colonel Hatch.

The following Army nominations, made on the 8th inst., have been withdrawn by the President: Lieut.-Col. Nelson B. Sweitzer to be Colonel; Maj. Lewis Merrill to be Lieutenant-Colonel; Capt. Edward J. Spaulding to be Major; First Lieut. Colon Auhur to be Captain, and Second Lieut. Alonzo L. O'Brien to be First Lieutenant. The action of the President in withdrawing the nominations of Army officers for promotion, owing to the retirement of Colonel Hatch, Eighth Cavalry, practically settles a very important question in military promotions. The President in effect maintains that an officer who has been found incapacitated for active service, though not yet retired, is not competent to fill a higher position than the one for which the question hinged, which was that of Major Lewis Merrill of the Seventh Cavalry, to be Lieutenant-Colonel of the Eighth Cavalry, to succeed Lieut.-Col.

N. B. Sweitzer, the immediate successor of Colonel Hatch. Had Major Merrill been promoted he would soon have been retired, with the increased rank and pay of a Lieutenant-Colonel. As the case now stands, he will be retired as a Major, and the next Major below him, Maj. John K. Mizner, Fourth Cavalry, will receive the promotion.

The following is a portion of the correspondence in relation to purchasing a house for Mrs. General Hancock. Having been a member of Major-General Hancock's staff, I drew up a petition and called on Mr. W. W. Corcoran, one of the leading citizens, requesting a subscription in order to purchase a house in this city, knowing that he was a great friend of the General's. He stated that he had just sent $2000 to New York in order to purchase a house wherever the committee might select, but if I could induce Mrs. Hancock to make this her home he would head the list with $3000, and that I would be able to have the other $2000 he had subscribed already added to it. Hereupon he immediately signed the petition and put down the amount of his subscription as $3000. I then called on Mr. B. H. Warder, a substantial citizen, who subscribed $5000. Mr. H. G. Dulaney of Virginia, a very liberal and generous young gentleman, subscribed $2500, and Senator Fair $3000. Within ten days after starting the list I had $45,700 subscribed.

30 East Sixty-third St., New York City, March 12, 1886.

Mr. G. A. Armes,
Washington, D. C.:

Dear Sir—I have yours of yesterday. I do not know that I can add anything to what I stated in my last letter concerning Mrs. Hancock's future. It is a matter in which I have no authority to speak, and, in fact, no information to speak from.

I know of no way in which the contribution made by Mr. Corcoran could be withdrawn from the fund of which it has become a part and which is in the custody of the treasurer.

Referring you to my last letter for points not touched in this,

I am, yours truly,

(Signed) James B. Fry.

March 2, 1886.

Had a large meeting of the Shellabarger Stock Car Co. last evening at my office.

March 5, 1886.

Closed a sale with Mr. Roesselle of the Arlington for Sixteenth street lot for $7150.

March 18, 1886.

Called on Father Dulan last evening, who agreed to give me a commission provided I could sell his villa on the Tennallytown road, which is offered for $25,000. Met Senator Sabin at the Holiday House at 10 o'clock this A. M. Senator Bowen introduced a bill for me today in regard to my cattle car.

March 19, 1886.

Senator McPherson authorized me to put his name down for $5000 to Hancock fund; also Mr. Galt for $500 and Senator Sabin for $1000. I lunched with the latter today.

March 30, 1886.

Called last evening on General Cutchen, Stilson Hutchins, Senator Fair and Judge Swett, who subscribed $1000 each. General Davies subscribed another $1000 for Mrs. Hancock's house, and Mr. French of New York $500. He talks some of purchasing a residence here.

March 31, 1886.

Colonel Bugher, Hon. Washington McLean's son-in-law, came to my office today to explain his reasons for not wishing to purchase property or have anything further to do with Mr. B. H. Warner, requesting me to show him a house he could purchase for from $20,000 to $30,000. I spent most of the afternoon showing him property.

April 4, 1886.

Called on Dr. and Mrs. Bispham and Senator McPherson last evening; also Judge and Mrs. Fields. He called at my office today in regard to Senator Jackson's house. Had a long talk with Mr. Patton in regard to real estate this afternoon.

April 15, 1886.

Secretary Sherman made me an offer of $20,000 cash for Judge Jackson's house, which was declined. I finally got Senator McPherson to add another thousand and closed the sale.

May 1, 1886.

Sold four houses on Fifteenth street to Mr. Mills for $8000 cash. I saw General Logan, who offered me twelve and one-half cents for the building lots of Mr. Taylor on Meridian Hill. Mr. Taylor declined to take less than thirteen cents, and General Logan would not pay that, so the sale fell through.

May 8, 1886.

Attended the funeral of General Paul at 11.30. He was buried at Arlington; also attended the funeral of Lieutenant Hunt, the son of General Hunt of artillery fame, who was buried at Soldiers' Home at 5 o'clock P. M.

May 9, 1886.

Last evening called on Senator Sabin and Congressman Gay. The latter went out with me today at 11 o'clock, and we went by the Chittenden place on Pierce Mill road and Mr. Green's place, which he wanted $25,000 for. Mr. Gay told me to make an offer of $15,000 cash.

May 10, 1886.

After breakfast this A. M. I called on Mr. Green, making him the offer of $15,000 cash for Mr. Gay, which he declined. I then called on Mr. Lamont, President Cleveland's private secretary, giving him a description of the property, stating that the owner was anxious to sell, and recommended that he take the President to look at it.

May 13, 1886.

Mr. George Green came into my office today to see if I would give up my option on his property. I declined on the ground that I expected to make a sale of it within a short time, as I had mentioned it to several, among them Mr. Lamont, for President Cleveland.

May 14, 1886.

After spending a short time with Stilson Hutchins about the Hancock house matter, I met Mr. Samuel Maddox at the Ebbitt on business. During the day Mr. Green called at my office and offered $100 cash if I would give up my option on his place. Not wishing to deprive him of his sale and not having had a bona fide offer, I accepted the $100 on condition that if any one of twelve names became the owner of it within the next thirty days I was to have my full commission, which he agreed to in the presence of witnesses and in writing.

May 17, 1886.

Mrs. Bayliss gave me her I street house to sell at $23,000. Took Col. A. H. Bugher through it this afternoon, and he decided to take it at her price, paying me $200 down to bind the bargain.

May 18, 1886.

Yesterday afternoon, after calling on Stilson Hutchins, I drove out to see Oak View, George Green's place. I also went to see Mr. Nourse, who gave me fifteen acres of his land to sell at $9000.

May 19, 1886.

Having been informed today that the President had purchased Mr. Green's place through A. A. Wilson, I called on Mr. Green for a statement, but could get no satisfaction from him.

May 20, 1886.

Last evening met General Wagner of Texas, and was with him until after 12 o'clock. Called on Mr. Henly today and told him how Mr. Wilson was trying to get a commission out of Mr. Green for the selling of his land to Mr. Cleveland. Mr. Nourse called today to withdraw the option on the property he had given me to sell, and I declined, as there appears to be some underhanded work going on with Mr. Wilson and one or two others of his ring. The commission is still due me.

May 21, 1886.

Mr. Ellison called at my office this A. M., offering to sell me his twelve acres for $20,000. I offered him $10,000, which he declined, but said he would be back in the afternoon. Upon his second call he agreed to split the difference, and I finally closed the transaction for $15,000.

May 22, 1886.

After dinner last evening I took Mr. Chambers of the *New York Herald* on a drive out to the Green place, containing twenty-eight acres, which I have sold to the President for $21,500; also over to the place on the Grant road, which I have just bought from Mr. Ellison.

May 23, 1886.

Spent last evening with Gen. Philip St. George Cook, my old Department Commander, at the Ebbitt House.

May 26, 1886.

General Berdan called on me today in regard to a house; also Mr. Ellison, who came with all the papers and deed for Fairfield, which I received today, exchanging in part payment a lot in squares 1712 and 1114, making Fairfield stand me just $15,000 in cash.

GEN. BERDAN.

May 28, 1886.

Colonel Bugher called at my office today, and we went to see Messrs. Wagner and Ashford, where the deed was passed, Bugher giving his check for $23,000 cash. Mrs. Bailey paid me $690 as commission.

Fairfield, May 29, 1886.

Mr. Noble went with me to hear Senator Vance of North Carolina address our Virginia Democratic Association last evening.

July 4, 1886.

After breakfast I invited Col. A. B. Mullet, Mr. Evans and Colonel Moore to drive out to Col. S. T. Suit's place. He entertained us in fine style, dining and wining us until late in the evening.

July 6, 1886.

Sold Mason place for $36,000 to Senator Sabin.

Cumberland, Md., July 26, 1886.

Left Washington at 10.15 last evening on my way to Chicago. Our train was so heavily loaded with pasengers that it required three engines to pull us up the hill. Dined at the Grand Pacific Hotel, Chicago, at 4 o'clock P. M. Met Mr. Eastman and took Captain Grant, with eight others, from the depot in two carriages. We had a great reception this evening. There are 125 in our party, who clubbed together and chartered a train for thirty-five

days, proposing to see everything we can as we go through the country.

On the Train near Fremont, Neb., July 28, 1886.

We left the Pacific Hotel at 9 o'clock last night, a band of music marching with us from the hotel to the train, which left at 11 P. M. We have been riding through a beautiful part of Iowa most of the day.

On the Train near Sherman, Wyo. Ter., July 28, 1886.

The train averaged twenty-five miles an hour last night, and we slept well. Only found one man at Denver Junction I knew—H. Egerton from Julesburg. He was my teamster twenty years ago. Arrived at Cheyenne at 12 o'clock. Met Mr. Massey of Washington, who is located there now. Invited to lunch by Mrs. Congressman Post and her niece, Miss Parker. They entertained us handsomely. Colonel Wilson took me all over the city. Met Colonels Morrows and Chambers, Twenty-first and Seventeenth Infantry.

Salt Lake City, Utah, July 29, 1886.

Train stopped at Laramie and Sherman a short time, giving us a chance to see a good deal of the country. As we have our cameras, we are taking pictures of everything of interest. At Ogden I met Captain Hall, Seventh Infantry, and Captain Ingalls, Assistant Quartermaster and nephew of General Ingalls. We have sixteen cars on our train, and among our party are Generals Sherman, Black, Sweitzer, Colonels Lemon, Grosvenor, General Burdette, Colonel Urell.

Ogden, Utah, on Train, July 30, 1886.

We arrived here at 9 o'clock this P. M. After our arrival we attended the speeches made by General Burdett and others of our party at the Pavilion after breakfast this A. M. Took the Salt Lake train and rode thirty-odd miles from the city, where I enjoyed one of the best baths I ever had. We all had a good deal of fun out in the water, as it was impossible to sink.

San Francisco, Cal., August 1, 1886.

Upon reaching Sacramento a large delegation from San Francisco met us and filled our cars with wine and fruit, welcoming us to their great city, and everyone was wild with delight upon our arrival.

Frisco, August 2, 1886.

While registering at the Palace Hotel last evening Mr. Callahan, president of the First National Bank, insisted upon my being his guest. Upon arrival at his house I met his wife and daughters, who had prepared an elegant dinner, after which I was shown a fine parlor and bedroom and bathroom on the second floor. After being highly entertained, retired at 12 o'clock.

After breakfast this A. M. Dan McCarty came to the house with a $10,000 team and drove me to the Park racetrack, showing me his stable of trotters. At the meeting today Gen. Martin McMahon was elected president of the Army of the Potomac Association and Gen. H. C. King, secretary.

Frisco, August 3, 1886.

Met a number of friends at the Occidental, where Mr. Davis and I visited with Miss Callahan and Mrs. Terrell, taking them to meet Generals Sherman, Black, Sweitzer and King. Mr. Callahan introduced us to Mervin Donhue, one of the leading entertainers of this city, who invited Generals Sherman, Black and about fifty of us to go with him on an excursion to Redwood, he furnishing a glee club of 100 men.

August 4, 1886.

After dinner last evening at Mr. Callahan's we attended the Army of the Potomac banquet. Generals Sherman, McMahon, King, Fairchild, Beaver, Burdett, Pike, Governor Stoneman and several others made speeches, and it was after 2 o'clock this A. M. before we broke up. After breakfast I dressed in full uniform and rode as an aid to Gen. S. S. Burdett on one of the elegant horses Mr. McCarty had loaned to me for the occasion. I was by the side of General Burdett, and viewed the parade as it passed. It was a grand sight and one of the largest assemblages that has ever taken place in this city.

Geiser Springs, Cal.

Last evening Mr. Davis and I took Miss Terrell and Miss Callahan to the Pavilion to hear the speech of General Logan, after which the dancing took place, which was greatly enjoyed by all. This morning we took the four-horse stage, and both of us rode on top, where we got an elegant view of the mountains and the cañons one hundred feet below the road, which runs along on the

edge, where it is impossible for more than one vehicle to pass at a time. Very few accidents occur, although it appears very dangerous to drive so close to the deep cañons.

Frisco, August 6, 1886.

Took hot water and steam baths from the Geysers last night, and this morning made a general inspection of the mountains and springs bubbling up with boiling hot water. We reached Cloverdale between 12 and 1 o'clock and took the 2 o'clock train, arriving at 5 P. M. and dining at the Occidental with Mr. Davis. We went through Chinatown, purchasing a number of Chinese curiosities for the children.

Frisco, August 7, 1886.

Upon my arrival at Mr. Callahan's last evening I found a number of blank invitations from Governor Stoneman requesting us to be his guests on the steamer. We met the Governor and his party at the Occidental, and went in the cars to the steamer. Mrs. Stoneman appeared to be very indignant because the Governor did not have a band of music at the hotel and carriages for us to ride in instead of going on the cars. We had a band of music on the boat, which was loaded with fruit, all kinds of wine and everything the market afforded. On our way to Mare Island, passing the forts, the Governor's salute was fired. Mrs. Captain Nichol and Colonel and Mrs. Savage were also attractive hosts and helped entertain. Commodore Belknap received us at the wharf with all the marines in full dress, which he had stand and present arms as we passed to the sailors' loft, which had been cleared and prepared for dancing. After two or three hours of enjoyment, the grand spread was placed at our disposal by the Commodore. On our return Mrs. Stoneman spoke to me regarding the Governor's future, when I suggested that he come on to Washington, and I would see if we couldn't get a bill passed placing him on the retired list as a Brigadier or Major-General. She seemed to be delighted at such a proposition.

Frisco, August 8, 1886.

It was after 10 o'clock last evening before we returned here. This morning Mr. Davis and I called on Colonel and Mrs. Savage and Mrs. Nichol at the Palace Hotel, with General and Mrs.

Black and Colonel Irish. We also met General Chipman and Mr. Scott of the iron works, one of the prominent business men of this city. During the afternoon the city furnished us carriages and took us to the Sutro Gardens and entertained us with an elegant dinner at the Cliff House. Here we could witness hundreds of seals basking in the sun on the rocks.

Portland, Ore.

Our steamer had many more guests than the law allowed. Generals Sherman and Sweitzer entertained us most of the way. We stopped at Astoria a short time to see the large salmon-canning factories. The Columbia river reminds one of the Hudson. The beautiful scenery and green mountains all the way from Astoria to Portland are a grand sight.

On the Train near Fossil Station, Nevada, August 14, 1886.

While in Portland I was entertained by Senator Dolph's brother, General Williams and Mr. Holladay, who showed me every place of interest in the city. General Sherman threw off all his dignity as the General of the Army and enjoyed everything as well as the rest of us.

Denver, Col., August 15, 1886.

Stopped at Cheyenne a few minutes, where we met Mrs. Post and Miss Parker, who drove us around the city and gave us a quick lunch of champagne and sponge cake.

August 16, 1886.

On our arrival in Denver we were met by General Miles, Major Downing and his wife, Governor Gilpin, Mr. Johnson, Governor Grant and quite a number of Denver's distinguished citizens. Today Governor Grant presented me with some melted silver in the rough as it came out of the furnace at his smelting works. Called on my old friend, Col. Ward H. Lamon, who has been sick for several weeks at his hotel.

Colorado Springs, near Pike's Peak, Colorado,
August 17, 1886.

Mr. Goldsborough and I spent most of last evening at Governor Gilpin's, where his daughters entertained us with music. We left on the 7.45 A. M. train for Pike's Peak.

Denver, August 18, 1886.

After going through the Garden of the Gods yesterday, we drove through President Palmer's private grounds and landed at the Springs at 5 o'clock, reaching this city at 11 o'clock.

Kansas City, August 20, 1886.

We left Generals McMahon and King in Colorado Springs. Before leaving Denver Mr. Guy Thompson of Washington entertained me with a pleasant drive around the principal portion of the city. Passed through old Fort Wallace at 3 o'clock this A. M., and was surprised to see the hundreds of trees growing where there was nothing but a barren plain when I was last here, seventeen years ago. It was interesting to see this country again where I used to scout after Indians. It is now settled up with houses, and large crops are growing. I came through Forts Hayes, Ellsworth, Harker and Riley. Met many familiar faces at Junction City, Topeka and Leavenworth.

St. Louis, Mo., August 21, 1886.

We arrived here at 10 o'clock this A. M. Met Major Candee and Colonel Ellis of the Thirteenth Infantry. A large party of us were invited to inspect the Anheuser Brewery, one of the most popular in the world, and after a drive through Shaw's Garden and the principal places of interest we boarded the train for Cincinnati.

Washington, D. C., Monday, August 23, 1886.

After being entertained and seeing everything of interest in Cincinnati, we left at 9 o'clock last evening. Stopped at Martinsburg a few minutes, where I met several friends. Arriving home this evening, I found my family all well. This was one of the most delightful excursions of my life, and it is remarkable that no sickness or accident occurrred during the whole journey.

October 5, 1886.

Mr. Gilliland, John R. McLean's secretary and operator, called at my office with Congressman Beriah Wilkins of Ohio, and we went out to look at houses. He made me an offer for the corner of M and Fifteenth streets, giving me $500 to bind the bargain, but the old woman who owns the property has requested me to wait until she consults with her son before signing the deed.

November 5, 1886.

Secretary Whitney sent for me to know what price ought to be placed on twenty-five acres of his land on the Loughborough and Tennallytown Road. When I said $1500 per acre he was surprised, thinking it was too much to ask for it, as he had only paid $300, and said that a gentleman had asked him to fix a price and would return soon.

December 11, 1886.

Had quite an interview with Mr. Beriah Wilkins today, who is disappointed in Governor Campbell's not purchasing property with him. He now counts on Senator Walthal going in with him.

December 16, 1886.

Spent last evening with Congressman Tim Tarsney. Mr. Tarsney is one of the most entertaining gentlemen that has ever come to Congress.

December 20, 1886.

Colonel Burgess of Oxford, Md., called upon me today with a letter from Governor Lloyd requesting me to take the professorship of the military school, offering me $10,000 a year; but I declined to give up my real-estate business.

Oxford, Md., December 22, 1886.

Colonel Burgess induced me to make a visit here in order that I could look over his institution, making it appear to me that I could carry on my real-estate transactions and run the institution in addition. Procuring passes, he invited me as his guest, and I arrived here this A. M., meeting Colonel Tillman and Mr. Martin. I finally agreed to purchase the property and buy out the whole institution. Colonel Tillman invited me to dine with him at Easton. He is one of the trustees of the school and a cousin of my wife's, and I naturally placed a great deal of confidence in him.

Washington, D. C., December 26, 1886.

I invited Colonel Burgess to make me a visit, and he is now my guest. I have ordered papers made out and am investigating the title of his property.

December 29, 1886.

Took Mr. B. H. Warder out to see the Bradley farm this afternoon. We were caught in quite a heavy storm. Called at the War Department and requested a detail of Lieutenants Evans and Allen, who desire to be professors at my academy.

The following reply from Professor Burgess, who had charge of the military academy during my absence, appears to require no further explanation:

Maryland Military and Naval Department,
Executive Department,
Oxford, Md., December 27, 1886.

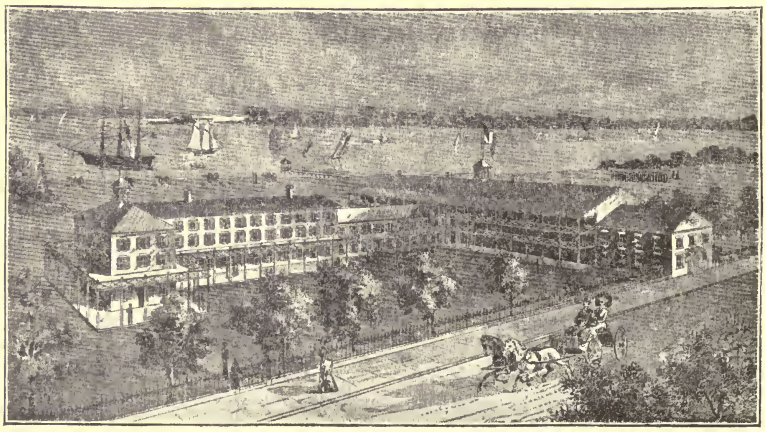
My Dear Major:

Yours received. I will endeavor to carry out your instructions, and you may expect me in Washington Wednesday or Thursday.

Yours truly,
(Signed) B. J. Burgess.
December 31, 1886.

Mr. Bradley is very anxious for me to dispose of his large farm, and has authorized me to sell it for $30,000. I talked for nearly two hours with Mr. Warder, trying to induce him to take it, but he is still hesitating.

During the summer I fixed up a windmill with pipes extending to the garden and stables, fenced in about an acre for chickens, and made an addition to my house, making it a very attractive and pleasant place. I have also set out a number of fruit and shade trees. Have had no reason to complain of my business transactions during the year, which net me a profit of over $25,000. It is a great undertaking to handle the Oxford Academy, but if not opposed by the War Department in selecting my officers or assistant professors I will make a success of it. The following is a view of the academy:



Oxford Military Academy.

CHAPTER XXV.

Fairfield, D. C., January 1, 1887.

A very cold blizzard came up last evening. At 10 o'clock this A. M. Colonel Burgess met me at the War Department, where all the officers of the Army and Navy and Marine Corps in full dress formed in line and marched to the White House.

Baltimore, Md., January 4, 1887.

Professor Burgess was very much disappointed in not having his uniform to wear New Year's Day, as it did not arrive from Oxford until we were through calling. I fixed up our agreements, and Dr. Culver, an attorney-at-law and friend of mine, has taken charge of my office to look after real-estate interests in Washington. I left at 4 o'clock this P. M., after calling on General Drum and Colonel Sheridan about a detail of officers for my academy. Arriving here I found the river frozen so the boats could not run to Oxford.

Oxford, Md., January 6, 1887.

Left Baltimore yesterday afternoon by train, arriving here at 1 o'clock P. M., and was met by Colonel Tillman, Mr. Martin and two appraisers, who fixed the value of all the property. I then met all the teachers and assigned each one to a special branch and made a general inspection of the academy and all the cadets. Found many of the rooms in a neglected state, and find it will be necessary to immediately enforce strict military discipline. Accepted Professor Burgess' resignation today, but he will remain to assist me for a time.

(Copy of circular sent patrons.)

Maryland Military and Naval Academy,
Oxford, Md., January 6, 1887.

Dear Sir—Having become proprietor and general superintendent of this Academy, I this day assume charge of same. Parents, guardians or patrons of this Institution are hereby cautioned and notified not to pay any moneys or honor any drafts by whomsoever drawn unless countersigned by myself, and no person has authority to make contracts or promises or engagements of any nature whatsoever by or for the Institution unless endorsed by me.

Very respectfully,
(Signed) GEO. A. ARMES,
Col. and Supt.

After I had purchased the Oxford Academy and taken possession as superintendent, Colonel Burgess, the former superintendent, tendered his resignation.

The following is from Prof. B. J. Burgess in relation to the cadets:

Oxford, Md., January 8, 1887.

Dear Sir—I write to say that there are now 150 cadets at the Academy, and they are coming on every train, and this will be the case until February 1. I feel sure that the number will reach 200 by the time named. Fifteen on the train last night and thirteen on the noon train today.

Yours very truly,

(Signed) B. J. BURGESS.

P. S.—Get a West Pointer by all means; very important.

Oxford, Md., January 10, 1887.

Left Washington yesterday afternoon and arrived here at 10 o'clock this A. M. Had quite a talk with Congressman Anderson before leaving in regard to his boy. Met Mr. Nixon and Mr. Martin, with whom I am interested in carrying on this establishment.

Oxford, Md., January 1, 1887.

This morning brought me a very interesting letter from my little daughter Cecilia, who is twelve years of age, which reads as follows:

My Dear Papa:

I received your letter and was very glad to hear from you. Mamma has another little baby, born at half-past nine this morning. It is a little girl, and looks like Oscar. All of us were so surprised to see it.

* * * * * * * * * * *

Hope you will be here soon. All of us send a thousand kisses to you and wish you were here.

From your affectionate daughter,

(Signed) CECILIA HAROLD.

For commission received I sent acknowledgment as follows:

Maryland Military and Naval Academy,
Executive Department,
Oxford, Md., January 19, 1887.

Col. J. Howard, Adjutant-General,
Annapolis, Md.:

Sir—I have the honor to acknowledge this day the receipt of commission as Colonel and Superintendent of this Institution.

Convey my thanks to the Governor, and oblige,

Your most obedient servant,

(Signed) G. A. ARMES,
Supt.

After I had signed the contract to take charge of the Oxford Academy I was informed that Colonel Burgess was tricky. Upon requesting him to withdraw the contract he declined, sending me the following in reply:

Oxford, Md., January 28, 1887.

Dear Sir—Since I have given out to the patrons that you will be the Superintendent, and that there will be a change in the administration, I shall expect you to carry out the letter of agreement you signed, as it would damage me more than $5000 should you not hold to the contract.

I shall expect you Wednesday morning to assume full charge, and I hope you can arrange to pay me $2000 upon your arrival.

* * * * * * * * * * *

The outlook here is excellent, so you must come down with the determination to make this the academy of America.

Yours truly,

(Signed) B. J. BURGESS.

It was not long after I took full charge that I discovered the crooked transactions of Colonel Burgess to such an extent that the institution was on the eve of breaking up, as many of the cadets had been and were then deserting.

Fairfield, D. C., February 11, 1887.

After leaving the necessary instructions for Colonel Cantwell, my assistant superintendent, I left Oxford on the 10 o'clock P. M. boat. Reached Baltimore at 5 o'clock this A. M. Called around to the banks and was identified by Uncle Charlie Kerr. Met Dr. Culver at my office, who had a large accumulation of business matters on hand.

February 16, 1887.

Adjutant-General Drum pretends to be very friendly, and says he will secure me an officer instructor as soon as possible. It is very important that I make a change in several of my professors and secure one or two Army and Navy graduates.

The following extract is from Mr. H. S. Buck, president of the Stewartsville Bank:

Stewartsville, Mo., February 22, 1887.

Dear Sir—I received a letter from Frank yesterday, wherein he said you requested him to write me about the payments of his second term's tuition. This I paid December 20 to Colonel Burgess.

It is my aim to keep funds in your hands at all times to Frank's credit, to be used by you to pay any necessary bill made by him. I do not desire that he spend one dollar unnecessarily.

* * * * * * * * * * *

I am in hope, under your administration, it will all be right. Please write me.

I have the honor to be, dear sir,

* * * * * * * * * * *

Burgess had collected the two terms in addition to $500 Mr. Buck had sent him for his son and failed to make any account to me.

The following is a letter received from one of the patrons, who appreciated me enough to have his boy in my full control. Mr. Poppert is one of the leading and prosperous gentlemen of Milwaukee:

Milwaukee, March 3, 1887.

My Dear Sir—Received your telegram saying school continues; rumors about closing are false. Now, my boy, Oscar, has written to me school will be closed; send money to come home. Colonel Armes, I wish you would take the boy and give him a good lesson, and make him mind his own business. Please! Did you take him apart from that Orths boy? He is a very bad boy. Hope you will make a good scholar and soldier out of the boy.

I am, yours very respectfully,

GEO. POPPERT.

The following is from Browning, King & Co., with whom I have had large transactions:

New York, March 18, 1887.

Dear Sir—Your favor of 15th came duly to hand.

We regret to learn of the unfavorable outlook, and hope you are not too easily discouraged. We have perfect faith in your business integrity, so far as our interests are involved.

Yours truly,

(Signed) ROBERT J. BLACK.

The following are some letters from a few of my patrons, the contents of which show their confidence in me:

Memphis National Bank,

Memphis, Tenn., March 19, 1887.

Dear Sir—Yours, 16th, received and noted. I am very much surprised to learn true condition of your school, and can but sympathize with you. It has been but a month (February 21) since I remitted you the balance you advised me would be due on account my son's tuition for present term. I think you will give me credit for having met every demand promptly. I am and have been much pleased with your school, and it was my intention that my son should remain another year or more. If you will advise me of your intentions and prospects for the future, and how many cadets now that will remain, and if you can secure a sufficient number to justify you to keep open, I will advise you of my intentions. I am not only willing, but anxious for my son to remain, provided he will have your care and attention, and keep up his studies, drill, etc., and will gladly advance you the $20 mentioned. Please advise me if my son has ever received his uniform. I am afraid he is hardly decent for want of proper clothes. I paid for his uniform last fall, but have never been advised of his having received it. As soon as your reply is received, will promptly answer.

Hoping you may be successful in your endeavors to build up the Maryland Military and Naval Academy,

I am, yours truly,

(Signed) J. H. Smith.

Oxford, March 22, 1887.

During the past few weeks I have found it necessary to make arrangements to transfer all my cadets who desire to serve out their term to the St. John's Academy, Annapolis, Md. Professor Burgess having disappeared during my absence with several thousand dollars in cash and involving me in obligations of over $40,000, I employed two lawyers and put several detectives after him.

March 30, 1887.

I have about completed arrangements for all my cadets. Wrote Governor Lloyd a long letter today. Everything seems to be working satisfactorily.

Washington, D. C., April 12, 1887.

Mr. John R. McLean and I went around to look at G and Thirteenth street property. Mrs. Governor Merriam and Mrs. Hancock went through the Van Wyck house today and made me an offer of $30,000 and their Pennsylvania avenue house for it. Closed the sale of a lot with B. H. Warder for $15,000.

Washington, D. C., May 10, 1887.

I finally settled up all my Oxford affairs, arranging with the creditors to pay them monthly, and have sacrificed about $25,000 worth of real estate in order to get the cash to pay up all the back bills so that no one will be the loser but myself. Many cadets have complied with my circular and have gone to the St. John's College.

May 21, 1887.

Mr. A. Devine, son of Judge Devine of San Antonio, Texas, is my guest. He is interested in the grand drill in which the crack companies from the different cities of the country are competing for the prize. The Belknap Rifles of San Antonio appear to be ahead, and the White Lot and Monument Lot are covered with tents. Had a social time with Colonel Belknap at the Arlington this afternoon.

The following is from Governor Merriam of Minnesota in relation to real estate:

May 30, 1887.

Col. G. A. Armes,
Washington, D. C.:

Dear Sir—Please advise me, if you can, whether the Van Wyck property is still for sale, and if so, what figure you think is the very lowest one that would buy it.

An answer at your earliest convenience will much oblige

Yours truly,
(Signed) W. R. Merriam.

I received a letter from my agent, Major Gordon, San Antonio, who made me a profit of several thousand dollars on one real-estate transaction, enclosing the money.

Great Bend, Kansas, July 17, 1887.

My Dear Major:

Your welcome letter received. I think it would be a good idea to have the scene of your memorable battle commemorated in some manner. If I had plenty of time I would take the time and go up there and secure some of those skulls for you.

Yours truly,
(Signed) Henry Inman.

Among the many applications at my college I have one from Mr. Paul E. Beckwith, who is connected with the National Museum. I regretted not being able to secure his services in time to save my institution.

The following is from my old Captain of the Sixteenth Virginia Infantry, Boonville, Mo:

July 26, 1887.

Dear Sir—I arrived safely home on Friday.

* * * * * * * * * * *

I have been appointed one of the committee of Missourians to go to Washington to ask the President to St. Louis.

* * * * * * * * * * *

I had expected to hear from you ere this as to whether your Treasury man had taken the Maryland property.

Yours truly,

(Signed) A. W. Widdicomb.

September 8, 1887.

During the past few weeks I have been very busy in real-estate matters. Capt. Thomas Lay of the United States Revenue Cutter called on me in regard to real estate today. I invited Dr. Joseph R. Smith of the United States Army to my home as my guest, and then took him to Secretary Whitney's reception given to the foreign doctors. I also invited Dr. Austin of Boston. This entertainment is considered one of the grandest that has been given for years.

September 10, 1887.

After my return from a drive with Colonel Crowley he invited me to dine with him at the hotel with Doctor and Mrs. Wedgewood of London, and it was after 10 o'clock before we got up from the table. I then attended the Jefferson banquet. Sat down at 11 o'clock and did not break up until after 4 o'clock this A. M. I was introduced to forty or fifty of the guests, who gave me pressing invitations to visit their homes in Europe.

October 4, 1887.

I was up until 4 o'clock this A. M., and this afternoon invited Harry Smith and Captain Thomas to take a drive. Saw Mr. Washington McLean and his son John in regard to the Fifteenth street houses.

I received a letter from Col. William Dickson asking me to act as an assistant Grand Marshal at the reception given to Governor Sheppard on his first return from Mexico.

October 7, 1887.

Mr. John R. McLean authorized me to pay $30,000 cash for the Hoban house. We gave Governor Sheppard one of the grandest ovations last evening that was ever given to any citizen of this District. Pennsylvania avenue was ablaze with fireworks. I was assistant marshal; had military discipline, and everything went like clockwork.

October 22, 1887.

I finally got Messrs. Sands and Hoban to agree to take $60,000 for the two houses next to the Shoreham. Mr. McLean offered 55,000 cash, which they declined. Colonel Staples called on me today, requesting me to try and secure the McLean property for a hotel site.

October 26, 1887.

Had a long talk with Senator Robb, who authorized me to sell his property, corner Vermont avenue and H street, for $35,000. Mr. McLean offered me $57,000 cash for the Hoban and Sands house, which was declined. Wormley authorized me to sell his hotel property for $175,000.

October 28, 1887.

I suggested to Mr. McLean that he let Colonel Bugher go with me and try to close the deal with Sands and Hoban, to which he consented, and we closed the transaction at $58,000 cash. I ordered the abstract made by Ashford.

November 1, 1887.

Called on Dr. Eggleston, Captain and Miss Grey and Mrs. and Miss Frost last evening; also Baron Von Zedwitz, offering him $50,000 for the German minister's property on Fifteenth street.

November 5, 1887.

Stopped by Mr. Dodge's house last evening to see about his bay horse, which I bought for $250 for Colonel Bugher. Met Mr. John R. McLean this morning at 9.40, and he handed me a check for $750 for my services.

November 19, 1887.

Mr. McLean authorized me to sell Colonel Staples his I street and Vermont avenue front for $400,000 or lease it to him for ninety-nine years for $24,000 a year. I made Colonel Staples a plat, and it looks very much as if the sale will go through.

November 21, 1887.

Colonel Staples seemed very anxious to meet Mr. McLean and deal with him direct, thinking perhaps he could induce him to take less than $400,000. I brought them together at 11.30 this A. M., and Colonel Staples invited Mr. McLean to join him in a little champagne lunch, which John R. declined, requesting to know whether he proposed to take the property at $400,000. Colonel Staples hesitated and undertook to argue, when John R. reminded him that he was very busy and did not care about selling the property for less than $500,000 so long as he did not care to close the bargain with me at $400,000, and the deal fell through.

December 16, 1887.

Called on Mr. S. R. Bond at his office today and sold him Mr. Ralph Gwynn's ten acres, for which Mr. Gwynn paid me $181 commission.

December 22, 1887.

Called on President Cleveland and most of the Cabinet in regard to the riding club we are organizing.

December 31, 1887.

I have been very busy settling up all my bills in the past year, but in spite of my heavy losses in connection with the Oxford Academy, I have been very successful in many real-estate deals, and am not more than $30,000 behind.

Mr. John F. Waggaman, an enterprising citizen, interested Mr. J. D. Brown of New York in building a riding academy. I at once joined in with them and took an active part, helping to organize a club composed mostly of high officials and some of the best citizens of the District. After obtaining a large number of signatures, we gave concerts with music, and the building was crowded with invited guests, as it was one of the most select clubs ever organized in this city. We gave fox-hunts, and many ladies and gentlemen had an opportunity to learn to ride horseback who never would have enjoyed such a healthy treat had it not been for Mr. Waggaman.

WASHINGTON RIDING ACADEMY.

COR P AND 22D STS. WASHINGTON, D. C.

YEARLY SUBSCRIPTIONS, $100 EACH.

WASHINGTON, D. C. SEPTEMBER, 1887.

I take pleasure in informing the Lady and Gentlemen Equestrians of Washington that Certificates for those desiring to become Yearly Members of the Washington Riding Academy are now ready. Intending that the patronage of the Academy shall be select in every sense, the number of yearly subscriptions will necessarily be limited. I therefore solicit signatures to this List in order that I may fill up and transmit Certificates at an early date.

At the nominal cost of $100 Yearly Subscribers will be entitled not only to use Ring at all times, except on Private Club nights, but also to free admission to Hall, Reception Rooms, Tournaments and all Exhibitions of Equestrianism held during term of subscription.

The proprietor wishes to be distinctly understood as guaranteeing full satisfaction on opening of Academy to those who become Yearly Members or he will cheerfully refund the price of subscription on application.

No expense has been spared in fitting and furnishing the Washington Riding Academy with every requisite conducive to innocent enjoyment and healthy exercise, and the proprietor fully expects that his efforts will meet with a hearty approval from elite circles in Washington.

TEMPORARY OFFICE.
CARE OF J. F. WAGGAMAN.
1003 F STREET, N. W.

RESPECTFULLY J D BROWN, PROPRIETOR

NAMES	RESIDENCE
Grover Cleveland	Executive Mansion
W. C. Whitney	1731 I St
Wm C. Endicott	1313 16th St.
Charles S. Fairchild	1400 New Hampshire Avenue
T. F. Nickerson	1415 Massachusetts Ave
L. Q. C. Lamar	1315 N. St.
W B Webb	1800 F. St. n. w
J. E. Wheatley	No 1314. 30th st nw
William Tudlow	1812 N St
[illegible] Sale	325 C. Street n.w.
Frank B. Conger	Jefferson Club.
Smedley Darlington	1800 Mass. Ave.
Geo. A. Ames	Fairfield Tenlytown D. C.
Francis B. Stockbridge	1440 M Street
T. W. Wallmadge	1312 S. St. (NW)
John Lynch	1522 Conn Ave
Jno P Forrest	Arlington Hotel
Wm Walter Phelps	The Richmond
S. R. Hitt	1507 K Street
Perry Belmont	1701 Rhode Island avenue
Stephen Preston	1016 Vermont ave
D M Sabin	Not. Iowa Circle.

CHAPTER XXVI.

January 2, 1888.

Sat up quite late last evening making out checks and closing up my last year's accounts, and at 10 o'clock this A. M. reported at the War Department in full-dress uniform and marched to the President's mansion under the command of Generals Sheridan and Drum. The President and Mrs. Cleveland, Mrs. Whitney and the Fairchilds greeted me very pleasantly.

January 27, 1888.

After leaving Senator Stanford's last evening I called on Senators Evarts and McPherson, with whom I am interested in large business transactions.

February 9, 1888.

Attended Mr. and Mrs. Soule's reception last evening, which was one of the best and most elaborate I have attended for years. There must have been at least 500 persons present during the evening. Saw Judge Willoughby today, who agreed to see the President and Colonel Lamont in regard to the purchase of the Green property, which Mr. George Green failed to pay the commission on. Col. Daniel Lamont agreed to fix a day when he would make a statement to go before the court.

February 10, 1888.

Attended the President's reception last evening, after which I joined a party of friends at Chamberlin's. Among them were Mr. Orth of Indiana, Lieutenant Steadman, Col. Archie Bliss and some eight or ten others.

April 28, 1888.

Mr. Wormley declined the offer of $20,000 for his two places. Mrs. Chaplain Van Wyck offered $9500 cash for one of them.

April 30, 1888.

Senator C. J. Faulkner spent last evening at my house and I greatly enjoyed his visit. After returning home with him, I had some of his best old brand, and did not bid him good-night until after 12 o'clock.

May 1, 1888.

Not being able to get Mr. Wormley to accept $9500 for his ten acres, I finally induced Mrs. Van Wyck to advance $500 more, and we closed the transaction for $10,000 cash.

St. Louis, Mo., June 3, 1888.

Having arranged to go to the National Convention, am now here. We all got up at sunrise at the Grand Hotel, Indianapolis, Ind., where we had a good breakfast. Called on Mrs. Vice-President Hendricks, who lives in a good, substantial, old-fashioned red-brick square house on a corner only four blocks from the hotel. We were met by a delegation from Virginia and marched up to the Southern Hotel, which was crowded.

Olive Street, June 6, 1888.

After I had registered at the Planter's yesterday, A. W. Gifford, an old friend of mine while in Texas, invited me to his house as his guest. I introduced Mr. Gifford to Senator Hearst today, who looked at his specimens and made him an offer for his Mexican silver mine. I also met Lieutenant Squire at the Southern Hotel. As a large number of tickets were presented to me by Mr. Wm. L. Scott, who had always been my staunch friend, I gave several to Mr. Gifford to attend the convention with his friends. There was great excitement at the nomination of Mr. Cleveland today. The whole house grew wild and shouted themselves hoarse. As soon as Chairman Collins could be heard the convention adjourned until 10 this P. M.

June 7, 1888.

It was after 4 o'clock this A. M. before I reached my room, as the boys and bands of music seemed to be marching all night. Col. William Dickson, Mr. Matson, Colonel Hart of New York, Lawrence Gardiner and myself were invited by Senator Hearst to join him in his private room, where we had quite an interesting talk and decided to all stand by Senator Thurman. Senator Hearst presented a large bandana handkerchief to thousands today as souvenirs of Allen G. Thurman's handkerchief he used so often while on the Senate floor in taking snuff. At 6 o'clock this A. M. we all met at Convention Hall, and after a lively scene nominated Mr. Thurman for Vice-President. Governor Gray and General Black only had three votes. Mr. and Mrs. Gifford have enter-

tained and done everything possible to make my visit pleasant, and I have much enjoyed their hospitality.

Near Pittsburg, on Express Train, June 8, 1888.

This morning before leaving St. Louis Senator Hearst and Mr. Conwell went to Mr. Gifford's room, where the Senator became greatly interested in the many specimens and samples of gold and silver ore Mr. Gifford brought from his Mexican mines, and the Senator made an offer of $450,000 for a certain interest, which Mr. Gifford has taken under advisement. Bade Judge Jecko and family good-bye and left on 8 P. M. train.

Fairfield, June 18, 1888.

Called on General Miles at the Ebbitt House today, with whom I am interested in trying to negotiate a large real-estate transaction. I received an invitation to attend the reunion of the Society of the Army of the Potomac, to be held at Gettysburg July 1, 2 and 3. Hon. George William Curtis, orator, and George Parsons Lothrop, poet; Maj.-Gen. Daniel E. Sickles, U. S. A., retired, presiding officer, and the address of welcome by Gen. James A. Beaver, Governor of Pennsylvania, to be introduced by Gen. J. B. Gordon, Governor of Georgia, and response to be made by Chaplain James B. McCabe of Petersburg, Va., to be introduced by General Sickles.

Gettysburg, Pa., July 2, 1888.

General Hooker and I left Washington this A. M., and we reached here at 10 o'clock. We met General Sickles, Governors Beaver and Curtin and many old comrades.

Fairfield, July 4, 1888.

After going over all the battlefields at Gettysburg yesterday, General Hooker and General King invited me on the stand, where they spoke to those who had assembled around to hear them. Left this A. M. on 8 o'clock train, stopping over at Frederick, where I met Mr. Cline and some old friends, arriving here at 10 o'clock this P. M.

August 11, 1888.

Miss Katie Foote, daughter of Captain Foote, is on a visit at my house. George, Cecily, Miss Foote and I took a horseback ride up through Bradley's lane and around by Bethesda, Md. Attended General Sheridan's funeral this afternoon. He was buried at Arlington Heights with military ceremony.

August 12, 1888.

After my return from General Sheridan's funeral yesterday evening I took off my uniform and called on Governor Rusk. Then met Colonel Rogers, Third Infantry, whom I had not seen for twenty-one years. Ex-Governor Stoneman of California dined with me, and I have invited him to be my guest during his stay here.

GEN. GEORGE STONEMAN.

August 13, 1888.

After dinner last evening Governor Stoneman and I drove over to see General Drum at 6 o'clock, and it was after 12 o'clock before we could leave. Mrs. Drum and daughters entertained us for a short time, and the General and Governor talked over old times. Every time we would start to go the General would invite us back to sample his homemade wine, and during the conversation Governor Stoneman related the circumstances of how the Army of the Potomac came to be so named.

August 15, 1888.

During Governor Stoneman's stay here we have fixed up a bill, and Judge Weed, his attorney, expects to get it through Congress, making him a Major-General on the retired list.

August 24, 1888.

I took General Stoneman driving this afternoon, and we called on Generals Wright and Townsend, Surgeon-General Moore, General Macfeely and the Secretary of War, who were all pleased to meet him. After this we took a parting mint julep.

August 30, 1888.

Saw Mr. Hufty about a $5000 loan and Chaplain Van Wyck and wife in regard to a real-estate transaction. Steve Jecko of Missouri spent the evening entertaining us on the piano.

The following letter with its enclosures will be read with interest by all who revere the memory of the War President:

Washington, August 28, 1888.

Maj. Geo. A. Armes:

My Dear Major—I enclose copy of letter from President Lincoln to Horace Greeley, which, I think, shows fully Mr. Lincoln's opinions on the slavery question.

If you need anything else let me know.

Your friend,

MARCUS J. WRIGHT.

Executive Mansion,
Washington, August 22, 1862.

Hon. Horace Greeley:

Dear Sir—I have just read yours of the 19th, addressed to myself through the *New York Tribune*. If there be in it any statements, or assumptions of fact, which I may know to be erroneous, I do not, now and here, controvert them. If there be in it any inferences which I may believe to be falsely drawn, I do not, now and here, argue against them. If there be perceptible in it an impatient and dictatorial tone, I waive it in deference to an old friend, whose heart I have always supposed to be right.

As to the policy I "seem to be pursuing," as you say, I have not meant to leave anyone in doubt.

I would serve the Union. I would serve it the shortest way under the Constitution. The sooner the national authority can be restored the nearer the Union will be "the Union as it was." If there be those who would not save the Union unless they could at the same time *save* slavery, I do not agree with them. If there be those who would not save the Union unless they could at the same time *destroy* slavery, I do not agree with them. My paramount object in this struggle *is* to save the Union, and is *not* either to save or to destroy slavery. If I could save the Union without freeing *any* slaves I would do it, and if I could save it by freeing *all* the slaves I would do it, and if I could save it by freeing some and leaving others alone I would also do that. What I do about slavery and the colored race I do because I believe it helps to save the Union, and what I forbear I forbear because I do *not* believe it would help to save the Union. I shall do *less* whenever I shall believe what I am doing hurts the cause, and I shall do *more* whenever I shall believe doing more will help the cause. I shall try to correct errors when shown to be errors, and I shall adopt new views so fast as they appear to be true views.

I have here stated my purpose according to my views of official duty, and I intend no modifications of my oft-repeated *personal* wish that all men everywhere could be free.

Yours,

A. Lincoln.

September 23, 1888.

Took General Black driving, and then called on Colonel Dorsey, near the Hamilton House, who drove with me to Mr. Bryant's at Four Corners, where we took tea and spent the evening. Mr. Bryant, who was formerly a partner of Horace Greeley and a great literary man, has retired to his beautiful home, where he is surrounded with the finest library in this section.

September 28, 1888.

Hitched up my four-in-hand and park phaeton and invited Congressman Dorsey of Nebraska, Baker of New York and Rockwell of Massachusetts to drive with me over in Virginia. We attended Buffalo Bill's show. My family went over in two other vehicles. Cody (Buffalo Bill) was very glad to see us, and entertained us after the show.

My Four-in-Hand.

October 5, 1888.

Buffalo Bill deputized Mr. Moxley to go with me and look at property. I took him over the Holmead section, offering it to him for $50,000, and advising him to close immediately.

October 24, 1888.

Spent most of last evening with Buffalo Bill after his return from General Beale's farm, where he has arranged to have his buffalo and stock wintered. Colonel Anderson is very busy in getting up his committee, and has added Hon. W. C. Whitney, Colonel Soule, General Beale, General Rosecrans and several other names. Colonel McLean, Assistant Commissioner, assisted today in getting the case of Private Hector Gale, Second New York Artillery, made special.

Treasury Department, Register's Office,
October 29, 1888.

My Dear General:

Maj. Geo. A. Armes, U. S. A., (retired) has a matter of importance to speak of tending to make democratic votes for our coming election.

Probably you may see a proper mode of doing a personal act of justice and at the same time inaugurate a public movement for our country's good.

Yours truly,

W. S. Rosecrans.

Gen. J. J. Bartlett,
Dept. Comr. Pens.

November 8, 1888.

Was up all last night watching the returns of the election, and was greatly disappointed at 11 o'clock this A. M., upon reaching my office, to learn that Mr. Cleveland was not re-elected. It is rumored that Senator Hearst was not true to his party, which is a surprise to me, as he appeared to take such a great interest in affairs at St. Louis, although he said then it was a great mistake to select Mr. Thurman as Vice-President instead of General Black, in whose interest I went to St. Louis, and a great many having discussed the question before the nomination of Mr. Thurman appeared discouraged at the turn of affairs. I spent a great deal of time and money during the past few months in advocating the re-election of Mr. Cleveland.

December 7, 1888.

Had a very interesting interview with President Cleveland this afternoon in relation to his Oak View property, which he authorized me to sell for $150,000, and said he would like to see me get the benefit of the sale.

December 26, 1888.

Met Senator Cullom at 11 o'clock today, when he and his daughters got in my tea-cart and we drove for several hours looking at real estate. They were very much pleased with several houses we examined.

December 31, 1888.

I sat up until 12 o'clock last evening to look through the accounts of the year past, and I have been busy today paying bills and settling up. Having spent a great part of my time in politics, I have neglected many matters, and have not cleared over $14,600, besides expenses, during the year.

I must mention the misfortunes of my old friend, Hon. Ward H. Lamon, who was confined to his bed with terrible rheumatic troubles, causing him to lose many of his large claims that needed his attention, and which, on account of sickness, he was unable to look after. Upon his writing his circumstances to me, and upon his request that I purchase his pair of trotting messenger horses, although I had eight, I accommodated him by paying $750 cash towards helping him out of his financial troubles, more on account of his long friendship and many kindnesses extended to me during my troubles. Through my intercession the Hon. Charles B. Farwell, Congressman Taylor and Judge Welling of the Court of Claims succeeded in reconciling Mrs. Lamon to her husband again, they having been separated for a number of months. They at once made arrangements to go abroad together.

CHAPTER XXVII.

January 11, 1889.

Reached my office at 10 o'clock A. M., when Colonel Slack called, requesting me to sell his carriages, which I immediately did to Mr. Marr for $635 cash. Took Senator Barnum, Chairman of the Democratic Committee, to look for quarters for his committee.

January 29, 1889.

Called on Mr. William Walter Phelps at the Normandy, who gave me his square 135 to sell at four dollars a foot as a whole or eight dollars for the front portion. Attended Mr. Burrows' and Senator Stockbridge's reception this afternoon, and Mrs. Stockbridge had quite a long talk with me about the Phelps lot, which she is very anxious to purchase.

February 4, 1889.

Paid B. H. Warner $15,750 today, and took up the last mortgage note on Tenth street property, which I was glad to get out of his hands.

February 7, 1889.

General Drum gave me a note to Mr. Whitthorn to get General Hunt's promotion bill through, and had quite a long talk with Mr. Dorsey about it.

February 8, 1889.

Lieut. Lucian Young of the Navy and I called on General Drum, who gave me a dispatch as to the condition of General Hunt. I went right to the Capitol, calling on Colonel Dorsey, General Glover, General Spinola and Col. Archie Bliss. Got Mr. Dorsey to have the bill reported, but Killgore of Texas objected, thus killing the bill making him Brigadier-General.

February 10, 1889.

Called on General Killgore of Texas at his house, introducing myself, when he asked what he could do for me. I said I had only called to pay my respects, and invited him on a drive around the suburbs. He was very dignified; did not ask me to sit down, but reminded me that he was a Congressman, who had no time to waste driving about. When I informed him how much my friends in Texas thought of him he was surprised to find I knew anyone

in Texas, and at once invited me to sit down. He finally asked how long it would take to go on a little drive over the hill, and I told him he could come back in a half hour or an hour if he wished. Concluding to accept my invitation, he got in my buggy, and I drove him to my house, entertaining him with eggnogg and some good cigars, where he remained several hours. After that we called on General Drum at his house. On our way back to town he seemed enraptured with the beautiful country and glad he had had an opportunity to see the land selected for the National Park and the Zoological Gardens, stating that if he had known what a beautiful section it was he would not have objected to the passage of any appropriation for such enterprises. He also agreed not to oppose the Hunt bill or the brevet bill, which I had been trying to have passed. When we parted he assured me that I could rely upon his helping to pass appropriations which might be connected with the section through which we drove.

February 11, 1889.

When I reached my office at 12 o'clock news came that General Hunt had died at 10 o'clock. This was quite a shock to me, as I had been one of his best friends for years in the Army of the Potomac.

February 12, 1889.

I called at Congressman Dorsey's house and invited him to ride to the Capitol with me, when he at once introduced a pension bill for Mrs. General Hunt, allowing her $100 per month. Congressman Archie Bliss, with his great-heartedness, took special interest in this bill. I also received today an appointment as Colonel and aide on the staff of Governor Beaver, but being so busy in real-estate affairs, I am not certain if I can accept it.

February 13, 1889.

Went to the Capitol today and did my best to get the bill breveting officers for Indian campaigns brought up, as many of the officers who had been recommended for Indian fights had requested me to get a bill through authorizing them to be breveted on the recommendation of their department commanders. General Cutcheon, chairman of the Military Committee of the House, has taken great interest in assisting me in the passage of the bill.

February 14, 1889.

Saw Senator Stockbridge today, who is hesitating about the Phelps lot, but his wife has set her heart on purchasing it and building a large house in the center of the square. He having invested largely in California, hesitates purchasing here.

February 16, 1889.

After looking into my affairs, and considering it my duty to do all I can towards making the parade a success, it being a national matter, I accepted Governor Beaver's appointment as an aide on his staff and reported at headquarters. I have been requested to go to Alexandria and engage all the horses I can for the 4th of March.

February 18, 1889.

Congressman Dorsey and I went before the committee, General Cutcheon agreeing to bring up the brevet bill.

February 20, 1889.

General Springer, Dorsey, Cutcheon and Killgore took an active part in trying to pass the bill last night, but Campbell of New York objected and blocked the house from doing so.

February 22, 1889.

Was with Governor Beaver and General Hastings today arranging for my part of the parade.

February 24, 1889.

Saw General Axline of Ohio this morning; also Colonel Goodloe of the United States Marine Corps, Colonel McGrew of Indiana, who went to Alexandria with me to look for horses. Called on David Windsor and Rose Catts, who have agreed to supply us with a number of horses.

February 25, 1889.

Called at the War Department today and was handed the deed for lot 25 at Arlington Cemetery. This afternoon while in the headquarter building General Hastings informed me that my appointment as an aide on General Beaver's staff was a mistake, and under the circumstances I could not ride. I immediately called on Colonel ————, who was making out a list of appointments for special escort to the President, and after stating the insult offered by Hastings, he agreed to appoint me as one of ten to meet President Harrison in the Senate chamber and be with him on the

platform during his address. He also explained the treatment he had received by President Harrison, General Hastings, Mr. Britton and other officials, and appeared to feel very sore on account of it.

March 1, 1889.

Called on Hon. Washington McLean, who entertained me for an hour or two. Also called on General Rosecrans and congratulated him upon his appointment as Brigadier-General of the United States Army, and tendered him my blooded mare to ride in the procession on the 4th of March. Had quite a long talk with Governor Beaver this afternoon, and was grossly insulted by General Hastings of his staff, who apologized to me afterwards.

March 2, 1889.

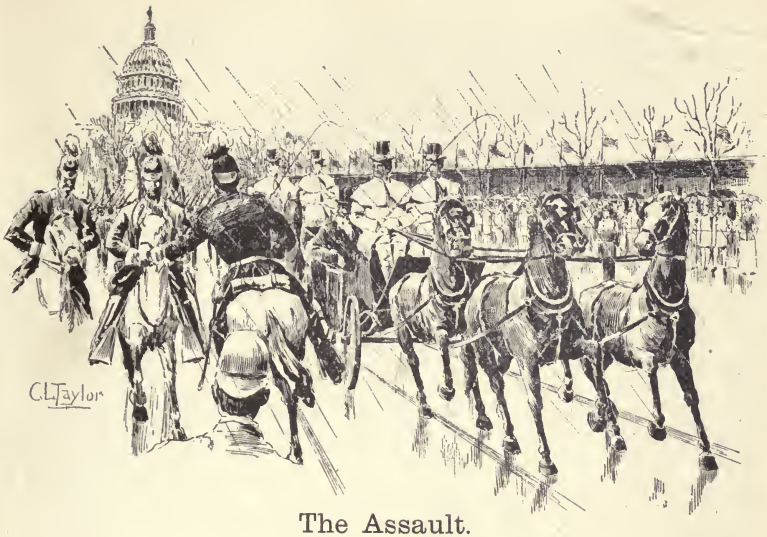
Had quite a talk with Senator Windom and Senator Garland this afternoon. Having been refused an appointment as notary-public, I called on Senator McPherson, who wrote a note of recommendation, saying: "My Dear Garland: Please appoint Colonel Armes notary-public, and oblige, yours truly." I handed this to Mr. Garland, and he at once had an appointment made out, which I took to Colonel Pruden, who had Mr. Cleveland sign it at once. The whole transaction was carried through within one hour from the time I obtained Senator McPherson's note.

March 3, 1889.

Yesterday afternoon I took a note from General Rosecrans to Mr. Randall with the request that he call up Mrs. General Hunt's bill, which he agreed to do at once.

March 4, 1889.

Upon reaching the Capitol at 11 o'clock A. M. I was admitted into the Senate chamber and went with the President and Senators to the platform, remaining until he finished his address, after which I mounted my horse with the rest of the escort. While riding by the carriage of Vice-President Morton, Colonel Gibson and Captain Bourke of Governor Beaver's staff charged upon me like two drunken loafers, ordering me off the avenue. My first impulse was to shoot them both, but considering the disturbance it would raise, I submitted and left the parade. I then went to the War Department with some ladies and witnessed the procession, after which I was invited to lunch with General Smith.



The Assault.

March 5, 1889.

Last evening I tried to find Governor Beaver, but failed, as he had gone to Harrisburg, and I at once sent him a note demanding an apology and explanation of his treatment on the 4th of March.

March 9, 1889.

Preferred charges against Colonel Gibson and Captain Bourke and sent them in to the Adjutant-General; also got out a warrant of arrest for Captain Bourke for my treatment on the 4th of March.

March 11, 1889.

While talking with General Drum at the War Department today he informed me that Colonel Gibson and Captain Bourke had preferred charges against me, and that I would soon be furnished a copy of them. Last evening I called on Colonel West of the *Washington Post*, giving him a copy of the charges I had prefered against Gibson and Bourke, and this morning quite an interesting article appeared.

March 14, 1889.

Took Senator and Mrs. McMillan of Michigan to see Senator Van Wyck's house this evening. They were very much pleased

with it, and offered $15,000 for a lease of three years. Called at the *Evening Star* and *Critic* offices today, and they published one of my letters to Governor Beaver in relation to the Gibson and Bourke matter. Saw Mr. Galt, who gave me his house on Vermont avenue to sell at $32, 000.

March 26, 1889.

Colonel Henderson of the Navy gave me his Woodley property to sell, or to lease at $2000 a year. I also took Senator Dolph over the Van Wyck house, with which he is very much pleased. General Clarkson and wife invited me to dine with them at Wormley's this afternoon, after which I took them through the Van Wyck house.

March 27, 1889.

Had quite a talk with John R. McLean in regard to the Woodley property. While in the Riggs House this afternoon talking with Lieutenant Young of the Navy, Colonel Smith and Mr. Prime, I noticed Governor Beaver shaking hands with several of his comrades in the lobby, and upon his discovering me he excused himself from his friends and came over and shook hands. After introducing him to Lieutenant Young and my friends I asked him if he had received my note demanding an apology. He said he had, but proposed to let the matter drop, as it had passed. I reminded him that it was too serious a matter to let drop, when he explained he knew nothing about the affair that happened on the 4th of March, and that everything was done by his Adjutant-General, Hastings. I suggested that he put that in writing at once in order that I could publish the explanation over his signature, when he remarked he had to sustain his Adjutant-General. I told him that it was very singular that I should suffer an insult and that he should sustain a drunken loafer in an ungentlemanly act, and that I did not propose to let the matter drop, and he then asked me what I proposed to do about it. I reminded him of the fact that there is a great difference between our positions, he being the Governor of a great State and I an officer on the retired list, and that that prevented me from acting as I might otherwise. He at once informed me he would throw off his position as Governor of the State of Pennsylvania while in Washington and put himself down on the same platform with me, and that I could do my damnedest, which I resented. One of his comrades threw his

Resenting Gen. Beaver's Insult.

arms around him and took him out in his carriage on a drive to the Soldiers' Home. Another ex-soldier threw his arms around me, when I reminded him that the matter was all over.

March 29, 1889.

Had quite a long conversation with Colonel Carson of the *Philadelphia Ledger*, who wrote a nice letter in reply to Governor Beaver's statement, which I took to the Associated Press and it was sent off.

March 30, 1889.

Had a long talk with Col. Beriah Wilkins of the *Washington Post*, who assures me he is a friend and will publish my version of the Beaver matter.

April 1, 1889.

Found a long letter from Colonel Lawton, Inspector-General of the United States Army (since killed in the Philippines), also his card. I remained in my office several hours working on my papers, and during the afternoon he called again, and we had

quite a pleasant chat. He told me he had orders to prefer charges against me and wished I would come to his office to see what defense it was necessary to make.

April 8, 1889.

At 10 o'clock this A. M. Major Schwan, Adjutant-General of the Department, called at my office and placed me in arrest, giving me a copy of the charges and ordering me to appear for trial in two days. The limits assigned were those of the District.

April 9, 1889.

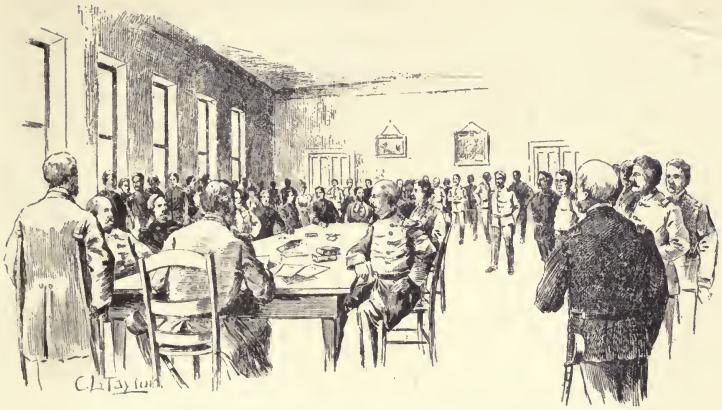
Called on Judges Shellabarger and Wilson in regard to defending me before the court, which they were unable to do. I then saw Lieutenant Lemly of the Artillery, who agreed to assist me if it were possible.

April 10, 1889.

I appeared before the court at 10 o'clock this A. M., and my first intention was to object to all the members, as I had learned from very good authority that Capt. J. W. Clous was one of the principals in getting it organized and selecting the members for the purpose of having me dismissed from the service. Not having any counsel present, I declined to plead to the charges until a counsel was assigned, and Capt. Thomas T. Knox, First Cavalry, the junior member of the court, was relieved and assigned as my counsel. Mr. Wheeler Hubbell volunteered to assist. Captain Knox's defense of me was of the highest order.

April 11, 1889.

I appeared before the court at 10 o'clock this A. M. and pleaded not guilty, and objected to being tried upon the ground that the court had the cart before the horse; that Colonel Gibson and Captain Bourke were the proper officers who should be brought before the court instead of myself, as I had preferred serious charges against them before charges were made against me. Mr. Hubbell made a very interesting little speech, and the court proceeded to my trial.



The Beaver Court-Martial.

April 22, 1889.

I have been before the court with witnesses, and have made quite a strong case, and if I am found guilty it will be on account of their prejudice and the fact that their minds were made up before they were detailed on the court, as there is no evidence that would justify such conclusion.

April 25, 1889.

I was in my place before the court at 10 o'clock this A. M., when the Judge-Advocate read the testimony of the day before, and at 12.20 the court closed. I was notified that I would not have to appear before it again. I was tried on the charge of "conduct unbecoming an officer and gentleman," being found guilty and sentenced to dismissal as already noted, but the sentence was commuted by the President. Afterwards, talking with General Drum, he informed me that he would let me know the sentence of the court at the first opportunity.

April 27, 1889.

General Drum failing to keep his word in furnishing me with the sentence of the court, I called on Colonel Swords of the Treasury Department, special friend of the President, who went to the White House to learn what he could. Colonel Halford told him he had not been able to find out himself, but I am satisfied it was dismissal from the service. As was plainly seen, the court was specially picked out for that purpose.

April 20, 1889.

Among the many witnesses in my defense was Governor Woodbury of Vermont, who came on and did all he could in my behalf.

Burlington, Vt., April 11, 1889.

Dear Major:

Your favor of the 8th inst. is received and noted. Your trouble has caused me much pain. I hardly know what to say about it. * * *

You speak about my influence with Secretary Procter. I fear it would not be much. * * *

But I am willing to help you if I can. If I should be regularly summoned by the court I could appear.

Please remember me to Mrs. Armes.

Yours, very truly,

(Signed) U. A. WOODBURY,
Captain, etc.

By the Judge-Advocate:

Q. State your name and residence.

A. U. A. Woodbury, Burlington, Vt.

Q. Do you recognize the accused?

A. I do.

Q. As whom?

A. As Geo. A. Armes.

By Mr. Hubbell:

Q. Will you please explain why you are called Governor?

A. I am the present Lieutenant-Governor of Vermont, not Governor.

Q. Will you state how long a time you have known the accused?

A. Something over twenty-five years.

Q. What is and has been his character as a gentleman and as a man?

A. Perhaps I could better answer that by stating how I became acquainted with him and what my relations with him were.

Q. You can explain that in your answer.

A. In the fall of 1863 I was on duty in New Hampshire during the draft as a veteran in the reserve corps, having been transferred to that branch after having lost my arm, and Mr. Armes was assigned to my company as Second Lieutenant. * * * He remained something over a year. At that time he was a young man of most excellent character, of good temper, attended to his duties, and rather easily imposed upon, I used to think.

Q. Did you ever know him to do any dishonorable act or action?

A. I never did while he was with me.

Q. Or at any other time?

A. I have never personally known of his doing anything dishonorable.

Q. Nor anything ungentlemanly that would reflect on his character as an officer and a gentleman?

A. Never while with me. Nor have I any personal knowledge of anything since.

May 14, 1889.

Leased the Weaver house today to Corporal Tanner, Commissioner of Pensions, for $1000 a year.

June 8, 1889.

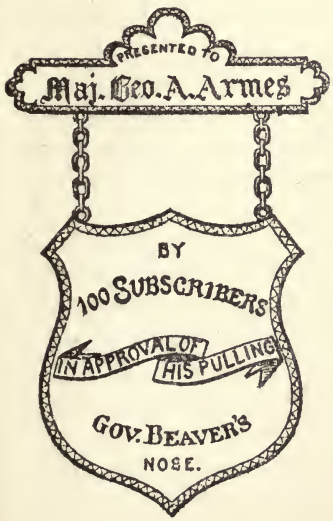
I learned today that the sentence of the court had been commuted by the President to five years' suspension, and I not to be allowed to wear my uniform during the suspension, but my pay was not to be interfered with.

June 26, 1889.

I have been actively engaged in real-estate deals during the past two months, but at the same time have been at a loss of not less than $25,000 on account of not being able to attend to matters of importance because of the court-martial, which took up most of my time. I was in hopes of negotiating a deal with Secretary Proctor and Senator Van Wyck, but the former decided to take the Parson house, corner of L and Sixteenth streets.

June 27, 1889.

Upon reaching my office at 11 o'clock this morning I received several communications, in addition to a notice in the *Post*, that one hundred citizens of Pittsburg, Pa., had presented and forwarded to me a gold medal in approval of my resenting the insult of Governor Beaver.



A beautiful gold medal in a satin box, awarded to me on a subscription of $300 by a committee of one hundred citizens, was sent to me from Pittsburg, Pa.; also a set of resolutions signed by the committee. General Schofield having sent me directions to return the medal to the donors, I had to word my acceptance in such a way as to avoid official action:

Washington, D. C., July 5, 1889.

To John F. Blair,
Treasurer:

Dear Sir—Having received the beautiful gold medal donated and sent to me by 100 of your citizens, I accept the same as their approval of the letter I sent Gen. James A. Beaver March 15, 1889.

Being a real estate broker, the Honorable Secretary of War extended my limits outside the city of Washington to fifty miles.

While undergoing my sentence, as commuted by the President, this affords me an opportunity to give some good bargains to those who apply to me for houses, lots or farms.

GEO. A. ARMES.

June 28, 1889.

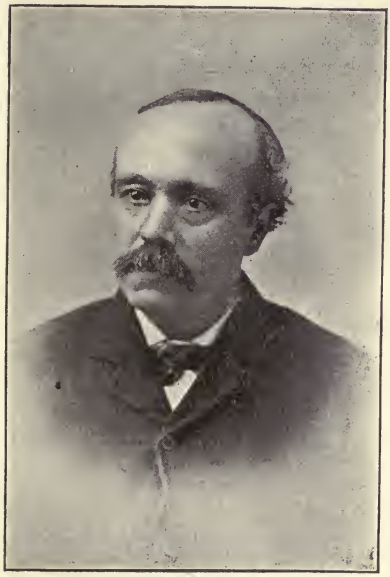
Before reaching home last evening General Schofield sent one of his staff officers to find out if I had received the gold medal announced as having been presented to me in the papers, and if it had been received, his directions were to return it to avoid another court-martial, as I would not be allowed to accept it. I sent him my compliments, with information that the gold medal had not as yet been received, but if there were any truth in the story, and that if it came into my possession, I proposed to acept it, and $10,000 would not be on inducement for me to return it. I also called on the Adjutant-General, Kelton, informing him that my business naturally called me to other cities outside the limits of fifty miles that had been extended, and wanted to know what the chances were to attend to my business affairs, when he smiled and reminded me of the fact that I was pretty much on the same status as an officer on duty at a post, and that whenever I desired to leave the city I would have to make a written appplication for the number of days I desired the same as any other officer on duty, which satisfied me that my business would not be interfered with in case of a necessity to leave the city.

July 19, 1889.

I desired to go out of the city, and sent up a written request for sixty days, which General Kelton returned approved "by order of the Secretary of War." Took Surgeon-General Moore through the Alley house, for which he offered me $30,000 cash.

Sylvan Beach, N. Y., August 13, 1889.

Arrived a 4 o'clock this A. M. and took rooms at the hotel near the Gale cottage. Met Mr. Gale and wife at 3 P. M., who were glad to see us and gave us a good dinner. They invited us to remain as their guests. The regiment assembled at the fair grounds, and I met many of my old comrades, among them Major Birdsell, Captain Rounds, Captain Porter, Sergeant Miller, Frank Earl and others. We have had a grand time fishing in the lake and boat-riding.



W. Hector Gale.

October 14, 1889.

I have been very busy for the past four or five days entertaining and driving the Knights Templar to the Soldiers' Home, Arlington Heights and all places of interest around the city. Have made a good many friends.

October 18, 1889.

Invited Gen. Philip St. George Cooke to drive to the Soldiers' Home and many other places of interest, which the old gentleman greatly enjoyed. During our conversation he reminded me that he never regretted issuing the complimentary order for the cavalry raid I made against the Indians in 1866. Attended World's Fair meeting this evening.

October 24, 1889.

I returned to the city last evening to attend the banquet given in honor of the Three Americas Exposition, and Mr. Shaffer of the *Star* escorted me to the table, where we met Judge Jerry Wilson, Mr. Kennedy and Col. Beriah Wilkins, and listened to the speeches of Governor Biggs of Delaware, Governor Fleming of Florida and several other noted speakers, including Commissioner Douglass. Colonel Staples did his best to entertain us.

December 3, 1889.

Most of my time has been engaged in trying to find capitalists to purchase a tract of land that I have secured the prices of in order to get Connecticut avenue extended to the District line. I have talked with quite a number of men of means in New York, Boston, Chicago and Philadelphia, trying to induce them to go into the enterprise, and have figured up the cost of the land, the building of the road and the stocking of it, including bridges, and it will require $3,500,000, but I propose to persevere until I succeed, as it will be a very important and beneficial step for the District and city of Washington. I induced Mr. Austin Herr to give me $45,000 for the Ward tract on Pierce Mill road, he paying me $10,000 cash.

December 26, 1889.

Took a drive with Senator Hearst this afternoon, trying to induce him to take hold of my Connecticut avenue project. He gave me considerable encouragement.

December 31, 1889.

Judge Bond authorized me to sell his property for $2700. I am very busy this evening settling up my accounts of the past year, and find that I have done very well financially, in spite of the great losses suffered on account of the court-martial, and am in a fair way to succeed in some large transactions next year in spite of my sentence to only fifty miles limit.

The correspondence which elucidates the events of the year follows in chronological order:

(From the *Washington Post* of March 13, 1889.)

MAJOR ARMES ON THE WARPATH.

He Prefers Formal Charges Against Colonel Gibson and Captain Bourke.

Maj. George A. Armes early yesterday morning sent to Adjutant-General Drum his formal charges of conduct unbecoming gentlemen and drunkenness against Colonel Gibson of the Third Artillery and Capt. John G. Bourke, Third Cavalry, mentioned in the *Post* yesterday.

Major Armes said yesterday to the *Post* reporter:

"I have in my possession a formal notice sent by Governor Beaver of my appointment as an aide on his staff in the inaugural parade. I acknowledged the receipt of the invitation and accepted it. When the list was printed my name was not there. I called on Governor Beaver, who said there was an error, but that it was too late to rectify it, and that I must try and arrange to ride in some other portion of the parade.

"A higher official than Governor Beaver told me that he would arrange to give me special duty, where I would be near the President, and that the Sergeant-at-Arms would have instructions to admit me to the Senate chamber and on the platform. Coming from the Capitol I rode by the side of Vice-President Morton and Senator Cullom, whom I knew personally. Everything went nicely until Colonel Gibson and Captain Bourke both came charging down upon me like drunken men, and ordered me to immediately leave the parade. I at once informed Colonel Gibson that I had authority to be there.

"I swore out a warrant for Captain Bourke on the 5th, and the next morning he was taken to the police court. I was not notified of the time, and so failed to appear, and the case was dismissed for want of a witness. There is nothing more for me to say except that I will give out the official documents later."

The following is my reply to Colonel Lawton in relation to charges being manufactured against me:

Washington, D. C., April 1, 1889.

H. W. Lawton,
Lieut.-Col. and Inspector, U. S. A.:

Sir—I have the honor to acknowledge the receipt of your letter dated March 30, 1889, but it was not received by me until noon this morning. If you will forward me a copy of the charges that have been submitted to the War Department against me I can then better judge how to make a reply, as I have not been furnished a copy of any charge, and have seen only a few of the "squibs" in the newspapers. I hardly know how to reply until I have something from the War Department to act upon. If there is anything being done at your Department I think they will develop the fact that Colonels Barr and Clous are trying to use the Secretary of War to settle officially an old private difficulty which took place some years ago.

Respectfully, your obedient servant,

(Signed) Geo. A. Armes,
Capt. U. S. Cav.

The following is a copy of letter of transmittal, with names of members of the court:

War Department, Adjutant-General's Office,
Washington, April 8, 1889.

Capt. Geo. A. Armes,
U. S. Army (Retired):

Sir—The Secretary of War directs that you report to the President of the General Court-Martial, convened by Paragraph 1, Spe-

cial Orders No. 81, current series from this office (copy enclosed), at 11 o'clock A. M. on Thursday, the 11th inst., for trial. You will also acknowledge the receipt of this communication.

The court will hold its session in Room No. 254, War Department Building.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

J. C. KELTON,
Assistant Adjutant-General.

(Court-martial No. 9.)

War Department,
Washington City, April 6, 1889.

By direction of the President, a General Court-Martial is appointed to meet in this city at 11 o'clock on Thursday, the 11th day of April, 1889, or as soon thereafter as practicable, for the trial of such persons as may be brought before it.

Detail for the Court—Col. Richard I. Dodge, Eleventh Infantry; Col. Edwin F. Townsend, Twelfth Infantry; Col. John Mendenhall, Second Artillery; Capt. John G. Turnbull, Third Artillery; Capt. Sanford C. Kellogg, Fifth Cavalry; Capt. John R. Myrick, Third Artillery; Capt. Greenleaf A. Goodale, Twenty-third Infantry; Capt. Lewis Smith, Third Artillery; Capt. Frank W. Hess, Third Artillery; Capt. George S. Anderson, Sixth Cavalry; Capt. James Parker, Fourth Cavalry; Capt. James O'Hara, Third Artillery; Theo. Schwan, Maj. and Asst. Adjt.-Gen.; Maj. George B. Davis, Judge-Advocate of the court.

REDFIELD PROCTOR,
Secretary of War.

The following is a copy of my letter to the Secretary of War after being placed in arrest:

Washington, D. C., April 9, 1889.

Gen. Redfield Proctor,
Secretary of War,
(Through the Adjutant-General):

Sir—I have the honor to acknowledge the receipt of an order at 4 o'clock yesterday P. M. placing me in arrest and assigning my limits within the District of Columbia; also a set of charges and specifications signed by H. W. Lawton, Lieutenant-Colonel and Inspector-General U. S. A., which are false, malicious and manufactured by a set of conspirators for the purpose of bringing me in bad repute and prejudice the minds of the public still further against me, and thus make it appear that I was wrong and my accusers right in their disgraceful action under cover of the United States uniform they wore. I was an officer in the best standing in 1870, when a set of false and malicious charges were preferred against me by two officers of the lowest character, and was dis-

missed by a court composed of five officers, friends of the two Army officers whom I had preferred charges against for stealing and selling Government horses and mules. General Schofield, then the Department Commander, who ordered the court for the occasion, approved of said court's proceeding, and I went out of the Army for the time being disgraced. Judge Luke Poland of Vermont, a special friend of my father's, and who had known me from boyhood, took an interest in the matter, and the two officers were brought to trial, convicted, fined, cashiered and sentenced to the penitentiary for a term of years. Those two officers were very popular and had many friends high up in authority, who have naturally been watching an opportunity to find something they could take advantage of that would force me out of the service. My case was thoroughly investigated by an act of Congress, and a bill passed vindicating and restoring me without loss of rank to my proper position in the Army; but since my return Col. B. H. Grierson, Tenth Cavalry; Lieut.-Col. M. M. Blunt, Lieut.-Col. James F. Wade, Gen. C. C. Augur, Maj. Lewis Merrill, Maj. J. W. Clous, Col. Thomas M. Vincent, Assistant Adjutant-General, I believe, have been watching every opportunity to injure me in some underhand manner. I was legally appointed on the staff of Gen. James A. Beaver, and accepted the same in good faith, and his Chief of Staff, I learned by good authority, struck my name off of the list upon the representation of some unworthy character that I ought not to be allowed the honor of associating with those selected to ride with the Governor. At the last moment I was told by Governor Beaver it was too late to have it corrected, as his commissions had all been issued, but he would forward me one upon his return to Harrisburg, and that I had best try and ride with General Barnum or somewhere else in the line. Upon reporting those facts to a prominent gentleman he informed me that I should not be ignored in any such manner, but could have a position with several other trusty gentlemen who had specially been assigned to duty for the protection of the President, and that would give me an opportunity to be with him at the Capitol on the stand while he was there. Immediately after the inaugural I mounted my horse, starting to ride up the avenue by the side of the Vice-President and Senator Cullom, both gentlemen knowing me personally. While proceeding quietly up the avenue Colonel Gibson of the Third Artillery and Captain Bourke, Third Cavalry, charged up to me on horseback, grasping the rein of my bridle, saying in a loud and insulting manner: "Get off this parade!" I remarked, "Colonel Gibson, I am here under proper authority, and have a perfect right to be where I am," or words to that effect. He then said, "Bourke, put that man off the avenue. It is General Beaver's orders that I put him off," both calling the police, who came up, grasped my bridle rein, and

Bourke and Gibson left. I asked the police where their Lieutenant was, stating that those officers had no authority to order me arrested, and immediately let go, and the Lieutenant informed me that I had the right to go up the avenue the same as any other officer, which I did, and placed my family in the War Department, where I had passes for them, they having been out in a carriage during the time I was at the Capitol. The next day I got out a warrant for Captain Bourke, but was not notified to appear as a witness at the time he was arrested, and he was immediately released. All kinds of attacks have been made on my character as an officer and a gentleman through the instrumentality of some Army officer, whose name the reporters decline to furnish. Colonel Gibson having made unreliable statements in the *Post*, I corrected them, which seemed to still increase the newspaper controversy. Failing to receive a reply to my letter to Governor Beaver demanding an apology, and having been informed that charges had been filed in the War Department, I considered it my duty to make charges against the two officers who were guilty of making the disturbance in question, and also insisted on Governor Beaver making an apology or explanation in regard to his giving an order to General Gibson putting me off the parade, which he denied having given, but declined to put it in writing, when we had a personal quarrel with each other, accounts of which have been greatly exaggerated.

I mention my personal enemies by name in order that it may not appear that I am trying to attack the whole Army. An investigation of the characters of the above-named officers will convince any just man that I have been persecuted by them singly and collectively for years.

If necessary and you desire it I can go into further details showing the character and disgraceful acts of the above-named officers.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

GEO. A. ARMES,
Capt. U. S. Army (ret.).

Having been informed that Capt. J. W. Clous was one of the principals in trying to have me brought to trial on account of resenting an insult from Governor Beaver, I sent the following to General Drum, who returned it with endorsement:

Washington, D. C., April 16, 1889.

Gen. R. C. Drum,
Adjutant-General U. S. A.:

Sir—I have the honor to request that you inform me if it is true that Maj. J. W. Clous furnished the information or any portion

of the enclosed matter to any newspaper or to anyone who caused said article to be written.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

(Signed) GEO. A. ARMES,
Capt. U. S. A.

War Department, Adjutant-General's Office,
April 17, 1889.

Respectfully returned to Captain Armes, whose request being in respect to a personal matter and made wholly upon conjecture, the Adjutant-General declines complying therewith. His recourse in this matter is to address his inquiry to Major Clous or to the editor of the paper which made the publication to which he appears to object.

(Signed) J. C. KELTON,
Asst. Adjt.-Gen.

The information published in regard to your trials appears in General Orders, which are always accessible to the public.

The following is from Senator Cullom:

United States Senate,
Washington, D. C., May 20, 1889.

To whom it may concern:

I have known Col. G. A. Armes of the U. S. A. for several years. I saw him on the occasion of the inauguration of the President on the 4th of March last. He rode near the carriage of the Vice-President as the procession came from the Capitol to the White House. On the route I (being in the carriage with the Vice-President as one of the Senate Committee of Arrangements) spoke to him, and he acknowledged by military salute. I did not observe any impropriety on his part whatever on the occasion.

Respectfully,
(Signed) S. M. CULLOM.

I applied to the Secretary of War for permission to go to Mexico on business and received the following response:

(Extension of limits to go into Mexico.)
War Department, Adjutant-General's Office,
Washington, August 14, 1889.

Capt. Geo. A. Armes,
U. S. A. (retired):

Sir—Referring to your request of the 8th inst. for extension of limits of your confinement, I have the honor to inform you that by authority of the Secretary of War permission is granted you to visit Laredo, Texas, and, if you deem it necessary, the republic

of Mexico, within the period fixed by letter of the 19th ult. from this office, viz., two months, commencing August 1.

Very respectfully,

(Signed) J. C. KELTON,
Adjutant-General.

September, 1889.

Here I may mention the sly performance of General Schofield in order to get even with me if possible in some way. Having failed in his endeavor to sustain the charges, he ordered charges preferred against me for retaining the medal presented by the one hundred citizens of Pennsylvania, he issued an order appointing a board to question my sanity, with instructions for me to be hustled into a closed carriage and sent to St. Elizabeth's Asylum. Having been informed by a special friend in the Department of this secret order of General Schofield's, I invited a correspondent of the press to accompany me to his house between 8 and 9 o'clock, where I asked the butler if the General was in. Being informed that he was upstairs, I declined to send my card or name, but gave directions to tell the General two gentlemen wished to see him, and we were immediately ushered into the parlor. When the General appeared he seemed thunderstruck at meeting me, and I at once introduced him to my friend, whom he asked to be seated. I declined to sit down, but asked the General if he knew anything about the order being issued for me to appear before a medical board, when he desired to know upon what grounds I asked such a question. I told him I had heard that an order of that kind had been issued. He denied knowing anything about it, stating that I ought to have been in the service long enough to know that a General of the Army was not aware of all orders that were issued at his headquarters, and denied all knowledge of any such order. I then informed him that I had been advised by counsel to find out the truth of such an order, and if it had been issued to get a warrant for General Schofield and have him appear before the court for libel. He struck the table with his fist and flew into a rage, stating that any lawyer who had given me advice of that kind was a "damned fool," remarking that some person must have leaked in his office to have given out such information. He then requested me to call at his office in the morning, and he would instruct the Adjutant-General to withdraw the order, but I declined. He then requested me to make an application in writ-

ing that the order be withdrawn, but I declined that also, and remarked that I would appear before the board. Hereupon he followed me to the door, where I bade him good evening. I called on Major Carson, Dr. Harrison and several friends, inviting them to be present at the investigation which was to take place at the Medical Museum the next day. Upon arriving at my office at half-past nine, ready to appear before the board, a messenger handed me an order revoking the order for my appearance before the board. This transaction was published at the time in the newspapers. The following is a copy of the letter of transmittal enclosing the order convening the board, which General Schofield took advantage of his position to issue while acting as Secretary of War, and then upon my cross-questioning him at his house denied all knowledge of the transaction. The orders speak for themselves:

War Department, Adjutant-General's Office,
Washington, September 13, 1889.

Capt. Geo. A. Armes,
U. S. A. (retired):

Sir—I have the honor to enclose herewith a copy of an order appointing a medical board to convene at the Army Medical Museum, corner B and Seventh streets, S. W., this city, on Tuesday, September 17, 1889, at 11 o'clock A. M., and to inform you that the Acting Secretary of War directs that you report in person to the board on the date specified for examination.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,
(Signed) J. C. KELTON,
Adjutant-General.

(Special Orders, No. 213.)

Headquarters of the Army, Adjutant-General's Office,
Washington, September 13, 1889.

Extract 1. By direction of the Acting Secretary of War a board of medical officers, to consist of Maj. John S. Billings, Surgeon; Maj. Washington Matthews, Surgeon, is appointed to convene at the Army Medical Museum, corner of B and Seventh streets, S. W., this city, at 11 o'clock A. M, Tuesday, September 17, 1889, for the consideration of such business as may be brought before it.

* * * * * * * * * * *

By command of
MAJOR-GENERAL SCHOFIELD.
J. C. KELTON,
Adjutant-General.

(Special Orders No. 223.)
Headquarters of the Army, Adjutant-General's Office,
Washington, September 25, 1889.

* * * * * * * * * * *

Extract 2. By direction of the Secretary of War, paragraph 1, Special Orders, No. 213, September 13, 1889, from this office, appointing a board of medical officers to meet in this city on the 17th inst. and heretofore suspended, is revoked.

* * * * * * * * * * *

By command of
MAJOR-GENERAL SCHOFIELD.
J. C. KELTON,
Adjutant-General.

After demanding to know upon what ground such an order could be issued calling for a medical board, the following reply was received:

War Department, Adjutant-General's Office,
Washington, September 25, 1889.

Capt. Geo. A. Armes,
U. S. A. (retired):

Sir—Replying to your letter of the 20th inst., asking "the name of the party who made the request, statement or charge that gave an excuse" for the order issued by the Acting Secretary of War directing you to appear before a medical board for examination, I have the honor to say that as the order mentioned was suspended and did not go into operation and has since been revoked, the Secretary of War declines to enter into an explanation of the reasons for the action of the War Department in this matter.

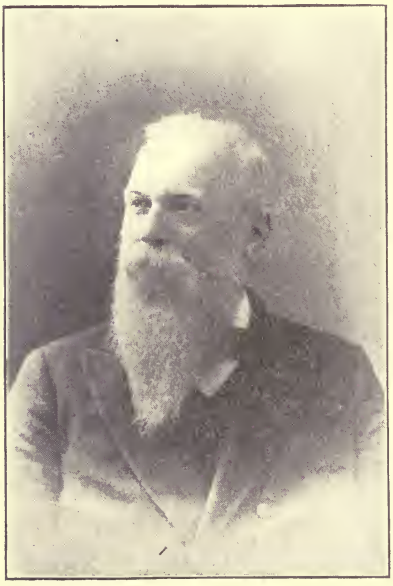
Very respectfully, your obedient servant,
(Signed) J. C. KELTON,
Adjutant-General.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

January 3, 1890.

Closing a very large transaction with Senator Stewart last night, I give the particulars. Some time after being placed on the retired list of the Army, having been very successful in real-estate transactions, and my family being composed of several young children, I thought it would be better to select a few acres of land in the suburbs for a home. While driving around one Sunday morning with several of my children I observed a small house on the Grant road near Tennallytown and drove in the yard, when the owner entertained us. Having done a great deal of engineering work, after surveying the surroundings, I made up my mind that the extension of Connecticut avenue would either come through the ground or very near it. The gentleman informed me that his name was Ellison; that he had been advised by his physician to leave Boston and make his home near the city of Washington in order to save his life, and that three years before he had been brought here an invalid. He purchased twelve acres of land, and with proper care and attention and the advantage of the climate he had recovered his health entirely. Upon asking him if he would sell, he informed me that he had no idea of parting with his property. After exchanging cards, I invited him to call at my office, and within a week or ten days he did so, stating that his family had requested him to sell his property and return home, and that he would let it go for $20,000. We finally closed the transaction at $15,000. I immediately moved my family there and began to improve the property by erecting a windmill, fixing up stables, putting an addition to the house, planting shrubbery, etc., and soon made it a very attractive place. Being anxious to make the road into the city as short as possible, I undertook to have a driveway made down Connecticut avenue to the city. I consulted with owners and neighbors, and soon found it impossible to carry it out by subscription or donation. I then undertook to interest members and Senators and have a bill passed appropriating funds to extend the avenue through to the District line. Failing in that I consulted with many capitalists in regard to buying $2,500,000 worth of land and donating a strip wide enough for the avenue and building and stocking a cable or electric railroad to cost

another million. I was discouraged by most everyone I put the proposition before, many stating that it would be impossible to carry out such a large enterprise, and that I was one hundred years ahead of the time. I made up my mind not to give it up, and, being in the habit of keeping a candle and matches on a little stand at the side of my bed, I made it a rule when thinking of anything of importance during the night to light the candle and make a note of my plans or whatever would come into my mind. One night while I began thinking over the names of many capitalists, I suddenly thought of the name of Senator William Stewart of Nevada, who was the pioneer in the extension of Connecticut avenue years ago and had built the Stewart Castle out in the country, for which he was called crazy by many and looked upon as a man who was wasting his fortune by undertaking to build such a magnificent establishment so far out of town. But it was not long before the avenue came up to his house, and the land that he purchased by the acre sold at the enormous prices of from one to twelve dollars per square foot.



SENATOR STEWART.

I had not seen the Senator for several years, but had known him in a friendly way, and called upon him that evening about 8 o'clock at the Shoreham Hotel. He was engaged with his stenographers in answering a large accumulation of mail, but welcomed and seemed very glad to see me. I told him I would like to have two or three hours of his time in talking over a very important matter, when he looked at his mail, then looked up at me again as if he thought I must have something of great importance to ask for so much of his valuable time. Finally he fixed 11 o'clock, saying that it was not necessary to send up my card, but to come to his room. Upon

my arrival he was dictating his last letter, and I told him that I had a plan to extend Connecticut avenue to the District line and beyond if necessary. He said, "Well, I will be glad to hear your ideas on the subject." I soon explained that if he could arrange to put $2,500,000 in land and $1,000,000 in building and stocking an electric or cable railroad he could clear $10,000,000 or $15,000,000 within fifteen or twenty years. He took his pencil, my maps and plans and began to figure. After two or three hours' work he reminded me that that was the best scheme that had been proposed to him for years, but he could not raise over $100,000 individually. He thought over the names of several of his capitalist friends, and finally stopped at the name of F. G. Newlands, who represented the Sharon estate, and wrote a dispatch suggesting to him that if he would take hold of it we could carry the scheme through. After some little talk on the details and the price of land, an agreement that this must be kept perfectly secret and out of the newspapers was made, and I parted with him at 3 o'clock, with his request that I call at 10 o'clock in the evening.

When I arrived in the evening he produced an answer from Newlands approving of the suggestion and authorized me to go ahead with my plan, and at once wrote a check for $35,000, payable to bearer, telling me to hire my own lawyers, to take title to the property in my own name, deposit all moneys to my own credit and keep his name and Newlands' out of the transaction. The next morning I drew $35,000 from his bank and placed it to my credit, leased a building at 1405 F street, had it nicely furnished, employed my clerks and stenographers and commenced operations on a large scale in a quiet way. It was not long before reporters and outsiders did their best to find out what was going on, who was purchasing such a large amount of property, and I gave out the name of The California Syndicate. Upon the arrival of Mr. Newlands all the money was furnished that was necessary to secure land on and near the line of Connecticut avenue extended, and soon a large force of men were put to work with locomotives and flat cars and the railroad was built to the District line.

We then made the following agreement:

Whereas Isaac Froham and Charles J. Kappler are purchasing and securing options of purchase of certain property outside of Boundary street within the District of Columbia, and are employ-

ing George A. Armes in making such purchases and securing such options; now, therefore,

It is agreed that the compensation of said George A. Armes shall be determined by and dependent upon the success of the enterprise, and that he shall receive as his full compensation 10 per cent. upon the net profits realized from the sales of the property, the purchase of which they shall consummate, such 10 per cent. to be paid as the sales are made. For and in consideration of such compensation said Armes binds himself to attend to all the transactions relating to the purchase and marketing of said property and to hold himself at all times ready to perform such service. This agreement not to affect or interfere with such commissions as may be received by said Armes from the sellers or their agents, such commissions to be retained by said Armes.

GEO. A. ARMES,
ISAAC FROHAM,
CHARLES J. KAPPLER.

Witness:
GEO. B. CLARK.

In order to be correct in carrying out this large transaction I called on a young lawyer, Mr. J. H. Ralston, who was associated with Judge Hillyer, one of the leading and successful real-estate lawyers of the city. Mr. Ralston having carried through a very important real-estate transaction for Mr. McCrarey and Col. R. G. Ingersoll some time before, instilled confidence in me, and I decided that he was the man who could promptly help me in this large enterprise. I also employed another young lawyer, Mr. Edward H. Thomas, at twenty dollars a day to go with me to see the owners of property I had selected to purchase. Upon the closing of each transaction an iron-clad agreement was made, and afterwards proved in several tests where they tried to back out that I was justified in taking the steps I did to make the transactions binding at the time of negotiating.

Soon after these transactions were closed more than five times what the land had cost had been offered for several pieces of property, a company was soon formed called the Chevy Chase Land Co., the Bradley farm was laid out into lots and beautified and quite a large number of houses built. This spot is now Chevy Chase.

As soon as the matter was settled and the secrecy dispensed with the newspapers came out all over the country announcing the enterprise, and the following is an extract from the *Washington Post* of March 2, 1890, headed:

THE KING IN REAL ESTATE.

Col. George A. Armes Takes the Lead in the Business—Some of His Large Sales—His Early Military History and Retirement from the Army—Immense Transactions Negotiated by Him and Handsome Sums Realized Therefrom.

"It has been generally conceded that George A. Armes, U. S. A., retired, has come to the front as one of the leading real-estate brokers of the city, if not justly entitled by his business dealings and heavy transactions to enjoy the title of the Napoleon of his calling. It is known that his operations have been enormous, and his transactions, especially of late, are the heaviest ever reported in the District. Colonel Armes is well known here, although a native of the State of Virginia, where he was born in the year 1844." * * *

January 7, 1890.

Mr. Herman K. Viele, the surveyor, called with me last evening on Senator Stewart and went over the lands purchased, which he is employed to survey. After he had gone the Senator authorized me to close for the 64-acre tract on Pierce Mill road. He also authorized me to pay $2750 cash to Judge S. R. Bond for his ten acres.

January 8, 1890.

Spent most of last evening with Senator Stewart, who authorized me to purchase the Payne tract of forty-seven acres, corner of Grant road and Connecticut avenue extended for $500 per acre.

January 9, 1890.

Last evening Senator Stewart and I closed the transaction with Rev. Dr. Sterett at $700 per acre for his tract near Pierce Mill road. Mr. Frank Earl, my old clerk of Company E, Second New York Artillery, is my guest. He is interested with Senator Jones and Colonel Ingersoll near Mexico, N. Y., in a large transaction.

January 11, 1890.

Senator Stewart drove over the different tracts of land with me today, and is very much pleased with the whole section I have selected to purchase.

January 12, 1890.

Spent over three hours at the Shoreham with the Senator on real-estate matters last evening, and he has decided to take the Bradley place of about 300 hundred acres.

January 13, 1890.

Senator Stewart gave me $2500 today to close the Shoemaker trade.

January 1[illegible], 1890.

Did not leave Senator Stewart until 1 o'clock this A. M. Called on him today at the Capitol, and he authorized me to close for the Noonan tract at $40,000.

January 20, 1890.

I was authorized to telegraph Colonel Ryan $100,000 for sixty acres adjoining the Pierce Mill road property on Connecticut avenue extended.

January 24, 1890.

Spent most of last evening with Senator Stewart, and did not leave him until after 1 this A. M., when he authorized me to close the transaction with Mr. Walbridge. I did so at $500,000 for his tract on Pierce Mill road and Rock creek near Ingleside. Have also been trying to make a deal with Mr. Gates and Mr. Morgan for their property near Grant road.

January 25, 1890.

Senator Stewart kept me in his room at the Shoreham until 3 o'clock this morning going through business matters, and finally authorized me to take fifty acres of the Ryan tract for $100,000.

January 6, 1890.

Senator Stewart and I drove over the ground we have mapped out to purchase. He is very much pleased with the Walbridge and Ingleside tracts, and we partly decided to bring our railroad up Seventeenth street until we can have Washington Heights property condemned in order to make a straight line for the extension of Connecticut avenue.

I made an offer of $100,000 to Capt. J. F. Rogers for his property, sending him a certified check for $5000. To the offer he replied:

War Department, Quartermaster-General's Office,
Washington, January 27, 1890.

Mr. Geo. A. Armes,
No. 1339 F Street, N. W.,
Washington, D. C.:

My Dear Sir—After a conference with Mr. Bullitt, I wish to say that your offer for "Chevy Chase" is declined, and I herewith return you your check for $5000.

Yours truly,
JOHN F. ROGERS.

January 29, 1890.

Was with Senator Stewart until after 12 o'clock last evening, and he gave me instructions to close the Ingleside trade for $300,000, also to purchase the Green and French property. I closed the transaction with Miss French for forty-five acres.

January 30, 1890.

Was with Senator Stewart last evening, and he kept me until after 1 o'clock, authorizing me to purchase the Barr tract on Piney Branch road for $7000 cash; also the Klingle property on Rock Creek and Klingle roads for $129,000.

February 3, 1890.

Spent all of last evening with Senator Stewart, Senator Kellogg and Mr. Francis G. Newlands. The latter drove out with me over the ground we have selected, and he authorized me to take the forty acres from Austin Herr at $66,500.

February 4, 1890.

Last evening met Senator Stewart and Mr. Newlands at the Shoreham, and it was after 2 o'clock this A. M. before we parted. We all decided on carrying the railroad up Seventeenth street and through the Walbridge tract if it will be possible to get the charter. I was also authorized to pay Mr. Eslin $75,000 for his ten acres on Columbia road, and I closed the transaction with him today. Mr. Viele met Senator Stewart and myself last evening at the Shoreham with his maps and plan of the railroad, which appeared satisfactory.

February 7, 1890.

While with Senator Stewart last evening Stellwagen was represented as having made a statement that Ryan had offered to sell his land for $600 per acre. I very promptly contradicted the statement, saying that it was not true, and after a thorough investigation I proved that I had been misrepresented and placed in a false light by said Stellwagen, who seemed to be trying to run me out of the enterprise I am trying to carry out.

February 10, 1890.

Mr. Newlands and Mr. R. Dulany met Senator Stewart and myself at the Shoreham last evening and decided on having a bill of incorporation drafted, in which Mr. Bullitt was also interested, but was not present.

I wrote a letter to Mr. Bullitt asking him to become one of the incorporators of the railroad, to which I received the following:

Philadelphia, February 4, 1890.

Dear Sir—I have yours of the 3d. I have no objection to the use of my name as an incorporator in the bill to establish a cable road running out Seventeenth street and by Klingle road and the line of Connecticut avenue. I am very glad to hear that such a proposition is made, and if we retain Chevy Chase it will be agreeable to me to assist in the enterprise.

Yours truly,

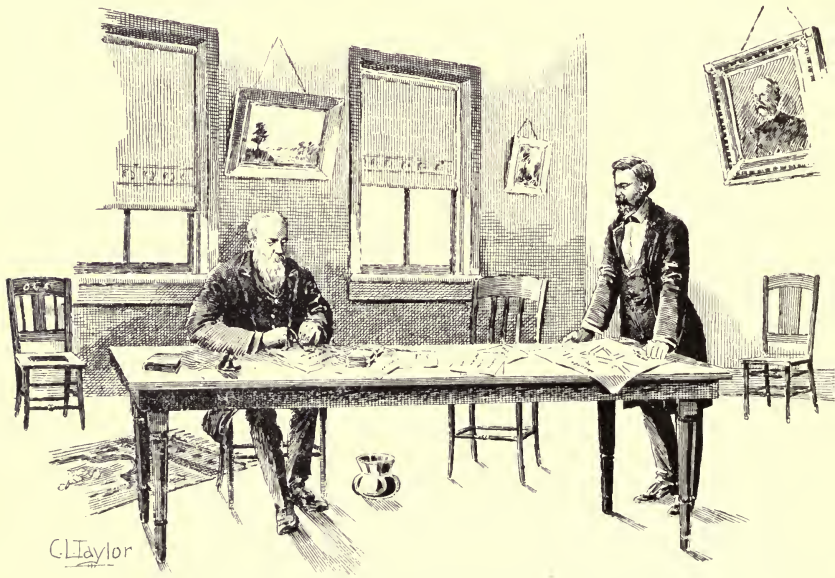
JOHN C. BULLITT.

February 15, 1890.

Mr. Newlands, Senator Kellogg, Rosier Dulany and myself spent most of the evening with Senator Stewart, and we have decided to have a bill introduced in regard to the railroad.

February 19, 1890.

Mr. Morton and I went out to look at property yesterday, and he is becoming very much interested in this city. Mrs. General Hazen (now Mrs. Admiral Dewey) called at my office today and placed her Sixteenth and K street house in my hands for sale or rent.



Discussing Plans with Senator Stewart.

March 1, 1890.

Mr. Wimer backed out of his deal for fifty acres I had purchased at $16,500, a very important matter to me.

March 9, 1890.

It was after 1 o'clock this morning before I left Senator Stewart and Mr. Newlands. Stellwagen has finally worked himself into the good graces of Newlands as one of his advisers., and there appears to be a move on foot to cheat me out of commissions I have earned in many transactions. Closed the sale for the Beall place for $59,000 today; also closed the Bock transaction on the Grant road.

April 10, 1890.

Finally purchased the Wormley tract on Pierce Mill road for $35,000, in which C. C. Lancaster joins with me in taking a half interest.

April 11, 1890.

Mr. B. H. Warder offered me $110,000 for the Busey place on Woodley road.

April 29, 1890.

Having purchased the Wormley place, I have fixed up the house and grounds and moved my family into it. Employed Miss McGruder of Maryland to take charge of the younger children during my wife's absence abroad, where she is preparing to go within the next few days.

May 1, 1890.

Contracted to have thirteen more rooms built as an addition to my house, which will give me twenty-five fine large rooms at Fairfield.

New York City, May 3, 1890.

After breakfast Mr. Earl, Marian and my family went out to Central Park and returned at 3 o'clock P. M., when my wife, Lucy, and daughters Cecily and Ethel, went aboard the steamer, where they have an elegant stateroom and everything necesssary to make them comfortable for their voyage. At 4.30 the steamer pulled out and I threw an old shoe and a lot of rice after it for good luck.

Washington, D. C., May 14, 1890.

My oldest boy, George, was very anxious to ride my running horse, "Messenger," which I purchased from Marshal Lamon, and took the responsibility of riding him without my authority. The horse ran off down the Tennallytown road to Georgetown and from there towards the city, where he slipped while rounding Washington Circle, throwing George off and breaking both of his legs. With the attention of two doctors in splicing his legs I expect him to pull through.

May 16, 1890.

Judge Henry Strong made me an offer of $2500 per year on a ninety-nine-year lease for the Kibby property, and he is going to place a $50,000 building upon it.

August 23, 1890.

While going through the row of six houses I am building a loose board slipped and I fell nine feet on my head and face, which almost killed me, but Dr. Heger, U. S. A., soon had me revived, and I am getting along all right, but it was a close call.

September 4, 1890.

Lucy, Cecily and Ethel arrived in New York last night on The Nevada, and I met them in this city this afternoon. They greatly enjoyed their trip, all being glad to get home, stating there was no place like America, in spite of their interesting journeys through Europe. Lucy did not like the Wormley house, and, as I have the other one completed, we will soon move. The accompanying photograph was taken in London, England.

CECILY H. ARMES.

September 10, 1890.

Had the wagons loaded up with furniture and moved into Fairfield today. We now have twenty-five rooms, and can entertain our friends without trouble.

October 2, 1890.

August Voight, of whom I had purchased a few acres of land on the Nourse road a few days ago, was in my office today explaining about the amount of money he had on hand, showing me his

book, when I remarked that he had only credited me with $360 on the date that I had paid him $3600, and he was thunderstruck, stating that he had given Nelson the money to deposit for him. He requested me to go to the bank with him. It was soon discovered that Nelson had only deposited $360 and had pocketed $3240. C. C. Glover was surprised, and seemed offended at me for hinting that the Nelson transaction was not straightforward, but Mr. Riggs, who is an honest man, immediately looked into the affair and discovered Nelson's crooked transaction and that he had disappeared from the city.

October 9, 1890.

General Grant, Assistant Secretary of War, gave me sixty days' permission to go to New York and any other place I desired in the United States.

Hagerstown, Md., October 20, 1890.

There being a great real-estate boom in this city, quite a number of Washingtonians were invited here to attend the sale of a large number of lots, which sold at enormous prices, and we were handsomely entertained by the citizens. Called on ex-Senator Hamilton and met Mrs. A. R. Appleman and quite a number of friends who reside here.

October 31, 1890.

General Grant drove out with me this afternoon to look at the Klingle property, as he is desirous of investing quite extensively in District property.

Bedford City, Va., November 18, 1890.

I receivd an invitation yesterday from a number of citizens of Bedford City to visit their town, and quite a party of us went up on a special train yesterday evening. We had a grand dinner at the hotel, and a large number of building lots were sold at auction at enormous prices, as this appears to be a regular boom town. A very handsome hotel and several buildings have already been established. Mr. Berry gave me an option on several very fine building lots for thirty days at $10,800.

December 11, 1890.

General Cutcheon and I took a drive, and he has agreed to see General Schofield in regard to my appointment as Brevet Lieutenant-Colonel under the recent act.

December 16, 1890.

Ex-Governor McLane of Maryland, ex-minister to France, and I took a drive around to look at property this afternoon, and he is very much pleased with the Judge Strong house, corner Sixteenth and L streets.

December 31, 1890.

I worked on papers and accounts most of the afternoon, settling up one of the most prosperous years of my life, and in spite of my military troubles and court-martial sentence, which is nothing but a farce, I have cleared over $200,000 in my transactions during the year. Built an addition of thirteen rooms to my main residence, one row of six houses on Howard street and two very fine houses with back buildings on Albemarle street, purchasing a number of pieces of property in the section of Connecticut avenue extended, in order to control it for a good class of people.

The following documents and letters will serve to more fully illustrate the events of this year:

United States Senate,
Washington, D. C., January 26, 1890.

Friend Armes:

I am busy in the Senate every day but Sunday. I would like to take a ride in the country and look over the ground again. Bring all the papers up at once and let Mr. Kappler work on them while we are gone.

Yours truly,
(Signed) Wm. M. Stewart.

Maj. Geo. A. Armes.

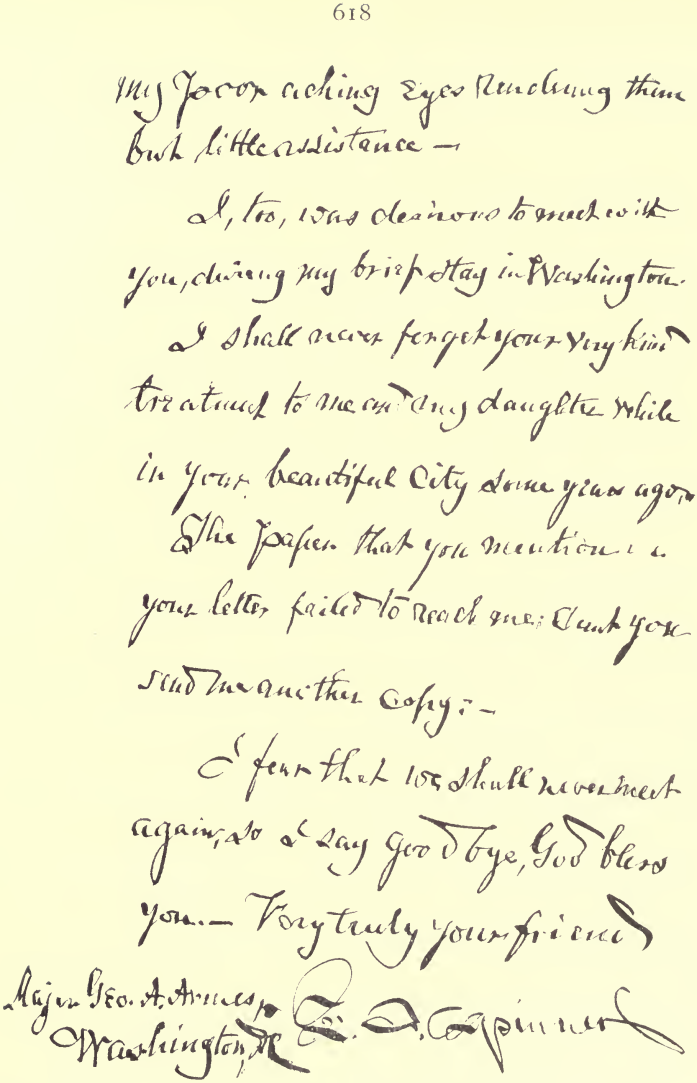
P. S.—Order your horses.

An autograph letter from my old friend, General F. E. Spinner, follows :

Pablo Beach, Florida:
March 21st, 1890.

My dear Sir:

I have all my letters read to me, as the cancer on my face has impaired my eyesight to such a degree, that I cannot see to read. Your nice good letter of the 14th instant, being in large plain type, I did succeed and read it myself. — I can still manage to write, as my fingers have not lost their cunning, and they are the main factors in my writing,



my poor aching eyes rendering them but little assistance —

I, too, was desirous to meet with you, during my brief stay in Washington.

I shall never forget your very kind treatment to me and my daughter while in your beautiful City some years ago.

The paper that you mention in your letter failed to reach me; Cant you send me another copy: —

I fear that we shall never meet again, so I say good bye, God bless you. — Very truly your friend

Major Geo. A. Armes,
Washington, D.C.

[illegible]

The following is the last letter I ever received from the writer:

Jacksonville, Fla., April 18, 1890.

My Dear Colonel:

The delay in replying to yours of the 8th inst. was on account of your addressing me to Pablo, and the letter had to be sent back to Jacksonville, where I now am. The paper was received, read to me, and I enjoyed it very much.

I have no hope of ever seeing Washington again. My eyesight is now so impaired that I have to employ an amanuensis.

Blind as I am I still am able to sign myself,

Very truly yours,

(Signed) F. E. SPINNER.

Washington, D. C., April 21, 1890.

To the Adjutant-General U. S. A.,

Washington, D. C.:

Sir—I have the honor to request that permission be granted me to visit New York, Boston, El Paso, San Antonio, Texas, and such other points as are within the bounds of the United States. Deemed necessary for me to go for the next ninety days in connection with business and private matters.

Very respectfully, etc.,

(Signed) GEO. A. ARMES.

(First endorsement.)

War Department, Adjutant-General's Office,

April 21, 1890.

Respectfully returned to Capt. Geo. A. Armes, U. S. A., retired.

The Secretary of War regards so much of the within letter as refers to "such other limits as are within the bounds of the United States" as too indefinite, and he desires the points which Captain Armes desires to visit to be specifically stated.

(Signed) C. MCKEEVER,

Acting Adjt.-Gen.

My Children.

CHAPTER XXIX.

January 1, 1891.

Being under suspension by my sentence, approved by the President, fixing Washington city as my place of confinement, with fifty miles limit for exercise, and deprived of wearing my uniform as an officer of the Army, it was impossible for me to join my comrades at the War Department this morning and march to the White House to meet the President.

Judge Stewart greatly enjoyed calling with me. He is a candidate for a very prominent position here, and expects his appointment soon.

January 22, 1891.

When about to leave the reception at Senator Stanford's this afternoon he stated that Mrs. Stanford would like to see me on business. She wanted me to fix a time when I could go with her to look at property, saying she had decided to either lease or purchase a larger house, and we fixed 12 o'clock tomorrow.

January 23, 1891.

Mrs. Stanford postponed going out until 2 o'clock, when the Senator joined us, and we went to look at quite a number of houses. Finally deciding that the Corcoran house would suit better than anything looked over, I offered it at thirteen dollars a square foot, which made the cost $400,000. After several hours' inspection, they decided to take it, noting down the many alterations necessary to make it suitable to receive in.

January 24, 1891.

Met Mr. Dwight of New York, who employs the Governor of Dakota as an overseer of his farm and interests in that State. He and Colonel Flaggler and I spent several hours together. I received a note from F. G. Newlands backing out of his proposition to take an interest in the Judson patent, in which I have just taken $5000 worth of stock. Senator and Mrs. Stanford are very much disappointed in not being able to secure the Corcoran

house. Mr. McLean and I both advised them not to take it because the trustees raised the property to $15.00 per foot when they saw Mr. Stanford wanted it, which would make a difference of $50,000 or $60,000 in the purchase price. Gen. E. M. Beale, who is one of my friends, agreed with me that Senator Stanford should not be required to pay the additional price when it had been recently offered at thirteen dollars.

January 26, 1891.

General Beale and I called on Senator Stanford. Not being able to get the trustees to let the Corcoran property go for thirteen dollars, the Senator decided to re-lease the house he now occupies and build an addition on the vacant lot for a dining and ballroom.

January 28, 1891.

Lucy and I spent a portion of last evening with Mrs. Senator Spooner and Mrs. Stanford. I met Mr. E. B. Grandin, one of the large capitalists and business men of Pennsylvania, whom I drove around the city to look at property this afternoon. He is a bright and intelligent business man whom I am very anxious to have locate here.

February 13, 1891.

Spent most of last evening at the Arlington with Senator Squire of Washington, and today called on Colonel Berrett, a friend of Governor McLane, who is assisting me in trying to secure a building lot for the ex-Governor. Mr. Taverner and I called on General Hooker of Mississippi, who accepted an invitation to deliver an address on the 23d.

February 24, 1891.

Lucy and I attended the reception at Lincoln Hall given to the members of the Junior Order American Mechanics. Among those who delivered addresses except myself were General Hooker, Senator Stewart and General Grosvenor. After the speeches we attended the reception at Professor Cable's, where Mrs. President Harrison read over the names of the list of daughters of the

association, and after singing and a few speeches took place, refreshments were served. Among those present were Senator Faulkner, Professor Goode, Captain Vanderbilt and a large number of the oldest inhabitants and first society of the city.

February 26, 1891.

Have been very busy in real-estate matters, buying a number of pieces of property and improving the grounds around Fairfield, and have not neglected to visit the War Department, General Schofield and others in relation to my brevet promotion, which I earned and am entitled to.

Astor House, New York, March 7, 1891.

Lawrence Sands and others joined me at the depot last evening. We came over here on the invitation of Professor Boynton, the inventor of the bicycle railroad, in which I am largely interested, and were taken over to his road in carriages, the car being put in motion. It proves to be a success. Col. J. H. Wood of Lowville, N. Y., took great interest in it.

December 31, 1891.

During the year I have continued the streets through Armesley Park and donated them to the District, and have sold Mr. C. C. Glover a portion of the park fronting on the Tennallytown road. Having gone largely in debt for the purchase of property in the vicinity of Connecticut avenue, I concluded to cut down my expenses and notes by selling off a portion of my property. I have reduced my notes from $165,000, which were drawing 6 per cent., to $90,000, which I hope to be able to clear by next year. I am sorry to say I have not succeeded in getting my brevet bill through, although I have given a great deal of my time at the War Department in trying to get favorable action. A portion of the same old ring connected with Graham and Belknap being in power, have managed to prevent it from going through in my favor.

Mr. Brady invited us to his gallery, where he made the pictures shown on opposite page :

My Family.

Having been invited to address you upon the past, present and future of the city of Washington, capital of the United States, I cannot as an American citizen decline.

The history of the city has been so often written and is so familiar to all that a retrospective glance will suffice for the past. From what I have gathered from Congressional and other records, the question of the location of the national capital was agitated very soon after the close of the Revolution, and several places were considered, but none selected. The Continental Congress had been compelled to hold its sessions in eight different places, and was finally driven to Princeton, N. J., because of interruptions by a mob of turbulent soldiers, who had not been promptly controlled by the local authorities. That is said to have been one of the principal reasons why Philadelphia was not chosen as the permanent seat of Government, and it also had great influence in locating it outside of the jurisdiction of any State Government.

On December 23, 1784, a resolution was adopted by Congress for the appointment of a committee to lay out a district on the Delaware river near the Lower Falls for "a Federal town," in which should be erected "a Federal house for Congress and houses for the President and the then Cabinet Department." An attempt was at that time made to substitute Georgetown, but failed.

No further action seems to have been taken in the matter until May 10, 1787, when an effort was made in Congress (then sitting in New York) to have Government buildings erected in Georgetown, which also failed. At a session of Congress held in Philadelphia in the summer of 1787 it was provided that the seat of Government should not be located there, as it might cause a clash between the Federal and State, or local, jurisdiction. James Madison introduced a clause, which was adopted, providing for a district ten miles square over which the General Government should retain exclusive jurisdiction. Under and by virtue of the act of Congress there were appointed certain commissioners with power to locate on the banks of the Potomac river a place to be known as the District of Columbia.

A part of this district had been ceded by the State of Maryland and a part by the State of Virginia. Since the establishment of the District that part ceded by Virginia has been re-ceded to the State, and now the lands comprised within the District of Columbia are all from what was formerly the State of Maryland. The first three Commissioners appointed to act with President Washington in running lines, surveying and laying out the Federal Territory were Gen. Thomas Johnson, Hon. Daniel Carroll of Maryland and Dr. David Stewart of Virginia.

The Commission entered upon its duties on the 15th day of April, 1791, and laid the first boundary stone of the District at Jones' Point in Virginia after the Masonic form. The Commissioners named the district the Territory of Columbia, which name it retained several years. They also named the "Federal city" to be founded, Washington.

After the lines had been run designating the particular territory (to be known as the Territory of Columbia), the city of Washington was first surveyed and laid out by Maj. Pierre Charles L'Enfant, a French engineer, who had come to this country in the year 1777, served in the French contingent of the Revolutionary War, and remained in his adopted country when the French troops returned to their native land.

L'Enfant was a renowned French scholar and civil engineer, and was educated in Europe. He laid out the city of Washington in streets and avenues and distributed the public buildings in different parts of the city, so that two things might be accomplished in case of an attempt on the part of a military force to capture the city. First, he made different common centers, with avenues leading thereto in such a manner that blocking all streets and avenues, part of the city could be made a place of safety, wherein the other part might be occupied by belligerent troops, and so constructed the streets and avenues that a cannon could be placed at these common centers and sweep the enemy in every direction. This was the original idea in laying out the city of Washington

in the manner it is now. Being no longer danger of war, no longer danger that belligerent troops will ever march through our streets and turn upon our public buildings, it is conceded that his military idea makes the prettiest landscape and park that it is possible to plan, and the common centers of that day for military protection are today things of beauty that will give joy to Washington's inhabitants and visitors for all times.

The duty of the Commissioners and President in laying out the Federal city and acquiring title to the lands therein was both long and arduous. The meetings were held at the Suter's Tavern. Finally, after a great deal of toil and trouble, the principal proprietors of the land signed the following agreement, and it was recorded by the Commissioners April 12, 1791:

"We, the subscribers, in consideration of the great benefits we expect to derive from having the Federal city laid out upon our lands, do hereby agree and bind ourselves, heirs, executors and administrators to convey in trust to the President of the United States or Commissioners, or such person or persons as he shall appoint, by good and sufficient deeds, in fee-simple, the whole of our lands which he may think proper to include within the lines of the Federal city for the purposes and on the conditions following:"

Here follows the agreement to lay out the land comprised in the Federal city into lots, blocks, parks and public gardens, and the proprietors whose lands were taken for the public use were to receive a compensation at the rate of sixty-six and two-thirds ($66⅔) dollars per acre, to be paid by the public, but to receive nothing for the streets.

The first persons selected by the President as trustees were Thomas Beall and John Mackall Gantt. The Commissioners commenced immediately after the laying out of the city to sell lots, a portion of which became the property of the Government for the purpose of establishing public buildings. By act of Congress the city was to be ready for use of the Government officials in 1800, nine years from the time of the passage of the act, during which time Congress was in Philadelphia. On October 13, 1792, the corner-stone of the President's house was laid, and on September 18, 1793, that of the Capitol.

The account written in 1800 by John Cotton Smith, at that time a member of Congress from Connecticut, was as follows: "Our approach to the city was accompanied with sensations not easily described. One wing of the Capitol had been erected, which, with the President's house, a mile distant from it, both constructed with white sandstone, were shining objects in dismal contrast with the scene around them. Instead of recognizing the avenues and streets portrayed on the plan of the city, not one was visible, unless we except a road with two buildings on each side of it called the New Jersey avenue.

"The Pennsylvania avenue leading, as laid down on paper, from the Capitol to the Presidential mansion, was nearly the whole distance a deep morass covered with elder bushes, which were cut through to the President's house, and near Georgetown a block of houses had been erected which bore the name of the 'Six Buildings.' There were also two other blocks, consisting of two or three dwelling-houses in different directions, and now and then an isolated wooden habitation. The intervening spaces, and indeed the surface of the city generally, being covered with scrub-oak bushes on the higher grounds, and on the marshy soil either trees or some sort of shrubbery. The desolate aspect of the place was not a little augmented by a number of unfinished edifices at Greenleaf's Point, and on an eminence a short distance from it, commenced by an individual whose name they bore, but the state of whose funds compelled him to abandon them. There appeared to be but two habitations really comfortable in all respects within the bounds of the city, one of which belonged to Daniel Carroll, and the other to Notley Young. The roads in every direction were muddy and unimproved; in short, it was a new settlement."

The Government took possession of the city in October, 1800, at that time a city of 3000 inhabitants. It assumed jurisdiction of the District of Columbia in 1801.

The city of Washington was incorporated by an act of Congress on May 3, 1802. After a few years Congress gave the citizens a right to elect their Mayor, and a municipal form of government was continued until 1871, when Congress repealed the city charter and established a Territorial form of government, which remained until 1874. Since that time Commissioners have been appointed by the President to have charge of the District, under the supervision of Congress, which was the original plan adopted for the government of the city.

The improvements in the city of Washington were only such as necessity required to continue it the capital city, or as its business interests demanded, from the time I have mentioned up to the commencement of the Civil War. It was without imposing structures, with limited sidewalks and pavements.

At the close of that bloody struggle, which had seen Washington nearly captured several times by the Confederate forces, it had passed through terrible scenes of doubt, dread, almost despair, when the martyred President had been stricken down by the assassin's hand, and when questions of the hour were, Can the Government survive the great shock it has received from the effects of the Rebellion and the assault of the assassin?

Improvements of every character had been neglected, the streets and houses were in a dilapidated condition, as the fevered excitement had so taken hold of the people that the affairs connected with the upbuilding and growth of the city had been en-

tirely neglected. Since the restoration of peace there has been a constant and continuous growth, improvement year by year, until within the past three years it has reached that period known in Western phraseology of their rapidly-growing towns and cities as a "boom."

Capitalists seeking investments in the East have found a profitable place in Washington. The salubrious climate and natural attractions in the way of scenery, when connected with the magnificent parks, boulevards, public department buildings, private mansions, residences of the Chief Magistrate of the nation, the Capitol house, in which its laws are enacted and its high courts decide the most important events in the world's litigation. These things, connected with a society that they create, with the society of the world's most talented, wealthy, beautiful and accomplished sons and daughters, who come here from all parts of the world to visit our city and view with wonder its magnificent attractions, have made this the "Paris of America," and doubtless in the near future our city will lead the world in all things which make life secure, luxurious and charming.

It is said that future events can be judged by the past. If we look upon the city of Washington a quarter of a century hence and judge by the improvements it will make from now to then, the cities of ancient grandeur will pale into insignificance before her. The swinging gardens of Babylon have been the wonder and admiration of the world for ages, but Washington will present a grander beauty in her public parks and private gardens when all is completed.

New York has been, and will probably continue to be, the metropolis in population and trade. Chicago, with its wonderful and restless business capacity, has become the pride of the West, and will ever be known as the mammoth city of the Lakes. Washington will not stand with them in numerical order of population, but the overflow of wealth and beauty from these great business centers have given the social advantages to Washington, and our society consists of some of their most wealthy and talented citizens. Although other cities have colleges surpassing those in Washington, but the hopes and desires of its citizens will be realized, and it will stand first in the land as an educational center. As a political center our city will always stand pre-eminent, for here Congress meets and the laws governing our country are enacted. It has already been shown to be the most fitting place in the country for annual meetings of societies or organizations, and as there is no city which equals Washington for its beautiful drives and hospitality, visitors are always welcomed here.

Baltimore has been styled the Monumental City of America. Washington is equally entitled to that appellation. There has been recently one of the finest monuments in America erected in

honor of Lafayette, which has been placed in one of her picturesque parks, and other monuments which are in contemplation will far surpass any we have yet had. The monument erected to the "Father of His Country" is a magnificent obelisk of marble, 555 feet high, and before the end of another century a monument as grand should be erected to the memory of the discoverer of this country, Christopher Columbus. Such a memorial might wisely take the shape of a mammoth bridge spanning the Potomac (that most majestic of rivers) from the capital city to the National Cemetery at Arlington (which will ever be remembered as the home of one of America's most talented citizens and soldiers, Robert E. Lee), where sleep some of our illustrious dead, who gave their lives for their country, and whose deeds for the advancement of life, liberty and happiness will ever be revered, making Arlington a Westminster Abbey.

War Department, Adjutant-General's Office,
Washington, February 25, 1891.

Capt. George A. Armes,
U. S. Army (retired):

Sir—Referring to your communication of the 18th inst. requesting permission to go beyond the limits fixed in General Court-Martial Orders, No. 31, June 7, 1889, from this office, I have the honor to inform you that the Secretary of War authorizes you to visit New York city, N. Y.; Boston, Mass., and Charleston, S. C., at such times as you may select within the next ninety days.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,
R. Williams,
Asst. Adjutant-General.

Washington, D. C., April 20, 1891.

Hon. Joseph R. Hawley,
2130 I street, N. W.:

General—Will you be kind enough to inform me at your earliest convenience whether or not you applied to the President, the Secretary of War or General Schofield or suggested that a court-martial should be ordered in my case in relation to the Beaver matter. This information is desired in connection with some very important matters which may develop in the future.

Very respectfully,
G. A. Armes.

Senate Chamber,
Washington, April 23, 1891.

Dear Major:

In reply to your note of April 20, I can only say that I have no recollection at this moment concerning what I said as to bringing

you before a court-martial for assaulting Governor Beaver. I am sure that I did not seek the President or Secretary or General Schofield for the purpose of suggesting a court, for it must have been evident to everyone, yourself included, that a court was inevitable.

Yours truly,

J. R. HAWLEY.

Office of George A. Armes,
Real Estate Broker, Notary-Public,
Washington, D. C., May 27, 1891.

Hon. E. W. Halford,
Washington, D. C.:

Dear Colonel—I wish you would let me know as soon as convenient what the prospects are of my unjust sentence being remitted on or before the 1st of July as it is a very important matter to me under the circumstances, in order that I may make my future plans.

I have written to General Schofield about the same, but have learned he is out of the city. I had a short conversation with General Grant (who is acting Secretary of War) the other evening, who said he would talk over the matter with you. My future plans may depend on prompt action in this matter. I hardly think it is necessary to say more at present.

Yours truly,

(Signed) GEO. A. ARMES.

War Department, Adjutant-General's Office,

Capt. George A. Armes,
U. S. Army (retired):

Sir—Referring to your letter of the 10th inst. requesting that your limits be extended so as to enable you to visit Boston, Mass.; Portsmouth, N. H.; El Paso, Texas, and such other places as you may deem proper within said bounds during the next ninety days, I have the honor to inform you that the Acting Secretary of War approves so much of your request as relates to your visiting Boston, Portsmouth and El Paso, but declines to authorize you to visit such other places as you may deem proper.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

J. C. KELTON,
Adjutant-General.

Office of Geo. A. Armes, Real Estate Broker,
1405 F Street, Washington, D. C., June 15, 1891.

To the Honorable Secretary of War
(Through the Adjutant-General U. S. A.):

Sir—In relation to your communication of the 12th inst. declining to authorize me to visit such other places as I may deem

proper within the bounds of El Paso, Texas; Portsmouth, N. H., and Boston, Mass., and by approving of my visiting the above-named places, I do not fully understand how I could reach said points without stopping somewhere between them unless I went in a balloon which could land me carefully at each place; therefore, in order that the Honorable Secretary may fully understand my object in mentioning in my application "such places as I may deem proper to visit within said bounds" I desire to call your attention to the fact that my business is of such a nature it may be necessary for me to meet people in Wheeling, W. Va., or Richmond and many places I cannot well mention in an application.

Viewing the construction of your authority of June 12 to leave the city, I feel I could not stop at any place except those mentioned without making myself liable to charges; therefore I will be pleased to know whether there is any objection to my stopping over or visiting such places as I may deem proper within the said limits.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,
(Signed) GEO. A. ARMES.

War Department, Adjutant-General's Office,
Washington, June 17, 1891.

Capt. George A. Armes,
U. S. Army (retired):

Sir—I am instructed by the Secretary of War to say in reply to your letter of the 15th inst. that the authority granted you in letter of the 12th inst. from this office to visit Boston, Mass.; Portsmouth, N. H., and El Paso, Texas, of course includes authority to visit all the places on the direct route of travel between these places, and also places in the immediate vicinity of each of the cities named, but not such other places as you may deem proper within the bounds of Boston, Portsmouth and El Paso, for that might be construed as authorizing you to travel over the greater portion of the United States.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,
J. C. KELTON,
Adjutant-General.

War Department, Office of the Assistant Secretary,
Washington, D. C., July 30, 1891.

Sir—I take pleasure in informing you that the President has directed the unexpired portion of the sentence of the court-martial in your case to be remitted, and the same is remitted by order of the President.

Very respectfully,
L. A. GRANT,
Acting Secretary of War.

CHAPTER XXX.

January 1, 1892.

Ethel and I spent most of last evening with General and Mrs. Williams and their daughters and Mrs. Madison Cutts, who entertained us by the most brilliant conversation. Was up bright and early this morning in full-dress uniform for the first time in over two years, my sentence having been remitted during the year, allowing me to wear it. After calling at the War Department, we marched in procession to the White House, where we shook hands with the President and others usually assembled there, among them Mrs. General Berdan, Miss Bachelder, Miss Lincoln, General Williams, Mrs. Drew, Colonel Robinson, the Rutherfords, Clephanes, Carusis, Chaplain Van Wyck and many other old friends whom I had not seen for years.

January 2, 1892.

I made my last call at Mrs. Senator Davis', where we met a large number of friends, and were entertained by the hostess in her usual elegant style. We then met General Miles and Captain Maus at the Shoreham, where we spent several hours together talking over old war times, and did not part until after 1 o'clock this A. M. Met Mr. Shear at the Shoreham, who decided to purchase the lot corner Sixteenth and P streets for $47,000.

January 8, 1892.

Met Hon. Stephen B. Elkins, Secretary of War, at the Normandy this A. M., and he accompanied me to look at Judge Strong's K street house and several others, and authorized me to offer $10,000 a year for a lease. We passed the deeds today from Mr. Gray to Mrs. Shear for the lot corner Sixteenth and P streets. I took the responsibility of having the deed made out to his wife, instead of to his father and mother as he had directed, as I felt it would be better in the end that she should hold some property in her name in case anything should happen to him in his large transactions in stocks.

January 19, 1892.

Spent a portion of last evening at the Arlington with Senator and Mrs. Vilas, and then called on Mr. and Mrs. E. V. Smalley, who introduced me to Mrs. Senator Saunders of Montana, whose husband is so well and favorably known.

January 21, 1892.

Met Russell Harrison at the Arlington last evening, who introduced me to his friend, Mr. Delmar of Idaho, who is splurging in wealth, having made some six or eight millions in his mining enterprises, and who expects to find a wife here in the city before leaving.

January 22, 1892.

Senator and Mrs. Gibson invited me to dine with Governor Groome, Colonel Merrick, Mr. Dean and six or eight others at the Corcoran Hotel last evening. After drinking to the Senator's health and congratulating him upon his election, we parted at 1 o'clock this A. M.

Fairfield, September 7, 1892.

I have met a great many officials since I last wrote in my diary, visiting watering-places and transacting a large amount of business. Captain and Mrs. Beck and Lieutenant Freeman of the Army are over here from Baltimore. I took them driving in my tea-cart through the Monument Grounds and out to the Soldiers' Home. Invited Mrs. Beck to my house as my guest.

December 31, 1892.

Although this has not been a very prosperous year, I have no cause to complain, considering that I have reduced my expenses and hold on to a large amount of property which, in the course of time, will be very valuable, and more so as improvements are made in the extension of Connecticut avenue. It is a great deal of satisfaction to feel that myself, wife and all the children are enjoying good health and are ready to commence a new year tomorrow well and in good shape.

The following communications are appended in chronological order:

The following is a copy of a letter of transmittal with a birthday present of a watch and chain to my daughter Ethel:

My Dear Big Baby Girl, Ethel M. Armes:

I only present this little watch as a small token of remembrance, hoping that when you seek the time from it your mind will be impressed with the fact that its donor is proud of his little daughter, and it is his wish that she will always conduct herself in such a way that he will contnue his devotion and admiration for her and always love her as an affectionate father ever can a child who is good and true.

Your affectionate father,
(Signed) G. A. A.

National Soldiers' Home, Virginia,
May 23, 1892.

Maj. George A. Armes:

Sir—As you are chairman of arrangements in our organization, Second New York Heavy Artillery, and as I am on that committee, I will state that I cannot meet you on June 6, but I will suggest that our regimental colors be brought to Washington, as I suppose we will take part in the G. A. R. parade, as I suppose the most of the survivors are members of that organization. Every communication from you or from any of the committee will be promptly answered.

MONTGOMERY MILLER,
Assistant Engineer.

RECEPTION TO SECOND NEW YORK.

(From *Post* of September 25, 1892.)

Maj. G. A. Armes of this city gave a reception at his house on Connecticut avenue extended Tuesday night to his old regiment, the Second New York Heavy Artillery. They were delightfully entertained by his family. His daughters, Misses Cecily and Ethel, with their music and recitations, made the old comrades enjoy themselves to the fullest extent. Among those present were Capt. C. L. Smith, Sergeant Musson, First Lieut. G. W. Lacy, First Lieut. G. T. Bushnell, Orderly Sergt. A. J. Birdsall, M. Miller, P. Countryman, Bugler George Gracey, E. D. Stone, E. Bens, H. Davis, S. Miller, W. F. Wakefield, Hon. J. L. Briggs of Missouri, F. E. Dykeman, Capt. J. J. Williamson, W. Hector Gale, R. J. Clark, D. W. Osburn, Frank H. Burr, Capt. F. Brooks and others.

CHAPTER XXXI.

December 31, 1893.

I have passed a very busy year. On the 1st of January met in uniform at the War Department and marched over to the President's house with the Army officers assembled there, shaking hands with the President and Cabinet ladies and meeting old friends as usual whom I had not seen for years, after which I made the usual calls on the Cabinet and my citizen friends. Just before the inauguration of Mr. Cleveland, on the 4th of March, I was appointed on the staff as an aide to Gen. Martin T. McMahon, who was made Grand Marshal for the occasion. On February 25 received the list of aides, who took an active part on the 4th of March, inauguration of the President, from the Capitol to the White House, in one of the worst rain and hail storms I can ever remember of witnessing here, many aides being obliged to retire before the termination of the procession.

Col. William Cody (Buffalo Bill), who was also an aide, remained with General McMahon and myself to the last. Leopard, the Arabian stallion presented to General Grant by the Khedive of Egypt, was turned over to me to ride on this occasion by Gen. Edward Beale. Everything passed off successfully in spite of the terrible storm, and the parade was announced as a grand success.

As few are aware of how General Beale came in possession of that Arabian stallion, it may be interesting to give the particulars. While General Grant was on his tour around the World the Khedive was very anxious to do something for him, and selected two of the finest-bred and handsomest Arabian stallions in his dominions, tendering them to the ex-President. After figuring the expense of getting his horses to this country, General Grant declined the present, with a polite note saying that he had no way of getting them shipped to America. Shortly afterwards, meeting General Beale, who was minister to Austria, he mentioned the circumstances to him, when he reminded General Grant that such fine-bred horses could not be purchased with money, and that if he would agree to give him one of them on their arrival in this country he would pay expenses of shipment for both. General Grant agreed to the proposition, immediately dispatching one of

his party to the Khedive with the information that he had discovered a way of getting the horses to America, and would gladly accept them. After their arrival here one was sent to Missouri and the other retained by General Beale, who was minister to Russia at the time of General Grant's tour around the world.

The following is one of the cards sent to each member of General McMahon's staff:

General Committee.	*Executive Committee.*
James G. Berrett, Chairman.	James L. Norris, Chairman.
Alex. Porter Morse, Secretary.	J. Fred Kelley, Secretary.
Charles G. Glover, Treasurer.	Wm. Cranch McIntire, Cor. Sec.

Inaugural Ceremonies, Headquarters Grand Marshal,
Washington, D. C., February, 1893.

Maj. George A. Armes:

Sir—I am directed by General Corbin to request that you report to him by return mail the probable date of your arrival in this city and your address while here; also that you will report and register your arrival at General McMahon's headquarters.

General McMahon's headquarters will be at Room 243, War Department (Colonel Corbin's office) until March 2, and at 1425 New York avenue on and after March 3. Sash, saddle-cloth, etc., for aides will be ready at 1425 New York avenue on March 2.

Respectfully,

(Signed) J. T. French, Jr.,
First Lieut., Fourth Artillery, Aide.

It having been reported to me that Governor Beaver was endeavoring to prevent my appointment on the staff of the Grand Marshal, I sent him a letter on February 7 to find out the truth of the report, receiving the following reply:

Bellefonte, Pa., February 11, 1893.

Capt. George A. Armes,
1405 F Street, Washington, D. C.:

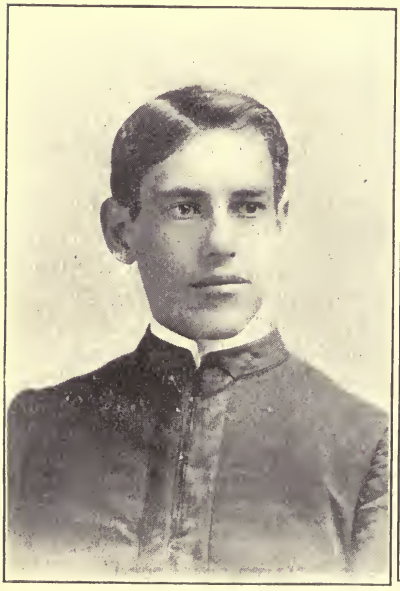
Dear Sir—Your letter of the 7th inst. was received by me this morning on my return home after several days of absence. I have nothing whatever to do with the exercises attending the inauguration of Hon. Grover Cleveland as President of the United States on the 4th of March next. I have not been consulted by anyone upon the subject, nor have I directly or indirectly said or done anything in connection with the exercises and ceremonies attending that event. In fact, your letter is the first intimation which I have had of a personal kind that there is to be such a

ceremony. I regret that an unfounded report has caused you any uneasiness whatever. I have never had the slightest desire to do you any injury in any possible way, and if I had ever had, such a disposition would have long since passed, your letter being necessary to recall you even to mind.

Very respectfully yours,

James A. Beaver

I have not been idle during the past year, trying to secure my appointment as Brevet Lieutenant-Colonel. Have called on the Secretary of War and the General of the Army on a number of occasions and written a large number of letters, highly endorsed, but having failed to receive justice, do not propose to give up trying.



GEORGE KERR ARMES.

OSCAR ST. JOHN ARMES.

CHAPTER XXXII.

January 1, 1894.

Dressed in full uniform this morning. Met many of my old Army officer friends at the War Department and marched to the White House at 11.20 with General Schofield and staff in the lead. Shook hands with Mr. and Mrs. Cleveland. Afterwards made the usual calls on my citizen friends.

Gordonsville, Va., January 2, 1894.

Spent most of last evening with Mr. and Mrs. Wheeler at the Shoreham, and after attending to some things at the office accepted the invitation of Senator Charles J. Faulkner to attend his wedding at Hampton, Va. I left on the 11 P. M. train for Hampton, and am now waiting to change cars at this place.

Fortress Monroe, Va., January 3, 1894.

After waiting nearly three hours at Gordonsville last evening, I boarded the Richmond train, arriving here at 8 o'clock this A.

HON. C. J. FAULKNER.

MRS. FAULKNER.

M. Met Senator Faulkner at the "Hygeia," and he invited me to dine at his table with his family. At 4 P. M. we all dressed ready for the wedding, which took place at 5 P. M. at the church. His bride, Miss Whiting, was attended by eight bridesmaids, who were as beautiful girls as could be found in the country. They were: The Misses May Faulkner, daughter of Judge E. Boyd Faulkner; Elsie and May Love, daughters of Dr. Love, of Winchester, Va.; Amelia Pearson, of Kentucky; Nannie Watkin, Annie Chisman and Lucy Tabb, all of Hampton, Va.; and May Phillips, best girl, daughter of Col. Phillips, of Hampton, Va. I never saw a bride lovelier than Miss Whiting. Extra police had been stationed outside and ropes placed near the church to keep back the crowd which had assembled from the surrounding country to witness the ceremonies. After the wedding Colonel Whiting gave a grand reception at his house. A caterer from Baltimore supplied the guests with everything the market afforded, and no grander wedding with more distinguished participants ever took place in Eastern Virginia. Senator Faulkner appeared like a young man of twenty-five.

Washington, January 7, 1894.

After dinner met Jefferson M. Levy (now a member of Congress) of New York at the Arlington, who invited Mr. Gardiner and myself to dine with him.

January 12, 1894.

Quite a number of parties called today in relation to real estate. Had quite a long interview with General Jeffreys in relation to his son-in-law, Col. William L. Brown of New York, who expects to lease or purchase Vice-President Morton's house, provided he is elected to Congress.

January 22, 1894.

I have spent some time with Mr. O. D. Barret, General Butler's attorney and partner, from whom I tried to secure an option on the Great Falls water rights, about twenty miles from this city on the Potomac river, for an electric plant which I am trying to establish there; but General Butler declined unless I paid a large sum.

January 26, 1894.

Professor Brown of the National Observatory had quite a long interview with me at the Arlington this afternoon in relation to the Great Falls property. Mr. Orth and Mr. Radford are interested also.

January 29, 1894.

Had quite an interview with Senator C. H. Gibson and Mr. F. G. Newlands in relation to fixing the road or new street from Connecticut avenue to Grant road. Called on Mrs. Hicks this afternoon, and had a very brilliant reception. She looked as young as ever, and reminded me of our meeting at Saratoga some years ago, when she wrote for the press under the name of Sophie Sparkle.

February 7, 1894.

Have been engaged most of the day securing signatures from property-owners for permission to carry a street railroad up Seventeenth street and connect it with the Chevy Chase and Connecticut avenue extension.

February 15, 1894.

After dinner last evening I attended the Second Corps meeting at Willard's Hall, General Batchelder presiding. Met Colonel Smith and many other old comrades.

GEN. RICHARD N. BATCHELDER.

February 22, 1894.

Attended the meeeting of the Sons of the American Revolution today, where we elected Inspector-General Breckinridge president.

March 17, 1892.

Had a long interview with Senator Gibson today, who, with the District commissioners, has agreed to assist me in trying to get the bill reported in relation to carrying Albemarle street through to Grant road.

March 29, 1894.

I went to my office in spite of suffering from rheumatism, meeting Mr. W. B. Moses and his attorney, Job Barnard, who handed me his check for $4000.

On Danville Train En Route to Florida,

April 4, 1894.

Having made arrangements with my friend, Mr. Jones, to take care of the children during our absence, Lucy and I took the 5 P. M. train for Florida, where we expect to remain a short time.

Jacksonville, April 5, 1894.

This is a lovely city, Lucy being very much pleased with the surroundings. We have elegant rooms at the St. James, and after breakfast today I hired a buggy, driving all around the country. Called on Mr. Stockton and drove out to Dr. A. O. Bliss' beautiful residence, where we were presented with a number of fine oranges. He is one of the successful business men of Washington, owner of "Our Native Herbs," a medicine that has proven of great value.

August 7, 1894.

Lucy was very much pleased with the Ponce de Leon Hotel at St. Augustine, and we obtained a number of trophies from the old settlers and the Spaniards, who have their stores filled with curiosities. Went through the old fort and garrison.

Washington, D. C., April 15, 1894.

We are back in Washington again after a glorious trip of sightseeing which we both enjoyed, in addition to an important business matter which I am now considering.

May 29, 1894.

I sent out five hundred invitations to celebrate my birthday last evening, inviting the Virginia Democratic Association and many of my friends in official Army and Navy life. About 370 accepted and were present, being entertained by the Mount Pleasant Band and Drum Corps, with about forty pieces. This band was organized by Professor Churchill, who distinguished himself as a leader, and knew how to select attractive pieces for the entertainment of his guests. Speeches were made by Congressman C. H. Bell of Colorado; John Tweedale, chief clerk of the War Department; Congressman Matson of Missouri, and many others. There was music, singing and dancing, and it was after 4 o'clock before they all left, the tables having been loaded with fruits and refreshments of all kinds, including Chamberlain punch and beer on ice, coffee, chocolate and tea. Arrangements having been made for the cars to run all night, they remained at my door until all the guests departed.

The following is from the *Star* of June 15, 1894:

The Unity Club was entertained last Monday evening by Maj. and Mrs. Geo. A. Armes at their country home, Fairfield. The speeches and recitations were given upon the lawn by the light of a huge bonfire, which illumined the grounds. Among those present were Mr. and Mrs. Cherry, Dr. Thomas Robinson and wife, Mr. and Mrs. M. M. Thomas, Mrs. Monroe, Miss E. Chase, Mrs. and Miss Noud, Mrs. Crandall, Mrs. Emily Hort, Mr. and Mrs. Hodges, C. W. Webster and wife, Mr. and Mrs. Fillmore Harrison, Mrs. Delia Sheehy, Miss Annie Sheehy, Mr. and Mrs. D. C. Chapman, Count Ivan de Mitkiewicz, Mr. Shung Yu Ting, Jos. J. Printup, Mr. J. V. Wiggins, Mr. and Mrs. Charles Cherry, Mr. Ralph Jefferson, Mr. John Tweedale, Mrs. Pulizzi, Miss Blanche Pulizzi, Judge O. N. Riley, Mr. J. Franklin Philp, Mrs. George Sheehan, Mr. and Mrs. J. B. Philp, Mrs. Sarah Evans, Miss Clara Willard, Dr. and Mrs. V. Hartleben, Mrs. Dr. Lamb, Mrs. D. T. Voorhis, Mrs. Beck of Nebraska, Wilbur Goss, Mr. John C. Bell and wife of Colorado, Mr. and Mrs. D. C. Chapman, Misses May and Minnie Clemens, Mrs. George A. Armes, Dr. E. W. Eugster, Miss Dranev, Dr. and Mrs. W. W. Baker, Mr. and Mrs. Silas Boyce, Mr. F. W. Larner, Mr. and Mrs. Hodges, Misses Cecily and Ethel Armes, Mrs. M. D. Lincoln, Mr. Lincoln, Mrs. M. Stierlin, Will C. Stierlin, Mrs. I. Cowling, Miss Minnie Cowling, Mrs. Col. B. F. Winger, Miss Winger, Misses Maggie and Helen Kerfoot, Mrs. Van Syckel, Mrs. R. C. McAuley, Mr. Herman Schade, Miss Schade and Mrs. Marsh.

Washington, D. C., May 29, 1894.

My Dear Colonel:

Owing to my absence from the city from Friday night until late on Monday, I was unable to accept or acknowledge your courteous invitation. Regretting my loss of a pleasant visit and congratulating you on the strength with which you have borne the weight of your half century, I remain,

Very truly yours,

(Signed) WILLIAM BIRNEY.

Washington, D. C., May 26, 1894.

Geo. A. Armes, Esq.:

Dear Sir—Yours of May 25 received. I thank you very much for your kindness, but as I have a dinner party on hand for that night, I will be unable to avail myself of your kind invitation.

Yours very truly,

(Signed) JOHN F. WAGGAMAN.

(Dictated.)

Chevy Chase, Md., May 27, 1894.

Maj. George A. Armes,

Fairfield, D. C.:

My Dear Sir—I regret exceedingly that a previous engagement prevents my acceptance of your kind invitaton for tomorrow evening, but it cannot prevent my congratulating you on having reached your fiftieth milestone with so little of the wear and tear of life apparently affecting you. It was a surprise to me to learn that you were anything near fifty. That you may continue in good health and prosperity is the sincere wish of,

Yours truly,

(Signed) RALPH JEFFERSON.

Office of Commissioners of the District of Columbia,
Washington, May 31, 1894.

Maj. George A. Armes:

Dear Sir—I regret that I did not receive your kind invitation for Monday evening last until it was too late to advise you of my inability to be present. My wife has been quite sick for a number of weeks, and on that account I have been unable to accept any invitations. Thanking you for the courtesy of your invitation, I am,

Yours very truly,

(Signed) GEO. TRUESDELL.

United States Senate,
Washington, D. C., May 28, 1894.

Mr. George A. Armes,
Washington, D. C.:

Dear Sir—I am in receipt of your invitation of the 25th inst. inviting me to be present at a meeting of the Virginia Democratic Association on Monday evening, May 28, 1894. Please accept my thanks for your courtesy. I regret that anticipated engagements will prevent my acceptance of your courtesy.

I remain, very respectfully,
(Signed) David B. Hill.

July 14, 1894.

Last evening just before returning home from my office I was met at the Shoreham by Congressman Dan Lockwood, who wanted to know what in the "D——" I had been doing. I was surprised and asked him what he meant. He wanted to know if I had seen the *Evening Star*. I told him "no," when he handed it to me. It contained a large heading, "Mrs. G. A. Armes Pleads for a Divorce," over half a column being taken up with the details. I was thunderstruck at the article, and immediately drove home, where I met my wife at the front door as usual. I asked her what she had been doing through the day, and she replied, "Nothing special." I said, "Have you seen the *Star?*" and she said "No." When I showed it to her she colored up a little, stating that she "did not expect that to be put in the newspapers, but supposed that my lawyers desired an advertisement and thought that would be a good way to get it," and seemed to treat it as a big joke. She stated also that she had told me on several occasions that she intended to apply for a separation unless certain very petty conditions were complied with. After a few minutes' conversation we sat down to the table to dinner, and matters passed off as if nothing had happened.

July 16, 1894.

Had quite a long talk with Mr. McClelland and Mr. Lee, who were in my office; also with Mr. Cole in relation to my wife's application for a separation, and I was advised to call on the priest and have him settle the matter.

July 25, 1894.

Mr. Beall and Dr. Chappel spent last evening with me trying to get Lucy to agree to withdraw her suit for separation. Not being successful, they left some time after 11 o'clock. I appeared before Judge Hagner today, and the case was postponed. I called on several of the priests in the past few days, who agreed to consult

with Lucy and advise her not to insist upon a separation. Fathers Mackin and Lee no doubt did as agreed, but were unsuccessful.

July 26, 1894.

Appeared before Judge Hagner at 10 this A. M. with Mr. Mackall and Richard Beall, counsel, Lewis & Cook being for my wife, and managed to get a postponement until August 1.

August 7, 1894.

Took Lucy out driving today in the buggy, going by way of Tennallytown and coming back by way of Rock Creek, and this afternoon Mr. Lewis, her attorney, came out to see her and forbid her having any conversation or going out with me anywhere.

September 29, 1894.

Had quite a time with Sister Angelica at the Holy Cross Academy last evening on account of her misrepresenting to me that my daughter was not in the convent. Had a talk with Father Barry and Father Stafford this afternoon, who both agreed not to marry my daughter without my consent.

October 1, 1894.

I went to the City Hall and entered a protest against the issuing of license for the marriage of my oldest daughter, Cecily. A lady friend of mine informed me that they were at the convent last evening and my daughter was on the third floor, back room, preparing her wedding suit, and intended to be married at the first opportunity. She stated that the Sisters of the Holy Cross had given instructions to tell everyone who inquired for her that she had left the convent and was not in the building.

HERBERT CLAUDE.

Cecily was married to her fiance, Herbert Claude, later by Fathers Barry and Stafford, notwithstanding they agreed, both of them, not to perform the ceremony. I had agreed that if my daughter would postpone the marriage for four or

six months and she then knew Claude well enough, I would give my consent.

Warrenton, Va., October 3, 1894.

Yesterday afternoon I took Ethel and little Lucy to the city and purchased them an outfit necessary for boarding-school, and left at 9 this A. M. for this place. They are now assigned to good rooms in the institution, Professor Butler taking a great interest in them. During the day I took them around through the city, meeting Colonel Gaines, the mayor, and Dr. Maddox. This is a nice place for a school, and I believe they will greatly improve by remaining here a few months.

CECILY.

Washington, D. C., October 9, 1894.

Mrs. Professor Butler called upon me today at the office, where we had a long talk in regard to the girls, who are getting along nicely at her school.

Warrenton, Va., October 13, 1894.

I was ordered to be at the court this morning by 9 o'clock, with Judge Cox presiding, and after meeting Lucy's counsel, they were not ready to go on with the case. I soon learned that she had started for Warrenton for the purpose of bringing back Ethel and little Lucy. I boarded the train, greatly surprising her when she learned that I was going to Warrenton. We landed there together and dined with Professor and Mrs. Butler. She became very much reconciled, and decided to let Ethel and Lucy remain there, both of us returning on the same train.

October 20, 1894.

It was 1 this A. M. before I returned from the banquet given by the Sons of the American Revolution, and we all had a very pleasant time.

October 26,1894.

I took Oscar on the train to Charlotte Hall this morning in order to put him to school for a short time, and during my absence my wife's lawyers, Cook & Lewis, advised her to take the children and leave Fairfield and make their home somewhere else,

on the ground that they could not obtain a separation while we were living together.

October 27, 1894.

I was surprised last night to find my wife and children gone, but one of the servants gave me the address where she had moved, taking trunks, blankets, books, etc., that she desired to use until the case was settled.

November 27, 1894.

My wife's lawyers, failing to accomplish anything in regard to the separation and continually calling on her for payments in order to go on with the case, caused her to have a sort of contempt for their management, and she came to my office today, where, with the assistance of Mr. C. G. Lee, an agreement was fixed up for her to allow the children to return to Fairfield and give up her quarters in the city.

November 28, 1894.

I was in court this A. M. with Mr. J. H. Ralston, who stated to Judge Cox that my wife had withdrawn the suit for separation. Her lawyers, Cook & Lewis, were almost paralyzed at such an announcement, having given her instructions not to come near me, and upon my paying the clerk's expenses and the court fees, $37.65, returned home with me in the tea-cart.

December 25, 1894.

My wife, Ethel, George, Oscar, Lucy, Dots, Edith, Willie and Grover Cleveland took Christmas dinner with me today, and all enjoyed it, as I had a fifteen-pound young turkey cooked by Mrs. Webb in elegant style, and this afternoon has passed off very pleasantly.

December 31, 1894.

This being the last day of the year, I have been very busy settling up my accounts, and in spite of the interference of the priest and outsiders, my family is not entirely broken up, and I am doing everything I can in my power to prevent it, lawyers to the contrary notwithstanding, who have induced her to believe she would be better off by employing them to secure a separation.

The following correspondence will further illustrate the events of the year briefly narrated in the foregoing extracts from my diary:

Washington, D. C., May 18, 1894.

To the Adjutant-General U. S. A.,
Washington, D. C.:

Sir—My name not appearing among the list of officers recently breveted for Indian service, I respectfully submit the following in addition to my reports that may be on file in your department, and call attention to that part of the letter from General Hancock where he mentions that he had recommended me for Brevet Lieutenant-Colonel for my first fight with the Cheyennes, which is the fight where I was wounded, and mentioned in the letter from General Grierson, which fact I desire inserted in the commission, if one is granted for said action.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant
(Signed) GEO. A. ARMES,
Late Capt. Tenth Cav., Brev. Maj., retired.

Headquarters of the Army, Adjutant-General's Office,
Washington, June 28, 1894.

Capt. George A. Armes,
U. S. Army, retired,
No. 1405 F Street, Washington, D. C.:

Sir—In reply to your inquiry of the 10th ult. in the matter of your brevet for gallantry in action against Indians August 2, 1867, I have the honor to invite your attention to the adverse decision contained in letter of July 15, 1890, from this office, which is adhered to.

Very respectfully,
(Signed) J. C. GILMORE.

Angel Island, Cal., September 19, 1894.

My Dear Major Armes:

You generally have the inside news in Washington, and I wish you would write me your views as to the next Brigadier. I hear ——— is strong, and recently that ——— is after it.

I fear that I am "not in it" from some reports that man ——— of Texas made against me of "offensive partisanship."

It was a lie of the blackest kind, but it did its work. Hope you are flourishing.

Sincerely yours,
WM. R. SHAFTER,
Colonel First Infantry.

Proctor, Vt., October 2, 1894.

Dear Captain Armes:

I spoke with General Schofield when in Washington, but he gave me no definite reply further than to say, as I knew, he held

that it was strictly a military matter in the hands of the Commander of the Army. As I told you, he considers that it is strictly a military matter, and I have never known him to pay the slightest attention to any influence or recommendation. I did not get an impression that was favorable, but still, he did not say. I shall be much pleased if he decides in your favor.

Very truly yours,
(Signed) REDFIELD PROCTOR.

Maj. George A. Armes,

Dear Sir—The Cardinal received your letter of October 29, in which you complain of Sister Angelica interfering in your domestic affairs. After investigation, the Cardinal finds that your wife asked Sister Angelica to take your daughter into the convent. Sister Angelica says she cannot be blamed for the marriage of your daughter, as she is not responsible for it.

The Cardinal regrets very much that there should be a disagreement between yourself and Sister Angelica.

Yours very respectfully,
WM. T. RUSSELL.

(Copy.)
Tennallytown, D. C., November 8, 1894.

Mrs. Lucy Armes,
1303 R Street, N. W.:

Dear Madam—Your letter of the 6th inst. reached me yesterday. I see how difficult it will be, situated as you are, to raise the money needed. Miss Mary French has the money, but whether she will lend it is another question. I approached her for a loan for a gentleman in town here, but she refused to loan money to her neighbors. The Buckman family are great friends of hers, and they may be able to do something with her for you. Then Mrs. Shoemaker has money, and may be willing to do this kindness. Should either of them ask my advice about loaning to you I will urge them to do so.

I sincerely hope that you will get through successfully, both for your sake and that of the children.

I remain, your brother in Christ,
J. M. BARRY.

No. 1405 F Street, N. W.,
Washington, D. C., December 4, 1894.

Cardinal Gibbons:

Reverend and Dear Sir—Yours of October 31 was duly received. Important matters have occupied my time, or I would have answered it before.

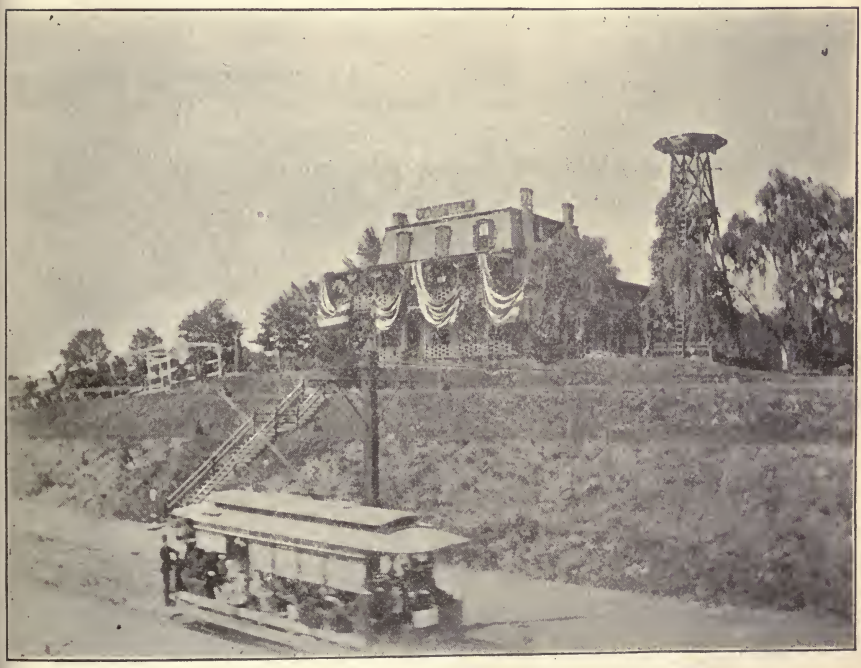
I hope you will not allow the misrepresentations made to you by Sister Angelica to remain unacted upon without further investigation, giving me an opportunity to furnish further evidence if necessary.

I enclose a slip from the *Washington Times* showing the desperate effort being used to prevent, if possible, the removal of Father Barry, who, I am confident, after a careful investigation will be proved unfit to be trusted in a responsible place. Any person who will take advantage of a position entrusted to him to use it in meddling in family affairs and in bringing ruin, contention and disgrace upon a family is unfit to be trusted where he can do further harm. The sooner Father Barry is sent from here the better it will be for the interest of the Church.

Hoping it will not be necessary for me to publish the charges against Fathers Barry and Stafford and Sister Angelica, I remain,

Your obedient servant,

(Signed) GEORGE A. ARMES.



Fairfield—My Residence.

CHAPTER XXXIII.

January 1, 1895.

The sun came out clear and bright this morning, and in full-dress uniform I met the Army officers at the War Department. They called on General Schofield for the last time as Lieutenant-General of the Army, as he is to be retired this year. He met me very cordially, shaking hands, and then headed the column, which marched to the White House, where we all shook hands with Mr. Cleveland and his wife and the Cabinet ladies. After meeting a large number of my friends in the East Room, I took George and Oscar, my two oldest boys, in the carriage, and we called on other friends.

January 3, 1895.

Met Senator Gibson at the Shoreham last evening, who has agreed to take an active part, with his senator friends, in insisting upon General Schofield's approving my bill for brevet, as recommended by Generals Hancock and Sherman.

January 6, 1895.

Spent most of last evening at the Arlington, in company with Colonel Stump, Mr. Sieger and several other gentlemen. Had quite a long interview with Senator Proctor, who appears very friendly to me. He stated that he had seen General Schofield about my brevet Lieutenant-Colonelcy, and that he did everything he possibly could to induce him to approve it.

January 8, 1895.

This afternoon I called on a number of senators at the Capitol, who strongly endorsed an application to General Schofield requesting him to send in my name to the Senate for brevet Lieutenant-Colonelcy, as follows:

Senate Chamber.
Washington Jan., 8th, 1895.

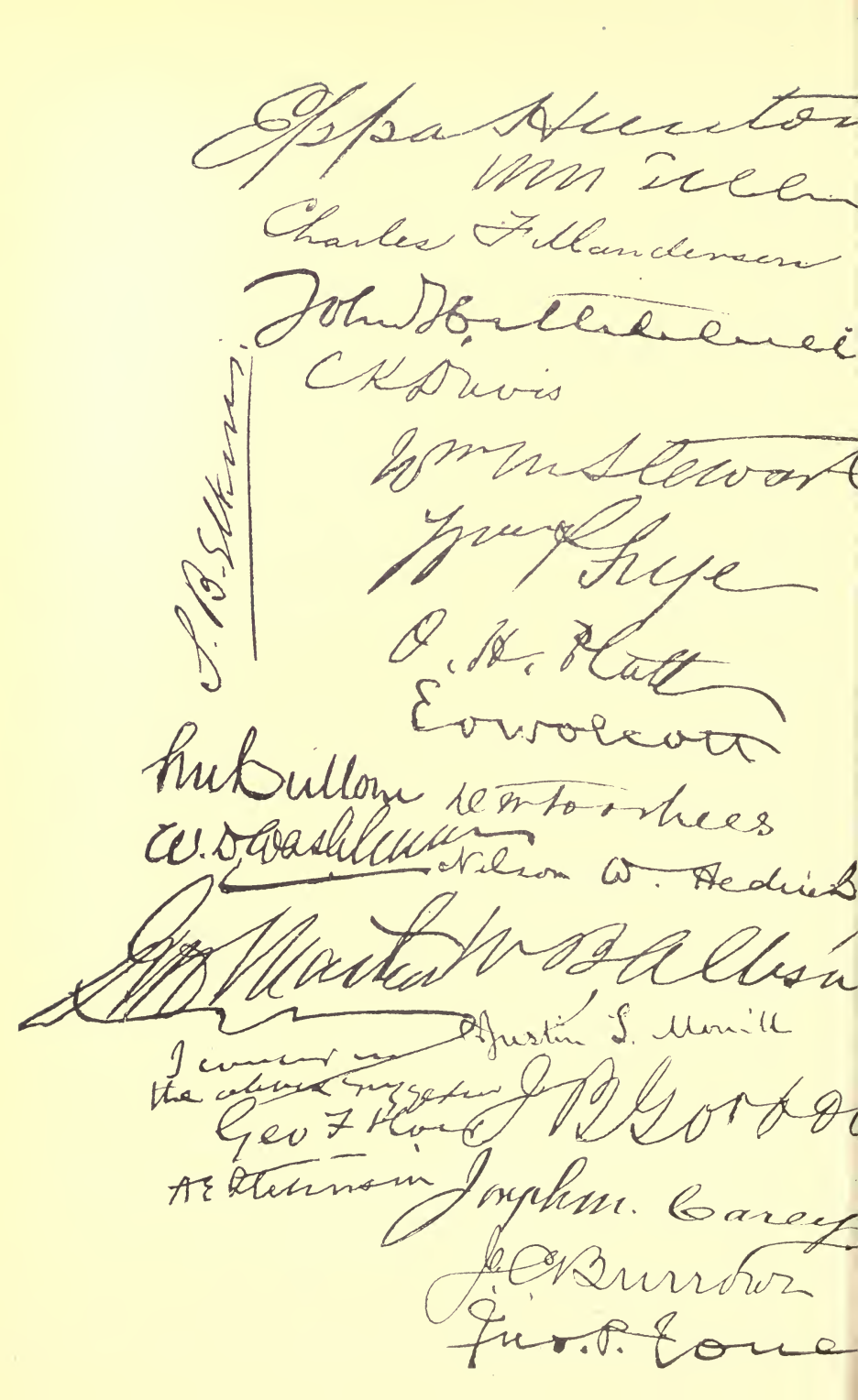
Gen. John M. Schofield, U. S. A.

Dear Sir:-

I have known Maj George A. Armes for over fifteen years and will consider it a personal favor if you will have his name sent to the Senate for Brevet. Lieut. Col. as recommended by Maj. Gen. W. S. Hancock, August 20th, 1867.

Very respectfully,

Chas H Gibson
Chas J. Faulkner
Jno T. Morgan
J. N. Camden
A. P. Gorman
W. C. Squire
W. N. Roach



Washington D.C.
Janry 9th 1895.

Gen John M Schofield

Dear Sir.

I am not on the Military Committee & do not know familiarly the customs of Army promotion but I know enough of the military record of Major Geo A. Armes from the best testimony to feel satisfied that he is entitled to the best consideration due a Brave officer.

I therefore take pleasure in asking Consideration at your hands of the request made that he be nominated for the

B. Lt. Colonelcy, as recommended in 1867 by Genl Hancock.

Very respectfully

Jno. W. Davidson.

H. C. Hawkins

I concur in the above

W. C. Blanchard

J. C. Porter R. Proctor

I concur

Jno. T. Morgan

I also concur Francis T. Nicholls

So do I Stephen W. Watts

Edward Murphy jr

Wm. P. Price

Geo. C. Perkins

House of Representatives U. S.,

Washington, D. C., January 2, 1895.

General John M. Schofield,

U.S. Army.

Dear Sir:

Having known Maj. Geo. A. Armes, U.S.A. for several years as a gallant and meritorious officer and gentleman, we ask, as a personal favor to us—that you have him nominated for Bvt. Lt. Col. U.S. Army, as recommended by Generals Hancock & Sherman August 1867.

We ask this upon the ground that he has earned it, is legally entitled to it, and should have it.

W. S. Holman

J. E. Washington Pa.

D. N. Lockwood 32nd N.Y.

W. M. Springer

W. R. English

C. A. Cadmus M.C., N.J.

T. J. Campbell

J. A. Geissenhainer " "

John J. O'Neill Pa.

John Van Voorhis

W. T. Stevens Mass.

S. B. Cooper

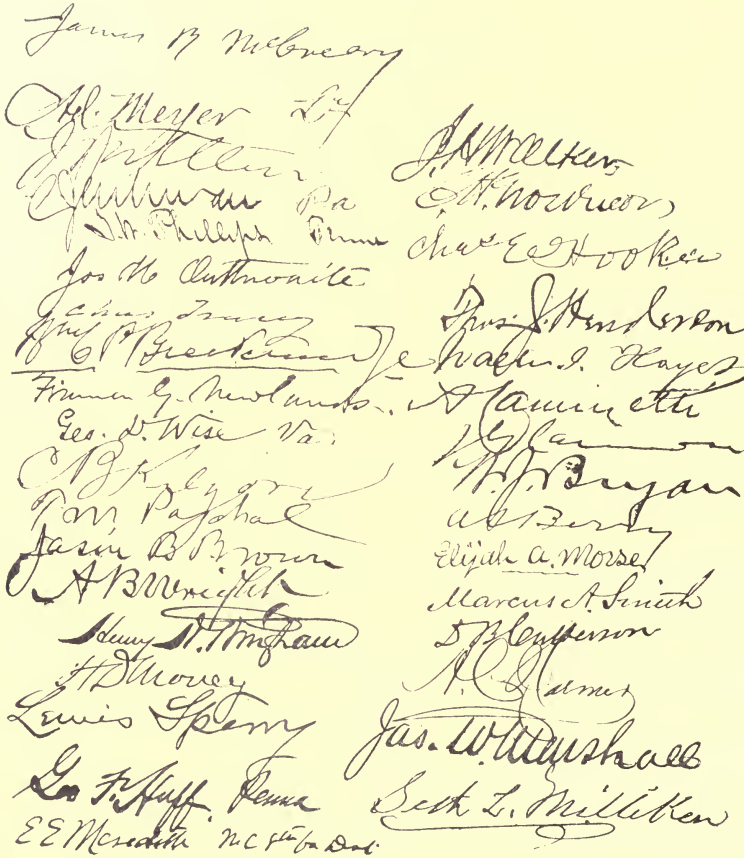
Chas. F. Randall Mass.

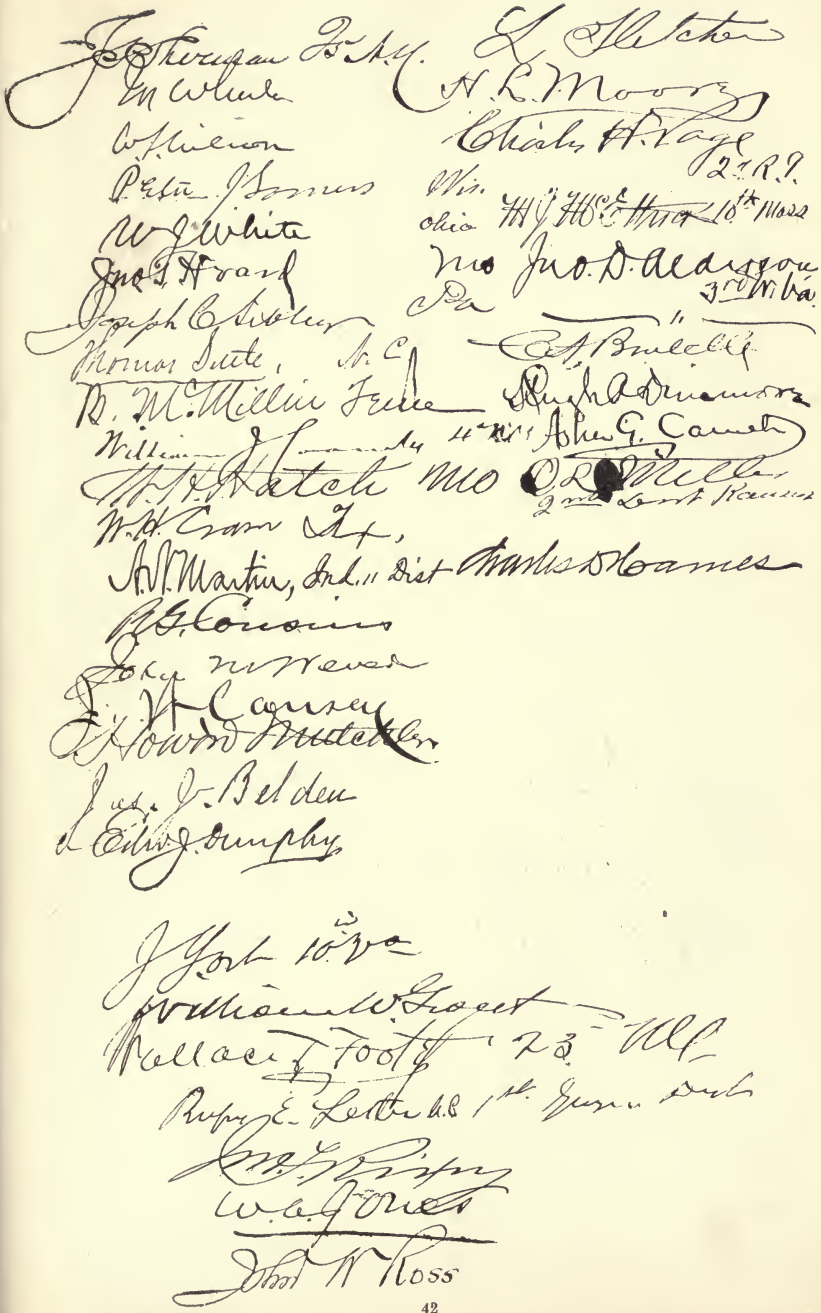
S. J. Shermerhorn

A. C. Durborow Jr. Ills.

Jos. H. Oneal Mass.

J. M. Martin Lt.





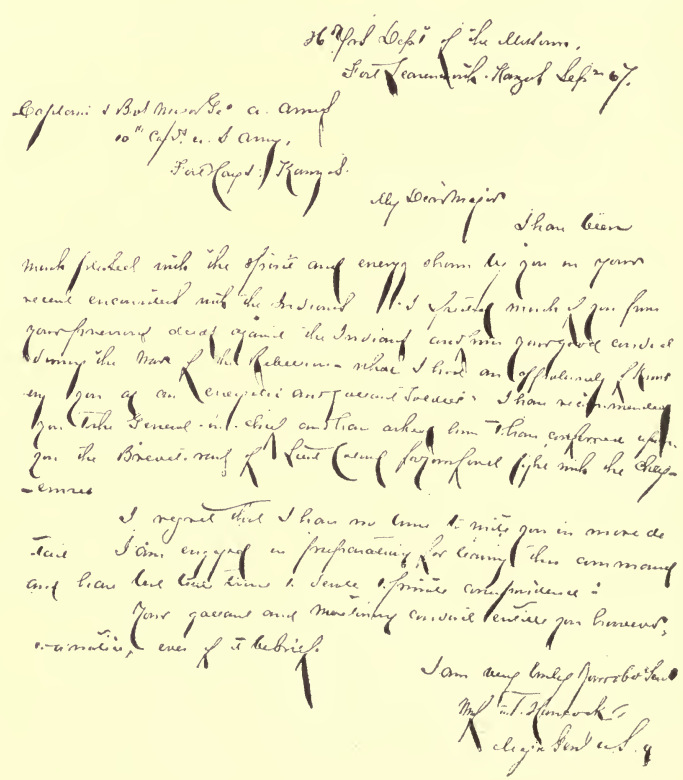
The following explain themselves:

Fort Harker, Kan., August 26, 1867.

Governor Crawford:

Captain Armes, Tenth Cavalry, with one company of his regiment and two companies of the Eighteenth Kansas Volunteers, was attacked on the 21st inst., at noon, on the Republican river by a large force of Indians, reported to be 800 to 1000 in number, and were engaged until the night of the 22d. Our troops, about 150 in number, covering a wide space of country, were finally forced to retire, with a loss of three men killed and left on the field, and thirty-five wounded, who were brought in. The command also lost forty horses during the engagement. Captain Armes reports a large number of Indians killed and wounded; Lieutenant Price of the Eighteenth Kansas says about 150. The command encamped about three miles from Fort Harker last night. Major Moore of the Eighteenth Kansas, with the remainder of the battalion, and Major Elliott of the Seventh Cavalry, with about 200 men of that regiment, started this morning for the Indians.

WINFIELD S. HANCOCK,
Maj.-Gen., U. S. A.



January 9, 1895.

Called on a number of members of Congress today whom I have known for a long time and who strongly endorsed me to General Schofield.

January 22, 1895.

I have been giving special attention to my application for brevet Lieutenant-Colonelcy, and have called on General Schofield and written quite a number of communications to the War Department in relation to it. During an interview with General Schofield I presented a petition from the senators and members of Congress requesting him to forward my name to the Senate, but he informed me that I ought to know better than to try to use influence with him, the General of the Army, to induce him to act in his duties, implying that members and senators had no influence over him; that they were like mushrooms, here today and gone tomorrow, and that he was the General of the Army, in a position for life, and that the recommendations or petitions of members and senators would have no weight with him. He declined to pay any attention to my endorsements. After quite an argument, he stated that his principal reason for not sending my name up was on account of my trouble with his friend, Governor Beaver of Pennsylvania, and suggested that I write a letter to him to get his consent to sending my name up before he would take any action in the matter. I reminded him of the fact that I had been punished by a court-martial on account of my resenting Beaver's insult, and that that matter had already been settled. I did not see what his present action had to do with that affair, considering that I had been recommended for brevet Lieutenant-Colonel on account of meritorious conduct in an Indian engagement, where I had been wounded and had lost several of the men, but had saved my command from being massacred by an overwhelming number of Indians by using strategy and discretion, which warranted recognition by my superior officer.

February 5, 1895.

After thinking over the matter of my interview with General Schofield, I sent Governor Beaver a letter pertaining to that interview, as to his objection to my being recognized by the War Department, etc.

February 8, 1895.

I received the desired letter from General Beaver this morning, in reply to mine of the 5th inst., when I immediately called at the War Department to see General Schofield and find out if he had received anything from General Beaver . His brother, who is acting as his door-keeper, declined to allow me to see him, stating that if any communication had been received he would know it, but I managed to get an interview with the General, who informed me that he had received an endorsement on the letter I had written, and he would take immediate steps in regard to the matter.

February 13, 1895.

Not having heard anything from General Schofield, I called at his office again today, when he informed me that he had written to Colonel Grierson and some others in relation to my fight with the Indians. Feeling that he was doing something underhanded, I mentioned the conversation I had had with him the other day to one or two senators and members of Congress, who became very indignant about his failing to give attention to their request, and satisfied me that they would soon find out Schofield's reason for not doing so.

February 23, 1895.

Having been informed by one or two members and senators who had seen General Schofield that he had secured affidavits of a number of soldiers to my discredit, I immediately called on the General for a copy, or permission to see these affidavits, which he refused me, but upon application to Secretary Lamont it was immediately ordered that copies be furnished.

September 27, 1895.

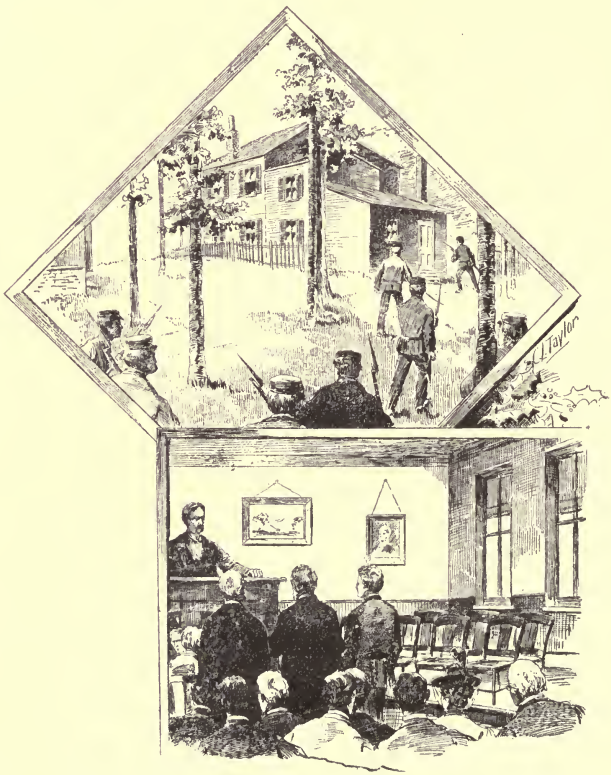
In order that I could have an interview and explanation with General Schofield before his retirement, I made up my mind to call on him this afternoon, but before doing so I wrote a letter, in order that I could leave it with him in case he declined to see me. I invited a friend of mine, the president of one of our street railroads, to accompany me to the War Department, as I desired him to be present during the interview, if granted one. Meeting the messenger at the door, I sent in my card, which was soon returned, with the information that the General was engaged, when I immediately handed the messenger the letter, requesting

him to give it in person to General Schofield. After waiting a few minutes, and General Schofield not sending for me, my friend and I left the Department. This was between the hours of 3 and 4 in the afternoon.

September 28, 1895.

After leaving the War Department yesterday afternoon, my friend, Mr. H. Miller, who had accompanied me there, parted from me, and I returned to my office, transacted some business, and then returned to my house on Albemarle street. While reading the *Evening Star* in my library, after dinner, between 8 and 9 o'clock, two officers in uniform, with their side arms and pistols, suddenly appeared, having come through the kitchen, dining-room and into the library, when one of them suddenly spoke to me, saying, "Major Armes, I have come to place you in close arrest (No. 24), by order of the Secretary of War, and am directed to take you to the Washington Barracks and have you confined in the guardhouse immediately. I at once requested his name, which he gave as Lieut. A. S. Cummings, Fourth U. S. Artillery, introducing his friend, Lieut. G. G. Heiner of the same regiment. Upon asking them to be seated, they declined, and after stating that I needed to change my clothing for a heavier suit to go to the guardhouse, naturally a cold and disagreeable place, consent was given me to go upstairs and make the change, they both taking seats, after being introduced to my family, who entertained them during my absence. Upon my return, I offered them cigars and requested to know if they intended to march to the barracks or go on the cars. They stated that they had a post ambulance, and that the men whom they had brought out with them, and who surrounded the house, armed and equipped with their Winchesters and a large supply of ammunition, would go back in the cars. Upon my way through the city to the barracks we drove in front of my attorney's house and stopped for a moment, requesting him to come to the barracks at once. Upon reaching the Arsenal, I asked who was in command. Being informed that Colonel Closson, Fourth Artillery, was the commanding officer, I requested to see him at once, when I was told that it would be impossible to see him before 10 o'clock tomorrow morning, he having gone to his private quarters, to which I requested to be driven, and was informed that he would not see me; but, upon insisting, Captain Cummings drove to his resi-

dence, and soon announced that the Colonel would see me. After an introduction, the Colonel remarked that his sympathy was with me, but his orders were such that I had to remain in the garrison, but should be treated the same as any other officer of the Army under the circumstances, and directed Captain Cummings to assign me quarters and invite me in to the officers' mess, with instructions that if anyone should call they should be admitted. After reaching the reading-room at the Bachelor's quarters quite a number of the officers of the garrison called immediately, and I was agreeably entertained by everyone. Soon my attorney appeared, and we decided to apply for a writ of habeas corpus, and in the meanwhile a number of reporters and correspondents of different papers called for interviews, which I gave.



The Arrest. Released by Justice Bradley.

It must have been 2 o'clock this morning before I retired, having been highly entertained last evening. At 10 o'clock I was invited to breakfast with the officers and their ladies, to whom I was introduced, and treated very pleasantly by all present. At 11 o'clock an order appeared for me to be produced before Justice Bradley, and I appeared with my counsel, Mr. Ralston and Mr. Siddons, and Mr. E. L. McClelland, who agreed to go my bail, if necessary, for any amount required by the judge. After a short argument, I was released, without bail, to appear at any time necessary before the court, and was at liberty to go where I pleased.

October 10, 1895.

The habeas corpus case was heard today. In his decision Judge Bradley said:

"The arrest and taking of Armes into custody, carrying him away from home into barracks and holding him in close arrest without antecedent charge of crime preferred in any way against him was and is unjust, unlawful, arbitrary, tyrannical and capricious on the part of General Schofield in whatever capacity he acted, whether acting as Lieutenant-General or acting as Secretary of War."

After my release by Judge Bradley all the newspapers throughout the country seemed to be filled with accounts of the Schofield matter. His picture, as well as mine, had gone all over the country.

October 27, 1895.

Took Ethel, George and several of the children to see Stuart Robson last evening, and this afternoon drove out with Mr. Robson and Mr. Haden. Called by C. C. Lancaster's, who is now living at the Wormley Place.

November 18, 1895.

Had quite a talk with Colonel Ainsworth at the War Department, who has been very friendly disposed, assisting me by furnishing copies of papers that I need.

November 29, 1895.

After dinner I returned to the city and called at the Shoreham on Mr. Phillips, who invited Mr. Russell, General Miles and General Smith to his table, where we had quite an interesting conversation for several hours. Mr. Thos. Hyde kindly lent me $200 today on my note for thirty days, without security.

3 Years old, with mother.

Age 17, Scout.

Age 17, with Sec. Seward

Age 17, Lieut. of 16, Va. Vols.

Age 19 Capt. 2, N.Y. Artillery.

Age 21, Lieut. 2, U.S. Cavalry.

Age 21, Capt. 10, U.S. Cav & Brevet Major, U.S.A

Age 26, Capt. 10, U.S. Cav. and Brevet Major U.S.A.

Age 25, Capt. and Brevet Major.

Age 38, waiting restoration.

Age 50, Retired.

December 31, 1895.

During the past year I have had quite a number of real estate deals, but spent the greater part of my time in trying to get my brevet promotion settled. As General Schofield and his friends have the inside track and the determination to prevent, if possible, my receiving the justice due me at the War Department, it will take some time to get rid of the whole ring, a portion of which still remains on duty. As my wife and I have had a satisfactory understanding in relation to the separation matter, I have been in the courts on her account less frequently this year than last. As there has been a lull in real estate, I have not made more than $2500, besides expenses, during the whole year.

The communications and official papers which elucidate the transactions of the year follow in chronological order. They will show to what depths an unscrupulous official will descend in order to ruin the fair fame of a person against whom he may hold a grudge. They also, in a wonderful way, enforce the old adages that "Murder will out" and "Truth crushed to earth will rise again:"

Bellefonte, Pa., February 7, 1895.

Capt. George A. Armes,
1405 F Street, Washington, D. C.:

Sir—Your letter of the 5th inst. has been received. I have written General Schofield, enclosing your letter, and saying to him substantially that, if you are entitled to the distinction claimed, your personal treatment of me should not weigh in the matter, inasmuch as that has been disposed of by another tribunal, and saying that I have no personal objections to urge in the premises.

Very respectfully yours,
(Signed) JAMES A. BEAVER.

Headquarters of the Army,
Washington, D. C., February 15, 1895.

To the Honorable the Secretary of War:

* * * * * * * * * * *

Sir—Recently, in consequence of numerous appeals that have been made to me for reconsideration of the case of Captain Armes, notably a communication signed by a large number of members of both Houses of Congress, asking me as "a personal favor" to have the name of Captain Armes sent to the Senate for brevet, I

have again very carefully considered this entire subject, and beg leave to submit it for your consideration and action.

Of course, whatever action I feel compelled to take in a matter of this kind must be regarded as a solemn official duty, an action which cannot by any possibility be taken as a personal favor to anybody, although it would give me great pleasure to do a personal favor to any one and all the distinguished gentlemen who have requested it in this case.

The vital question now presented appears to be this: On the 20th of August, 1867, the late Maj.-Gen. W. S. Hancock, in forwarding a report, made, as I understand, by Captain Armes himself, of an engagement with hostile Indians on the Saline river August 2, 1867, recommended Captain Armes for promotion by brevet for distinguished gallantry. That recommendation appears to have been approved and recommended by Lieutenant-General Sherman, then commanding the military division in which General Hancock's department was situated. Those recommendations of Major-General Hancock and Lieutenant-General Sherman were submitted by the Adjutant-General to General Grant, then commanding the Army, and by him returned to the Adjutant-General for file. This action of General Grant is understood to have had the force of a disapproval of the recommendations of his subordinate Generals. Upon this state of the facts the question arises whether the present Commanding General of the Army, so many years after the event, can, under the more recent law, reopen, reconsider and reverse the action of the Commanding General at the time, so as to give to the recommendation of the Department Commander that approval or concurrence which would justify the President of the United States in nominating the officer for the commission of brevet. It does not seem to me that the present Commanding General ought to assume such authority under the recent law. But if the opposite view be taken upon this point there then arises the question, Upon what grounds can the present Commanding General of the Army give his concurrence in the recommendation of the Department Commander made so many years ago.

The invariable custom has been of late years, and it seems to me to be the only safe one, to base such concurrence upon satisfactory official evidence of the fact of gallantry, so that the action of the Commanding General of the Army shall not be a mere approval of a recommendation of a Department Commander, based upon his faith in the good judgment of that officer, but an independent official act upon evidence satisfactory to him that the officer recommended for brevet was actually entitled to it by his gallant conduct in the battle.

Examining the records in this light, I have been unable to find any such official evidence of the conduct of Captain Armes in the engagement referred to by General Hancock as would justify me in advising the President that this officer is entitled to a brevet for his gallantry in battle at that time.

* * * * * * * * * * *

I am therefore forced to the conclusion that the records now within my reach are not such as to justify my favorable action.

Very respectfully,

J. M. SCHOFIELD,
Lieutenant-General.

Washington, D. C., February 27, 1895.

Lieut.-Gen. John M. Schofield,
Commanding the Army:
(Through the Adjutant-General.)

Sir—In reply to the report dated February 15, 1895, to the Honorable Secretary of War declining to approve Generals Hancock's and Sherman's recommendations for Brevet Lieutenant-Colonel for an Indian engagement on the Saline river, Kansas, in 1867, where I was wounded, I have the honor to state that it is well known by a few officers what General Grant's personal feelings towards General Hancock were at the time my papers came before him for action, and that General Hancock's recommendations were pigeon-holed, and shortly after the act making the brevets was repealed.

Since my retirement I originated and got the bill through reviving said brevets, with a clause including officers on the retired list. So far as the affidavit signed by the negro soldier, Johnson, is concerned, he was punished by me on several occasions and court-martialed for insubordination, and I should not think it would have any weight with a military man from the fact that he was asked to make that affidavit eight years after the fight by a number of subordinate officers trying to prevent my restoration to the regiment. That paper at the time was fully answered to the satisfaction of both committees of Congress, where it was used to try to influence action against my restoration.

Col. H. C. Corbin, who was in command of Fort Hays at the time I made the report, is now on duty in this department, and I would respectfully request that he be called upon to furnish a statement of facts in relation to whether my report was questioned at the time or any hints made as to its being colored in the least. As he well knows, many of my men were dying with cholera, and my command was composed of raw recruits, who had never seen a carbine or pistol, much less fired one. Such is the kind of men I had on this engagement with Indians, and if it had not been for

the expert marksmen of the scouts of Lieutenant Bodamer not one of my command would have returned.

I now again request that you reconsider your action in this case. There is no legal ground or good reason why this brevet should not be made. Bear in mind that I do not ask this as a favor, but only ask for justice to which I am legally entitled.

I hope you will remember that only cowards and sneaks have been trying to use you to break me down, and that no honorable man can say one word that will reflect upon my character as an officer and gentleman, and so far as my sanity is concerned, it is only a question of time before that will be fully investigated.

Very respectfully,
(Signed) GEO. A. ARMES,
Capt. U. S. A., retired.

From The Washington Post.

GETTYSBURG'S HERO.

General Hancock's Remains May Be Removed to Arlington.

The veterans af the Second Army Corps held their last meeting of the season at Willard's Hotel last night, and over a hundred members were present when President James G. Brady called the gathering to order. Corp. James Tanner was elected a member, and Col. Moses B. C. Wright and Mr. Joseph Brady honorary members. The corps decided to visit the studio of Sculptor Ellicott in a body tomorrow night and view the completed equestrian statue of General Hancock to be exhibited there.

A committee consisting of General Bachelder, General Brady, Gen. Joseph S. Smith and Maj. George A. Armes was appointed to take charge of the matter of having the remains of General Hancock removed from their present resting-place at Norristown, Pa., to Arlington Cemetery. Major Armes stated that this would be in accordance with the wishes of the late hero's family. The body of Mrs. Hancock, which now reposes at St. Louis, will also be reinterred at Arlington.

After the business of the meeting was concluded social features of an interesting and delightful character wer enjoyed, Civil Service Commissioner Lyman telling some good war stories and Dr. Charles Smart reading a valuable paper on "The Surgeons of the Second Corps." Major Armes read an original order issued during the Revolution by General Washington, in which he called attention to the habit of the officers of swearing, and strongly suggesting a cessation of the reprehensible practice. He also ordered that no work should be performed on the Sabbath. Gen. J. S. Smith and others contributed to the pleasure of the assemblage with reminiscences, and the meeting adjourned until next October.

Washington, D. C., May 1, 1895.

My Dear Major Armes:

You are without doubt aware that the dedication of the Hancock statue takes place the 12th inst. As a member of the old Second Corps (Hancock's) staff I am endeavoring to have all of those now living join us in the procession upon that occasion. You must come. Black silk hats, frock coats and tan-color kid gloves will be worn; also your badges.

Major-General Miles, U. S. A., will "lead off," followed by the "old staff," and then the battle-flags of our corps, together with the association.

Sincerely, your old comrade,

(Signed) Joseph S. Smith,

Late Brevet Brig.-Gen. and Chief C. S., Second Corps.

Washington, D. C., May 14, 1895.

Hon. Daniel S. Lamont,

Secretary of War:

(Through the Adjutant-General of the Army.)

Sir—I feel indebted to you for the courtesy extended in allowing me to see the false and malicious misrepresentations lately made to you by Gen. John M. Schofield, U. S. A., as an excuse for not recommending my name to the Senate for Brevet Lieutenant-Colonel, U. S. A. Recommended by Generals Hancock and Sherman in 1867, I feel that General Schofield has taken advantage of the office he has held since 1889 to ruin, disgrace and break me down if possible, and I can only account for his malicious acts for the following reasons:

In 1869 I found it to be my duty to prefer charges against several officers of my command for stealing Government property, horses, mules, etc. One of the Majors of the regiment named Schofield, said to be a brother of the present General Schofield, who was looked upon as a weak-minded man, was easily taken possession of by those against whom I had preferred charges, and took part against me and did all in his power to shield the thieves, and in fact was used by them as a tool, the same as General Schofield has been used by the same class of cowardly sneaks to try to ruin me. I was court-martialed by a court of drunken Army loafers, picked out by General Schofield for that purpose. He approved and sent the case to the then Secretary of War, Hon. W. W. Belknap, who sustained his action, and out I went, and it was several years of hard fighting to regain the position I had been robbed of, but not until Secretary Belknap and several others of my persecutors had been sent to prison or punished. Since my restoration a certain clique seems to have kept up a fight against me to this date. A man who would try to deceive you by submitting such papers as he has to turn you against me and stain his important position would be guilty of almost anything. If

it is true that he has awarded himself a medal to pose as a hero when the records will bear me out in saying he is a humbug, has always been one, and has misrepresented his acts and deeds to the public almost all his life, then he is a disgrace to the American people. If you will authorize the Inspector-General of the Army to investigate the statements I make I am confident I can prove General Schofield to be one of the worst humbugs ever foisted upon the American people.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

(Signed) G. A. ARMES.

To whom it may concern:

I, Charles Banzhof, late a First Lieutenant, Tenth Cavalry, joined the regiment in November, 1867, at Fort Riley, Kansas, and was assigned to Company F, of which George A. Armes was Captain.

* * * * * * * * * * *

I take pleasure in saying that, whatever Captain Armes' faults may have been, he had the reputation of being brave and courageous in battle. I heard that one William Johnson, late private of Company F, Tenth United States Cavalry, made a charge against his former Captain, said George A. Armes. I would state that the said Johnson had been at one time a sergeant and was reduced to the ranks for insubordination.

(Signed) C. BANZHOF.

Washington, D. C., July 27, 1895.

Capt. Geo. A. Armes, Tenth Cavalry, transmits charges against Colonel Nelson, made out at Camp Supply, I. T.:

Headquarters Departmen Missouri, Judge-Advocate's Office,

St. Louis, Mo., February 4, 1870.

Respectfully returned to the assistant Adjutant-General, Department Missouri. The frivolous character of the specifications to the most of the charges, the petty malignity of Brevet Major Armes evinced therein, they being chiefly a recital of fancied personal grievance against Colonel Nelson, his then commanding officer, the fact of Major Armes being now on trial on serious charges, some of which were preferred by Colonel Nelson, the facts known at these headquarters concerning Colonel Nelson's actions in regard to Major Graham's charges being at variance with Major Armes' statement as set forth in the specifications, Colonel Nelson's high character as an officer and a gentleman and Major Armes' worthlessness and general bad character, would seem to forbid any attention to the charges and specifications accompanying this communication. But it is recommended

that they be referred to Colonel Nelson for any remarks he may have to make.

(Signed) Wm. M. Wherry,
Brevet Col. A. D. C.

Headquarters Department Missouri,
St. Louis, Mo., February 5, 1870.

Respectfully referred to Lieut.-Col. A. D. Nelson, U. S. A., commanding Camp Supply, I. T., for remarks. Attention invited to endorsement of the J. A. of the Department.

By command of
Major-General Shofield.
W. G. Mitchell,
Brevet Col. U. S. A., A. A. A. Gen.

State of Iowa, Clinton County:

William Richardson, being first duly sworn, on oath deposes and says that he is late first sergeant Company L, Tenth United States Cavalry; that he has known Maj. George A. Armes for ever twenty-seven years; that he served as a private and non-commissioned officer in Company F, Tenth Cavalry, during the summer of 1867 and for several years thereafter with and under Captain Armes while he commanded the said company; that he was engaged in several fights or battles against the Indians, and marched hundreds of miles with Captain Armes while scouting after Indians in Kansas, Colorado, Indian Territory, Mexico, etc.; that he remembers the particulars of a fight against the Indians on the Saline river, Kansas, about the first part of August, 1867, when Sergeant Christy was killed and several men and horses wounded, and was by the side of Captain Armes when he was shot by an Indian with a rifle in the right hip while he was giving orders to the men, who were entirely surrounded by hundreds of Indians; that when Captain Armes fell a good many men rushed up to him, when he ordered them back to their posts with the instructions to be careful and not waste their ammunition and only fire when there was certainty of hitting an Indian. I helped the Captain on his horse, when he was shot under a severe fire of bullets and arrows, and by his careful management saved the command from massacre, and it was my opinion, as well as that of the rest of the men that if he had not dismounted the command when the Indians charged among the men we would have been cleared out in a few minutes.

It was the general talk of all the men after our return to the post that they did not believe any officer except Captain Armes could have saved the command, as he seemed to know just what to do under the circumstances. One very important feature I shall never forget; that is, after the Indians first charged and were

repulsed they set fire to the prairie grass all around the command to try to burn us up, when Captain Armes at once ordered the grass set afire around the command and started it out to meet the posse of Indians, which at once encouraged the men to believe he knew just what to do. I remember we had only about thirty or forty men in the fight, and were surrounded by several hundred Indians thoroughly armed with rifles, pistols, bows, quivers and lances. I never saw an officer display more bravery and coolness under fire than Major Armes. Even when he was shot down he was as cool as if nothing was the matter.

The Captain was a very strict military man, but all the good men in the company liked him, and would promptly obey him, and a few weeks after this first fight with the Indians two companies of Kansas volunteer cavalry were ordered after Indians, where we had another big fight on the Republican river, Kansas, and were surrounded several days and nights, and the Kansas men, who were down on him at first on account of his being so strict, obeyed him to a man, and after the fight and our safe return to Fort Hays they praised him to the skies, and talked of him as one of the bravest Indian fighters on the plains.

(Signed) WILLIAM RICHARDSON.

Subscribed and sworn to before me this 4th day of September, A. D. 1895.

[SEAL.] HENRY HOWARD,
Notary-Public.

A true copy.

EDMOND L. MCCLELLAND,
Notary-Public, D. C.

State of Virginia, County of Elizabeth City, to wit:

Jacob Thornton, being duly sworn, deposeth and saith as follows: That during the month of March, 1896, Lieutenant Duvall of the artillery at Fortress Monroe, Va., came after me and took me before a notary-public by the name of Groom, I think, and asked me to sign a paper which had been fixed up by someone, and I did not know what it was at the time; but the Lieutenant said it was something about Captain, meaning Major, Armes, and I signed it, for I thought it was all right for me to do so, but if it reflected upon him in the least I did not intend it should, for I could not say one word against him, for he was a good officer to me and all the men, and one of the bravest and best Indian fighters on the plains.

(Signed) JACOB THORNTON.

Sworn to and subscribed before me this 10th day of August.

[SEAL] (Signed) T. L. SCLATER,
Notary-Public.

Schofield preferred charges against me, making the following letter the base:

"September 27, 1895.

"Gen. John M. Schofield, U. S. A.:

"Sir—Before you are retired from active duty I thought I would call your attention to the injustice and persecutions you have inflicted upon me during the years 1869-70 and up to the present time.

"As, to my knowledge, I have given you no cause, I would like to have an explanation as to your grounds for making my life a hell and trying to ruin me in the way you have.

"The endorsement upon the charges I preferred against Lieut.-Col. A. D. Nelson in 1870 denouncing me as a worthless character, etc., etc., was the first attack upon me. In addition to ignoring and failing to investigate the serious charges which I then submitted because I considered it my duty to do so, the next wrong was to select a few characters from the Army, call it a court, and approve of their sentence of dismissal, you, as a judge, having selected the jury. You sustained Colonel Nelson in not bringing Captain Graham to trial, and after I was dismissed for bringing these charges Colonel Nelson found that Graham would have to be tried because of the great pressure of all the officers and others at Camp Supply, I. T. Nelson, to save himself, recommended Graham's trial upon the charges that I had submitted long before I was so unjustly dismissed, and he was not only cashiered, but sentenced to the penitentiary for a term of years. Since my retirement you caused another court to be selected, and tried to ruin and disgrace me. You also issued an order, and I was published as a person whose sanity was questioned, but after the mischief was done you stopped the investigation without any request upon my part that you should do so. Lately, I am informed, you have secured the marks to affidavits of negroes who cannot read and write, alleging a lot of falsehoods and stuff that has a tendency to injure me with those who would be influenced by what you say or do on account of your position.

"I am a gentleman, and have always conducted myself as such. I have done my duty as a soldier, as the true records will prove, and any charges that are on file tending to reflect discredit upon me are instigated by personal enmity or unfounded malice, and are unworthy of belief. Common justice on the part of a superior officer, the manly instincts of a gentleman when shown that he is mistaken, should cause you to apologize and show a disposition to amend the wrongs, as far as possible, which you have for so many years heaped upon me.

"Respectfully, etc.,

"(Signed) GEO. A. ARMES."

War Department, Adjutant-General's Office,
October 7, 1895.

Capt. George A. Armes,
U. S. Army, retired,
1405 F Street, Washington, D. C.:

Sir—Your communication of this date to the Secretary of War requesting that he grant you an interview at such time and place as may suit his convenience during this day has beeen duly submitted to him, and he instructs me to say that until the courts shall have disposed of the matters before it affecting you all communication with him must be in writing.

Very respectfully,
(Signed) Geo. D. Ruggles,
Adjutant-General.

A sample of the letters received at the time of my arrest:

614 West Street,
Chicago, Ill., September 28, 1895.

My Dear Major:

I enclose a copy of the *Tribune* of today, which gives an account of what appears to be another great injustice meted out to you. While I am not familiar enough with "Regular Army" regulations to determine whether such an "appeal" as you made to General Schofield was undignified enough to "hang a common soldier," I cannot see that an American citizen's rights should be so imperiled by such an appeal as to submit him to the indignity of being torn from the bosom of his family and cast into prison.

You have my deepest sympathy.

(Signed) John N. Stewart.

Below are given extracts from the *Washington Times*, *Chicago Times-Herald* and *Denison* (Texas) *Herald* on the decision of Judge Bradley in habeas corpus proceedings:

JUDGE BRADLEY IS RIGHT.

The decision of Judge Bradley in the Armes case will commend itself to every unprejudiced person.

In Russia and Germany the arrest and imprisonment of a retired officer for stating his grievance in a personal letter to a superior officer might be justified, but in America, where official rank does not license tyranny, such arbitrary methods cannot be tolerated. Judge Bradley voiced public sentiment when he said that "in whatever capacity General Schofield may have acted, either as Lieutenat-General of the Army or as Secretary of War, his action was unwarranted, illegal, unjust and tyrannical," and although such an opinion from so eminent and capable a jurist as

Judge Bradley may not be pleasant for General Schofield, it fits the situation to a nicety.

It was currently believed that Secretary Lamont would order the prosecution of Major Armes abandoned when he learned the particulars of the arrest, and there is good reason for the impression that he would do so now but for the pressure brought to bear in Army circles. Since the contents of the letter have been made public and the charge that General Schofield has been persecuting Major Armes is so clearly substantiated by circumstantial evidence, it would never do to drop the case. The only way General Schofield can be vindicated is by dismissal of Major Armes through sentence of court-martial, and that will probably be the end of the affair as far as Army circles are concerned. The entire case will probably be reviewed by a Congressional investigation, and it is to be hoped that the truth of the persecution, if any there has been, will be made public.

Judge Bradley of Washington did the right thing in ordering the release of Captain Armes and sharply criticizing General Schofield's despotic conduct. This country is not yet quite ready for military dictators.

We are to have a court-martial, an august military tribunal, sitting in judgment on the case of Major Armes, retired. There is a good deal of curiosity concerning the sort of prosecution the Judge-Advocate will attempt. A pretty case he will have when he gets up and tells the court Major Armes was a man with a grievance, and that he asked redress for his wrongs by means of a letter couched in moderately polite phrases and fairly good English. Most people had supposed it was only in Cuba or China that a man was locked up for respectfully presenting his grievances to his superior officer.

Office of the *American Cultivator*,
Boston, Mass., October 11, 1895.

Maj. George A. Armes:

Dear Sir—I wish to most heartily congratulate you on your vindication by Judge Bradley in the right which you, in common with all citizens hold. Even in England an old proverb reads, "A cat may look at a king," and an acting Secretary of War ought not to be too sacred a character to refuse a protest against his assumptions.

Before I saw the decision of Judge Bradley I wrote a short article to the *American Cultivator*, a copy of which I mail you and a clipping from which is herewith enclosed.

Yours very respectfully,
(Signed) Wm. J. Fowler.

[From *Journal*, Providence, R. I.]

Major Armes comes out best, after all, in his little brush with General Schofield. To the lay mind he courted arrest by his actions. But the court decides otherwise, and describes General Schofield's action as "unwarranted, illegal, unjust and tyrannical." These are harsh words, but, as they are official, they must stand. Since General Schofield is now on the retired list, however, perhaps he will not mind them so very much after all.

[From *Journal*, Milwaukee, Wis.]

Captain Armes has done what he never did before. He has knocked out the entire United States Army.

Here is Schofield's excuse for his conduct:

October 11, 1895.

General Schofield writes to the War Department that the real facts that caused the arrest of Armes was that Armes came to the War Department after office hours, when he knew the person he sought was there, because his carriage was standing at the door; that nearly all others had gone, probably leaving the person he sought alone. He came to deliver in person an insulting message, and brought with him his own witness. His evident purpose was to provoke a personal encounter, and thus enable him to make a personal assault and do bodily harm under conditions which would save him from punishment, through the testimony of his own witness, whom he brought there for that purpose. The police captain who was called at the time corroborated the belief that Armes was a dangerous man, influenced by some form of mania. Under these circumstances his arrest and confinement was imperative, according to military law and its usage.

Oneida, N. Y., October 15, 1895.

My Dear Major:

I have been watching your trouble with Schofield. What a little cuss he is! All there is to him is his great big military title, and now he has shed that. I predict after your case is finally settled we shall never hear of him. He makes the worst row over a few peanuts of any man I ever saw, and I feel that Judge Bradley painted his picture faithfully. I would rather be, as I am, obscure and unknown than to be a person such as I believe Schofield to be. I see in his whole action that unrelenting antagonism of West Pointers to citizen officers, the same old conspiracy you have suffered from ever since your entrance into the regular Army. I see you have or propose to sue his royal highness for $50,000, and I hope you will succeed in making him pay. The right to appeal is a matter guaranteed by our constitution, and it should not be violated by men even of the avoirdupois of Schofield, although for

twenty-four hours he might be watching the Secretary of War's office while that officer had gone a-fishing. I read your letter as published in the *New York World*, and for the life of me I could not see anything more or less than a private dispute, a quarrel between two men, that could be settled quicker and better by the parties interested than by making a great public matter of it. I could not see where the "insult" came in. You believed he had wronged you, as I have no doubt he had. You gave him an opportunity to make things right before his retirement, and he, swelled up with his brief and fleeting authority, took advantage of it to hit you a parting clip before his fangs were drawn. Faugh! that man disgusts me, and I believe that in Gen. N. A. Miles we have a better soldier, a better citizen and more of a man in every respect.

Respectfully, your comrade,
(Signed) W. Hector Gale.

Office of Henry Oliver,
Norton, Kan., October 15, 1895.

Capt. George A. Armes,
Washington, D. C.:

Dear Sir—I have just read in one of our daily papers the decision of Judge Bradley in your case with General Schofield. Please accept my congratulations. I do not suppose you remember me personally. I was a sergeant in your company, E, Second New York Artillery. The last time I saw you was at Washington the day we left for home. You remember we were on the cars when you came. I met you on the yard and shook hands with you. I also distinctly remember you at Hatcher's Run. I read in the *Oneida Press* some time ago that Colonel Hogg was the first one across the run. I say that George A. Armes was the first to cross over, and I think I was the second or third. I write this so that you might possibly remember me, but more especially to congratulate you.

Henry Oliver.

Henry Oliver,
Company E, Second N Y. H. A.

CHAPTER XXXIV.

January 1, 1896.

Assembled at the War Department at 10 o'clock, congratulating General Miles, who marched to the White House at the head of the column of officers. There was a very full turn out—many present who had not been to Washington for over twenty years. After meeting a number of friends in the East Room from every section of the country, Judge Zering and I made calls on the Cabinet, members of Congress, senators and residents of the city, many of whom I had not met for several years, and we wound up at half-past 12 at the home of Mrs. Senator Davis.

January 23, 1896.

Took Mr. Ellicott, Colonel Pierce and his wife driving to Soldiers' Home, after which we attended the President's reception and introduced them to General and Mrs. Miles. I escorted Mrs. Weeks of San Antonio, Texas, and introduced her, also, to General Miles, who soon recognized her as the widow of Major Weeks, who had so grandly entertained him at the Auditorium in Chicago some time ago.

February 23, 1896.

Attended the banquet of the Sons of American Revolution last night. Among those who made interesting addresses were General Miles, Judge John Goode and General Breckenridge. I invited the Baroness Branca and her mother and Mrs. Crosby.

March 14, 1896.

The Second Corps Association arranged to invite the Third Corps to attend our banquet together, and we met in the parlors of the Shoreham. At 9 o'clock, with Generals Howard and Miles at the head, we marched to the banquet hall.

MAJ.-GEN. NELSON A. MILES.

March 27, 1896.

While visiting Senator Shoup of Idaho last evening he introduced me to Mr. Dewey, who has taken an interest in a mine in which I am interested, and called at my office today, where I offered it to him for $400,000.

March 28, 1896.

Colonel Murray, Mr. Ames and I met Mr. Dewey at the Arlington Hotel last evening and closed the transaction for $400,000, on condition that the ore shall turn out as represented.

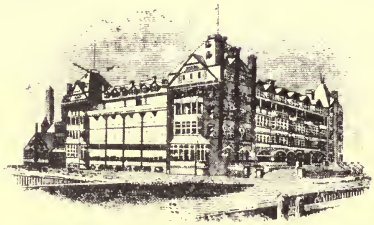
JOHN CHAMBERLIN.

April 1, 1896.

Received a special invitation from John F. Chamberlin for self and ladies to the grand opening of his hotel at Hampton Roads April 4.

Fortress Monroe,
April 5, 1896.

Night before last I invited Lucy, Ethel and Dorothy to accompany me here to attend the grand opening of this hotel, but Lucy declined on the ground that she preferred to have the girls go, as they would enjoy the dancing and entertainments there, and sent them to McKnews to purchase the necessary articles for the occasion.



The Hampton Roads Hotel Company
requests the honor of the presence
of Col. George A. Armes and Ladies
at the opening of the
Hotel Chamberlin
on April 4th 1896 at seven P.M.

Danang R.s.v.p

Washington, May 25, 1896.

Just as I was leaving the house this morning Lucy handed me a list of things she wished me to purchase at the market, with the request that everything be sent out as early as possible, as some friends might be there to dine. After I had done the marketing mentioned on her memorandum, and had sent them back to the house, I was suddenly notified to appear before Judge Hagner, where I soon discovered that Faust & Tyler, two young lawyers, who were apparently out of a job, had succeeded in inducing my wife and two or three of the children to sign affidavits and perjure themselves to the statement they had prepared for them, taking advantage of their want of knowledge as to what they were really doing. Not having talked with any lawyer, and being suddenly surprised at such action, I was unprepared to defend myself. Accidentally meeting Mr. J. H. Ralston, I secured his aid, and he requested Justice Hagner to postpone the case for a day or two, mentioning the circumstances of my leaving home, and showing the memorandum that my wife had written and given me before leaving. The judge very arbitrarily declined Mr. Ralston's request, and issued an order forbidding me to return to my house, which I thought a most brutal act, and requiring me to pay counsel fees of $100 to my wife's lawyers and $100 to her as alimony, or be held in contempt of court.

May 26, 1896.

Being arbitrarily ordered away from my family by Justice Hagner yesterday afternoon, I managed to make arrangements with the tenant of Fairfield for a room for a few days. I was greatly surprised that Ethel would sign an affidavit after the grand outing of several days she and her sister had just had at Fortress Monroe at the opening of the Chamberlin Hotel, to which they were invited, with myself, by the Secretary of the Navy, Mr. Herbert, to inspect the warships that assembled there for a grand review. The Marine Band had entertained the Secretary's guests, consisting of seventy-five specially invited. An interesting event was the visit made by Col. Tom Ochiltree, Gen. Joe Blackburn and Col. Phil Thompson, who came with Mr. Herbert, the Secretary of the Navy, all of them ex-rebels, where they were received by Admiral Bruce, a salute being fired in their honor. The

officers appeared in full-dress uniform, and refreshments were served on all the warships. We had also sailed to Newport News to witness the building of the new warships there, which was a grand sight.

Richmond, Va., June 30, 1896.

During the past few weeks I have obtained a large number of affidavits from servants and neighbors contradicting the affidavits procured by Tyler and Faust, and showing that they were false and malicious. I left Washington at 6 o'clock this A. M. and stopped over in Alexandria until 2.35, when I boarded a special train loaded with Confederate veterans, and reached this city at 7 P. M., and am now at the Jefferson Hotel.

July 2, 1896.

After dinner last evening Dr. A. S. Maddox and I took Mrs. Rudkin and Miss Hunter to see the sponsors and hear speeches and singing. Had a long talk with Mrs. General Davis and Mrs. Hayes. Mrs. Jefferson Davis appreciated my effort in arranging the militia in the parade so as to allow her carriage to pass on to the platform, where I had adjoining seats, and thus had an opportunity to converse with her during the ceremonies.

Washington, July 4, 1896.

Left Richmond last evening and arrived here at Fairfield about 10 o'clock, and now find that it will be necessary for me to move some of my property from the District to keep it from being attached. Have a large transaction on hand with Mr. William F. Schneider, who is in Rochester, N. Y.

Rochester, N. Y., July 7, 1896.

Left Washington on the 10.40 train last night, arriving here at 4 P. M., where I met Mr. Schneider, who invited me to his house as his guest, where I was entertained today.

July 9, 1896.

At 12 o'clock Mr. Parker took us to the beach and entertained us with a fine dinner. We then took the steamer and went around on Lake Ontario, where we spent the rest of the evening.

Tacoma Park Hotel, Washington, D. C., July 16, 1896.

Arrived here at 10 this A. M. Called at Mr. Charles H. Burgess' office and was shown the morning *Post*, which published an order of Justice Hagner sending me to jail if I could be found. I was advised to get out of the jurisdiction of the court immediately, so I am now quartered in a good room just over the District line, and where I can use a telephone to transact my business in the city. I have sent for a pair of horses, tea-cart, buggy and two sets of harness. Have also sent my four cows out to pasture at Mr. Page's.

July 17, 1896.

Mr. Coryal, proprietor of the hotel, is a special friend of mine, and helping me by keeping me posted as to what is going on. There having been a demand of six or eight hundred dollars for alleged counsel fees, alimony, etc., I have made up my mind that I will not pay it and will test the matter in court.

July 18, 1896.

I telephoned F. G. Newlands today in relation to his assisting Claude in breaking up my family, and told him it was in his power to stop the whole trouble if he would, but he telephoned back that he would not interfere. I hold him responsible to a certain extent.

Chevy Chase Inn, Md., August 3, 1896.

As the deputy marshals, police, scouts, lawyers and others are making a desperate effort to catch me, I decided I would vacate my quarters and spend a short time in Virginia. I left the hotel at 3.20 P. M. and drove by Mr. Page's, and am now dining at this hotel with Justice Cole at the next table.

Langley, Fairfax County, Va., August 4, 1896.

I was placed in rather a peculiar position yesterday evening, and in order to avoid the court found myself right in it. Judge Cole registered right next to my name. Under the circumstances I hardly thought it would be healthy to remain in the same hotel with him much longer, and left last evening, and am now being entertained by Mr. and Mrs. Mackall.

Vienna, Fairfax County, Va., August 5, 1896.

Arrived here this afternoon, telephoning to Washington giving my lawyers my address, and am now arranging to occupy one of my vacant houses in this village.

August 7, 1896.

As my driver, John, is a first-class cook, he got me up a nice dinner today, after which I rode horseback to Falls Church. Met quite a number of my friends and telephoned Ralston and Siddons, who have kept me posted as to the court movements.

Washington, D. C., August 12, 1896.

Have run a great risk by coming here, but have registered at the hotel, called at my office and met quite a number of friends. Visited the office of my lawyers, Ralston & Siddons, this afternoon, in spite of marshals and police, who are on the lookout with orders to arrest me.

Vienna, Va., August 13, 1896.

After transacting my business in the city last evening, I returned here this afternoon on the 4.30 train.

Washington, D. C., August 15, 1896.

I left Vienna at 4 P. M., driving here. Called at my office and at that of my lawyers, and visited several of my houses on Albemarle street and Fairfield.

Vienna, Va., August 17, 1896.

Managed to drive through Washington city, and, after staying all night, returned here all right in spite of detectives, marshals, etc.

Washington, D. C., August 18, 1896.

My lawyers requested me to meet them here at their office this afternoon to transact some business in relation to making a loan on property. I felt as if some trick was being planned by the lawyers my wife had in her employ, when Mr. Ralston reminded me that it was unprofessional for one of their body to do any underhanded act. As we had about finished our business two deputy marshals walked into Ralston's office and arrested me. They accompanied me to the city hall, where I was requested to pay over two hundred dollars in cash immediately or go to jail. Ralston communicated with Justice C. C. Cole, who had very conveniently left the court and gone to the Chevy Chase Inn. As Ralston advanced the money, I was released and advised not to appear again in the city until further orders. The confidence of Ralston & Siddons in my wife's attorneys had been misplaced, and I could not be blamed for indiscretion.

Vienna, August 28, 1896.

Since my return here I have been busily engaged in fixing up my property and corresponding with Pitney & Bradford in relation to a $12,000 loan on Tenth street houses.

Washington, D. C., September 5, 1896.

Drove here today, and while in the office a deputy marshal got in the buggy, feeling certain that he had me, when I sent a messenger to him to ask if he wanted Major Armes, and if so, to slip up to the Arlington Hotel, when he immediately sprang out of the buggy, starting for that hotel. After hurrying up my business affairs in the office, I drove out of the city without being captured, and have saved myself the payment of eight hundred or a thousand dollars, in default of which I would have gone to jail.

Washington, D. C., September 12, 1896.

Ran the risk of coming here again today to consult my attorneys, being impatient over the delay in fixing up the separation matter. I shall attend the reunion of the Association of the Army of the Potomac at Burlington, Vt.

Astor House, New York, September 13, 1896.

Before leaving Washington I had some business with Pitney & Bradford, who expect to secure a loan of $12,000 on Tenth street property. Had a very pleasant interview with Col. Beriah Wilkins on the ferry-boat coming over to the city with Mr. Keith, proprietor of the Astor House, in relation to a hotel in Washington.

Burlington, Vt., September 15, 1896.

Arriving here at 8 this A.M., I met Governor Woodbury, whom I was glad to see. Dr. Scott and Colonel Corliss wanted me to help General Henry to get the presidency of the Army of the Potomac Association.

September 16, 1896.

At our meeting this morning General Brooke of the United States Army and myself were made members of a committee to nominate officers for our association. He agreed to assist me in my selection if I would agree with him in the selection of ex-Governor Beaver as vice-president, so I named General Henry as president and he James A. Beaver as vice-president, and upon our reporting to the association they were unanimously elected. Had quite an exciting time in the meeting this evening, as I had named Dr. Scott in the place of General Sharp, and in spite of General Ruggles making a speech and opposing me, my man, Scott, was elected.

The Shoreham

JOHN T. DEVINE.

WASHINGTON, D.C., July 18 1898

This is to certify that Major Gen
A Ames was on a Committee with
me at the meeting of the Army of
Potomac Society at Burlington Vt
in 1876 and joined in nominating
Genl Hawley of Vt and Genl Bacon
of Iowa for President and Vice
President respectively —
I knew major Ames during
the War of the Rebellion and
knew him to be a gallant officer
always —

John R Brooke
Maj Genl

September 17, 1896.

Capt. Jack Crawford delivered a fine address in the opera-house. Generals Smith, Webb and Howard made very interesting speeches also. This afternoon we were entertained and dined and wined aboard the steamboats and had a long trip on Lake Champlain.

September 18, 1896.

After our return from the boat ride last evening we attended one of the grandest banquets at the Van Ness Hotel that I ever

witnessed. Generals Howard, Butterfield, Jack Crawford, Governor Woodbury, General Ruggles and several others delivered speeches. This afternoon Governor Woodbury invited me to dine with his family, where I met Mrs. M. M. Parker and daughter of Washington.

Utica, N. Y., September 19, 1896.

Left Burlington this A. M. Reached Troy at 4.35, and arrived here at 7.30. At 11 o'clock met General Butterfield at Baggs' Hotel and took a drive around the city and looked at several pieces of real estate which he has offered for the Schneider house in Washington.

Home, September 23, 1896.

Stopped over in New York a day or two to attend to some important real-estate matters, in addition to attending the Democratic meeting at Madison Square garden last evening, where I was specially invited to a seat on the platform. Also attended the banquet. After hearing General Palmer, Buckner, Governor Flower and Mr. Bryan, I returned to the Fifth Avenue Hotel, where I met Mr. William Schneider, who dined and remained with me over night. Before leaving for home I called on his family in Brooklyn.

September 29, 1896.

I ran a great risk by remaining in the city to meet General Butterfield of New York, who came over to look at the Morton house and several other pieces of property offered for exchange.

September 30, 1896.

One of the most terrible storms ever known here came up at 11 o'clock last night. This morning the roofs of hundreds of houses were blown off, many trees blown down, and quite a number of people killed. Mr. G. Warfield came in to let me know that the windmill at Fairfield had blown down and my large cherry tree, besides considerable other damage.

October 8, 1896.

Having spent a large sum in connection with the separation matter, in which the lawyers on both sides appeared to be the only ones benefited, I made up my mind I would direct and settle the case myself. This evening about 10 o'clock I walked into the house, where my wife was amusing two or three of the children. She seemed thoroughly surprised at my appearance at

that hour, and asked me if I was not afraid of being arrested by not keeping hid, and that the marshals, detectives, etc., were looking for me. I told her I had come to attend to a very important matter, and reminded her that unless we settled our difficulties soon the children and herself would have no roof to sleep under. I told her that the lawyers and the outside mischief-makers were the only ones benefited by this litigation, and that if she preferred to abide by the advice of others and desired to have the bringing up and control of the children she could do so and have the matter settled within a few days provided she would withdraw her application for a separation and discharge her lawyers, turn them over to mine, Ralston & Siddons, for investigation and make them account for the hundreds of dollars they had collected from rents, etc., failed to account for, and still remains so. They soon became professionally unknown. She immediately consented, requesting me to write the papers for her to sign, which I did, discharging Tyler & Faust, and requesting the case withdrawn. In the meantime Judge Hagner had ordered sold $3200 worth of vehicles, and but $18 of this was ever accounted for.

October 9, 1896.

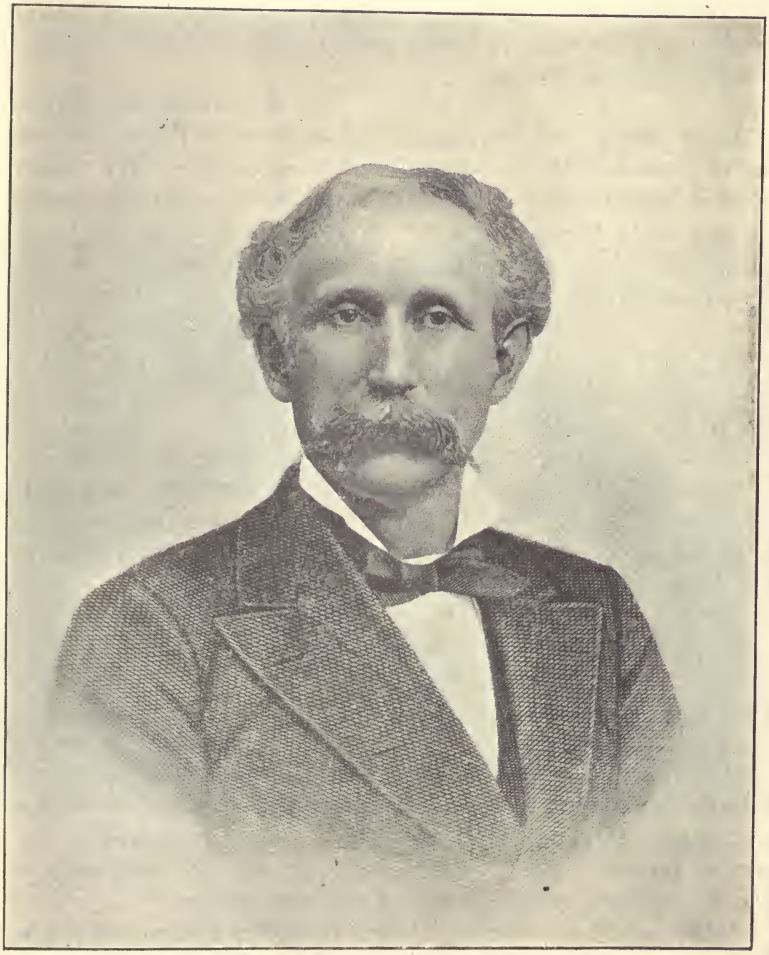
This morning I went to the city hall. Just as the clerk, Meigs, had recorded the withdrawal of the separation case a couple of deputy marshals in the meantime, hearing that I was in the court-house, rushed in to arrest me, when Clerk Meigs informed them they were too late, that the case had been dismissed and was so recorded. I then notified my lawyers, Ralston & Siddons, who congratulated me on settling the affair so nicely.

W. C. Prentiss, a lawyer of high standing and character, was directed by my wife to make an application for an absolute divorce. It was made and placed before the court. Upon receiving a notice to appear, I declined, and the case went by default, and an absolute divorce was granted, giving my wife the custody of the children and alimony to be paid by me monthly, but no property. After the case was fully settled I called on Lucy and gave her some furniture to put in the house she had rented. She has moved, and is now installed there with the children, while I moved back into my own house, where I keep bachelor's hall.

I feel much better now that this litigation is at an end. It has cost me a very large amount of money, besides worry and annoyance, and the interference with many of my business transactions.

November 12, 1896.

Attended a meeting of the Second Army Corps last evening at the Ebbitt. General Miles presided, and Colonel Kirk read a paper on the Battle of the Wilderness.



GOVERNOR W. P. KELLOGG.

November 15, 1896.

Spent last evening with Gov. W. P. Kellogg and several of his friends at the Shoreham, and after dinner today drove Colonel Smithmyer out to the American University in my tea-cart, stopping at Chamberlin's upon our return, meeting Mr. H. Kilbourn, one of my best friends and a leading real-estate man.

November 17, 1896.

Judge Yeoman of the Interstate Commerce Commission, Mr. Campbell, Mr. Day and myself went over to Virginia to look at the 1500-acre farm near Falls Church, which Mr. Campbell is very anxious to sell. His wife treated us to an elegant dinner, which we all enjoyed.

November 26, 1896.

After dinner last evening I called at the Ebbitt to bid my old friend, John E. Coad of Omaha, good-bye. We took a drive around the city. It has been some twenty-eight years since we met in the West, he being the owner of the stock that I had recaptured from Lawrence canyon, where so many of my men were frozen in the winter of 1867.

December 10, 1896.

Saw Gen. S. S. Burdette and Mr. Sam Bryan today in relation to their interests in the Appomattox battlefields, but could not get them together in regard to the deal.

December 16, 1896.

I brought General Burdette to Mr. Bryan's office this afternoon, and after one or two hours' conversation and argument he has agreed to exchange his interest in the Appomattox property for the I street house.

December 17, 1896.

I spent a portion of last evening with ex-Senator Sawyer of Wisconsin in relation to his mines and some property he has in the city, which he gave to me to sell.

December 31, 1896.

Have finally arranged to make a deal with all those interested for the Appomattox property, placing my I street house in part exchange. Meeting Mr. Harry Davis today, he agreed to sell out his interest. Have worked on papers and accounts most of the day, settling up my affairs for the past year.

A few letters, newspaper extracts and other documents follow and further elucidate the experiences of myself and family during the year 1896:

Washington, D. C., December 28, 1896.

To the Honorable Secretary of War,
(Through the Adjutant-General),
Washington, D. C.:

Sir—I respectfully call your attention to a recommendation on file in your office in relation to a brevet commission as Lieutenant-Colonel, and ask that the papers in the case be referred to the proper parties to be investigated, and that I be allowed to appear in person, with papers, and evidence, I believe, will warrant my nomination being made, if there is any question raised as to my being entitled to it.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

(Signed) G. A. ARMES,
Capt. U. S. A., retired.

MRS. GEO. A. ARMES.

GROVER CLEVELAND ARMES.

CHAPTER XXXV.

January 1, 1897.

Saw the old year out and the new one in. The whistles were in full blast, the bells were ringing and the cannon roared for several minutes after 12 o'clock, and the whole seemed to be a pandemonium. I reached the War Department in time to go with the Army officers, General Miles in the lead, to the President's house. I then made my usual calls.

January 2, 1897.

Among those whom I called upon last evening was Hon. J. W. Thompson, whose lovely bride entertained gracefully as a queen. Mrs. Cushman K. Davis also entertained us with a bevy of beautiful young ladies, and made our stay very pleasant, a facility Mrs. Davis has established at her receptions.

January 5, 1897.

After dinner last evening we called on Bishop Hurst to interest him in the treatment of wood by Mr. Bidwell's process, in which wood, curtains, or in fact any substance, cannot be burned. The process has been adopted by the Navy Department. Called on Gen. S. S. Burdette, who signed the deed in relation to his interest in the Appomattox property.

January 9, 1897.

Called on Senator J. W. Daniel last evening, and he recommended Mr. Randolph Harrison of Lynchburg as my attorney in fixing up the Appomattox property title. Had all the deeds properly acknowledged, and have deeded my I street house in part payment for it.

January 11, 1897.

Met Judge Peck at the Shoreham last evening. Shook hands with Gen. Horace Porter and Colonel Corbin, old friends of mine, whom I met at the Arlington the latter part of the evening. Also had quite a talk with General Alger, who hopes to be made Secretary of War, and is doing everything he can to bring it about.

January 14, 1897.

Senator Daniel sent me a pass to Lynchburg for Mr. Settle and myself. Attended the meeting of the Second Army Corps Association last evening. Called on Senator Gibson this afternoon, who is still anxious to help me with my brevet matter.

West Appomattox Court House, Va., January 15, 1897.

I met Mr. Settle at the depot at 8 o'clock this A. M., and we reached Lynchburg at 2.20, where we were met by Randolph Harrison, with whom we were engaged an hour or two at his office in relation to the titles of Appomattox. He then boarded the train with us, and we reached this place at 3.45, where we met Mr. Piers, clerk of the court, a most intelligent and reliable gentleman, and one of the landmarks, who invited us to his office and tendered us every courtesy possible in helping to establish the title to all the tracts of land connected with the Appomattox battlefields. Colonel Poor, who is the agent for the property, had just left, and we were unable to see him.

Lynchburg, Va., January 16, 1897.

Mr. Piers entertained us last evening with quite a number of photographs of the old buildings scattered around on the battlefields, and it was 2 o'clock this A. M. before I retired. I was up before 8, and after breakfast Mr. Smith, the collector, invited Mr. Settle and myself to drive over the lands I have just purchased, introducing me to the tenants. Mr. Harrison remained at the clerk's office looking over the titles, while I examined the property, which took several hours to go over.

January 22, 1897.

Called on Mr. Bryan at his office today, when he acknowledged the deeds and forwarded them to Governor Campbell in Ohio for his signature.

January 27, 1897.

Invited Mr. Heleluhe, the secretary of Queen Liliuokalani, to make some calls with me yesterday afternoon, and upon being introduced to the Vice-President his daughters and sons recognized him at once as having entertained them at the Hawaian Islands.

January 28, 1897.

I saw Mr. Bryan again this afternoon, and he showed me a telegram from Governor Campbell stating that the deed was signed and on its way back. Called on the Queen, introducing General Maxwell, Fourth Assistant Postmaster-General. Telephoned Judge Thurber in relation to the Queen attending the reception this evening, when he telephoned back that the President had arranged for the Queen to be there. Attended Mrs. Senator Faulkner's reception at the Shoreham this afternoon, who entertained beautifully.

February 10, 1897.

Attended the Board of Trade meeting last evening, after which I met several friends at Chamberlin's. Among them was Nat Goodwin, who kept us up until after 4 o'clock this A. M. with his interesting stories and anecdotes.

February 21, 1897.

Attended the Foundry Church meeting last evening, where Surgeon-General Sternberg, Mr. John Joy Edison and several others delivered addresses, and at 10.30 met Gen. Daniel Sickles at the Arlington, with Mr. C. S. Cramp of Philadelphia and J. D. Crimmons of New York. The latter invited us to a table, where we spent the rest of the evening until after 1 this A. M. in a social manner, John Russell Young of Philadelphia being one of the party.

February 23, 1897.

Attended the banquet of the Sons of the American Revolution last evening at Rauscher's. General Breckinridge was toastmaster, and Mr. William McAdoo, representing the Navy, Harry Davis the District, and Rev. Dr. Radcliffe the clergy, advocated the union of both societies.

March 2, 1897.

Last evening met Major O'Driscoll, Captain Seville, Maj. Charles Lyman and several others of the Second Corps Association and partly decided on the speakers for the banquet to be held on the 16th at the Shoreham. Saw Gen. C. H. Grosvenor this A. M., who accepted an invitation to reply to a toast. General Alger agreed to be present, but said he would be unable to make a speech.

March 5, 1897.

Attended the inaugural ball last evening with some friends, among whom were Colonel and Mrs. Horn of New York, and through the kindness of Colonel Brackett we were passed by the guards into Mr. and Mrs. McKinley's room, where I met General Alger, who introduced me to his wife and several ladies present. Mr. Charles E. Bell, who seemed to be in charge of the ceremonies, appeared very much provoked at my being passed by the guards at the instance of Colonel Brackett.

March 8, 1897.

Colonel Megrew of Ohio met me at the Ebbitt last evening, introducing me to Senator Fairbanks, who made an appointment to go with his wife today to look at a house he desires to rent. They were very much pleased at the Van Wyck house, and authorized me to make an offer for it.

March 9, 1897.

My residence Fairfield, containing only twenty-five rooms, and I being alone since the divorce was granted, is considered too small to rent for a summer hotel. I decided to make an addition of twenty-five rooms, as a party offered to take it for the summer provided this addition was made within the next thirty days. I applied to several architects and contractors, who stated it would be impossible to complete such an addition in less than sixty or ninety days, and have been unable to find anyone to take the responsibility of completing it within that time. I therefore engaged twenty men to start in tomorrow, and propose to give my personal attention to building it by day labor instead of by contractor.

Hanover Junction, Va., March 10, 1897.

Met Congressman White, his wife and daughter, Miss Pearl, at the Shoreham early this morning according to appointment, and left Washington on 10.55 train for Mr. R. W. Doswell's horse farm. We were met at the depot by a carriage, and after riding over and viewing the racetrack, we returned and indulged in a splendid dinner prepared by the Misses Doswell. They showed us quite a number of elegant oil paintings, several of which had been bayoneted through by the soldiers who encamped on the place during the war. Mr. White was very much pleased with the land, but found the river was not large enough for navigation, and declined to make an offer, as he desires a country place where he can bring up his large yacht and go fishing and sailing occasionally.

March 17, 1897.

Met the members of old Second Corps at the Shoreham last evening and marched into the banquet hall with Mr. White of Ohio and J. Russell Young as my guests. Major Mills, whom I had invited, was also present. General Grosvenor led off with a grand toast, then Senator Perkins, General Alger, General Miles, Archbishop Ireland and several other members of the Second Corps followed.

March 20, 1897.

Paid off forty men this evening, who have been working like beavers to rush my building operations.

March 22, 1897.

Was up before sunrise this morning and had forty-five men at work including carpenters, plasterers, bricklayers, plumbers, tinners, painters and helpers.

March 29, 1897.

In conversation with Senator Spooner last evening he agreed to endorse me to the President for the commissionership to succeed Commissioner Ross. Senators Powell Clayton, William Stewart and J. B. Foraker concurred.

April 13, 1897.

Newspapers came out today giving me credit for beating the building record, as I have fully completed the house and the rooms are now ready to be occupied. The work was begun at the foundation, the material being brought from Washington, and by keeping every man at his own trade and working extra hours I fully completed the building within thirty days from the time I commenced it.

May 11, 1897.

After finishing the new addition to Fairfield the house has fifty rooms, most of which are partly furnished, and I have leased it to Mr. Warfield for the season, reserving two rooms for myself.

Appomattox, Va., May 14, 1897.

After dinner last evening I returned to the city and met several friends at the Shoreham and Chamberlin's. I was up at sunrise this morning and left Washington on the 8 o'clock train. Met Mr. Harrison at Lynchburg and Senator Flood and Professor Cabell, the latter being my guest at the hotel.

East Appomattox, Va., May 15, 1897.

Mr. Smith, my manager, spent most of last evening going through business details with me, and this morning at 7 o'clock brought a horse for us, on which we rode over the battlefields. We were eight hours in the saddle, the Professor making a memorandum of the number of buildings on the land; counted over forty. The more I see of this country the more I like it. It will eventually make a grand national park, and the Government should own it.

Washington, May 16, 1897.

Senator Hal Flood called at the hotel and invited Professor Cabell and myself to dine with him and his father, Maj. Joel Flood, and it was after 11 o'clock last evening before we were through with our dinner. After dinner we adjourned to the library and smoked and chatted until 1 o'clock, when we retired and took the 3 A. M. train for Washington. I stopped over at Monticello and dined with Hon. Jefferson Levy, who gave a fourteen-course dinner on silver.

June 10, 1897.

Appeared before the Board of Commissioners today in relation to having water-pipes connected with the Nourse road and with my houses in that section. Had quite a long interview with Rev. Dr. Corey this afternoon in regard to the fifty acres on Connecticut avenue and Pierce Mill road, which he is very anxious to purchase.

July 10, 1897.

Had a long talk with the Assistant Secretary of War this afternoon, who has agreed to furnish me copies of papers and give special attention to my case in relation to brevet promotion.

July 13, 1897.

Failing to meet Senator Daniel at his house last evening, I called on Rev. Dr. Talmadge, who introduced me to his daughters, and spent an interesting hour or so there. I then called on Mrs. General Jeffries in relation to renting her house on Sixteenth street to Congressman Stewart of Wisconsin.

Appomattox, Va., August 8, 1897.

Last evening after being entertained by Major and Mrs. Flood at 11 o'clock I was assigned to a large bedroom which his great

grandfather used over a hundred years ago, in which was an old suite of furniture, a very valuable souvenir. The bed has a large canopied top and steps to climb up to it. After breakfast this A. M. he invited me to attend the Sunday-school, of which he is the superintendent, and met a great many of my neighbors' children, most all of whom attend a log church in the woods, and seem very devoted to the services. We then returned to the house, where I was treated to a fine dinner by Mrs. Flood. They inherit the old-fashioned way of taking care of guests.

Old Point Comfort, August 10, 1897.

Was entertained by the Westmoreland Club last evening, after which I put up at the Jefferson Hotel. Left Richmond this morning, coming by way of Hampton, where I called upon Governor Woodfin, who entertained me very pleasantly. He gave me a statement in regard to his opinion of Sergeant Thornton, whom I found through a cabman, who brought him to the notary's office, where he contradicted the affidavit he had given to Lieutenant Duvall. He said Mr. Duvall fixed up the paper and he signed it, believing it was in my favor. After being questioned in the presence of witnesses, he swore to his statement contradicting everything that had reflected upon me and the statement prepared by said Duvall. Called on Colonel Whiting, Senator Faulkner's father-in-law, whose brother from Alabama entertained me for several hours.

On Boat to Albany, August 19, 1897.

Left Fairfield this A. M., calling at the residence of General Swaim just in time to hear the sermon and view his remains, which looked as natural as life, in full-dress uniform.

Troy House, Troy, N. Y., August 20, 1897.

Arrived in Albany at 7 this A. M., and at 8.30 took a trolley-car to this city. Met Generals King, Henry, Ruggles and quite a number of Army friends. Second Corps meeting took place at 11 o'clock. Elected General Batchelder president and Colonel Cressen vice-president. Nominated General Ruggles for Commander of the Army of the Potomac Association. I opposed him in favor of General Brooke.

August 21, 1897.

Had a lively time last evening in electing officers for the Army of the Potomac, but General Ruggles got sixty-three votes and General Green-thirty-seven. It looked as if it was all fixed before the meeting that General Ruggles should be elected, as General Batchelder thought it was a good idea to have a staff officer at the head for a change, although I expected his co-operation with me for General Brooke. Being invited into the parlor with the President and Cabinet and many of the President's immediate friends, I had an opportunity of having a pleasant conversation before taking carriages to visit the factories and cemetery. Dr. Scott, Miss King, Colonel Black of General Miles' staff and several of us had a very interesting time going through the collar factories. Thousands were employed in making shirts and collars, and we were instructed how it was done; bolts of linen and cotton being put in and shirts and collars already starched being brought out in a few minutes. A steamboat ride to the Troy arsenal proved a grand success, and the President, with everyone else, is greatly elated with his entertainment. Colonel MacArthur, the editor of the *Troy Times*, was complimented for his successful entertainment.

Iroquois Hotel, Buffalo, N. Y., August 22, 1897.

It was 4 o'clock this A. M. before I retired, as we had one of the grandest banquets that Troy has given for years. General Sickles, Colonel Tremain, General Ruggles, Major Woodruff and others delivered very interesting speeches. After the banquet Mr. Parkman invited me to call at his house at No. 8 Washington Place, which I did just before leaving Troy, and was entertained by himself and wife.

August 23, 1897.

Captain Crittenden, Captain Irvin, Captain Doubleday and I have secured a room, and each have a cot, and are so tired out we cannot help but rest. During the afternoon a large party of us visited Niagara Falls and the gorge, which was one of the grandest sights I ever saw. Young Mr. Yeomans, whose father is Interstate Commerce Commissioner in Washington, took charge of the resolutions in relation to Appomattox, and is fixing it up.

August 24, 1897.

I was visiting posts and meeting old Army friends until 2 this A. M. After breakfast called on General Clarkson, the Commander-in-Chief of the Grand Army, with Colonel Adams of New York. After reading the resolution carefully through he assured me that he would do his utmost to have it adopted. Had quite a pleasant interview with Hon. Dan Lockwood. Col. Geo. B. Fielder of New Jersey has agreed to introduce the resolution and recommend the Grand Army to adopt it and purchase Appomattox for a national park.

August 25, 1897.

Met many friends whom I had not seen for years from all parts of the country last evening, and was entertained by Lafayette Post of New York, by Colonel Adams and others; also by Captain Crittenden, late of the Fourteenth Connecticut. Mr. Yeomans and Corporal James Tanner secured tickets, inviting me on the grand stand, where I had a splendid seat near the President during the review of the parade.

Niagara Falls, on the Train, August 26, 1897.

General Butterfield and wife, General Flagler and wife, General Ruggles and Secretary of War Alger and many others were on the stand, and last evening General Fielder of New Jersey and Colonel Adams, Captain Crittenden and myself met together and fixed papers in relation to Appomattox Park, which was unanimously adopted by the Grand Army. I left Buffalo on the 5. 30 train for Toronto and Kingston.

Windsor Hotel, Montreal, Canada, August 27, 1897.

I was up almost all night, as I had to change cars at Toronto, Canada, for Kingston, where I got on a boat at 4 this A. M. Arriving here at 6 P. M., had a splendid supper and was assigned to an elegant room on the second floor, meeting Mr. Cummings of Illinois, who has become quite interested and friendly, and after breakfast this morning we took in the whole city, visiting the heights, a number of churches, and most every place of interest.

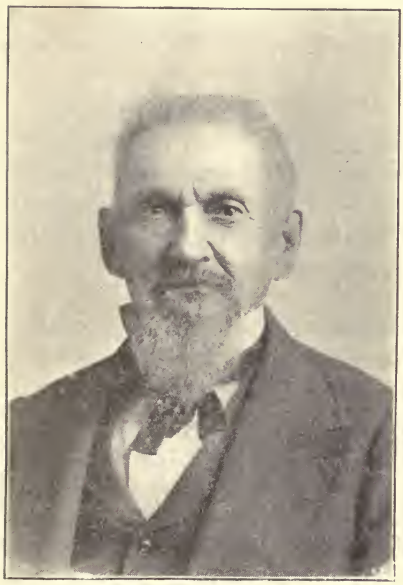
Utica, N. Y., August 30, 1897.

Last evening I took Miss Carro and Miss Frazer and her mother to the English Church, where Rev. Dr. Green of Cedar

Rapids preached a fine sermon. The Queen and all the royal family were prayed for. The boat got off during the night, and I landed at Clayton, where the custom-house officers searched my valise.

Saratoga, N. Y., August 31, 1897.

On my way here last evening I stopped over at Oneida, where I met Mrs. Beal. She invited me to tea, and informed me that her husband and Mr. Gale had gone to White Lake fishing, where I told her I would try to meet them. I took the 1.30 train for White Lake, and landed there at 4 this A. M. I hired a team and drove to Colonel Hulser's house, arriving at sunrise. When the old Colonel met me he threw both arms around me, being so glad to see me. After breakfast Mr. Beal, Mr. Gale, Colonel Hulser, the boys and myself took a row on the lake, and afterwards roasted sugar corn and visited on the beach. The old Colonel was greatly disappointed in my not remaining with him longer. After spending a very pleasant day and enjoying the Colonel's hospitality, I was obliged to leave.



Col. O. F. Hulser.

Grand Union Hotel, Saratoga, September 1, 1897.

After dinner last evening Colonel Hulser was very anxious to take me to the station in one of his boats, but I found that he would hardly have time, and therefore came down in a carriage. He seemed greatly worried that I did not remain with him longer, as he was a devoted commanding officer thirty-five years ago. I changed cars for Albany, came by Troy, and landed here at 8.45 last evening, and have an elegant room in this hotel. Colonel Haywood and Major Scott and all of us went to the springs after

breakfast today. Among my old friends whom I met this afternoon are Mrs. Major Weeks and Rev. Dr. Corey.

Washington, December 26, 1897.

Have been very busy fixing up my houses and getting them ready for rent. Am trying to secure Mrs. Murphy's appointment in the Interior Department, and hope to succeed. Have neglected many business matters in order to secure justice at the hands of Secretary Alger, who has promised me to aid to that end, but appears to be under the influence of subordinates who are trying to break me down.

December 31, 1897.

As hard as I have worked during the past year with Secretary Alger I have not been able to accomplish my main object, which is to have my name sent to the Senate for brevet Lieutenant-Colonel. After winding up my affairs I find that I have cleared about $75,000 in my business transactions this year.

War Department, Adjutant-General's Office,
Washington, January 4, 1897.

Capt. Geo. A. Armes,
U. S. Army,
1405 F street, Washington, D. C.:

Sir—I have the honor to inform you that your letter of the 28th ultimo has been laid before the Secretary of War, who directs me to say that the matter of your claim for a brevet has once been determined, and that he is not now disposed to reopen it.

Very respectfully,
GEO. D. RUGGLES,
Adjutant-General.

January 14.

[Extract from the *Post*.]

The veterans of the Second Army Corps Association, at the Ebbitt House last evening, presided over by Capt. N. M. Brooks, in the absence of General Miles, who is now in New York, delivered eulogies on the life * * * A great deal of interest was manifested in the proposed memorial bridge over the Potomac river into Arlington, and after earnest discussion the following committee was appointed to urge it upon Congress: Gen. J. S. Smith, Gen. R. N. Batchelder, Maj. G. A. Armes, Capt. H. C. Stevens and Capt. Charles Lyman.

The executive committee was instructed to at once begin preparations for the annual banquet to be held March 13.

CHAPTER XXXVI.

January 1, 1898.

Spent most of last evening at the Ebbitt House with Queen Liliuokalani and the Hawaian Commission. These sang and played native pieces on the mandolin, guitar and piano in the hotel parlors, where quite a number had assembled. In the party were Her Majesty Liliuokalani, Joseph Heleluhe, Mrs. Ululari Heleluhe, David Kalauokalani, James H. Haulia, John Richardson, William Auld, Governor and Mrs. Crawford and Admiral and Mrs. Beardslee. After breakfast this morning dressed in full uniform and made the usual calls, official and otherwise.

January 10, 1898.

Judge J. D. Yeomans of the Interstate Commerce Commission called at my office and left his card today. I met him during the afternoon at his office in the *Sun* Building with Hon. J. M. Wiley of New York, against whom I had a suit pending about ready to be called. We settled out of court upon Mr. Wiley giving me his note for $50, payable in thirty days, and Judge Yeomans agreeing to send me a registered thoroughbred colt to Chicago free of charge. If he bought any land in this vicinity he would bring the colt here with their stock without cost to me. The suit against Wiley was for an overcharge on a pair of horses I purchased for $1200 which did not turn out as represented.

January 13, 1898.

Called at the Ebbitt last evening, where I met Miss Schmidt, but had to leave her at 8.30 to attend the Second Army Corps meeting at Willard's where I nominated and helped elect Gen. M. I. Ludington as president of the association.

January 14, 1898.

After breakfast called at the War Department, where I spent most of the day. Had a short interview with General Miles in regard to my brevet case.

January 20, 1898.

Reached office at 10 o'clock, and after answering a few letters called on General Miles at the War Department in regard to Lieutenant Duvall, who, he informed me, had made some sort of a charge against me.

January 24, 1898.

After breakfast I called on the Assistant Secretary of War, who told me General Miles had suggested that a board be appointed to investigate General Hancock's recommendation of myself for brevet Lieutenant-Colonel, and desired to know if I had any objections to a board examining into the facts. I told him I had not, provided he appointed honorable men, but that they were very scarce among the officers of the War Department. Upon asking me if I were willing to give the names of those whom I had confidence in, I told him certainly, and gave him the names of nine, stating that I would be satisfied with a board composed of any three selected from the nine names suggested, and it was agreed to. I then gave him the names of Brigadier-General Breckinridge, Col. Thomas Ward, Maj. W. H. Carter, Col. Chas. Bird, Col. H. C. Corbin, Maj. H. O. S. Hiestand, Maj. J. N. Morrison, Col. C. F. Humphrey and Lieut.-Col. A. McArthur. He said he would let me know the result in the morning.

January 25, 1898.

After calling upon Vice-President Hobart last evening I met General Grosvenor at the Cochran and had a very pleasant interview. After breakfast drove to the War Department, where I was informed by the Assistant Secretary that he had appointed a board consisting of General Breckinridge, Colonel Ward and Major Carter to investigate my brevet case. I told him I was perfectly satisfied and would abide by their decision.

January 30, 1898.

Went to the Capitol today and had a long talk with General Hull, chairman of the Military Committee of the House, who told me he had referred my Appomattox bill to General Marsh of Illinois.

January 31, 1898.

Saw the Assistant Secretary today, and he informed me that Adjutant-General Breck had represented to him that the board

appointed would inconvenience him. Was informed today that my wishes as to the board on brevet were disregarded, and one consisting of Colonel Young, Third Cavalry; Major Lebo, Sixth Cavalry, and Major Conrad, Eighth Infantry, had been selected, all being officers well known to be opposed to me.

February 7, 1898.

Spent several hours last evening at the Normandy, where I met Gen. George B. Fielder, who has just arrived from Jersey City and who came over in the interest of the Appomattox bill, he having been appointed the chairman of the committee of five selected by the Army of the Potomac Association to meet in Washington for the purpose of explaining the necessity of Appomattox being purchased for a national park.

February 8, 1898.

After the bill was prepared and approved of by General Fielder and his committee, Senator Proctor of Vermont introduced it in the Senate.

February 9, 1898.

General Fielder and I called at the War Department today to examine maps in relation to the park. The Secretary of War, at our request, ordered them sent to the Military Committee of the House for their information. Called on ex-Secretary of the Navy Herbert, who has agreed to interest himself in the passage of the bill.

February 17, 1898.

Met my old Captain, F. M. H. Kendricks, Seventh United States Infantry, last evening at the Ebbitt House. I was as glad to see him as if he had been my brother, we not having met for over thirty-four years, when we served together in the same company, he as Captain and I as Second Lieutenant.

March 4, 1898.

Having been appointed a member of the Memorial Bridge Committee, called on Senators Warren, Bacon, Rollins and Faulkner, who have agreed to do what they can to urge its passage.

March 7, 1898.

Had quite a discussion with Mr. Heald of the firm of Worthington & Heald in relation to the transaction with Dr. Bliss for Sixteenth street property. He gave me a check for $1000 on account.

March 9, 1898.

Have scarcely missed a day during the past three months from being at the War Department in connection with my brevet bill. Assistant Secretary Meiklejohn told me today the papers of the board were ready and I could see them soon.

March 10, 1898.

Attended the Second Army Corps Association meeting last evening, which passed a resolution recommending General Miles for Lieutenant-General, a committee being appointed to wait on Congress to urge the passage of the bill. Called on Secretary Meiklejohn today, who told me the board had made an unfavorable report in my case. General Corbin agreed that I should see it. Meeting Major Garlington, he requested me to come to his office this afternoon, and when I appeared he undertook to question me, but I declined until after I saw the Duvall report.

March 11, 1898.

I reached the War Department at 10 o'clock this A. M., but it was after 12 before I could read the report of Colonel Young's board, which required an order of the Secretary of War to see, to find out the result. The report is a disgrace to those who made it. Major Garlington tried to take snap judgment on me before I saw the Duvall report, which General Corbin finally ordered him, through Major Carter, to let me see.

March 22, 1898.

Spent last evening at the Ebbitt House until after 11 o'clock with Major Gardiner and ladies. Called at the War Department today and had quite a lively talk with Major Garlington in relation to the board's report.

March 23, 1898.

Called on General Miles and General Corbin. Mr. Meiklejohn agreed to let me see the full report of the board. Had an interview with Inspector-General Breckinridge in regard to the infamous matter.

March 24, 1898.

Attended the meeting of the Sons of the American Revolution last evening at Rauscher's, where an elegant lunch was served. Captain Goodwin, Fourteenth Infantry, was my guest. I called on the Secretary of War today in regard to Colonel Young, Major Lebo and Major Conrad, who had made such a disgraceful report in my case, and wrote the following letter to him in relation to the outrage:

Washington, D. C., March 23, 1898.

To the Hon. Secretary of War,

(Through the Adjutant-General of the Army):

Sir—Adverting to the letter of the Assistant Adjutant-General of March 18, 1898, I desire to say that the Board of Investigation, as now constituted, consisting of Col. S. B. M. Young, Third Cavalry; Maj. Thomas C. Lebo, Sixth Cavalry, and Maj. C. H. Conrad, Eighth Infantry, is not competent to deal with the questions involved in my application for a brevet commission. It will be observed that some of the allegations contained in my preliminary statement, addressed to the Board February 1, 1898, are of a very serious character and of vital importance to me and to others in the Army; therefore they could not be properly sifted and determined by such a constituted Board of Investigation. It does not act under oath, and has no power whatever to compel the attendance of witnesses or to swear them when present, and can exercise none of the peculiar legal functions of a court-martial or court of inquiry. It must be remembered that I have repeatedly asserted, and am ready to maintain, that certain officers of the Army, who have zealously labored to prevent me from getting the brevet sought for, have caused false and malicious affidavits to be trumped up against me through some reckless and lying negroes. My chief object, therefore, in assenting to a Board of Investigation was to have these scandalous and malicious affidavits and other charges carefully investigated and the rascality connected with them fully exposed. But it must be manifest that there is no hope of accomplishing this object through the present Board, even though its members were, in all other respects, competent and qualified to act. It will be noticed that there is a Board appointed to investigate and report upon a matter, without the requisite powers or qualifications to investigate. Hence, nothing but a miscarriage of justice could be reasonably expected. To avoid this I most respectfully, but earnestly, protest against the action already taken by the Board; also against any further action being taken by it. And I request that the report made by the said Board be disapproved and set aside, and that said Board be discharged from the further investigation or consideration of this matter for the following reasons, to wit:

1. Said Board of Investigation is not composed of the officers who were named by me and agreed to by the Assistant Secretary of War, and is, therefore, not a properly constituted Board.

2. I have every reason to believe, and can establish by competent proof, that the members of the present Board of Investigation were, and are, strongly prejudiced against me, and therefore were, and are now, incompetent to proceed with the investigation.

3. The deliberations of the Board were unlawful and contrary to the spirit, if not the letter, of Army Regulations and the Articles of War—having been carried on in secret sessions and with closed doors, thus depriving me of the opportunity and privilege of appearing before them in person to present or explain my case. Said Board did not officially notify me to appear before it, although I had abundance of evidence, oral and documentary, to submit to their consideration in support of my claim, and was ready and prepared to do so on short notice.

4. Being the only party in interest, and the only party to be benefited or injured by the investigation and report of the Board, it must be manifest that a secret investigation and determination of the matter in my absence, and without an opportunity to be heard, savors of a star chamber proceeding, obviously disclosing gross ignorance or enmity on the part of said Board.

5. Having on many battlefields during the war, and since then on the plains, risked my life in defending the Government and the flag, and for conspicuous bravery on the field of battle having been recommended by General Hancock and other distinguished officers for the brevet promotion I now seek, I will not insult those distinguished officers by now permitting this prejudiced and incompetent Board of subordinate officers to investigate or disturb the recommendations or opinions expressed by them, as eye-witnesses of my meritorious services, and neither will I knowingly permit my stainless war record to be smirched or recklessly assailed by anyone without resenting it to the last extremity within the compass and range of a true soldier.

I may further add that to adopt or approve of the report already made by the Board of Investigation would be a serious reflection upon the integrity and official conduct of the present Adjutant-General of the Army, inasmuch as that officer, after making a thorough and careful investigation of the case, recommended me to my superiors, while the report in question would seem to imply that in thus sustaining me he had knowingly made a false recommendation.

With these observations, I respectfully submit this matter to the consideration of the Department, and earnestly invoke its aid in carrying into effect the requests I have made in the foregoing statements. Justice to me and the good of the service demand that

the irregular, unjust and unlawful proceedings herein complained of should not be sanctioned by the Government.

Very respectfully submitted,

(Signed) GEO. A. ARMES.

March 26, 1898.

Called on General Corbin and Assistant Secretary of War today in relation to my case.

April 8, 1898.

Had a long interview with Hon. John Russell Young, who agreed with me that the act making General Schofield a Lieutenant-General and placing him on the retired list should be repealed. Had a pleasant interview with General Miles today also, and quite a plain understanding with General Corbin, requesting him to modify his endorsement of the bill for my restoration and promotion to Colonel in the Army.

April 9, 1898.

Wrote a letter to the Secretary of War today calling attention to General Schofield's cowardice and his misrepresentations. He was very pleasant, and said he would do what he could, but soon convinced me he was under the control of subordinates and was a man without sufficient force of character to assert his own opinion. The letter follows:

Washington, D. C., April 9, 1898.

To the Hon. Secretary of War,

(Through the Adjutant-General of the Army):

Sir—From newspaper accounts I see that you are placing considerable confidence in Gen. John M. Schofield's recommendations and suggestions, and in order to put you on your guard, I submit the following facts, that you may know what kind of a man you are dealing with. The following is an extract from a letter written by Gen. James B. Steedman some time ago, which is headed:

"ROBBING THE DEAD.

General Schofield's Attempt to Seize the Laurels of General Thomas.

"Robbing a grave of a body is a light crime compared with stealing the honors which rightfully belong to a dead illustrious patriot and soldier. The letter of Gen. J. M. Schofield, claiming that he suggested changes in the battle of Nashville which were adopted by Gen. George H. Thomas, surpasses in cheek and falsehood all the absurd lies about the war we have ever read. Schofield's claim

to a part of the laurels that encircled the brow of the grand old 'Rock of Chickamauga' makes the self-lauding fiction written by General Sherman a modest production. There are four living witnesses—Generals Wood, Smith, Wilson and Steedman—who were in the council of war held in the St. Cloud Hotel, in Nashville, presided over by General Thomas, all of whom can testify that General Schofield states a deliberate falsehood when he says that, as the ranking officer next to the commanding General, he waived his right to speak last, and promptly sustained General Thomas. The truth is, General Schofield did not speak at all until all the other Generals had given their opinions, and then only said he would obey orders. General Thomas knew three days before the battle of Nashville that Schofield was playing the part of Judas by telegraphing to General Grant at Washington disparaging suggestions about the action of Thomas, saying in one dispatch: 'It is the opinion of all our officers with whom I have conversed that General Thomas is too tardy in moving against the enemy.' It was known to a number of our officers that, pending the battle, which was postponed for several days by Thomas because our Army could not move on account of the earth being covered with ice for miles around Nashville, produced by a heavy rain freezing as it fell, Schofield was intriguing with Grant to get Thomas relieved, in order that he might succeed to the command of our Army as the General next in rank to Thomas. The character of Schofield as an ambitious, unscrupulous intriguer caused suspicion to fall upon him as the person who was disparaging General Thomas at Washington, and he was watched and exposed to Thomas as a deceitful, unfaithful subordinate, who was engaged in a plot to relieve and disgrace his commander, the ablest, most honored and dearly loved soldier of the Army of the Cumberland. It was Maj.-Gen. George H. Thomas who planned and fought the battle of Nashville on his own plan, and General Schofield had nothing to do with originating or modifying that plan, nor did his command participate actively in the battle. Schofield's command, the Twenty-third Corps, a magnificent body of gallant soldiers, was in reserve, did very little fighting in the battle of Nashville, and suffered but a trifling loss in the engagement. The infrantry forming our line of battle was under the command of Gen. A. J. Smith, who commanded the right; General Wood, who commanded the center, and General Steedman, who commanded the left. The right was protected by our cavalry, under the command of the gallant General Wilson. General Schofield was ordered by General Thomas to support General Smith with his command, and while in the execution of the order a portion of his command was engaged and lost a few men.

"We were not in the battle of Franklin, but we know from the statements made to us by hundreds of soldiers who were in that battle that it was Generals Stanley and Cox who commanded the troops in the field, while General Schofield, who now seeks to rob the brave and skillful officers who were with the troops and commanding them, of the honor due them, was on the north side of the Harpeth river, two miles from Carter's Hill, where the battle was fought. It was an intrepid, heroic Ohio soldier—General Opdyke—who, seeing the peril of our troops when the rebels broke through our lines, ordered his men with the bayonet to drive back the enemy, gallantly led them to execute his orders, and saved the Army. Stanley was badly wounded in the fight. Cox, although exposed to the balls of the enemy, nobly did his duty and escaped unhurt. Opdyke, who was promoted for his heroism, passed the ordeal unscathed. During the whole of the terrible bloody fighting of the battle of Franklin the nominal commander, the officer who had the right to command by virtue of his rank, and who would have been personally in command if he had not been an exceedingly cautious man, comes forward now and claims to be not only the hero of Franklin, but the wise and able General whose suggestions gave victory to General Thomas' Army at Nashville.

"In the name of the grand hero who sleeps in his honored grave, we protest against the recognition of the false, infamous claim of Schofield, whom we brand as the slanderer of both the living and dead soldiers of the Army of the Cumberland. We do not say that Schofield is a rank coward, but we can, from personal knowledge, safely state that he possesses the rascally 'virtue called caution' in an eminent degree. We know from remarks we heard him make at Chattanooga that he envied and hated Thomas, because the soldiers loved and honored him. The ambition of Schofield was boundless, and his military career an utter failure. He may have been under fire, but he was never exposed to the balls of the enemy to our knowledge, and we served under him for some time. He had several opportunities while we were under his command to get in range of the bullets of the enemy, but we never knew him to be reckless enough to expose his carcass to the fire of the rebels."

In addition to the above extract, I would respectfully invite your attention to the Rebellion Records, which, in several places, confirm what General Steedman says in regard to General Schofield's cowardice and attempts to shun danger. I think the records will also show that he claimed the credit for the victory at the battle of Franklin, and was breveted through misrepresentations. The medal he now wears was a self-conferred distinction for imaginary services. The records will also bear me out in saying that he has shielded officers of the Army whom he knew to be guilty of offenses for which they would have been cashiered or sent to prison,

in order to save his friends. It is well known that he tried to sacrifice other brave officers who served through the war with distinction, and who had been recommended, time and again, for promotion for gallant services in the field.

In my opinion he is now trying to undermine Gen. Nelson A. Miles, whose promotion, step by step, was gained by solid and honest service in the field, and whose present high rank is grounded on a military career unprecedented in the history of the United States Army. I submit that it is not fair treatment of General Miles, now at the head of the Army, to throw him into eclipse by giving this man Schofield any recognition whatever—a man whose high rank as Lieutenant-General has been obtained through political intrigue, treachery and deceit. The bill constituting him a Lieutenant-General should be repealed and the taxpayers saved from an unjust burden. It would be a disgrace to the American nation and to the militia of all the States, to give this man any command whatever over it. The time has come when Schofield should cease to pose as a big man.

The suggestions I have here made are given in a friendly spirit and intended for the best interests of the service and the country at large.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

(Signed) GEO. A. ARMES.

That it may not appear that I have been malicious in my criticism of Gen. Schofield, the following letter will show that others of higher rank than myself had the same opinion as has been expressed in these pages:

Fort Smith Ark., December 9, 1863.

Hon. E. M. Stanton,
Secretary of War.

Sir: A sense of justice to myself, as well as duty to the Government, prompts me to address yon directly in reference to my present position.

* * * * *

I deem it my duty to say that I shall not report to General Schofield by letter from Leavenworth City, as directed in his Orders, No. 118, or hold any further intercourse or communication with him, except to prefer charges against him for incompetency and cowardice in connection with his military operations in the Southwest a year ago. In determining upon this course of action, I disclaim any intention to manifest a spirit of insubordination toward my superiors; I cannot acknowledge General Schofield as my superior officer until he is a major-general.

* * * * *

Respectfully your obedient servant,

JAS. G. BLUNT,
Major-General.

Washington, D. C., April 27, 1898.

Hon. William McKinley,

President of the United States:

Sir—I have the honor to request that you appoint me Brigadier-General of Volunteers, as I desire to enter the active service again under the old flag. From 1861 to 1865 I served in the field, much of the time performing staff duty with General Hancock and other prominent Generals, who have left on record many testimonials as to my ability and experience in handling troops. Born and raised a Virginian, almost in sight of Mt. Vernon, I entered the Union Army at the outbreak of the Rebellion, and followed the flag through to the wind-up at Appomattox. After the war closed I saw active duty on the plains against the Indians, and several years' experience in Texas familiarized me with that country, and particularly along the Rio Grande, where I might be now of some service to the Government during the present war with Spain.

I will agree to raise, in ten days' time, a sufficient number of troops to justify the commission you may tender me, whether it be that of a Brigadier or Major-General. Thousands have expressed a wish to enter the service under my command.

I have the honor to be, sir, your most obedient servant,

Geo. A. Armes,

Capt. U. S. A. (Ret'd).

United States Senate,

WASHINGTON, D.C., May 17th, 1898

To the President

Sir

Col George A Armes retired of the U.S. Army is desirous of re-entering the U.S. service. Col Armes has good record and was an efficient officer while in the service. He served in Colorado after the close of the war and during an Indian campaign. His services were such as to secure him promotion. I have known him for many years & have a high appreciation of his services especially while in Colorado. It will afford me great pleasure to know that he has been offered a position that will be in recognition of his military service. I hope he may be appointed Brigadier General of Volunteers and given active service & I believe if he is he will again distinguish himself.

I join Senator Teller in the above. Respectfully

Shall be glad to see Col Armes successful. E.O. Wolcott

H M Teller

I have known Major Armes for over thirty years and heartily concur in the above.

W. N. Roach U.S.S.

I especially urge this appointment it is justly due and is for the best interest of the service.

John M. Thurston

Edward Murphy Jr

Stephen M. White

[illegible]

The President

Sir- I desire
to call your attention
to Col George A Armes
-Retired- of the U.S. Army
Col Armes has a splendid
military record. He now desires
to engage in active service and
to be appointed Brigadier General
of Volunteers. In my opinion
no better appointment can be
made- It affords me great
pleasure to recommend him
to you Respectfully
Lucien Baker
U.S.S-

I have much pleasure in Commending Col. Armes to the notice of the President. His record of service in the Army is brilliant. His qualifications for Command are excellent. D. E. Sickles,
My 19 '97.

Most cordially concur in the above recommendation of Genl Sickles in behalf of my old Comrade in arms of the 2nd Corps, Col Armes. I know of few Officers of that gallant Corps whose record excel that of Col Armes. His Campaign services in war entitle him to the desired recognition.

Jas D Brady
Ex Col 63d NY Vols.

I very heartily concur in the above recommendation

J. S. Sherman
M.C. 25th N.Y.

May 21. 1898

I concur J. J. Belden

I concur in all that is here written in regard to the courage, patriotism and experience of Colonel Armes & heartily commend him for reappointment to the army.

John Russell Young
May 22. 1898.

From an acquaintance extending over many years, and from knowledge of the value of Major Armes service in the war of the rebellion and in subsequent service in the army I earnestly join in recommending him to the favorable consideration of the President.

John M. Carson

I heartily concur.

L. E. McComas

I would like to see Colonel Armes wish for active service gratified

A. C. Bradley

I Cordially Commend.

Henry W. T. Mighan

Have known the Colonel for years & join in this recommendation

J. G. Alvord

Col. Armes is well and favorably known to the newspaper men in Washington. He is highly regarded, and his recognition would give pleasure. Frank H Hosford

I regard Col. Armes as a brave and valuable officer who has shown his metal on the battlefield, and is worthy to be given the opportunity to show it again. And I take pleasure in recommending him to the President. He is from Virginia & I feel great interest in his success. Very Respectfully

Jno. W. Daniel. —

I concur in the endorsement given by senator Daniel above

Thomas S. Martin

FIFTY-FIFTH CONGRESS.

Jose A. T. Hull, Chairman.
Benjamin F. Marsh. Wm. Sulzer.
Michael Griffin. Charles H. Martin.
John H. Ketcham. Nicholas N. Cox.
Lucien J. Fenton. John J. Lentz.
Rowland B. Mahany. James Hay.
Hugh R. Belknap. Thomas M. Jett.
John McDonald. Marcus A. Smith.
Walter P. Brownlow.

Herman D. Reeve, Clerk.
William C. Mostner, Ass't Clerk.

Committee on Military Affairs,

House of Representatives U. S.,

Washington, D. C., May 25 1898

The President

Sir I respectfully endorse the application of Col. George A. Armes of the United States, after retired, I regard him as a brave soldier and a valuable soldier who will render important services to his country He is from Virginia and his appointment will be grateful to me.

Very respectfully
James Hay

I heartily endorse the above

Marcus A. Smith
Wm Sulzer
John McDonald
Rowland B. Mahany
J. H. Hull
J. H. Ketcham

House of Representatives U. S.

Washington, D. C. May 25th, 1893.

The President.

Sir :--

We, the undersigned, urgently recommend and request the appointment of Col. George A. Armes, retired, to the position of Brigadier General of Volunteers. His military record during the late war between the States, and since then in the Indian wars on the Plains, justly entitles him to the recognition asked for. We feel assured that his appointment would give general satisfaction to the army and the country at large. Col. Armes entered the Union Army from Virginia, and served with great gallantry to the close of the war, receiving several promotions for distinguished service on the field. We urge this appointment as one eminently proper to be made, believing that it will redound to the best interest of the service.

Nech A. Dinsmore - 5th Ark
John S Rhea 3d Ky -
T. Warner 13th Ill.
A S Berry 6th Ill
John L. Brenner 3d Ohio
[illegible] 30th Ill
J A Walker
9th Va Dist.

Richd A. Wise, M. C.
2nd Virginia Dist.
John Lamb 3d Va District
[illegible] Va
R. B. Hawley Tex
[illegible]
Chas T. Joy, M. C.
11th Hesch.

To the President.

I unhesitatingly recommend the application of Col. Geo A. Armes. He led a N. Y. Regiment at Hatcher's run, and we know his worth.

Amos J. Cummings.

May 28, 1898.

House of Representatives U. S.

Washington, D. C. 5/31 1898

To the President

Dear Sir

I take pleasure in recommending Col Geo A Armes as Brigadier General whose record as a soldier speaks for itself I make this recommendation as secondary to that given personally to you for the appointment of Col Wm Nalle of Virginia as Brigadier General

Yours

Wm J. Otey

M. C.

I cordially concur in the recommendation of Col Armes for promotion, His reputation is that of a gallant officer

Wm. H. Thoyle
Major Genl Vols

United States Senate,

WASHINGTON, D. C. 189

I most Earnestly Concur Fred Jones
J. W. Stewart

I concur in the foregoing & regard Col. Armes as a very competent person.

L. H. Colby
Brigadier General U.S. Vols.

I concur in the above examination of Col Armes on his Fathers account & on his own

Geo F. Hoar

I concur Geo C. Perkins

I have known Col. Armes a number of years & believe him to be a highly accomplished and capable officer whose appointment, if made, will result in great good to the service & be personally gratifying to me. Watson C. Squire

May 8, 1898.

Spent last evening at the Ebbitt with General and Mrs. Nash, whom I have not seen for several years. I congratulated him upon his promotion to Commissary-General. He and his wife are very proud of the honor.

May 20, 1898.

Saw Secretary Meiklejohn again today, who consented to my seeing all the papers that Major Garlington had fixed up. Took Mrs. Senator Warren, her father and sister to Camp Alger near Falls Church.

June 1, 1898.

Saw Congressman Wise last evening at the Ebbitt House, who according to an agreement called with me to see the President today, where we met Senators Faulkner, Thurston and many other of my friends. The President treated us very pleasantly, saying he would examine the papers and give me justice. I then called on the Secretary of War, who seemed a little vexed to think that I would insist upon favorable action, and I inferred that he would do all he could to prevent it.

May 14, 1898.

Attended Jefferson dinner last evening at the National Rifles' Hall and listened to the speeches of Mr. William J. Bryan, Senator Jones, Governor Tyler, Dr. Harper, Mr. Croker of New York and many others.

June 3, 1898.

Had a long talk with Senator Spooner, who promised me his support. While at the Adjutant-General's office today I met Governor Beaver, who shook hands with me.

June 11, 1898.

Called on Col. Beriah Wilkins today, who agreed to do everything in his power to assist me with the President. Also saw the President, who has sent my papers back to the War Department.

December 31, 1898.

General Alger's pretended friendship in our many conversations and meetings before he was made Secretary of War has failed to meet my expectations officially, for no other reason that I can account for than that he has placed himself in the power of a few incompetent and dishonorable subordinates, who seem to control his course as Secretary of War, causing the newspapers and the whole country to attack him in the most violent manner. I cannot recall where any official in public life has ever been abused and scandalized more than Secretary Russell A. Alger, unless it was Belknap. Socially he has been friendly.

The following papers in chronological order will serve to illustrate the events of the year 1898:

Washington, D. C., January 22, 1898.

Maj.-Gen. Nelson A. Miles, U. S. A.,
Washington, D. C.:

Dear General—I hope you will be able to find time enough from your many duties to look carefully into the merits of my case, and not allow me to be slaughtered through the misrepresentations of subordinates, several of whom I have ignored and have no respect for. There has been an element in the War Department for years determined to crush and ruin me, deceiving those in authority by all kinds of malicious representations, tending to reflect upon my character as an officer and a gentleman. There is nothing that can be brought against me that I am ashamed to face and cannot fully explain to the satisfaction of any honest man. I have answered every excuse that General Schofield made for his alleged reason in not sending up my nomination, and there are no good reasons why it should not be sent up, with the exception that General Schofield's friends and supporters, who are my enemies, some of whom are holding positions where they can cowardly place on the record such malicious stuff that a stranger, without thorough investigation, is liable to form unfavorable opinions.

From the fact that I earned this brevet, and was recommended for it by my post commander at the time, after, as he states in his report, a careful examination and without any solicitation or request on my part, I do not think any weight should be given to a malevolent and made-up charge, supported only by the cross-mark of a degraded and insubordinate negro who was used at that time for the purpose of trying to prevent my restoration to the service, and which, after a thorough investigation at the time, was settled in my favor. You cannot help but see what a small, contemptible and disgraceful act it was for General Schofield, Colonel Vincent and the other cowardly sneaks who conspired to try and secure the evidence from more ignorant negroes to sustain the first affidavit that had been filed away for years, which affidavit they had read and copied over to suit themselves, in order to obtain the marks of these ignorant negroes, which, you know as well as myself, can be secured by an officer of the Army who will fix up any kind of paper, and call in one of these illiterate negroes and have him swear to it, the negro taking for granted that whatever this Army officer may tell him to do is all right. And at this late day to bring up a matter of this kind is not only a reflection upon me, but upon Colonel Corbin, my post commander; Generals Hancock and Sherman and other officers who supported me during my career in the Army. Therefore, when it is properly considered, it can easily be seen that there was a conspiracy and these dishonor-

able and vicious means used in a cowardly and underhanded manner to try and crush me. All I can say is that I will defend my honor against any imputations as long as I have strength enough to do so.

Hoping you will be able to end this matter with as little delay as possible, and prevent serious trouble and scandal, which, in the end, will not prove of any interest to the service, or to those mixed up in it, and believing you to be my true friend, I remain,

Yours truly,

(Signed) GEO. A. ARMES.

January 27, 1898.

Captain George A. Armes,
1401 F Street N. W.,
Washington, D. C.

Dear Sir:

The Major General Commanding directs me to acknowledge the receipt of your letter, marked "personal", of January 22, 1898, the subject-matter of which refers entirely to official matters, and to inform you that your language and statements concerning officers of the Army and officials of the War Department cannot be received, either personally or officially, without meeting proper and official consideration. He further directs me to say that if you have any grievance or complaint to make, the Army Regulations amply provide the proper course for you to pursue, and hereafter it would be advisable for you to govern yourself accordingly.

Very respectfully,

(Signed) J. C. GILMORE,
Assistant Adjutant General.

(Third Endorsement.)

War Department, January 25, 1898.

Respectfully referred to the Adjutant-General to convene a Board, consisting of Brig.-Gen. J. C. Breckinridge, Col. Thomas Ward and Maj. W. H. Carter, to investigate the application of Maj. Geo. A. Armes for appointment as Brevet Lieutenant-Colonel, report the facts and make recommendations thereon.

By order of the Acting Secretary of War,

JOHN TWEEDALE,
Chief Clerk.

(Fourth Endorsement.)

A. G. O., January 27, 1898.

On further consideration, the Acting Secretary of War modifies the detail for this Board to the following:

Colonel Young, Third Cavalry; Major Lebo, Sixth Cavalry; Major Conrad, Eighth Infantry.

The Board to be convened at Fort Myer by letter.

SAML. BRECK,
Adjutant-General.

Headquarters of the Army, Adjutant-General's Office,
Washington, January 29, 1898.

Col. S. B. M. Young, Third Cavalry, Washington, D. C.;
Maj. Thomas C. Lebo, Sixth Cavalry, Fort Myer, Virginia;
Maj. C. H. Conrad, Eighth Infantry, War Department:

Gentlemen—I am instructed by the Major-General Commanding the Army to inform you that, by direction of the Acting Secretary of War, you are constituted a Board to meet at Fort Myer, Virginia, upon the call of the senior member, for the purpose of investigating and reporting upon the application of Capt. George A. Armes, retired, for appointment as Lieutenant-Colonel by brevet, United States Army. The Acting Secretary desires that the Board report the facts ascertained, and transmit the report, with their recommendations thereon, to the Adjutant-General of the Army.

Very respectfully,

SAML. BRECK,
Adjutant-General.

For MAJ. GEORGE A. ARMES,
U. S. A. (Ret'd),
Washington, D. C.

Adjutant-General's Office,
Washington, February 9, 1898.

Capt. George A. Armes,
U. S. Army (Ret'd),
1405 F Street N. W.,
Washington, D. C.:

Sir—I am desired by the Acting Secretary of War to acknowledge the receipt of your letter of the 2d inst., in regard to your appearing before the Board appointed to examine into the matter of your claim for a brevet, and to inform you that your request was sent to the Board for its consideration, and has been returned with the information that you have been advised by the Board that if you have anything to communicate to it touching the matter of your claim you can do so in writing, and that if the Board desires your presence you will be so informed.

Very respectfully.
(Signed) THEO. SCHWAN,
Asst. Adjt.-Gen.

Washington, D. C., February 18, 1898.

To His Excellency William McKinley,
President of the United States:

Sir—It having occurred to me that "a stitch in time saves nine," I respectfully call your attention to the fact that, in my opinion, a force of 50,000 volunteers, with 10,000 regulars, and with our Navy promptly concentrated in the vicinity of Key West, Florida,

with General Brooke in command, ready, if necessary to defend our honor as a nation, we can either require the payment for loss of the "Maine," indemnity for loss of lives, or take possession of Cuba—and the whole question settled within sixty days, with honor and credit to our country. I, therefore, tender my services, and agree to organize 25,000 men, ready for active service, within *five* days from the time authority is given me and as soon as you become satisfied that the situation is in such shape that promptness is required. Congress and the country will sustain you in settling the Cuban question *immediately.*

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

(Signed) G. A. Armes.

23 Fifth Avenue,
New York, March 1, 1897.

My Dear Colonel Armes:

I shall be glad to attend the Second Army Corps Banquet in Washington on the 16th inst., if able to make the journey back to Philadelphia on the following day, where I have already promised to dine with the Hibernian Society on St. Patrick's Day.

I always find pleasure in meeting representatives of the Second Corps—Hancock's Braves—of whom you are one, and to whom I know he was much attached.

Sincerely yours,

D. E. Sickles.

Col. Geo. A. Armes,
U. S. A.

Washington, D. C., March 29, 1898.

To the Hon. Secretary of War:

Sir—A resolution having been offered and adopted at a meeting of the Second Army Corps Association, and the undersigned appointed as a committee to urge the passage of the bill pending in Congress for the construction of a Memorial Bridge across the Potomac river to Arlington, we respectfully request that the Hon. Secretary of War recommend its passage and especially call the attention of Congress to the necessity of a bridge being established for the use of troops encamped on the Virginia side of the river, in addition to the many other urgent reasons why it should be constructed.

Very respectfully,

(Signed) G. A. Armes.
R. A. Batchelder.

A Bill for the Relief of Capt. George A. Armes.

Be it enacted by the Senate and House of Representatives of the United States of America in Congress assembled, That the provisions of law regulating appointments in the Army, by pro-

motion in the line, are hereby suspended for the purpose of this Act, and only so far as they affect George A. Armes, and the President can, if he so desires, in the exercise of his own discretion and judgment, reinstate, and, by and with the advice and consent of the Senate, appoint said George A. Armes, Captain, retired, in any vacancy occurring in any regiment of cavalry, to the rank and grade he would have held if he had remained continuously in the service on the active list.

Sec. 2. That all pay and allowance from June, 1870, unjustly withheld from said Armes, by reason of the proceedings or findings of any court-martial, or retiring board, upon proper proofs being made, shall be refunded and paid to said Armes out of any funds in the Treasury not otherwise appropriated.

(First Endorsement.)

A. G. O., Washington, April 5, 1898.

Respectfully returned to the Secretary of War.

This bill provided in effect that Captain Armes shall be restored to the active list and be appointed to a vacancy of Colonel in the cavalry arm. To do this would set aside or suspend the promotion of a Lieutenant-Colonel, a Major, a Captain, a First Lieutenant and a Second Lieutenant of cavalry when a vacancy of Colonel happens, and retard by one file the promotion of cavalry officers below the rank of Colonel. Captain Armes was placed on the retired list September 15, 1883, by direction of the President, upon the finding of a retiring board that he "is incapacitated for active service," and that "such incapacity is caused by nervous prostration, mental excitability and cardiac dilation." A statement of Assistant Surgeon Carter, Post Surgeon at Fort Stockton, Texas, where Captain Armes was stationed, which is attached to the proceedings of the board, says:

"I have no hesitation whatever in declaring my belief that Captain Armes' condition is such as to render him unfit for the responsibility and duties incident to the service, even as they occur in the comparatively easy and regular routine of ordinary garrison life, and positively incapacitates him to meet and discharge any weighty responsibility that might arise in any emergency."

Under all circumstances it is believed that the legislation proposed would result in no benefit whatever to the military service, but, on the contrary, that it would be detrimental to its interests, of very doubtful benefit to the individual on whose behalf it is proposed, and unjust to the officers who have continuously rendered service to the Government, in depriving them of promotions to which they would be justly entitled upon the occurrence of a vacancy of Colonel in the cavalry arm.

(Signed) H. C. Corbin,
Adjutant-General.

Washington, D. C., April 7, 1898.

Gen. H. C. Corbin,
Adjutant-General, U. S. A.:

Sir—Having read your endorsement in relation to Senate Bill No. 4305, referred to the War Department for report, I confess that I was shocked, amazed and disappointed by such a statement from one whom I had supposed was sufficiently fair and friendly to make a favorable report. Before the bill is returned, I would suggest that it may be to your own interest in the future to modify that endorsement, which the records will show, by an honest and careful examination, should be in my favor. I have never said a word to anyone that could be construed to cast the least reflection upon your own record.

I look upon your Department as one that should be run upon honest principles, the same as a bank, and when any employe of a bank has been discovered to be a thief, proper steps are generally taken to dispose of him, and the Army should be conducted on the same principle. Drum, Ruggles and Breck proved to be cowardly and treacherous in that capacity, as I have had occasion to know from my own experience. Socially, General Ruggles was very interesting and entertaining; officially, he did not act honestly with me. Generals Williams and Kelton left honorable records, and I had no fault to find with their official duties in my case.

You have a splendid chance to fill with honor and distinction the position you now hold—a better chance, I think, than any man heretofore appointed from the volunteer service in our Army. If you begin your new duties by showing the country that you propose to act upon honest principles, and do justice to all, you will surely succeed in establishing a record to be proud of, although it will be quite a task for a time to weed out of the Army the many unworthy creatures now posing as honest men. I cannot refrain from reminding you that while others have given out many serious and damaging things about your record, which, if true, would greatly astonish your friends and the public, I have always stood by you and defended you against such aspersions concerning your record, whether during or since the war.

It should be remembered that the Assistant Surgeon at Fort Stockton, who assisted Colonels Wade and Grierson in having me retired, had been reprimanded by me for quite a serious offense when I was in command of the post. He afterwards took advantage of his official position to connive with others to ruin me, if possible. The alleged reasons given from that source for my retirement were false and known to be false by the instigators.

I write this, not in a fault-finding spirit, and not for the purpose of causing you to do me any special favor not fully justified or warranted by the facts of this case; all I ask is to be fairly dealt with.

Respectfully, your obedient servant,

(Signed) G. A. Armes,
Capt., U. S. A. (Ret'd).

In Camp near Santiago, August 7, 1898.

My Dear Father:

We have been rushed around so lively, and my supply of writing paper was so short until three days ago, when I received a small package of it, that it has been impossible for me to write to you before. Even now I have only a few minutes to spare, so cannot give detailed accounts of things. We have had a pretty rough time of it. After a forced march, reached the firing line in time to have a few bullets whistle over our heads, and to learn what the shriek of a shell sounds like. We also found out what it was to dig trenches for forty-eight hours straight, without food or sleep, little water, a hot sun, violent rains, inky darkness at night—except when the lightning flashed over—and, worse than all, the whistle of some stray bullets among us. All of the above I know you have experienced, so will not dwell on them longer. We have orders to leave early this week for Long Island, and it is rumored that we will be mustered out soon after, and if you find out such to be the facts of the case, try and see some one at the Museum and secure a good position for me there upon my return.

Has the Army of the Potomac held its reunion yet, and do you expect to attend? Unless I get seasick on the boat I will have a chance to write you a long letter soon; but, then, at the last minute, the order for departure might change, and we may have to remain here much longer. I hope not, anyway. Oscar's company started for Puerto Rico, but I heard they had gotten near Santiago when they received orders to return to Port Tampa. Warren Reed, who used to be in your employ, now a private in K Company, seems to keep well, but he is sick of his job, and says he wishes he was back attending to your horses again. William Poore of Tennallytown, who enlisted in Co. K., died of typhoid fever at Sibony, Province of Santiago, Cuba. As for myself, I am perfectly well, with the exception of a slight cold. I had a six days' case of mountain fever, but went back on duty last Wednesday. Under the full rations I am now getting I am growing fat. Good-bye until next time. Write as soon as you can.

Your loving son,
GEORGE K. ARMES,
Co. E, First District Vols.

To the Editor *Army and Navy Register:*

Dear Sir—The enclosed is a copy of a letter I sent to the Secretary of War, in order that he might investigate General Wade before he was sent on so important a mission. I also desire to especially call your attention to the fact that I never made a false charge against anyone, or have I ever made a charge against an officer except for the interest of the service. After I had first been misrepresented, villified and persecuted, and in every instance where

an officer has been tried upon charges made by me he has been convicted, and in several cases sentenced to the penitentiary. One officer, who fixed up a set of false charges against me, served a term in the penitentiary before he was made a Captain in the regular Army, and many of his friends are still at the War Department taking advantage of their present positions to keep me misrepresented. I can truthfully say that no charges have ever been made against me by any officer of the Army who is, or ever was, a gentleman and honest in his motives. And all I can say is, that when such men as Wade and Clous are selected for responsible trusts, it might prevent serious embarrassment to know who they are before they are placed in important positions, and I think the files of the War Department will show I am right.

Respectfully, your obedient servant,

(Signed) G. A. Armes.

Washington, D. C., November 2, 1898.

To the Hon. Secretary of War,

(Through the Adjutant-General, U. S. A.:

Sir—I respectfully call your attention to the order of the Acting Secretary of War, dated September 27, 1895, ordering me in arrest. As I have not received any order from the War Department relieving me, I respectfully request that one be issued.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

(Signed) G. A. Armes.

November 26, 1898.

Verbally relieved by General Schwan.

By order of

Gen. H. C. Corbin,

Adjutant-General.

Senate Chamber,

Washington, D. C., December 19, 1898.

Maj. Geo. A. Armes,

Washington, D. C.:

Dear Major—I have unintentionally misled you about the nominations of Gen. S. B. M. Young, Gen. J. W. Clous and Capt. William P. Duvall. I think they were confirmed Thursday afternoon. I do not think you lose anything by it, for I feel assured that those gentlemen were held in such estimation that nothing would prevent their confirmation.

Yours truly,

(Signed) J. R. Hawley.

Washington, D. C., March 11, 1898.

Maj.-Gen. Nelson A. Miles,
Commanding Army of the United States,
(Through the Adjutant-General, U. S. A.):

Sir—Having just glanced over the report submitted by the Board, composed of Colonel Young, Major Lebo and Major Conrad, appointed to look into the matter in relation to my brevet, I hasten to call your attention to the unjust position in which it places me. The report shows upon its face a lack of fairness and an evident purpose on the part of the Board to do me a great injustice. The report further shows upon its face that the deliberations of the Board were conducted altogether in my absence, and without giving me an opportunity to be heard, although I solicited in writing that the opportunity should be given me. It must be obvious that the proceeding was not only *ex parte*, but controlled by influences hostile to me personally and to my claim, and in violation of the Articles of War and the Army Regulations.

Such a finding and such a report, emanating from a "Star Chamber" proceeding, should not be sanctioned by the General of the Army, and will not be sanctioned by the public at large, and I am ready and prepared to show, upon a fair and open investigation that all the material allegations contained in the report, affecting the matter in controversy, are absolutely false and unworthy the attention of the Department or of any honest man.

Therefore, reposing great trust and confidence in the integrity and the fairness of the present Commanding General of the Army, whose keen sense of justice will not knowingly permit the perpetration of such an outrage upon an officer who, during the war, and subsequently on the plains, discharged his whole duty, to the satisfaction of his superior officers and the Government, and was recommended for the brevet in question by the most gallant and distinguished officers of the Army, after a careful investigation at the time, as the records of the Department clearly and conclusively show, I most respectfully request that no definite action be taken on this report until said Board has been reconvened, the case reconsidered and an opportunity has been given me to appear before the same in my own defense.

Very respectfully, your obedient servant,

(Signed) GEORGE A. ARMES,
Capt., U. S. A. (Ret'd).

(First Endorsement.)

A. G. O., March 12, 1898.

For the Commanding General of the Army.

(Second Endorsement.)
Headquarters of the Army,
Washington, D. C., March 15, 1898.

The Major-General Commanding recommends that the Board be reconvened, and that this communication be referred to it.

J. C. GILMORE,
Assistant Adjutant-General.

(Third Endorsement.)
Adjutant-General's Office,
Washington, March 17, 1898.

Respectfully referred, by direction of the Secretary of War, to Col. S. B. M. Young, Third Cavalry, Washington, D. C., President of the board of officers convened under the letter of instructions from this office of January 29, 1898, and adjourned, sine die, February 28, 1898. The Secretary directs that Colonel Young reassemble the Board for the consideration of this complaint, and for such action thereupon as they may deem just and proper.

The proceedings of the Board, together with the papers upon which the Board was originally appointed, are herewith.

H. C. CORBIN,
Adjutant-General.

(Fourth Endorsement.)
Washington City, March 21, 1898.

Respectfully returned to the Adjutant-General of the Army, attention invited to additional proceedings herewith.

S. B. M. YOUNG,
Col. Third Cav., President.

(Fifth Endorsement.)
Adjutant-General's Office,
Washington, March 22, 1898.

Respectfully returned to the Major-General Commanding the Army, inviting attention to the additional proceedings of the Board of Officers in this case, attached to its former proceedings, herewith, and to its findings and recommendations, as set forth therein.

THEO. SCHWAN,
Asst. Adjutant-General.

(Sixth Endorsement.)
Headquarters of the Army,
Washington, D. C., March 25, 1898.

Respectfully submitted to the Secretary of War, attention invited to the last paragraph of the additional proceedings of the Board, dated March 21, 1898.

NELSON A. MILES,
Major-General Commanding.

(Seventh Endorsement.)
Adjutant-General's Office,
Washington, D. C., March 26, 1898.

Respectfully referred, by direction of the Assistant Secretary of War, to the Judge Advocate General, U. S. A., for his report and recommendation on the additional proceedings of the Board of Officers of which Col. S. B. M. Young, Third Cavalry, was President, in the case of Captain Armes, herewith.

The Assistant Secretary desires that the proceedings of this Board and the report of Major Garlington, Inspector-General, of his investigation of the complaint of Lieutenant Duvall against Captain Armes, and also the letter of Captain Armes of the 23d inst., herewith, be considered confidential until the Judge Advocate General shall have submitted his report.

THEO. SCHWAN,
Asst. Adjutant-General.

(Eighth Endorsement.)
War Department, Judge Advocate General's Office,
Washington, March 28, 1898.

Respectfully returned to the Adjutant-General.

In view of Captain Armes' letter of March 23, 1898, to the Secretary of War, it will probably not be considered necessary to carry out the recommendation of the Board, that Captain Armes be required to set forth the facts on which he bases the charges against the members of the Board, which are contained in his communication (to the Major-General Commanding of March 11), even if this would otherwise have been desirable.

I would recommend that Colonel Young be furnished with copies of Captain Armes' letters of March 11 and 23, with a view to his preferring charges. If charges should be preferred it would be best that it should be done in this way.

G. NORMAN LIEBER,
Judge Advocate General.

(Ninth Endorsement.)
Adjutant-General's Office,
Washington, D. C., March 30, 1898.

Respectfully referred to Col. S. B. M. Young, Third Cavalry, Washington, D. C., inviting attention to the recommendation of the Judge Advocate General, endorsed hereon, which is concurred in by the Assistant Secretary of War.

Captain Armes' letters of March 11 and 23, and a copy of one from him of March 26, 1898, are enclosed herewith.

THEO. SCHWAN,
Asst. Adjutant-General.

(Tenth Endorsement.)

Washington, D. C., April 5, 1898.

Respectfully returned to the Adjutant-General of the Army, with all the papers in this case, together with charges and specifications preferred against Capt. George A. Armes, U. S. Army (Retired).

S. B. M. YOUNG,
Col. Third Cavalry.

(Eleventh Endorsement.)

Adjutant-General's Office,
Washington, D. C., April 8, 1898.

Respectfully referred to the Judge Advocate General, U. S. Army, for his remark or recommendation respecting the charges preferred against Captain Armes by Colonel Young, herewith.

By order of the Secretary of War.

THEO. SCHWAN,
Asst. Adjutant-General.

(Twelfth Endorsement.)

War Department, Judge Advocate General's Office,
Washington, D. C., April 9, 1898.

Respectfully returned to the Adjutant-General.

The first specification alleges that Thornton's affidavit was "in all material averments" false. I do not think that this is definite enough. The specifications should indicate which particular averments are false. It is not necessary, however, to set forth the affidavit in full, and then repeat those parts of it which are alleged to be false. It would be sufficient to set forth the latter. This is also true of the second specification. Both of these specifications should contain averments to the effect that Captain Armes knew the statements to be false. Specifications might also be preferred charging him with officially making use of false affidavits, knowing them to be false. But it is a question whether it would be best to open up all this inquiry. I seriously doubt it.

The third, fourth and fifth specifications are properly drawn.

G. NORMAN LIEBER,
Judge Advocate General.

(Thirteenth Endorsement.)

Adjutant-General's Office,
Washington, D. C., April 12, 1898.

Respectfully returned to Col. S. B. M. Young, Third Cavalry, for amendment of the charges as suggested by the Judge Advocate General in his preceding endorsement hereon. The papers pertaining thereto are enclosed herewith.

By order of the Assistant Secretary of War.

THEO. SCHWAN,
Asst. Adjutant-General.

(Fourteenth Endorsement.)

Fort Ethan Allen, Vt., April 16, 1898.

Respectfully returned to the Adjutant-General of the Army.

It is requested that the Law Department frame these charges and specifications against Captain Armes (for my signature).

The requirements of good discipline and Army Regulations, 4, 1895, demand that Captain Armes be brought to trial at the earliest date practicable.

S. B. M. YOUNG,
Col. Third Cav.

(Fifteenth Endorsement.)

Adjutant-General's Office,
Washington, D. C., April 18, 1898.

Respectfully returned to the Judge Advocate General of the Army, who will revise, or prepare, charges and specifications against Captain Armes, as requested by Colonel Young.

By order of the Secretary of War.

THEO. SCHWAN,
Asst. Adjutant-General.

(Sixteenth Endorsement.)

War Department, Judge Advocate General's Office,
Washington, D. C., April 20, 1898.

Respectfully returned to the Judge Advocate General with amended charges, the only amendment being the omission of the first and second specifications. See my former endorsement hereon of April 9.

G. NORMAN LIEBER,
Judge Advocate General.

(Seventeenth Endorsement.)

Adjutant-General's Office,
Washington, D. C., April 21, 1898.

Respectfully returned to Col. S. B. M. Young, Third Cavalry, Chickamauga National Park, Ga., for signature to amended charges and specifications.

THEO. SCHWAN,
Asst. Adjutant-General.

(Eighteenth Endorsement.)

In the Field, Headquarters Third Cavalry, Camp Geo. H. Thomas,
Chickamauga Park, Ga., April 24, 1898.

Respectfully returned to the Adjutant-General, U. S. A., enclosed charges.

S. B. M. YOUNG,
Col. Third Cav., Commanding.

General Miles ignores the Board and concurs in Gen. Hancock's recommendation.

(Nineteenth Endorsement.)
Headquarters of the Army,
Washington, D. C., December 27, 1898.

Respectfully returned to the Secretary of War.

These papers have been before me, as well as my predecessor, on several occasions. I would state that I have so much confidence in, and respect for, General Hancock's opinion, and his superior judgment in all matters of this nature, that if there is no clear and sufficient reason to the contrary, I have no hesitation in concurring in his recommendation herewith relative to Captain Armes.

NELSON A. MILES,
Major-General Commanding.

Notwithstanding the filing of these charges I was never brought to trial on them, as it was well known they could not be made to stick, and a trial must result in my vindication.

CHAPTER XXXVII.

December 31, 1899.

On the morning of January 1 I dressed in full uniform, met General Miles, commanding the Army, at the War Department, and after congratulating him, marched with other officers of the Army to the President's house, where we shook hands with the President and the Cabinet ladies assembled, meeting many friends as usual. Afterwards I made calls on Cabinet and citizen friends.

During the past year the most of my time has been occupied by trying to induce the Secretary of War and the President to undo the wrongs that had been heaped upon me for years at the War Department by statements manufactured from dishonest sources. So far I have been unable to get a proper investigation. Several men who have made false representations and maligned my record, deceiving those in authority who employed them to investigate the facts of my case in relation to my military record, have been rewarded by promotion to higher and more responsible positions in the Army. Among those who have been rewarded are Col. S. B. M. Young, who was promoted Major-General; Lieutenant Duvall, promoted Lieutenant-Colonel; Major Garlington, a Lieutenant-Colonel; James A. Wade, Major-General in the Volunteer Army, and J. W. Clous, a Brigadier-General. I am confident that a careful investigation of the facts and charges I presented against those individuals will prove them unfit to hold any position of trust and a disgrace to the Army. Among the members and Senators who have taken a personal interest in going with me in person to the President, Secretary of War and others are Senator John W. Daniel of Virginia, Senator Thurston of Nebraska, General Grosvenor of Ohio, Hon. E. R. Ridgley of Kansas, General Brady of Petersburg, Hon. R. Wise of Virginia.

I have also been engaged in overhauling my records and correspondence, condensing the same, with many original letters and extracts for the purposes of this book in order that the public may have an opportunity of reading what has taken place in connection with my movements from 1861 to date.

The documents for the current year follow chronologically:

Washington, D. C., March 26, 1899.

To the Hon. Secretary of War,

(Through the Adjutant-General, U. S. A.):

Sir—Judging from the report of Maj. E. A. Garlington, Assistant Inspector-General, who was ordered to investigate the Duvall case, I should think fair-minded men could readily see the prejudice cropping out of this report against me, and that Major Garlington has taken advantage of his position to conspire with said Duvall to make it appear that I was guilty of some military offense justifying a court-martial.

I, therefore, request that the proceedings in the matter may be referred to the Judge Advocate General for a careful and thorough investigation, together with authority and instructions to prefer charges against Major Garlington and Lieutenant Duvall for conduct unbecoming an officer and a gentleman, and for violation of Army Regulations and specified Articles of War, and on such other charges as, in the judgment of the Judge Advocate General, the good of the service may demand.

It will be noticed that Major Garlington was in a position where he was free to do—and was supposed to—his duty without favoritism, reporting the true facts and actual condition of the case. But instead of that, this narrow-minded, narrow-gauged officer has allowed his prejudices and his feelings to warp his judgment and to lead him into a cowardly attack upon my military record. If such feeble men are to be entrusted with an officer's character and war record, then it is high time that the office of Inspector-General of the Army were abolished. The reputation and character of no man in the Army is safe if secret reports and misrepresentations can be made by these understrappers to superior officers, who have not the time to look into the details of many of the cases, and must take for granted, usually, that the reports are correct and true. To affirm or sanction a report such as Major Garlington has made in this case is to establish a dangerous precedent and give full faith and credit to a report that should be thrown into the waste-basket. As a heavy taxpayer, I do not believe that money should be appropriated to retain such officers in positions.

I shall never believe that the War Department can be used by such petty subordinates of the Army as Major Garlington and Lieutenant Duvall, neither of whom ever saw a day's service in the field during the late war, to assist them in a mean and cowardly attempt to crush an officer whose gallant and meritorious services on the field of battle have, on many occasions, won the admiration and applause of such distinguished commanders as Meade and Hancock.

As far as Colonel Young, Major Lebo and Major Conrad are concerned, I have only to observe that they are three very weak men, and can be easily used by such schemers as Garlington and Duvall, who have been educated at the Government's expense, and would naturally have considerable interest in controlling such men as the Board was lately composed of in the investigation of my case. Because a man is educated and is bright and intelligent it does not necessarily follow that he is honest. No doubt many are in prisons today who are highly accomplished, educated and gentlemanly men in appearance.

Since the honorable record of a true soldier is more prized by him than his life, all true men of honor will expect me to stop at no risk, no peril, in defending, in time of peace, what I gained on the battlefield, when my sniveling accusers were wearing marble-buttoned roundabouts in the awkward squad.

I believe that the propriety of my request, that the Judge Advocate General be authorized and directed to carefully investigate the proceedings in this case, will be readily recognized by the Department.

I have the honor to be, sir, your obedient servant,

(Signed) GEO. A. ARMES,
Capt., U. S. A. (Ret'd).

Lynchburg, Va., July 24, 1899.

Col. George A. Armes:

Dear Colonel—I enclose the letter which I addressed to the President respecting the application of Messrs. Greenwood, Mannion & Co. for railroad franchise in Cuba, as requested by you.

I was glad to show you and your friend any courtesy or accommodation in my power.

Please give me the full address of General Greenwood.

Yours, very truly,

JNO. W. DANIEL.

Omaha, Neb., September 23, 1899.

George W. Armes,
United States Army,
Washington, D. C.:

My Dear Sir—In the case of Mark M. Coad, arising out of the Indian depredation committed on the 19th of January, 1867, a claim for the same which was made out and affidavits made immediately after the time of the raid, the Court of Claims have seen fit to reject all of this class of testimony, and has compelled us to look up the witnesses and take depositions. I find this to be a very difficult matter from the fact that witnesses are scattered all over the country, and a great many are dead. However, I have succeeded in tracing a few of these men and taken their deposi-

tions. In our depositions your name is mentioned very frequently. I do not suppose that you now remember very many of the details which took place at that time. One reason why it is necessary to have your deposition in this case is to verify the accounts given in the other depositions, namely, * * *

I would like to hear from you and to know how you are getting along. I may go down to Washington during the winter or next spring, and if so I will call and see you.

Very respectfully,

JOHN F. COAD.

The letters herewith are from two of the men in my old command, the Second Cavalry, and show in what esteem I was held by the men in the ranks who participated with me in some of the severest campaigning ever known to the Army:

Malden, Mass., October 1, 1899.

Maj. Geo. A. Armes:

Dear Sir—Your letter of the 7th of September received, and I should have replied before had I not been so busy since my vacation. In regard to the Pumpkin Creek fight, I don't think I can give you much more information than you have, but I can give you the name of the comrade who was shot in the shoulder. His name was Moore, a private. The boys called him "Reddy" More, if I remember aright. The arrow was bedded in to the shoulder-blade; had notches in it so that it could not be removed, and he was sent on to the States to have it taken out, and never came back to the company again. There was one Indian captured and brought to Fort Sedgwick, and escaped from the old stable, when he ran for the river, and somehow got away. I think Corporal or Sergeant Close relieved the guard to go to dinner. If you write to Comrade Joe Buckholtz, Smithfield, Ohio, I think that he can give you valuable information, as he wrote me once that he had some records of our service taken at the time.

Sergeant Oscar Close, Corporal Chas. H. Haynes, Privates Michael Connell, Wm. Floyd, Wm. Humphries and Michael Haley were with Lieutenant Lyman S. Kidder's party who were killed by the Indians on Beaver Creek about the 1st of July, 1867, while carrying dispatches to General Custer, who was at that time along the Republican. Kidder had with him ten men and an Indian guide. I have a list of the names sent me from Washington of the entire party. The five that I have given you are the only ones that were with us at that time. The official report of the time so many were frostbitten is that we left Fort Sedgwick January 22, 1867, and returned January 26; two officers, thirty-seven enlisted men, five citizens; country passed through, Lodgepole Valley; tribe operated against, Cheyenne; captured sixty-seven head of

cattle and one pony; twenty-seven men frostbitten; one man who after had feet taken off resides in New Hampshire; his address is Frank B. Flanders, Goffstown, N. H.

The report also says that Lieutenant Jenness, Twenty-seventh Infantry, since killed at Phil Kearney, was along with us.

The party was in command of Second Lieut. G. A. Armes. Lieutenant Hamilton was along. I think Hamilton was killed in the Spanish war, a Lieutenant-Colonel.

In the report they have the distance we traveled on this trip 249 miles, and I think you deserved great credit for working as you did in keeping the boys from freezing to death, in making us walk when that drowsy feeling would come over us.

If this information will be of any service to you I am glad to give it. If I can do anything more I will cheerfully do it.

Yours truly,

ALBION H. DROUN,
18 Garland avenue, Malden, Mass.

Smithfield, Ohio, November 19, 1899.

Maj. George A. Armes,
U. S. A.,
Washington, D. C.:

Dear Sir—Through the kindness of my friend, John Burnside, I am enabled to communicate with you. I had heard through Comrade Droun that you were living in Washington, or had lived there some years ago, and when Burnside was here last week I asked him to look you up if you were still in Washington. I thought that, situated as you were, and having personal knowledge of me, you might aid me in getting my pension increased.

I have been drawing $12 per month for general disability since the dependent bill was passed, but about two years ago I placed my application for increase as an original applicant, and based by disability on a severe freezing that I got on that memorable trip in January of 1867, of which you were in command. I was examined a year ago last September. About three months ago I furnished a history of my whereabouts, and the work that I have been doing since I left the service. I am confined now to a wheel-chair, and have been off my feet since May, 1891.

Dear sir, I am glad that I got on your trail. I was not trailing, but just crossed it, so to speak, and hope that you may aid me in getting what I want. I don't ask you to go out of your way to do this, and I hope you will do it for the sake of Auld Lang Syne, and because it is in your heart to do the favor, and I'll place it on record beside that other favor you did me long ago, when you loaned me your overshoes—a thing that don't happen very often in the regular Army.

Hoping that you are well, and enjoying life and the good things of this life, I remain,

Yours truly,

Jos. A. BUCKHOLTZ.

P. S.—While a member of M Company of the Second I kept a diary for nearly the whole three years, and if it will interest you to read it, or that part which pertains to that January trip, I will send you a copy of it.

J. A. B.

JOS. A. BUCKHOLTZ.

ALBION H. DROUN.

Among my supporters and defenders was Col. Thomas P. Ochiltree, a gentleman who has been dined and wined abroad more than any other American that has ever visited Europe, and deservedly so, which is substantiated by the following extracts from official records from the War Department and an account of his life written by Gen. Marcus J. Wright:

"When a mere boy Colonel Ochiltree volunteered in Walker's company of Texas Rangers, and was engaged in the campaign on the Mexican frontier against the Apache and Commanche Indians. * * * Afterwards enlisted in a Texas battalion under Colonel Wigfall, subsequently the First Texas Infantry. * * * When

General Sibley was dispatched by President Davis for the conquest of New Mexico Colonel Ochiltree became a member of his staff, and distinguished himself in the New Mexican campaign. He served with General Longstreet, participating in the Seven Days' battle around Richmond. He was advanced as Chief of General Sibley's staff in the Army of Southwest Louisiana, participating in all engagements of that command. He served as Assistant Adjutant-General to Gen. Dick Taylor in the brilliant campaigns in which Brashear City was captured, and assigned as Assistant Adjutant-General to Gen. S. B. Maxey, Department Indian Territory, taking an active part in the battle at Poison Springs, Ark. He also did special service under General Rains in the defense of Richmond. He was wounded and captured at the battle of Sailors' Creek, the last pitched battle of the Army of Northern Virginia, and in 1865 confined in the Old Capitol Prison in Washington. In 1866 he became editor of the Houston *Daily Telegraph*. In 1867 he was sent to Europe to represent the merchants of Galveston to secure the establishment of a steamship line to that point, in which he succeeded. In 1872 he visited Europe as Commissioner of Emigration for Texas. In 1873 he was appointed United States Marshal by President Grant. In 1882 was elected to Congress as the first native of Texas ever sent from that State.

* * * * * * * * * * *

"While in Europe during his sojourn he was received with great distinction by such leaders as Gladstone and John Bright in England, and Victor Hugo and Lafayette in France, and Lasker and Baumberger in Germany. He was also widely known in civil life as the author of the Lasker resolutions."

EXTRACTS FROM THE REBELLION RECORDS.

General Sibley's report of operations in New Mexico, January to May 4, 1862: "* * * I beg in conclusion to bring to your notice the intelligence and valor of the members of my staff. * * * Lieutenant Ochiltree, aide-de-camp."

Report of Lieut.-Col. Wm. R. Scurry, Fourth Texas Cavalry, battle of Valverde: "* * * Major Pyron was also in the thickest of the fray, and contributed much by his example to the success of the charge, as did also Lieutenant Ochiltree of the General's staff."

Report of Capt. T. T. Teel, Sultey: "* * * Lieutenant Ochiltree, aide-de-camp, who rallied the men to the charge, and in the line, leading on the troops * * *"

Jefferson Davis to Gen. H. H. Sibley, Richmond, June 7, 1862: "I avail myself of an opportunity of communicating with you in a speedy and direct manner through your aide-de-camp. * * * Captain Ochiltree will inform you of our condition in this region, and this will be to you a sufficient explanation for failure to reinforce you to the full extent of your necessity. * * *"

COL. OCHILTREE LEADING "SIBLEY'S BRIGADE" AT THE BATTLE OF VAL VERDE.

In perusing these pages the reader can see that my opportunities for learning the motives of human actions in public affairs have been abundant. He will recall that I have been accustomed to take part in the discussion of national issues as every four years they are made up for the consideration of the voter. He will remember that, having been cradled within an atmosphere wafted from Mount Vernon, I was proof against the seductive political heresies which swept my neighbors, even Lee, the veteran soldier of Arlington, into the seething waters of rebellion.

I am no pessimist. I believe in that product known as the American. I believe our national life to be onward and upward, with an occasional halt, possibly. The political atmosphere may become dark and murky, but a glorious sunburst is sure to follow. The more portentious the cloud the brighter the light that ensues, as one of General Pinner's letters to me proves. When the people become quiescent through ease and comfort corrupt influences have full play in public affairs. Then the people wake up and set matters right for a new start in the direction of the general welfare and individual liberty. Should we not therefore strive in time and while our institutions are still intact to find and put in force a safeguard against the day of peril?

I propose as my contribution to this end and as a remedy for the many evils already in play a constitutional amendment limiting the tenure of the Presidency to a single term, the incumbent to be eligible for election to the same office only after the lapse of two intervening full terms. The reasons for this are too many for me to undertake an exposition of them in a work of this kind, except briefly.

I specially call attention of the reader to the neglect of many officials who have complaints and serious questions to decide affecting the past or future of a person's character, record and standing, financially and otherwise, who often refer the examination of such matters to unreliable and incompetent subordinates, approving such reports, whether the findings are founded on fact or not and whether they be just.

In many cases the seeker of justice is led to believe that prompt action will be given, causing the victim to live in hopes of vindication. But he is often driven to poverty, his whole future career ruined, and finally becomes desperate.

If it is not the intention to honestly investigate these cases certainly deception should not be practiced, and thus bring ruin and desolation, not only upon the party seeking redress, but also upon innocent women and children because of the lack of frank, candid and honest action.

Whatever of criticism appears in these pages is not from me as an officer of the Army, but solely in my relation as a citizen of the United States, and is made in the interest of the public service. I may say also that it is without malice.

I feel that the country should know of the many persecutions which those officers who incur the displeasure of superiors are subjected to, especially where trivial charges are made against them and trials had whose end and aim is their dismissal.

The trouble lies in the fact that there is no appeal from the conclusions of a military court. If a board of review consisting of eminent civilian attorneys versed in military law were appointed by Congress to go over all the details of trials before the President was called on to approve the sentence or proceedings the constantly recurring effort with Congress for redress of officers dismissed would cease and the Army benefited beyond calculation. Many cases come to me now where, if this had been done, justice would have been secured, and one, that of Maj. Andrew Geddes, would have resulted quite differently, as has been demonstrated by the thorough investigation given it by various Congressional committees, which have proven that he has been one of the best officers in the Army, a gentleman above reproach.

From the date of entry in active service as a Lieutenant the youngster begins a systematic effort to secure promotion or assignment to duty other than in garrison, where increased pay and emoluments ensue. Political influence is enlisted, and regular siege laid upon Senators and Congresmen by women to set them upon the President and War Department. These pages show so much of what is here spoken of that it is not necessary to go into further detail.

The too-frequent excuse one hears among officials that they have no time to properly discharge the duties they were appointed to perform would no longer be heard if less time was spent lunching and wining with the professional politicians who infest the capital.

The remedy for this condition is to enforce the law as it is today, which forbids such action on the part of officers, and thus give promotion and detail in accord with merit rather than favoritism.

Here I may end the record of a busy life that has not been without its bright side, notwithstanding the efforts of enemies to make it a wreck. My personal acquaintance and contact with many of the great characters of our nation's history, their tested and proven friendship under trying circumstances, their faith in my honor and integrity, all tend to make me thankful to Almighty God that I have lived in this age and have performed my allotted, if humble, part in the stirring events that adorn the historic annals of our country.

And now, in conclusion, I may be pardoned if I set forth plainly the fact that in my whole military career I have never been reprimanded by superiors for remissness in the performance of duty; that in no case has there ever been a report against me by an Inspector-General for neglect of duty in any particular; that I always promptly executed any order that I received from proper authority; that I always comported myself as a gentleman, of which there is plenty of evidence in these pages; that I have been the victim of malign influence and petty persecutions of a very large number of personages, from the exalted Secretary of War down to the scrub Lieutenant; that I have lived an honorable life and deserved the highest esteem of those who know me best; that most of those who have followed me so relentlessly have met with the punishment meted out to criminals and evil-doers generally; that my oldest friends are my best ones, still stand by me, and have never regretted that they have done so, and that I am still here respected by my fellows, a man among men, ready to serve my country whenever duty calls me.

Among the social events of the year 1899 of more than ordinary moment, was the marriage on Dec. 28, of Miss Jane Faulkner, daughter of Hon. Chas. J. Faulkner, to Dr. William White, of Nashville, Tennessse, at the family residence in Boydsville, Martinsburg, West Va. The ceremony was performed by Rev. F. M. Woods, D. D., assisted by Rev. T. DeWitt Talmadge, in the presence of a very large number of guests and a bevy of beautiful bridesmaids.

They were Miss Sallie Faulkner, Miss Mary Wills, niece of Governor Kellogg, Miss Maude Talmadge, daughter of Rev. Dr. Talmadge, Miss Kitty Reed, daughter of the Speaker of the House of Representatives, Miss Mary Paxton, daughter of the Reverend Dr. Paxton, of New York, Miss Mary Warner, daughter of B. H. Warner, Miss Alice Cary Burdette, daughter of Walter W. Burdette, one of our leading merchants, now retired.

After the festivities were over, the happy couple departed on an extended tour, and finally arrived at Nashville, where they continue to reside.

This wedding was, undoubtedly, the finest ever celebrated in West Virginia. The large number of distinguished guests present; the great beauty of the bride and her attendants; the elegance of all the appointments; the magnificence of the collation, all contributed to make it the most notable of similar festal occasions ever witnessed in the State.

Secretary of War Asking Advice.

Being shrewd, diplomatic and from Ohio, he has worked himself into the confidence of the many public officials and is now a Major General, a position of great honor. It is very interesting to be in his office and see the Secretary of War stand waiting for advice on how to proceed in official matters Gen. Miles is not "in it" at all as it appears; in fact, it would hardly be known that we had a General of the Army ; but General Corbin, with his Secretary, the Secretary of War, has so well pleased the President that it is considered unnecessary to consult with the General of the Army in regard to the disposition and movement of troops. In one of my communications to General Corbin, I reminded him that if he would make it a point to be straightforward and honest in his dealings he is destined to be a great man.

With the combination of a President who claims the confidence of the religious element and an Adjutant General representing the precisely opposite element, working in harmony, what wonder the war with Spain was short, sharp and decisive. With numerous sons and nephews of prospective delegates and other politicians unprovided for, there is no reason to doubt that this gallant soldier will becom the ranking officer of the Army.

QUEEN LILIUOKALANI.

Col. PARKER.

Among the friends who have aided me by words and acts of encouragement in the preparation of this volume are Colonel Sam Parker and Prince David Kawanakoa, of Hawaii. Col. Parker is about forty-seven years old. He comes of the old royal family of Hawaii; was Prime Minister to Queen Lilioukalani, but by education and travel is thoroughly American. Notwithstanding the fact that he was a strong royalist, he is, by careful consideration of all the conditions, thoroughly satisfied with the annexation of Hawaii. He is a firm believer in the future of the Islands, in President Mckinley and in the Republican party. He was chairman of the first delegation from the Territory of Hawaii to a National Republican convention. No man in Hawaii can compare with him in the popularity and love in which he is held by the native Hawaiians. He is a man of more than ordinary intelligence; the largest land owner in the Islands and one who inspires confidence wherever and whenever met.

PRINCE DAVID, of Hawaii.

Prince David is a nephew of Queen Liliuokalani. He has never taken any interest in politics but at the same time is thoroughly bound up in the interests of his people. He is a close friend of Col. Parker, and is a genuine good fellow and polished man of the world.

My Daughter Ethel in Amateur Theatricals.

Among the staunchest supporters I have had at all times are Senators C. K. Davis, of Minnesota, and John W. Daniel, of Va.

In season and out these gentlemen have defended me from the malicious attacks of my persecutors, both on the floor of the Senate and elsewhere :

Senator C. K. Davis.

Senator John W. Daniel.

Wm. St. John.

Wm. Lyman and Wife.

Another of my friends is Wm. St. John, who is the representative of the famous Pintsch Gas Buoy, now being used by all leading maritime nations, Mr. St. John being the pioneer in its introduction in the United States.

On one of my trips through the East and North I visited the home of my cousin, Wm. Lyman, in Massachusetts, whose portrait with his wife appears on the preceding page.

War Department,

Bureau of Refugees, Freedmen, and Abandoned Lands,

Washington, Aug 21st 1866.

Hon. A. Thomas
Dear Sir

I received your kind letter. I am glad you have succeeded so well.
"Let him ~~that~~ thinketh he standeth ~~[illegible]~~ take heed lest he fall"
Strict & constant secret prayer is the best possible support.
Aim to do right & God will strengthen you.

Very truly yours
O. O. Howard
Maj. General

Headquarters General Recruiting Service,

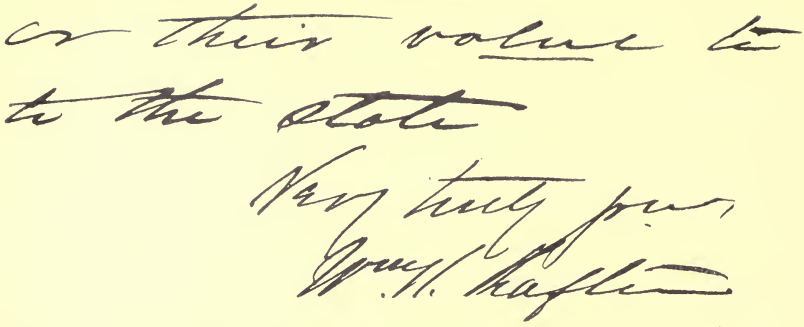
Army Building,

New York City, Jan 25th 1884

My dear Armes

I have just heard that old Gris-
-wold is working his best for the next vacancy in the grade of Brig Genl and that he has secured the greater part of the Texas dele-
-gation on the ground of his valuable ser-
vice on the frontier

I can hardly
think it possible
that he does claim
any such thing as
his only service
in the field
was for a short
time on the Victoria
business which
was any thing but
successful. You are
on the ground and
know the Texas people
and ought to set
them right if they
are wrongly informed
as to his services



The above letter from Gen. Shafter shows that my opinion of Gen. Grierson coincides with that held by the former.

This being my first attempt at book-writing, I became so much interested after I begun with my stenographer and typewriter that I had 5,500 pages in duplicate from my diary of thirty-eight years of an accumulated official correspondence and other material. When I arranged to have a book of 700 pages printed, I had to eliminate a large portion of interesting matter on hand. In some subsequent edition of this work much of what remains will be included.

It would be to the interest of the service and the country at large to reorganize the Army, and to thoroughly investigate the War Department in regard to Army matters during the past twenty-five years and adopt some system where such men as General John M. Wilson, Chief of Engineers, and many others who have performed their duty so faithfully and to the interest and credit of the service, can be rewarded and have merit recognized, in some way, without political and social influence.

I believe the reader will acknowledge that I have not kept back any of the news tending to place me in a bad light before the public, but in exposing the character and animus of the creatures who have tried to ruin me, I may not be the bad man they have sought to make me appear.

I have many friends among the diplomats and none whom I value more highly than Minister Wu Ting Fang, of China, who has demonstrated that he is of the highest order in the art of diplomacy.

I may be pardoned if I refer to Dr. E. C. Bedloe, sometime consul at Amoy, China, who has been my constant friend, and who is one of the most popular of all our consuls.

FINIS.

INDEX.

Abercrombie, Gen., 65.
Adams, A. W., 386, 396, 700.
Adams, C. H., 366.
Adams, Lt., 165.
Ainsworth, F. C., 10, 663.
Ainsworth, S., 366.
Albany Journal, 8.
Albee, G. E., 12, 278, 282, 283, 285, 298, 468.
Albright, C., 379, 445.
Aldrich, N. W., 632.
Alcorn, Sen., 390.
Alderson, J. D., 657.
Alexander, A., 148.
Alexander, C., 421.
Alexander, Prof., 159.
Alexandria Gazette, 41, 149.
Alexandria Sentinel, 41.
Alger, R. A., 692, 694, 700, 718, 723.
Allen, Lt., 255, 263.
Allen, T. E., 362.
Alley, J. B., 540.
Allison, F. H., 171, 174, 189, 196.
Allison, W. B., 652.
Allman, Lt., 306.
Almy, J., 292.
Alvord, H. S., 248.
Alvord, T. G., 359, 366, 718.
Ames, —, 679.
Amick, Lt., 250, 253.
Anaconda Standard, 8.
Anandale, 15, 19, 23, 144.
Anderson, A., 247.
Anderson, G. S., 598.
Anderson, Hon., 566, 581.
Anderson, J., 249.
Anderson, T. M., 10, 70, 71.
Andrews, G. L., 458, 502.
Angelica, Sister, 644, 648, 649.
Anheuser Brewery, 562.
Anthony, H. B., 366, 442.
Apache Bill, 274, 301.
Appleman, A. R., 371, 386.
Appleman, Mrs., 615.
Appomattox, C. H., 141.
Arapahoes, 312.
Arlington Heights, 65, 115, 116, 140, 142, 226.
Armes, Cecily, 522, 548, 566, 577, 613, 633, 641, 644.
Armes, C. H., 16, 19, 149, 251, 275, 332, 472.
Armes, Dorothy, 646, 680.
Armes, Edith, 646.
Armes, Ethel M., 522, 613, 631, 633, 641, 645, 646, 663, 680, 681.
Armes, G. A., ancestry, 13; birth and parentage, 15, 16; boyhood, 17-24; espouses Union cause, 26; calls on Secretary Seward, 27; arrest No. 1, 29; arrest No. 2, 32; received by Mr. Seward, 33; appointed messenger, 33; first military duty, 38; wounded at Fairfax C. H., 47; arrest No. 3, 48; opens a store, 52; arrest No. 4, 53; wounded, 55; escapes amputation, 56; visits his mother, 57; sells watermelons, 58; wounded at Williamsburg, 59; runs a hotel and stage, 59; in the sutler business, 61; enlists as private, 64; declines to black boots, 65; made a sergeant, 65; made a lieutenant, 66; at Portsmouth, N. H., 72; arrest No. 5, 72; arrest No. 6, 75; arrest No. 7, 78; letters from Gov. Woodbury, 79-80; returns to Washington, 82; takes dispatches to Gen. Grant, 88; on Gen. Hancock's staff, 89; unhorsed, 90; fighting near Hanover C. H., 92; at Cold Harbor, 95; extracts from diary, 97-112; at Fort Stevens, 115; at Elmira and Utica, N. Y., 117; commissioned as captain in 2d N. Y. Art., 118; at Hatcher's Run, 122-126; at Petersburg, 136; arrest No. 8, 137; court-martialed, 137; commanding at Fort Whipple, Va., 142; at the trial of Mrs. Surratt, 143; on duty at Fairfax C. H., 145; at the "Grand Union Tournament," 147; buys a farm, 152; resolves to go to the frontier, 154; at Fort Ellsworth, 163; at Fort Wallace, 167; arresting Benham, 176; letter from Gen. Bates, 178; at Fort Sedgwick, 181; attacking Indians, 186-189; arrest No. 9, 193; arrest No. 10, 197; rescuing the woodchoppers, 206; makes report to Capt. Mix, 210; meets Spotted Tail, 217; made captain in 10th Cavalry, 222; returns to Washington, 224; studies for examination, 225; passes, 228; at Carlisle barracks, 229; at Ft. Leavenworth, 229; scouting, 231; at Ft. Hays, 235;

wounded by Indians, 239; fights with Indians, 243; makes report to Capt. Corbin, 245; arrest No. 11, 250; arrest No. 12, 253; court-martialed, 257; acquitted, 259; arrest No. 13, 264; court-martialed, 268; arrest No. 14, 275; skirmishes with Indians, 270-285; arrest No. 15, 282; at Ft. Lyon, 286; makes report to Gen. McKeever, 293; arrest No. 16, 298; arrest No. 17, 306; prefers charges against Maj. Graham, 307; at Camp Supply, 303-313; arrest No. 18, 313; at Ft. Leavenworth, 318-334; letter to Col. Merrill, 319; court-martialed, 323; in close confinement, 327; sentenced to dismissal, 333; returns to Washington, 336; becomes real estate broker, 336; efforts to be restored, 337-350; buys Washington Transcript, 352; advocates Hancock for President, 353; petitions for restoration, 354-358; at Saratoga tournament, 360-367; the duel, 363; antagonism of Belknap, 369; large real estate deals, 371; ready to avenge Gen. Ryan, 372; secures honorable discharge, 377; letters of congratulation, 378; his marriage, 380; hostility of Belknap, 387-389; real estate deals, 390-396; his charges against Belknap, 397; writes to him, 401; causes his resignation, 403; complimented by the press, 404; Blaine's attack of vertigo, 411; works on his case in Congress, 412-416; his bill passes, 417; indebted to Watterson, 418; President refuses to sign, 419; efforts to reopen case, 421-425; applies to Secretary of War, 426-428; bill for restoration in Congress, 431; works on his case, 435-437; bill passes both Houses, 438-449; visits Hon. C. J. Faulkner, 450; restored as captain, 451; goes to Texas, 452; arrest No. 20, 455; released, 458; scouting, 462-466; arrest No. 21, 467; hostility of "The Dutchman," 468; closely confined, 478; sentence commuted, 479; at Ft. McKavett, 480; court-martialed, 481-489; ill health, 494; at Ft. Stockton, 495; hostility of Col. Wade, 501; returns to Washington, 502; efforts to secure a transfer, 502; returns to Texas, 504; at Ft. Stockton, 504; letter to Secretary of War, 510; scouting, 519-522; trouble with Col. Wade, 523; before retiring board, 527; recommended for retirement, 528; is retired, 530; indignant, 531; returns to Washington, 532; writes to President Arthur, 532; at real estate again, 534; letter to the President, 539; real estate deals, 543-557; visits Gov. Woodbury, 548; goes to California, 558-562; buys Oxford Military Academy, 563-565; assumes charge, 567; letters from patrons, 568; closes the academy, 570; organizes riding school, 573; visits St. Louis, 576; appointed a notary public, 586; insulted at inaugural parade, 586; altercation with Beaver, 588; pulls his nose, 589; arrest No. 22, 590; court-martialed, 591; suspended for five years, 593; receives gold medal, 593; letter to Secretary of War, 598; persecuted by Schofield, 602; plans extension of Conn. Ave., 605; aided by Senator Stewart, 607; large real estate deals, 609-617; moves into "Fairfield," 614; correspondence with War Dept., 628-630; sentence remitted, 630; entertains his old regiment, 633; takes part in Cleveland inauguration, 634; attends Senator Faulkner's wedding, 637; visits Florida, 640; celebrates his birthday, 641; entertains Unity Club, 641; notified of divorce proceedings, 643; opposes daughter's marriage, 644; writes to Cardinal Gibbons, 648; efforts to be made lieut.-colonel, 650-660; arrest No. 24, 661; is released, 663; Judge Bradley's opinion, 663; writes to Schofield, 667; to D. S. Lamont, 670; again to Schofield, 673; attends opening of Hotel Chamberlin, 680; domestic troubles, 681; visits Richmond, 682; Rochester, 682; avoids the District courts, 683; arrest No. 25, 683; tricks a deputy marshal, 685; visits Burlington, Vt., 685; his wife secures divorce, 688; buys Appomattox battlefields, 691; visits Appomattox, 693-697; visits Albany, N. Y., 698; works on his brevet case, 700-704; writes to Secretary of War, 707; scores Schofield in another, 710; writes to the President, 712; applies to be made brig.-general, 713-724; writes to Gen. Miles, 719; to Gen. Corbin, 729; to Gen. Miles again, 732; to Secretary of War, 739.

Armes, G. K., 455, 522, 577, 614, 646, 650, 663, 725, 730.

Armes, Grover C., 646.
Armes, J. O., 14.
Armes, Lucy, 522, 645, 646.
Armes, Mrs. O. C., 19.
Armes, Oscar St. J., 566, 645, 646, 650.
Armes, Spring, 180, 181.
Armes, Willie, 646.
Armes, Wm., 13.
Armes, W. E., 16, 19, 149, 159, 231, 235.
Armistead, Maj., 195.
Army and Navy Register, 9.
Army of the Potomac, 559, 577, 578, 584.
Arnold, Benedict, 4.
Arnold, Col., 183.
Arthur, C. A., 532, 541.
Ashford, M., 572.
Asper, J. S., 345.
Associated Press, 8, 9.
Astoria, 561.
Atkins, A. B., 8.
Augur, C. C., 84, 85, 136, 150, 151, 154, 155, 158, 223, 375, 409, 410, 494, 500, 502, 528, 530, 531, 532, 599.
Auld, Wm., 703.
Austin, Dr., 571.
Averill, W. W., 10.
Axline, Gen., 585.
Ayres, A. S., 8.

Babcock, Gen., 394, 433.
Babcock, J. W., 8.
Bacheller, G. S., 359, 360, 366.
Bacon, Capt., 537.
Badger, A. O., 255, 289, 291, 292.
Bailey, R. Q., 9.
Bailey, Mrs., 557.
Bailey's Cross Roads, 44, 52.
Bains, Gen., 411.
Baird, Gen., 502.
Baker, Col., 144, 145.
Baker, Gen., 104.
Baker, Hon., 394, 580.
Baker, I. V., 366.
Baker, L., 7, 705, 715.
Baker, S. M., 149, 153.
Baker, W. W., 641.
Balance, J. G., 11.
Baldridge, Rev., 459, 501.
Baldwin, F. D., 11.
Ball, Maj., 538.
Ball, M. D., 25, 37, 38, 353, 354.
Baltimore Sun, 8.
Bankhead, Gen., 270, 302.
Banks, N. P., 358, 431.
Banning, Gen., 394, 397, 398, 407, 414, 415, 417, 419, 431, 436.
Banzhof, C., 258, 267, 306, 314, 670.
Barber, Maj., 504.
Barker, E. A., 242, 243, 245, 247, 252.
Barlow, F. C., 10, 92-95, 98, 103, 104, 105, 107, 108, 110, 112.
Barnard, Judge, 547, 640.
Barnett, W. B., 162, 263.
Barnitz, A., 323, 324.
Barnum, Gen., 599.
Barnum, Sen., 583.
Barr, Col., 543, 597.
Barrett, O. D., 352, 638.
Barry, Father, 644, 648, 649.
Barry, T. H., 12, 352, 367, 368.
Bartlett, J. J., 581.
Bartley, Miss A., 340.
Bartley, T. W., 336, 341, 345, 355, 421.
Barton, C. S., 119, 502.
Bash, D. V., 11.
Bassett, T. E., 264.
Batchelder, Miss, 631.
Batchelder, R. N., 10, 93, 543, 639, 669, 702, 727.
Batchelder, W. W., 349, 433.
Bates, A. E., 164-171, 177, 179, 181, 182.
Bates, E. W., 486, 487.
Bates, J. A., 12.
Bates, Mrs., 496.
Batter, Corp., 247.
Bayard, T. F., 398, 407, 574.
Bayliss, Mrs., 556.
Beach, Capt., 387.
Beal, Mrs., 701.
Beale, E. M., 581, 621, 634.
Beale, R., 643.
Beale, T., 625.
Bean, J. W., 12, 45.
Bear Creek, 281.
Beard, Mrs., 390.
Beardslee, Adm'l, 703.
Beauvais Ranch, 219, 220.
Beaver Creek, 245, 248, 249, 303.
Beaver, J. A., 559, 577, 584, 585, 586, 587, 588, 593, 596, 597, 599, 600, 629, 635, 658, 659, 660, 665, 685, 723.
Beck, W. H., 271, 279, 282, 284, 286, 289, 291, 292, 351, 455, 632.
Beck, Mrs., 286, 293, 641.
Beck, Sen., 537.
Becker, —, 239, 240.
Becker, P. A., 247.
Beckwith, A., 33.
Beckwith, P. E., 571.
Beckwith's Ranch, 464.
Bee, H. P., 503, 512.
Beebe, Maj., 198, 203, 257, 259, 502.
Beebe, Mrs., 198.
Beecher, Lt., 249, 271, 275.
Beeman, —, 260.
Beese, W., 189.
Belden, J. J., 8, 657, 717.

Belger, Maj., 357.
Belknap Rifles, 570.
Belknap, W. W., 333, 334, 336, 341, 342, 343, 345, 369, 373, 384, 385, 388, 389, 394, 396, 397, 398, 399, 400, 401, 403, 404, 406, 407, 409, 413, 415, 420, 426, 428, 437, 439, 560, 570, 670, 723.
Bell, C. E., 695.
Bell, C. H., 641.
Bell, J. C., 641.
Bell, Lt., 301.
Bell, W. R., 8.
Belmont, P., 574.
"Ben," 57.
Benham, A., 175-178, 255.
Benham, H. H., 12.
Bens, E., 633.
Bent, R., 283, 284.
Benteen, Col., 257, 272.
Benton, H. H., 72, 82.
Bentzoni, C., 11, 473.
Berdan, Gen., 557.
Berdan, Mrs., 631.
Berrett, J. G., 391, 621, 635.
Berry, A. S., 276, 298, 301, 656, 720.
Berry, Gen., 530.
Betten, Ben., 333.
Biddle, —, 433.
Big Creek, 237.
Bigelow, O., 386, 534.
Biggs, Gov., 595.
Big Mouth, 310.
Big Springs, 174.
Billings, J. S., 603.
Bingham, H. H., 8, 656.
Bird, C., 10, 704.
Birdsall, A. J., 595, 633.
Birney, A. A., 393.
Birney, W., 7, 89, 92, 93, 94, 102, 103, 105, 106, 108, 109, 642.
Bispham, Dr., 554.
Black, Gen., 545, 558, 559, 560, 576, 580, 581.
Black, J. D., 11, 699.
Black, Mrs., 560.
Black, R. J., 568.
Black, W. M., 11.
Blackburn, J. C. S., 412, 681.
Blacker, Judge, 478, 479, 487.
Blackman's Ford, 54.
Blaine, J. G., 7, 377, 410, 411, 442, 444, 445, 446, 504, 542.
Blair, F. P., Jr., 343.
Blair, J. F., 594.
Blanchard, N. C., 654.
Blankman, —, 546.
Blinker, Gen., 52.
Bliss, A., 575, 583, 584.
Bliss, A. O., 640, 706.
Bliss, O. F., 126.
Bliss, Z. P., 10.
Blunt, J. G., 160, 712.
Blunt, J. W., 222.
Blunt, M. M., 458, 462, 465, 467, 469, 473, 475, 477, 478, 479, 480, 481, 482, 485, 486, 487, 496, 599.
Bodamer, J. A., 230, 233, 234, 239, 240, 241, 247, 253, 261, 269, 275, 276, 292, 668.
Boden, Capt., 225.
Boggs, —, 283.
Boggs, Dr., 282.
Bond, S. R., 573, 596, 609.
Bonham, W. L., 35, 36.
Bonsall, Lt., 278, 285, 287.
Bonsall, Mrs., 285.
Boone, Gen., 286.
Boonville, Mo., 383, 571.
Booth, E., 531.
Booth Lumber Co., 78.
Bomon, —, 534.
Borden, Lt., 303.
Boston Journal, 8.
Boston Traveler, 8.
Bourke, Capt., 586, 587, 590, 595, 597, 599.
Boutelle, C. A., 8, 657.
Bovey's Ranch, 197.
Bowen, Sen., 554.
Bowman, A. H., 194.
Bowman, J. B., 148.
Bowman, Miss L., 149.
Boyce, S., 641.
Boyd, —, 301.
Boyd, Capt., 136.
Boyd, E. M., 9.
Boyd, J., 421.
Boylis, Mrs., 229.
Boynton, C. A., 8.
Boynton, H. V., 9, 391, 408.
Boynton, Prof., 622.
Brackett, Col., 695.
Bradley, —, 564.
Bradley, A. C., 344, 663, 675, 717.
Brady's, 108.
Brady, J. D., 111, 669, 716, 738, 749.
Brady, Jos., 669.
Bragg, Gen., 435-438.
Brainard, Maj., 101.
Branca, Baroness, 678.
Breck, S., 704, 725, 726, 729.
Breckinridge, J. C., 10, 640, 694, 704, 706, 725.
Breckinridge, W. C. P., 656.
Breckon, J. A., 9.
Brenner, J. L., 720.
Breslin, J. H., 366.
Brewer, E. P., 12.

Brice, C. T., 654.
Briggs, J. L., 633.
Briggs, Lt., 285.
Bright, Jessle, 336, 340.
Brink, —, 239.
Bristow, Sec., 292.
Britton, —, 586.
Broadhead, Mark, 223, 356.
Brockenbrough, Dr., 408.
Brodhead, J. F., 386.
Brooke, J. R., 10, 94, 303, 685, 686, 698, 729.
Brooks, —, 465, 472.
Brooks, F., 633.
Brooks, Maj., 381.
Brooks, N. M., 702.
Brooklyn Eagle, 8.
Brooklyn Times, 8.
Brotherton, D. H., 302, 323, 328.
Broughton, W., 148.
Brownell, F. E., 267, 269.
Brown, —, 301.
Brown, A. H., 189.
Brown, Capt., 195, 199.
Brown, J., 248.
Brown, J. B., 656.
Brown, J. C., 512.
Brown, J. D., 573, 574.
Brown, J. E., 126.
Brown, H. G., 461, 475.
Brown, Priv., 282.
Brown, Prof., 639.
Brown, Sergt., 129.
Brown, W., 547, 638.
Brownston, Maj., 159.
Bryan, S., 690, 693.
Bryan, W. J., 656, 687, 723.
Bryant, —, 580.
Buch, H., 189.
Buchanan, Dr., 236, 241.
Buchanan, T. A., 11.
Buck, H. S., 567, 568.
Buckeye, M. V., 12.
Buckholtz, J. A., 189, 741, 743.
Buckner, Gen., 687.
Buckner's Ranch, 291.
Buell, A. C., 394, 396, 425.
Buell, D. H., 322-332.
Buffalo Commercial, 8.
Buffalo Springs, 303.
Buffington, J., 344.
Buford, N. B., 224, 375.
Buford, T., 157, 224.
Bugher, A. H., 554, 556, 557, 572.
Bull Run, 52-56, 213.
Bullis, J. L., 11, 504.
Bullitt, J. C., 611, 612.
Bunce, Adml., 681.
Burbank, Maj., 203.
Burchell, —, 429.
Burdette, S. S., 558, 559, 690, 692.
Burgess, B. J., 563-569.
Burgess, C. H., 5, 683.
Burgess, G., 345.
Burnell, W. B., 10.
Burnett, Gen., 452.
Burns, J. M., 12, 262.
Burnside, E. A., 10, 91, 101, 102, 103, 190, 356.
Burnside, J., 742.
Burr, E., 12.
Burr, F. H., 633.
Burr, J. 345.
Burrows, —, 583.
Burrows, J. C., 652.
Burton, B., 116.
Bush, J., 452, 469, 472, 473.
Bushnell, G. T., 633.
Butterfield, D., 10, 35, 36, 687.
Butterworth, Capt., 38, 41.
Butler, B. F., 35, 82, 638.
Butler, Corp., 263.
Butler, E., 269.
Butler, M. C., 451.
Butler, Prof., 645.
Butler, R. R., 310, 316, 344.
Byrne, E., 263, 277, 278, 281, 282, 294.
Byrne, G. C., 365.

Cabell, W. D., 621, 696.
Cadmus, C. A., 655.
Cahill, Lt., 204.
Caldwell, J. C., 189.
California Syndicate, 607.
Callahan, —, 501, 559.
Callahan, Miss, 559.
Callow, H., 189.
Camden, J. N., 651.
Cameron, D., 544, 545.
Caminetti, A., 656.
Cammack, —, 393.
Camp, Col., 192, 223.
Camp, L. M., 84, 116.
Camp Beecher, 298.
Camp Blaine, 464.
Camp Bullis, 519.
Camp Butler, 464.
Camp Cockrell, 466.
Camp Faulkner, 466.
Camp Fry, 73.
Camp Grenada, 464.
Camp Grierson, 231.
Camp Hancock, 180.
Camp Hayes, 463.
Camp Hazelton, 464.
Camp Lee, 463.
Camp Lookout, 216.
Camp Maish, 464.

Camp Maxey, 463.
Camp Noland, 463.
Camp Plains, 218.
Camp Ridley, 463.
Camp Ritchie, 462.
Camp Sandy, 216.
Camp Santa Rosa, 463.
Camp Starvation, 218.
Camp Supply, 335.
Camp Turner, 463.
Campbell, —, 690.
Campbell's Camp, 236, 237, 239.
Campbell, G. A., 247, 252.
Campbell, Gov., 563, 585, 693.
Campbell, J. A., 247.
Campbell, T. J., 655.
Candee, Maj., 562.
Cantwell, Col., 567.
Capron, Gen., 391.
Carey, A. B., 10, 46, 251.
Carey, J., 652.
Carlton, Capt., 387.
Carleton, C. C., 8.
Carlisle Barracks, 156, 157, 229.
Carnegie, —, 508.
Carney, Wm., 189, 212.
Carpenter, F. H., 245, 252.
Carpenter, J. A., 247.
Carpenter, L. W., 231, 254, 255, 257, 264, 272, 311, 312, 314, 349, 350, 387, 433, 551.
Carpenter, M. H., 377.
Carr, —, 184.
Carr, Gen, 284, 286, 289, 292, 295.
Carrick, A. F., 189.
Carrington, H. B., 10.
Carro, Miss, 700.
Carroll, Corp., 174.
Carroll, D., 624, 626.
Carson, Col., 589, 603.
Carson, J. M., 8, 12, 589, 603, 717.
Carter, C. H., 81.
Carter, D. K., 345, 355.
Carter, Judge, 548, 550.
Carter, S. A., 78, 81, 343.
Carter, W. F., 493, 495, 506, 507, 516, 523, 524, 525.
Carter, W. H., 10, 704, 706, 725.
Caruth, A. G., 657.
Casey, J., 344, 355, 386, 422.
Casey, J. S., 11, 285.
Casper, M., 189.
Castello, J., 189.
Castle Garden, 3.
Catts, Rose, 585.
Causey, J. W., 657.
Cayotte Station, 265.
Cedar Rapids, 62.
Centerville, 18, 52.
Chamberlain, Judge, 171.
Chamberlin, J. F., 9, 680.
Chambers, Col., 556-557-558.
Chandler, G. H., 81.
Chandler, Z., 37.
Chapman, D. C., 641.
Chapman's Creek, 300.
Charleston News, 8.
"Charley," 16, 17.
Chappel, Dr., 643.
Chase, E., 641.
Chase, G. T., 386.
Chase, S. P., 60.
Cherry, C., 641.
Chevy Chase Land Co., 608.
Cheyenne —, 561.
Chicago News, 8.
Chicago Record, 8.
Chicago Tribune, 8.
Chinatown, 560.
Chipman, Gen., 231, 262.
Chisman, Miss A., 638.
Chevington, J. M., 338.
Christiancy, Sen'r, 431.
Christy, Sergt., 237, 672.
Church, Capt., 9.
Churchill, Prof., 641.
Cincinnati Enquirer, 8.
Cincinnati Times-Star, 8.
City Point, 113, 114, 122, 134.
Clapp, W. H., 11.
Clark, —, 231, 253.
Clark, Capt., 120.
Clark, Hon. C. D., 7.
Clark, G. B., 608.
Clark, J., 213, 214.
Clark, M. C., 544.
Clark, R. J., 633.
Clark, S. M., 714.
Clark, T., 189.
Clarke, —, 160.
Clarke, F., 358, 481, 484.
Clarke, I. P., 120.
Clarke, J. M., 422.
Clarke, J. W., 454.
Clarke, Miss, 340.
Clarke, S., 339.
Clarke, S. N., 9.
Clarke, W. H., 394, 421.
Clarkson, Gen., 588, 700.
Claude, H., 644, 683.
Clay, C. M., 32.
Clayton, P., 12, 358, 373, 375, 379, 400, 403, 413, 445, 696.
Clem, J. L., 11.
Clemens, Misses, 641.
Clephane, Miss J., 340.
Cleveland, G., 535, 551, 573, 574, 575, 576, 581, 586, 635.

Cleveland Park, 7.
Cline, —, 577.
Close, Miss A. E., 149.
Close, J. T., 62, 66, 131, 148.
Close, O., 189, 741.
Closson, H. W., 11, 661.
Clough, E. N. O., 378.
Clough, J. P., 67.
Clous, J. W., 297, 456, 458, 466, 468, 469, 471, 472, 473, 480, 481, 486, 498, 590, 597, 599, 600, 601, 725, 726, 732, 738.
Cluss, —, 429.
Clymer, H., 397, 398, 399, 400, 401, 403, 404, 406, 407, 437.
Coad, M. M., 740.
Coad, J. F., 210, 211, 690, 741.
Coates, E. M., 11, 40.
Cobb, A., 338, 344.
Coberton, Gen., 434.
Coburn, J. C., 8, 355, 370, 379, 384, 385, 388, 389, 406, 445, 450, 513.
Cocke, Gen., 35, 36.
Cochran, J. C., 510.
Cockrell, F. M., 7, 415, 442, 536.
Cockrell, R. H., 148.
Cody, W. F., 272, 580, 634.
Coe, S., 20.
Coke, Sen., 502.
Colby, L. W., 722.
Colby, Miss, 226, 251.
Cold Harbor, 93, 97, 99, 108, 113.
Coldwell, J. T., 386.
Cole, C. C., 683.
Cole, J. T., 643.
Cole, Sergt., 521.
Colgate, Miss, 75.
Colladay, S. R., 292, 350, 495, 507, 516, 519.
Collins, B., 129.
Collins, Capt., 352.
Collins, Chap'n, 284.
Collins, W. R., 345.
Colt, W. D., 345.
Comstock, —, 169, 170, 171, 172, 173, 177, 271.
Comstock, C. B., 10, 157.
Comstock, W., 157.
Compton, C. E., 10.
Conger, A. B., 415, 574.
Conkling, Sen., 273, 441, 442.
Conkling, J. P., 365.
Connell, M., 189, 741.
Connely, T., 189.
Conover, Sen., 442.
Conrad, C. H., 705, 707, 725, 726, 733, 740.
Conrad, H., 393.
Constable, N. S., 454.
Conwell, —, 577.
Cook, A., 120, 138.
Cook, L. W., 12.
Cook, Lt., 235, 257, 300.
Cook and Lewis, 644, 645, 646.
Cooke, G. F., 11.
Cooke, P. St. G., 10, 221, 224, 298, 300, 338, 347, 375, 409, 410, 556, 595.
Coolidge, L. A., 8.
Cooper, C. L., 351, 504, 536.
Cooper, H. C., 67.
Cooper, S. B., 655.
Copcutt, F., 360, 366.
Corbin, D. K., 72, 81.
Corbin, H. C., 235, 236, 237, 240, 241, 244, 249, 254, 256, 489, 502, 504, 512, 635, 637, 704, 706, 709, 719, 724, 730, 733, 749.
Corbit, —, 460, 516.
Corcoran, W. W., 414, 553.
Corey, Rev. Dr., 697, 702.
Corkhill, —, 395.
Coryal, —, 683.
Countryman, P., 633.
Courtney, Maj., 469, 472, 481.
Cousins, R. G., 8, 657.
Cowling, Mrs. I., 641.
Cowling, Miss M., 641.
Cox, C. C., 434.
Cox, C. G., 261, 276, 288, 290, 291, 292, 296, 301, 302, 303, 306, 313, 316, 317, 332, 357, 368, 400, 424, 448.
Cox, Gen., 711.
Cox, Judge, 645.
Coxen, A., 148.
Crafts, Col., 108, 128.
Craig, Col., 286, 421.
Cramp, C. S., 694.
Crandall, F. M., 11.
Crandall, Mrs., 641.
Crane, Parris & Co., 6.
Crane, W. H., 657.
Crawford, A. M. L., 258.
Crawford, F., 9.
Crawford, J., 686.
Crawford, S. J., 250, 252, 298, 423, 424, 545, 703.
Creecy, —, 535.
Cressen, Col., 698.
Cresson, C. C., 12.
Crimmons, J. D., 694.
Crittenden, Capt., 699, 700.
Crittenden, Col., 286.
Crittenden, T. T., 263, 264, 356, 421, 437, 439, 449, 452, 531.
Croker, —, 723.
Crosby, —, 247.
Crosby, Dr., 77.

Crosby, H. T., 376, 451.
Crowley, Col., 571.
Crumble, C. A., 247.
Cub Run, 54, 55.
Culberson, D. B., 656.
Cunningham, Col., 266.
Cullom, S. M., 7, 582, 597, 714.
Culver, Dr., 565, 567.
Cummings, A. J., 8, 721.
Cummings, A. G., 81.
Cummings, Gov., 204.
Cummins, A. S., 661.
Curry, R., 189.
Curry, M. W., 189.
Curtin, Gov., 577.
Curtis, —, 304.
Curtis, G. M., 8, 577, 720.
Curtis, W. E., 8.
Cushman, Hon., 749.
Custer, G. A., 257, 284, 287, 291, 322, 325, 326, 343, 407, 408, 412, 425.
Custer, Mrs. G. A., 412.
Custer, Tom, 235.
Cutts, Mrs. M., 631.

Daingerfield, W., 352.
Dallas, Maj., 223, 386, 425, 481.
Daly, —, 191.
Daniel, J. W., 7, 654, 692, 732, 738, 740, 749, 753.
Darling, J. A., 11.
Darlington, S., 312, 574.
David, Prince, 757.
Davidson, J. W., 258, 385, 387.
Davies, Gen., 554.
Davis, —, 254, 559, 560.
Davis, C. K., 7, 430, 442, 652, 753 (Mrs.), 692.
Davis, E. J., 503, 512.
Davis, Mrs. G., 393.
Davis, G. B., 598.
Davis, H., 7, 633, 690, 694.
Davis, H. T., 258, 262.
Davis, Jefferson, 53, 744.
Davis, Mrs. J., 682.
Davis, J. C., 189.
Davis, J. W., 189.
Davis, L. J., 393, 421.
Davis, Miss, 71.
Davis, W., 11, 254, 266, 276, 286, 289, 311, 314, 467, 480, 493, 494, 499, 501, 526, 529.
Dawson, R., 171, 189.
Day, 690.
Dayton, Col., 82.
Dean, —, 456, 632.
Dean, Judge, 547.
Dean, Sergt., 174.

Deerfield, Mass., 13, 14.
De Grafenreid, H. A., 8.
De Kay, D., 42, 43.
Delahay, Judge, 257.
Delaney, D. F., 148.
Delaney, M., 189.
Delaney, W. H., 148.
Delmar, —, 632.
Dent, J. C., 12.
Denver, J. W., 433, 534, 535, 536, 561, 562.
Denver Republican, 9.
Depray, J. A., 12.
De Rivas, M. E., 365, 366.
Derlin, J., 189, 227.
De Rudio, C. E., 12.
De Russey, —, 43.
Desmar, H., 189.
Des Moines Register, 8.
Detroit Free Press, 8.
Devine, A., 570.
Dewees, Capt., 204.
Dewey, —, 679.
Dewey, J. E., 189.
Dibrell, Judge, 436.
Dick, J., 383.
Dickerson, —, 456.
Dickey, C. J., 481.
Dickinson, W. S., 366.
Dickson, W., 535, 571, 576.
Dimmick, G., 189, 211.
Dinsmore, H. A., 8, 657, 720.
Divin, A. S., 10, 80, 118, 119.
Dockery, O. H., 344.
Dodge, E. A., 301.
Dodge, F. S., 484, 505, 506.
Dodge, R. I., 214, 215, 219, 220, 514, 598.
Doherty, E. P., 355.
Dolan, P., 189.
Dolph, Sen., 561, 588.
Donley, J. B., 344.
Donley, J. F., 189.
Donnan, H., 189.
Donnan, W. G., 445.
Donnelly, J. B., 356.
Donnington, Miss M., 362.
Donohue, M., 559.
Donohue, W. H., 82, 301.
Donoylien, W. B., 345.
Don Pedro, 410.
Don Piatt, 431, 432.
Dorsey, Col., 580, 583, 584, 585.
Doswell, R. W., 695.
Doubleday, Capt., 699.
Dougherty, Dr., 99, 96, 99, 103, 104.
Dougherty, E., 546.
Douglass, Com'r, 433, 595.
Douglass, Maj., 274, 290.

Dowell, A. H., 352.
Downing, Maj., 561.
Draney, Miss, 641.
Dresser, Lt., 36, 38.
Drew, Misses, 543.
Drew, Mrs., 631.
Driver, W. R., 120.
Droun, A. H., 742.
Drum, Mrs., 578.
Drum, R. C., 141, 502, 503, 507, 512, 515, 530, 531, 533, 534, 541, 565, 567, 575, 578, 583, 584, 587, 591, 600, 729.
Dudley, Comr., 503.
Dufour, A., 189.
Dugan, Lt., 162.
Duggan, Maj., 412.
Dugin, J. S., 81.
Dulan, Father, 554.
Dulaney, H. G., 553.
Dulaney, R., 611.
Dulaney, W., 24.
Dungan, V., 189.
Dunn, W. M., 420.
Dunnell, E. G., 9.
Dunwoody, H. C., 10.
Durborow, A. C., 655.
"Dutchman, The," 2, 496.
Duvall, Lt., 673, 698, 704, 726, 728, 734, 738, 739.
Dwight, —, 620.
Dykeman, F. E., 633.

Eads, L. T., 552.
Earl, Dr., 435.
Earl, F., 595, 609.
Early, J. A., 115.
Easterly, C., 456, 459, 460, 462, 465, 467, 468, 470, 472, 477, 478, 486.
Eastman, —, 557.
Easton, L. C., 257, 258.
Eaton, 385.
Eaton, Col., 286, 337.
Ebbitt, The, 6.
Eddie, Lt., 160.
Eddy, G. L., 12.
Edgerly, W. S., 11.
Edmunds, Sen., 441-444, 543.
Edson, J. J., 694.
Edwards, Capt., 503.
Edwards, C. A., 8.
Edwards, F., 189.
Edwards, W. A., 8.
Edwards, W. L., 29.
Egburt, H. G., 137.
Egerton, H., 558.
Eggleston, Dr., 572.
Elderkin, W. A., 10.
Elkins, S. B., 422, 430, 631, 652.
"Eli Perkins," 365, 366.
Ellicott, —, 669, 677.
Elliott, Maj., 243, 244, 247, 248, 256, 284, 658.
Ellis, —, 169, 534.
Ellis, Col., 562.
Ellis, J., 189.
Ellis, W. F., 7.
Ellison, —, 556, 557, 605.
Ellsworth, Col., 21, 36-41, 267, 269, 301, 305, 317, 401.
Elmira, N. Y., 116-119.
Ely, S., Jr., 359, 365, 366.
Embrey, J. H., 421.
Emmerson, Corp., 171.
Emory, M. G., 6, 226, 340, 345, 421.
Endicott, Sec., 543, 574.
English, G. H., 254, 257, 259, 318, 333, 355.
English, Maj., 195.
English, W. B., 655.
Enterkin, H., 189.
Erskine, C., 189.
Eslin, —, 611.
Eugster, E. W., 641.
Evans, —, 446, 557.
Evans, J. F., 386.
Evans, J. O., 370.
Evans, Lt., 563.
Evans, Mrs. S., 641.
Evans, Sergt., 282, 284.
Evarts, Sen., 575.
Ewing, C. W., 345, 356, 394, 421, 429, 430, 432, 435.
Ezekial, Lt., 266.

Fair, Sen., 553, 554.
Fairbanks, Sen., 695.
Fairchild, C. S., 559, 565, 567, 574, 575.
Fairfax, J., 414.
Fairfax Ct. House, 20, 21, 24, 27, 29, 40, 44, 46, 59, 146, 147, 148.
Fairfield, 577.
Falls Church, 20, 65.
Fannagan, J. W., 247, 357.
Farmville, Va., 136.
Farnham, N. L., 39.
Farnsworth, Gen., 367.
Farwell, C. B., 503, 504, 512, 584.
"Fat Andy," 111.
Faulkner, C. J., Sr., 450, 451, 460.
Faulkner, C. J., Jr., 422, 575, 637, 651, 723.
Faulkner, C. P., 12.
Faulkner, E. B., 638.
Faulkner, J. G., 449, 451.
Faulkner, Miss M. C., 638.
Faust & Tyler, 681, 688.

Fay, J. B., 81.
Fearing, H., 46, 81, 82.
Fenton, Lt., 192.
Ferman, —, 534.
Ferry, —, 151.
Ferry, T. W., 345, 447.
Fessenden, G., 189.
Fetterman, Col., 199.
Field, C. C., 159.
Field, E., 11.
Fielder, G. B., 700, 705.
Fields, Judge, 554.
Finley, Maj., 412.
Fisher, Col., 521.
Fisher, G. P., 344.
Fisher, Lt., 253.
Fisk, Gen., 508, 527, 530.
Fitch, Dr., 312.
Fitch, Lt., 198.
Fitzhugh, Mrs., 47, 49, 50, 51, 144.
Fitzpatrick, D., 189.
Flagler, Gen., 382, 700.
Flagler, Col., 620.
Flanders, F. B., 189, 742.
Flannagan, Sen., 374.
Fleming, G., 595.
Fletcher, —, 150.
Fletcher, J., 386.
Fletcher, L., 657.
Fletcher, Lt., 91.
Fletcher, T. C., 160.
Flipper, H. O., 509.
Flood, C. E., 165, 167, 174, 175, 177.
Flood, H., 696.
Flood, J., 697.
Flower, Gov., 687.
Floyd, W., 741.
Foote, —, 212.
Foote, G. F., 469.
Foote, Miss K., 577.
Foote, W. T., 657.
Foraker, J. B., 7, 696.
Ford, W. S., 29.
Forney, 534.
Forrester, F., 247.
Forsyth, G. A., 11, 262, 273, 275.
Forsyth, J. W., 495.
Fort Casper, 201.
Fort Columbus, 452.
Fort Concho, 453, 467, 473, 474, 493, 499.
Fort Constitution, 75.
Fort Dodge, 274, 289-294, 297, 303.
Fort Ellsworth, 160, 162, 163, 171, 177 562.
Fort Gibson, 260.
Fort Griffin, 453.
Fort Harker, 230, 231, 251, 298, 300, 302, 304, 306, 658.
Fort Hays, 235, 236, 243, 245, 247, 248, 249, 254, 256, 258, 259, 267, 269, 275, 284, 291, 293, 294, 301, 312, 319, 562.
Fort Laramie, 182, 189, 192, 194, 195, 199, 203, 204, 209, 210, 223.
Fort Larnard, 303.
Fort Laurence, 249.
Fort Leavenworth, 160, 163, 229, 230, 231, 234, 252, 264, 269, 297, 316, 318, 320, 321, 323, 327, 328, 335, 336, 426.
Fort Lyon, 170, 171, 174, 175, 278, 279, 286, 287, 290, 292, 294, 296, 373.
Fort Morton, 126.
Fort Myer, 44, 142, 194.
Fort McKavett, 480, 481, 490.
Fort Parker, 562.
Fort Phil Kearney, 199, 211.
Fort Reno, 115.
Fort Riley, 160, 162, 231, 248, 254, 257, 259, 260, 293, 387, 562.
Fort Runyon, 37.
Fort Saunders, 212.
Fort Sedgwick, 177, 181, 188, 190, 191, 194, 205, 209, 210, 212, 213, 215, 219, 221, 223, 224, 410.
Fort Sill, 311, 385, 386.
Fort Stevens, 115.
Fort Stockton, 454, 459, 461, 467, 470, 473, 474, 477, 487, 495, 515, 517, 521, 523, 526, 528, 529.
Fort Sumter, 41.
Fort Wallace, 162, 163, 166-181, 265, 266, 267, 270, 294, 562.
Fort Whipple, 43, 140, 226.
Fortress Monroe, 59.
Forwood, W. A., 10.
Foster, J., 189, 192.
Foulk, Capt., 441.
Fowle, R., 148.
Fowler, J., 77.
Fowler, W. J., 670.
Fox, —, 212.
Fox, A., 148.
Fox, F. G., 29.
Frank, Adj., 46.
Frazer, Miss, 700.
Frazier, J., 477, 478, 508, 512, 517.
Frazier, Judge, 501.
Freeman, H. B., 183.
Freeman, Lt., 632.
Freeman, P., 189.
French, G., 149.
French, J. T., Jr., 635.
French, J. W., 10.
French, Lt., 97, 103.
French, Miss M., 610, 648.
French, W. W., 365, 554.

Friar, B. E., 10.
Froham, I., 607.
Frost, Miss, 572.
Frost, Mrs., 572.
Fry, J. B., 553.
Fry, S. D., 8.
Frye, W. P., 7, 440, 652.
Fryer, Dr., 257, 302.
Fuller, A. M., 12.
Furnice, A. H., 189, 211.

Gaines, Col., 645.
Gaines' Mills, 99, 101.
Galbraith, H. S., 197.
Gale, W. H., 581, 595, 633, 679, 701.
Gallagher, —, 521.
Galt, —, 554, 588.
Galvin, J. C. H., 465 476.
Gantt, J. M., 625.
Gardiner, —, 638.
Gardiner's Ranch, 464.
Gardner, Maj. H., 11, 706.
Garfield, J. A., 415, 416, 418.
Garland, Gen., 551, 586.
Garlington, E. A., 706, 718, 728, 732, 734, 738, 739.
Garrett, A. E., 345, 352.
Garrison, Wm., 189.
Gates, —, 610.
Gay, Hon., 544, 555.
Geddes, Col. A., 11, 454, 455, 462, 466, 747.
Geddes' Ranch, 519.
Geddy, G. W., 12.
Geissenheiner, J. A., 655.
Gennmond, Lt., 199.
Gentry, W., 264.
Gettysburg, 141, 577.
Geysers, 560.
Gibbon, J., 10, 92, 101, 104, 105, 106, 108, 111.
Gibbons, Cardinal, 648.
Gibbs, Col., 157, 250, 274.
Gibson, —, 391.
Gibson, C. H., 632, 639, 640, 650, 651, 693.
Gibson, Col., 586, 587, 590, 596, 597, 599, 600.
Gibson, E. J., 8.
Gibson, Wm., 189.
Gifford, A. W., 492, 531, 576, 577.
Gifford, Mrs., 576.
Gilbert, —, 390.
Gilliland, G. E., 9, 562.
Glover, C. C., 615, 622, 635.
Glover, Gen., 398-407, 410, 415, 417, 531, 583.
Gobright, —, 412.
Godfield, G., 247.
Goldsborough, 561.
Gonzales, M. J., 55, 460.
Goodale, G. A., 598.
Goode, J., 678.
Goode, Prof., 622.
Goodloe, Col., 585.
Goodwin, Capt., 707.
Goodwin, Nat., 694.
Goodwin, P., 24.
Goodwin, W. P., 12.
Gordon, D. S., 10, 46, 194.
Gordon, H., 189.
Gordon, J. B., 421, 577, 652.
Gordon, J. H., 247, 252.
Gordon, Maj., 530, 570.
Gorman, A. P., 651.
Gorman, Lt., 44.
Gosman, J. J., 189.
Goss, W., 641.
Gould, S. F., 137.
Gowans, Sergt., 522.
Gracey, G., 633.
Grady, —, 352.
Grafton, B. F., 7, 226, 344, 355, 374, 424.
Graham, G. W., 2, 253, 263, 264, 265, 306-309, 313-322, 330, 332, 383, 392, 424, 426, 448, 674.
Graham, J. H., 366.
Graham, P., 227.
Grand Tournament, 365.
Grandin, E. B., 621.
Grant, F. D., 225, 391-393.
Grant, Gov., 561.
Grant, L. A., 630.
Grant, O., 391, 393.
Grant, U. S., 9, 68, 84-89, 93, 97, 98, 104, 111, 113, 114, 136, 213, 214, 222, 225, 261, 265, 269, 270, 332, 337, 341, 344, 345, 351, 353, 372, 379, 382, 409, 419, 428, 441, 634, 666.
Grant, W. G., 366.
Gray, —, 631.
Gray, Gov., 576.
Greely, A. W., 10.
Greely, H., 352, 353, 379, 380.
Gregg, Lt., 183.
Green, —, 186, 196.
Green, C., 189.
Green, Gen., 699.
Green, Geo., 555, 556, 575.
Green, J., 10, 162, 163, 183, 189.
Green, O. D., 10, 162.
Green, Rev., 700.
Greenleaf, C. R., 10.
Greenwood, Marmion & Co., 734.
Grey, Capt., 572.

Grey, Miss, 572.
Grierson, B. H., 2, 248, 254, 255, 260, 262, 307, 308, 351, 436, 441, 453, 455, 458, 462, 472, 474, 493, 494, 495, 500, 502, 510, 511, 540, 599, 647, 658, 660, 729, 758.
Grierson, Miss, 255.
Griffin, Gen., 106, 409.
Grigsby, H. G., 29.
Grimes, J. W., 214.
Groman, M., 189.
Groom, —, 673.
Groome, Gov., 632.
Grosvenor, C. H., 8, 541, 558, 621, 694, 696, 704, 714, 738.
Grout, W. W., 657.
Grow, —, 391.
Gunckel, L. B., 379, 445.
Gunnell, W. P., 29, 148.
Gunston & Co., 393.
Gunton, W., 434.
Guthridge, J., 8.
Gwynn, E. P., 362.
Gwynn, R. C., 362, 373.

Hacket, A., 189.
Haddock, Mrs., 77.
Haden, —, 663.
Hagner, Judge, 643, 681, 683.
Hahn,—, 6.
Haines, P. C., 10.
Halderman, J. A., 421.
Hale, F. H., 316, 328, 329.
Hale, H., 127.
Haley, M., 168, 189, 741.
Halford, E. W., 11, 591, 629.
Hall, Capt., 558.
Hall, D., 189.
Hall, Dr., 126, 455, 457, 465.
Hall, J. D., 11.
Hall, W. P., 11.
Hall, R. M., 344.
Halleck, W. F., 11, 181, 182.
Hames, C. D., 657.
Hamilton, Capt., 235, 284.
Hamilton, C. A., 8.
Hamilton, Lt., 162, 742.
Hamilton, Sen., 371, 390, 416, 615.
Hammill, J. S., 137.
Hammond, W. A., 10.
Hancock, J., 504, 505, 534.
Hancock, W. S., 10, 88-118, 134, 155, 156, 159, 178, 180, 201, 203, 230, 234, 256, 261, 293, 348, 352, 353, 375, 382, 399, 409, 410, 424, 429, 433, 439, 440, 452, 503, 527, 534, 551, 552, 553, 647, 651, 654, 658, 666, 669, 724.
Hancock, Mrs. W. S., 569.
Hand, J., 189.
Handford, E., 190.
Handley, J. M., 366.
Hanford, 169.
Hanna, Lt., 285, 286.
Hanna, Mrs., 285.
Hanny, J. W., 11.
Hanover Ct. House, 91, 92.
Hanover Junction, 89.
Hardesty, —, 406.
Hansbrough, H. C., 7, 654.
Hardie, J. A., 10, 85-87.
Hardie, Lt., 349.
Hare, L. R., 11.
Harker, —, 272.
Harlan, J., 334.
Harland, Dr., 433.
Harmer, A. C., 656.
Harmon, W. R., 197, 351.
Harney, W. T., 540.
Harper, Dr., 723.
Harrington, E. J., 156.
Harris, Sen., 436.
Harrison, B., 585, 586.
Harrison, Capt., 169.
Harrison, Carter, 417.
Harrison, Dr., 603.
Harrison, F., 641.
Harrison, R., 631, 692, 696.
Hart, A., 61, 386.
Hart, Capt., 197.
Hart, Col., 576.
Hartleben, Dr., 641.
Hartley, J., 469.
Harvey, Gov., 298, 345.
Haskell, —, 438.
Haskell, Col., 94.
Hastings, Gen., 585, 586, 588.
Hatch, —, 284.
Hatch, J. P., 10, 552, 553.
Hatch, W. H., 657.
Hatcher's Run, 122-128, 138, 213, 382, 409.
Haughey, Lt., 216.
Haulia, J. H., 703.
Havard, Capt., 254.
Hawkins, J. P., 10.
Hawley, J. B., 379, 384, 445.
Hawley, J. R., 379, 384, 445, 628.
Hawley, R. B., 720.
Haxhurst, J., 152.
Hay, J., 8, 719.
Hayes, —, 247.
Hayes, E. M., 10, 393.
Hayes, H. C., 9.
Hayes, Mrs., 682.
Hayes, R. B., 431, 449-452, 466.
Hayes, W. I., 656.

Haynes, C. H., 189, 741.
Hays City, 258, 270, 274, 294.
Hays City Times, 253.
Hays, Lt., 287.
Haywood, Col., 701.
Hazelton, —, 447.
Hazen, W. B., 397, 399, 401, 437, 497, 502, 504, 512, 513, 517, 518, 532, 533, 534, 542, 543.
Hearst, Sen., 576, 577, 581, 596.
Heath, J., 149.
Heger, Dr., 614.
Heiner, G. G., 661.
Heiner, R. G., 501, 513, 514, 541.
Heintzelman, S. P., 10, 36, 37, 47, 49, 52, 54, 57, 59, 68, 213.
Heiron, P., 189.
Heiskell & McLeren, 7.
Heiss, A. E., 8.
Heleluhe, J., 693, 703.
Heleluhe, Mrs. W., 703.
Helmick, W., 356, 358.
Henderson, Col., 588.
Henderson, T. J., 656.
Hendricks, Vice-Pres., 544, 545.
Hendricks, Mrs., 576.
Henicke, W., 189.
Henley, —, 556.
Henry, T., 137, 254.
Herbert, H. A., 681, 705.
Herman, E., 71.
Herr, A., 596, 611.
Herring, W., 344, 356.
Hertsman, R., 190.
Hess, F. W., 598.
Hester, —, 400.
Hewitt, O. W., 29.
Hicks, Mrs., 362, 639.
Hiestand, H. O. S., 704.
Higths, —, 283.
Hill, —, 391.
Hill, A. M., 162.
Hill, D. B., 642.
Hill, Miss Ida, 317.
Hill, J., 344, 357.
Hill, R. G., 11.
Hill, Sergt., 472.
Hilliard, A. J., 137.
Hillory, W., 247.
Hillyer, Judge, 608.
Hinks, E. W., 10, 78, 82, 116.
Hischberges, J. P., 189.
Hitchcock, Sen., 392.
Hitt, S. R., 574.
Hoag, A., 148.
Hoar, G. F., 7, 652, 722.
Hoard, J. T., 657.
Hoban, —, 572.
Hobon, Father, 484, 491, 534.
Hodges, Mr. and Mrs., 641.
Hoffman, Gen., 229, 230, 257.
Hoffman, J. T., 359, 364, 366.
Hoffnagel, M., 189.
Hoge, S. H., 344.
Hogg, G., 120, 122, 126, 128, 132, 133, 137, 138, 668.
Holden, —, 19.
Holden, A. B., 77.
Holladay, —, 545, 561.
Holman, W. S., 655.
Holmes, Capt., 77.
Holt, J., 347.
Homel, E., 189.
Hooker, C. E., 656.
Hooker, Gen., 597, 621.
Hooker, F. J., 189.
Hooper, Fannie, 153.
Hooper, Sarah, 153.
Hope Castle, 15, 26, 147.
Hopkins, —, 117.
Horsford, F. H., 8, 718.
Horn, Col., 395.
Hort, Mrs. E., 641.
Hosley, Col., 77.
Hosmer, C., 336.
Hough, Col., 484, 525, 527, 528.
Houston Post, 8.
Houston, R., 492.
Howard, Lt., 250.
Howard, J., 566.
Howard, H., 673.
Howard, O. O., 10, 150, 152, 153, 158, 678, 686, 755.
Howell, J., 247.
Howgate, Capt., 436, 446.
Hoxie, R. L., 11.
Huff, G. F., 656.
Hughes, —, 205.
Hughes, B. H., 182.
Hull, J. A. T., 8, 704, 719.
Hulser, O. F., 127, 135, 138, 701.
Humphrey, C. F., 11, 704.
Humphreys, Capt., 133.
Humphreys, W. J., 171, 187, 189.
Humphries, W., 741.
Hunt, O. W., 148.
Hunter, D., 46, 225-228.
Hunter, Gen., 144.
Hunter, Miss, 682.
Hurst, Bishop, 692.
Husk, L. W., 137.
Hutchins, W. S., 8.
Hyde, J., 132, 137.
Hyde, T., 663.

"Ike Coon," 365, 366.
Ingalls, Capt., 558.
Ingalls, R., 10, 134, 160, 161, 503, 545,

546.
Ingersoll, E. C., 421.
Ingersoll, R. G., 352, 503, 504, 534, 608.
Inman, H., 300, 570.
Ireland, Archbishop, 696.
Irwin, Capt., 381.
Irvin, Capt., 699.

Jackson, —, 543.
Jackson, J. W., 21, 22.
Jackson, E. M., 362.
Jackson, J., 267.
Jacobs, A. H., 77.
Jacobs, J. C., 366.
Jacobs, J. W., 192.
James, W. H., 11.
Jarvis, W. P., 366.
Javins, E., 149.
Jecko, Judge, 196, 577.
Jecko, S., 196, 578.
Jefferson Barracks, 571.
Jefferson, R., 641.
Jeffreys, Gen., 433, 638.
Jeffries, Mrs., 697.
Jenafer, Judge, 263.
Jenks, J. E., 9.
Jenness, G. B., 242, 244, 245, 246, 247,
Jenness, J., 206, 207, 211, 742.
252, 254.
Jennings, M. J., 365.
Jessup, E., 138.
Jewett, Adml., 543.
Jewett, Maj. H., 525, 529, 530.
Johnson, —, 561.
Johnson, Comr., 391, 436.
Johnson, J. J., 344, 421.
Johnson, Miss E., 390.
Johnson, Pres., 231, 310.
Johnson, R., 390, 400.
Johnson, Sen., 441.
Johnson, Sergt., 245, 247, 271.
Johnson, S. E., 8.
Johnson, T., 624.
Johnson, W., 366, 389, 671.
Johnson, W. H., 362.
Johnson, W. R., 365.
Johnston, J. E., 281.
Johnston, S. W., 356, 386.
Jones, C. F., 137.
Jones, J. P., 7, 574, 723.
Jones House, 91, 103, 104, 106, 110.
Jones, Mary, 484.
Jones, W. A., 657.
Jones, W. T., 358.
Jordan, J. J., 165.
Joy, J. T., 720.
Judson, B. F., 365.
Judson, D. T., 360.
Junction City, 162, 255, 256, 262.

Kalano-Kalani, 703.
Kansas City Times, 8.
Kasson, J., 545.
Keane, Sergt., 187, 190, 211.
Kearney, Mrs., 149, 151, 152.
Keith, —, 685.
Keith, D., 190.
Kell, W. H., 481, 482.
Keller, J., 192.
Kelley, J. F., 635.
Kelley, J. M., 236, 351, 387, 488.
Kellogg, S. C., 598.
Kellogg, W. P., 7, 428, 442, 546, 612,
690.
Kellogg, Mrs., 209.
Kelly, Capt., 505.
Kelly, J. K., 379, 445.
Kelly, Moses, 358, 370, 384, 385, 386,
391, 396, 421.
Kelton, J. C., 10, 156, 214, 595, 598, 601-
604, 629, 729.
Kemmel, J., 190.
Kendall, Miss I., 227.
Kendrick, F. M. H., 11, 83, 117, 705.
Kennedy, W. B., 230, 253, 263, 264, 269,
270, 332, 387, 595.
Kent, J. F., 10, 452.
Keogh, M. W., 269, 272, 302.
Keppler, C. J., 607, 616.
Kerfoot, Misses, 641.
Kernan, Sen., 117, 391.
Kerr, A., 433, 435, 504.
Kerr, C., 390, 434, 435, 567.
Kerr, J. B., 351, 382, 434.
Kerr, Mrs. J. B., 434.
Kerr, J. L., 435.
Kerr, K., 433.
Kerr, Leeds, 435.
Kerr, Miss L. H., 351, 380, 382.
Kerr, S. S., 127.
Kerr, Speaker, 394.
Ketcham, J. H., 8, 719.
Ketner, Judge, 318, 328.
Key, Postmaster Gen., 431, 433, 449.
Keyes, A. S. S., 351, 387, 455.
Keyser, Lt., 300.
Kidd, Maj., 260-267, 271-277, 293, 294,
312, 314, 332.
Kidder, L. S., 741.
Kidwell, J. L., 386.
Kidwell, Misses, 340.
Kilbourn, H., 690.
Killburn, H. S., 266, 282, 289, 292.
Killgore, C. B., 656.
Killgore, Gen., 583, 585.
Kilmer, C., 365.
Kilpatrick, Miss, 317.
Kimball Miss J., 77.
Kimball, R. B., 77, 297.

King, —, 156, 233.
King, Capt., 544.
King, Gen. H. C., 509, 526, 559, 566.
King's Palace, 6.
Kirk, Col., 689.
Kirk, Maj. E. B., 11, 284, 285.
Kirkwood, S. J., 213, 214, 334, 336, 426.
Kischner, G., 190.
"Knight of Fairfax," 22.
"Knight of the Planet," 24.
"Knight of the Ring," 22.
Knox, T. T., 590.
Koones, F., 386.
Krounse, W. L., 8.

Lacy, G. W., 633.
Lagraw, Dr., 312.
Lamar, L. Q. C., 574.
Lamb, J., 720.
Lamb, Mrs., 641.
Lambie, J. B., 6.
Lamon, M., 614.
Lamon, Mrs., 582.
Lamon, W. H., 32, 356, 361, 582.
Lamont, Col., 551, 555, 575, 658, 670, 675.
Lancaster, C. C., 613, 663.
Landon, M., 366.
Lansburgh Bros., 6.
Laredo, Tex., 601.
Larned, C. T., 374, 386.
Larner, —, 433.
Larner, F. W., 641.
Larner, Misses, 349.
Larner, R. M., 8.
Lassiter, W., 504.
Latham, Dr., 182, 188, 198-203, 209, 215, 219.
Latham, Mrs., 198, 199, 215.
Lauffer, S., 355, 549, 550.
Laufler, Capt., 253, 258, 259.
Lawrence, Fork, 210, 211, 212, 221.
Lawson, Capt., 387.
Lawton, H. W., 589, 597, 598.
Lay, R., 284-286.
Lay, T., 571.
Leach, Gen., 352, 384.
Leakey, W. P., 190.
Leary, J. T., 355.
Leary, P., 12, 257, 259.
Lebo, T. C., 253, 255, 705, 707, 726, 733, 740.
Lee, —, 217, 218.
Lee, Capt., 505.
Lee, C. G., 7, 643, 646.
Lee, D. M., 139, 144, 145, 148.
Lee, Father, 644.
Lee, Fitz., 139, 393.
Lee, G. W., 148.
Lee, J. G. C., 11.
Lee, J. M., 11.
Lee, Lt., 262.
Lee, P. L., 350.
Lee, R. E., 25, 35, 43, 51, 53, 83, 136, 139, 140, 142, 144, 145, 628.
Leet, Maj., 225.
Leiter, —, 544.
Lemly, H. B., 12.
Lemon, Col., 558.
L'Enfant, P. C., 624.
"Leopard," 634.
Leslie, F., 362.
Lester, Lt., 163.
Leupp, F. E., 9.
Levy, J. M., 638, 697.
Lewis, —, 208.
Lewis, B. B., 396-400, 404.
Lewis, C., 149.
Lewis, Mrs. E. J., 362.
Lewis, J. F., 357.
Lewis' Ranch, 206-210.
Lewis, W. J., 360, 365, 366.
Liebenon, Capt., 137.
Lieber, Gen. G. N., 734, 736.
Liliuo Kalani, Queen, 693, 703, 751.
Lincoln, A., 34, 66, 114, 115, 143, 145, 160, 579, 580.
Lincoln, Col., 453.
Lincoln, H. D., 521.
Lincoln, Miss, 631.
Lincoln, Mrs., 453.
Lincoln, Mrs. M. D., 641.
Lincoln, R. T., 504, 511, 513, 532, 536, 538, 539, 541, 542, 543.
Lincoln, S. H., 11.
Lindsay, Lt., 311.
Litchfield, H. G., 11, 223.
Little Raven, 310, 313, 314.
Little, T., 351, 480, 482.
Lloyd, E., 12.
Lloyd, Gov., 563, 569.
Lock, —, 528.
Lockwood, Dan., 643, 700.
Logan, J. A., 339, 357, 369, 374, 375, 400-3, 412, 413, 419, 427, 514, 555, 559.
Long, —, 519.
Long, O. F., 12.
Longstreet, Gen., 744.
Lord, F., 363, 364.
Lord, J., 366.
Lord, T. W., 12.
Loring, Dr., 546.
Loughborough, R. H. R., 12, 487.
Louisville Cour.-Jour., 8, 418.
Love, Dr., 638.
Love, Elsie, 638.
Love, Maj., 638.
Luddington, M. I., 10, 159, 356, 703.

Ludlow, W., 10, 574.
Luitewitz, A. C., 321.
Lyman, C., 694, 702.
Lyman, Mrs., 77.
Lyman, W., 11, 669, 755.
Lynch, J., 574.
Lyon, Corp., 200.
Lyons, R. T., 189.

McAdoo, W., 694.
McAfee, J. B., 252.
McAllister, R., 421.
McAuley, Mrs. R. C., 641.
McBride, W. C., 8.
McCabe, J. B., 577.
McCallaster, W., 135.
McCarras, L. E., 717.
McCarthy, D., 352, 539.
McCartney, D. P., 421.
McClellan, G. B., 59, 83, 141.
McClellan, Maj., 504, 505.
McClelland, E. L., 7, 643, 663, 673.
McClerry, Gen., 501, 530.
McCrary, G. W., 420, 428, 475, 549.
McCreary, J. B., 656.
McCrohan, E., 508, 519.
McCullom, S., 190.
McCune, Capt., 99.
McDermott, G., 269, 421.
McDonald, A., 366.
McDonald, A. M., 344.
McDonald, J., 719.
McDonald, J. B., 12, 303, 526, 749.
McDowell, I., 43, 47, 49, 50, 51, 54.
McDowell, J. B., 529.
McEwen, J. C., 365.
McFarland, H. B. F., 8.
McFarland, Miss, 414.
McFeely, R., 10, 578.
McGowan, T., 85.
McGregor, J. F., 362.
McGrew, Col., 585.
McGruder, Miss, 613.
McIntire, Capt., 94.
McIntire, W. C., 635.
McIntosh, Col., 97.
McKean, B., 190.
McKeever, Gen. C., 230, 249, 269, 291, 293, 302, 504, 619.
McKelden, J. C., 421.
McKenzie, L., 41, 338.
McKibben, C., 323, 324.
McKillip, Sergt., 80.
McKinley, Wm., 713, 726.
McKnew, W., 6.
McLane, Gov., 616, 621.
McLaughlin, Maj., 454, 455, 456, 458, 460, 461, 462.
McLean, J. R., 545, 569, 571, 572, 573, 588.
McLean, W., 545, 547, 571, 581, 586.
McMahon, M., 559, 634, 635.
McMartin, J., 460.
McMichel, Capt., 109, 110.
McMillan, B., 8, 657.
McMillan, J., 7, 587.
McMillan, Mrs., 587.
McNally, V., 12.
McNeil, B., 148.
McNutt, J., 258, 421.
McOmber, G. E., 366.
McPherson, J. R., 535, 542, 549, 554, 575, 586, 651.
McQuade, Col., 116.

MacArthur, A., 10, 699, 704.
MacDougall, C. D., 132, 379, 390, 445.
Machen, J. P., 29.
Mack, O. A., 72.
Mackall & Maedel, 7.
Mackall, D. S., 644, 683.
Mackey, Misses, 340, 351.
Mackin, Father, 644.
Maddox, Dr. A. S., 645, 682.
Maddox, S., 547, 555.
Magruder, J., 544.
Mahaney, R. B., 719.
Maish, Col., 352, 373, 414-417, 431, 433, 436, 437.
Maish, L. P., 8.
Mallan, C. E., 356.
Malone, F. M., 68.
Manderson, C. F., 652.
Mann, Capt., 283, 284.
Mann, Mr. and Mrs., 19.
Manning, Sec., 543, 544.
Mansfield, J. K., 10, 35-39, 43.
Manuel, Prof., 366.
March, —, 405.
Mare Island, 560.
Markland, Col., 384.
Marr, —, 583.
Marsh, B. F., 8, 704.
Marsh, Capt., 62, 145.
Marsh, Mrs., 641.
Marshall House, 21, 40, 267.
Marshall, J., 248.
Marshall, J. W., 656.
Martin, —, 563, 565, 566.
Martin, A. N., 657.
Martin, B., 190.
Martin, J., 652.
Martin, M. C., 482, 491, 498.
Martin, T. S., 7, 718, 749.
Martindale, Gen., 84, 116.
"Mary Ann," 18.
Mason, J. S., 461, 536.
Massey, —, 558.

Massey, Miss C., 149.
Massey, W. D., 147.
Masterson, T. P., 248.
Mathews, J. A., 9.
Mathey, E. G., 11.
Matson, —, 576.
Matson, Hon., 641.
Matterson, B. T., 512.
Matthews, W., 603.
Maus, Capt., 631.
Maxey, S. B., 7, 431, 433, 436, 442, 444, 478, 509, 744.
Maxon, Lt., 12, 312, 313, 454, 482.
Maxwell, Gen., 694.
Maynadier, W. M., 11.
Meade, G. G., 10, 88, 91, 92, 95, 97, 102, 104, 105, 106, 133, 138, 140, 141, 346, 347.
Means, —, 547.
Medicine Bluff Creek, 292, 295.
Meaker, —, 407.
Megrew, Col., 695.
Meig's Ranch, 205, 208, 210, 211.
Meiklejohn, Sec., 706, 723.
Meinell, H., 302.
Mendenhall, J., 598.
Meredith, E. E., 656.
Merriam, Mrs., 569.
Merriam, Sen., 403.
Merriam, W. R., 570.
Merrick, Col., 632.
Merrick, Judge, 545.
Merrill, L., 2, 298, 300, 302, 318, 319, 323, 332, 333, 343, 347, 407, 408, 550, 551, 552, 553, 599.
Metzger, C. W., 8.
Meyer, A., 656.
Michael, —, 267.
Middleton, Dr., 491, 498, 527.
Miles, N. A., 10, 98, 111-113, 121-127, 133, 298, 301-303, 375, 409, 535, 541, 561, 577, 663, 669, 677, 696, 704, 706, 709, 712, 719, 733, 737.
Miles, Mrs. N. A., 298.
Miller, Capt., 98, 104.
Miller, H., 661.
Miller, Miss J., 362.
Miller, L. B. G., 386.
Miller, M., 633.
Miller, O. L., 657.
Miller, S., 633.
Miller, Sergt., 171, 179, 184, 185, 188, 189, 195, 200, 595.
Milliken, S. L., 656.
Milnes, W., 339.
Mills, —, 555.
Mills, J. S., 177, 190.
Mills, Maj., 696.
Millspaugh, Col., 459, 499.
Miner, C. W., 481.
Miner, G. S., 148.
Minor's Hill, 44.
Mitchell Bros., 360.
Mitchell, Gen., 297.
Mitchell, G. H., 366.
Mitchell, J., 60.
Mitchell, J. A., 344.
Mitchell, J. H., 652.
Mitchell, M. C., 6.
Mitchell, R. B., 421, 429.
Mitchell, W. G., 503, 671.
Mitchell, W. S., 95, 100, 101, 261, 293, 307, 309, 316.
Mitkiewicz, Count, 641.
Mix, J., 165, 171, 183, 190-205, 209-223.
Mix, Mrs., 198, 212.
Mizner, J. K., 553.
Moale, E., 11.
Mock, H. J., 9.
Money, H. D., 7, 656.
Monroe, Mrs., 641.
Montgomery, J., 224, 264.
Monument Station, 245.
Moore, Gen., 578, 595.
Moore, H. L., 657.
Moore, J., 10.
Moore, Maj., 242-245, 310, 316, 337, 386, 402, 421, 535, 557, 658.
Moore, "Reddy," 741.
Moore, W., 190.
Moore, W. B., 421, 424, 433.
More, —, 215, 216, 219.
More's Ranch, 215, 216.
Morey, F., 8, 358, 367, 368, 403, 546.
Morgan, —, 610.
Morgan, Miss A., 362, 367.
Morgan, D. B., 544, 545.
Morgan, F. P., 8.
Morgan, J. T., 7, 654.
Morgan, Misses, 349.
Morgan, M. R., 101, 103, 105, 108, 110, 258.
Morley, Gen., 384.
Morrill, Sen., 442, 652.
Morris, —, 384.
Morris, C., 302.
Morrissey, Mrs., 367.
Morrison, D. L., 540.
Morrison, J. N., 704.
Morrison, J. S., 351.
Morrison, J. T., 12.
Morrison, Lt., 480, 505.
Morrison, P., 269.
Morrow, A. P., 11.
Morrow, J., 504.
Morrows, Col., 558.
Morse, A. P., 635.
Morse, E. A., 656.

Morse, J. S., 365.
Morton, L. P., 548, 586, 597.
Morton, O. P., 370.
Mosby, Gen., 147.
Moses, —, 550.
Moses, W. B., 640.
Mosher, Lt., 480, 483.
Mott, Gen., 104, 105, 409.
Moxley, —, 580.
Moylan, M., 274.
Muhlenberg, J. C., 11.
Mullet, A. B., 557.
Mullins, M., 269.
Muncaster, Dr., 391.
Munson's Hill, 65.
Murray, —, 531.
Murray, C., 248.
Murray, Col., 679.
Murray, T. J., 148, 149.
Murphy, E., 654, 714.
Murphy, Mrs., 702.
Mussey, H., 518, 519.
Musson, Sergt., 633.
Musson, T. H., 120, 127.
Musson, W., 344.
Muth & Co., 6.
Myer, Col., 142.
Myer, P., 190.
Myers, —, 387.
Myers, J. W., 255, 257, 276, 289, 292, 306, 311, 357.
Myers, L., 344.
Myrick, J. R., 598.
Myrick, Lt., 120, 138.

Napoleon Bonaparte, 18.
Nash, W. H., 10, 722.
Nash's Ranch, 464.
Negley, Gen., 384, 385.
Neill, J. P. W., 181, 182, 183, 189, 190, 191, 192, 193, 194, 195, 196, 199, 200, 201, 204.
Neill, T. H., 214, 481, 482.
Nelson, —, 615.
Nelson, A. D., 2, 297, 303, 306, 309, 312, 313, 314, 318, 332, 426, 671, 673.
Nelson, Capt., 137.
Nesmett, I. W., 379, 445.
New, J. C., 513.
Newberg News, 8.
Newcomb, J., 492.
New Fort Hays, 237-240.
Newlands, F. G., 607, 611, 613, 620, 639, 656, 683.
Newman, —, 196.
Newmans, Miss, 340.
Newton, —, 290.
New York Army & Navy Journal, 9.
New York Commercial, 8.
New York Evening Post, 9.
New York Herald, 8, 9.
New York News, 8.
New York Standard Zeitung, 8.
New York Sun, 9.
New York Times, 9.
New York Tribune, 9.
New York World, 9.
Nichol, Mrs., 560.
Nichols, Gen., 229, 262.
Nixon, —, 566.
Noah, J. J., 9, 415, 452, 457, 458.
Noble, —, 229, 317.
Noble, B., 491.
Nolan, Col., 388.
Norris, J. L., 635.
Norris, Maj., 162.
North, Anna, 91, 113.
North Forks, 247.
Norton, Lt., 183.
Norvell, S. T., 351, 387.
Norwood, Capt., 182-191, 195-203.
Noud, Mrs. and Miss, 641.
Nourse, —, 556.
Noyes, S. B., 345.
Nucent, T. M., 87.
Nye, F. E., 11.
Nye, J., 345.
Nye, J. W., 338, 358.

Oakes, J., 11.
O'Beirne, Col., 480.
O'Brien, A. L., 552.
O'Brien, M., 302, 470.
Ocean City, 6.
Ochiltree, T. P., 681, 743.
O'Connell, J. J., 12, 495.
O'Connor, H. O., 345.
O'Driscoll, Maj., 694.
O'Hara, J., 598.
O'Laughlin, C., 9.
Older, O. C., 15.
Oliver, H., 127, 668.
Oneida Free Press, 127.
O'Neil, C., 344.
O'Neil, J. H., 655.
O'Neil, J. J., 655.
Opdyke, Gen., 711.
Orcutt, J., 13, 14.
Ord, E. O. C., 12.
Ord, Gen., 457, 458, 461, 468, 475, 480, 481, 484, 496.
Orleman, —, 387, 462.
Orth, —, 575, 639.
Orths, —, 568.
Osburn, D. W., 633.
Osterhold, W., 189.
Otey, P. J., 721.
Ottaby, —, 283, 284.

Outhwaite, J. H., 655.
Ovenshine, Capt., 250, 253, 258, 259.
Owen, R. B., 162.
Owens, S., 37.
Oxford Military Academy, 564, 566, 567, 573.

Paddock, Sen., 447.
Page, C. H., 657.
Page, Maj., 234, 297, 303, 306, 308-312.
Pagh, C., 190.
Palmer, A. W., 366.
Palmer, Col., 118.
Palmer, I. N., 10, 163, 169, 194, 195, 416, 419, 448.
Palmer, J. H., 12, 529.
Palmer, Pres., 562.
Palmer, W., 384, 390.
Palo Duro Ranch, 295.
Parker, —, 456, 682.
Parker, A. X., 366.
Parker, D., 258, 300, 303.
Parker, I., 89, 94, 100, 106, 598.
Parker, Miss, 561.
Parker, Mrs. M. M., 687.
Parker, S., 751.
Parks, —, 230.
Parkman, —, 699.
Parsons, C. C., 257-259.
Paschal, T. M., 481, 482, 493, 656.
Pascon, L., 485.
Patrick's Station, 138.
Patterson, Dr., 352.
Patterson, J. H., 458, 469.
Patterson, R., 8.
Patton, Sen., 554.
Paul, Gen., 555.
Payne, —, 144.
Payne, Sen., 544.
Peace Commissioners, 301.
Peale, Lt., 194.
Pearse, Dr., 282.
Pear's Spring, 518.
Pearson, Miss A., 638.
Peck, Judge, 692.
Penneypacker, G., 11.
Penny, G. C., 11.
Penrose, Mrs., 285, 286.
Penrose, W. H., 10, 278-289, 295, 424.
Pepoon, S., 269, 351.
Perry, Gen., 263.
Perkins, G. C., 654, 722.
Perkins, Sen., 696.
Perrin, E. O., 362.
Petersburg, 97, 113, 119, 125, 130, 135, 136.
Pettus, E. W., 7.
Phelps, W. W., 550, 574, 583.
Phila. Enquirer, 8.
Phila. Ledger, 8, 589.
Phila. Press, 8.
Phila. Record, 8.
Philey, Capt., 270, 317.
Phill, Prof., 226, 227.
Phillips, —, 663.
Phillips, Col., 263, 638.
Phillips, J. W., 656.
Phillips, Miss M., 638.
Phillips, R. A., 386, 415.
Philley, A. S., 247, 252.
Philp, J. B., 641.
Philp, J. F., 641.
Piatt, Don., 405.
Pierce, Col., 678.
Pierce, Gen., 409.
Piers, —, 693.
Pike, Capt., 76, 77.
Pike, Gen., 559.
Pine Bluffs, 211.
Pinner, Gen., 746.
Pitney & Bradford, 685.
Pittman, Mrs., 366.
Pittman, Sergt., 240.
Pittsburg Com. Gazette, 8.
Pittsburg Dispatch, 8.
Pittsburg Leader, 8.
Plato, Col., 503.
Platt, J. H., 344, 358.
Plowman, Col., 393.
Plumb, P. B., 442, 446.
Plumley, S. M., 517.
Point Lookout, 77, 80.
Poland, J. S., 11, 323, 328.
Poland, L. P., 338, 344, 345, 357, 408, 425, 599.
Pole Creek, 205, 210, 211.
Polkinghorn, Miss, 340.
Pollard, Dr., 92.
Pollock, —, 545.
Pomeroy, S. C., 339, 348, 358.
Pond Creek, 162, 163, 165, 285.
Poole, D. W. C., 469, 473.
Poor, Col., 693.
Poore, W., 730.
Pope, Dr., 411.
Pope, Gen., 101, 160.
Poppert, G., 568.
Poppert, O., 568.
Porter, C., 11.
Porter, Capt., 595.
Porter, Col., 94.
Porter, F. J., 10.
Porter, H., 692.
Portis, D. S., 478, 479, 488.
Portsmouth, N. H., 72-74.
Posey, Corp., 237.
Post, —, 550.
Post, Mrs., 561.

BANCROFT LIBRARY

Potter, C., 433.
Potter, Col., 160, 161.
Potter, Gen., 209, 212, 214, 223.
Potts, Capt., 226.
Powell, Capt., 35.
Powell, D., 148.
Powell, J. L., 506, 524.
Powell, W., 148.
Power, T. C., 654.
Powers, —, 279, 284.
Powers, H. S., 366.
Powlett, Capt., 535.
Poynter, Lt., 64.
Pratt, R. H., 351.
Prentiss, W. C., 7, 688.
Prescott, —, 434.
Preston, E. R., 77.
Preston, S., 574.
Price, —, 462.
Price, Gen., 263.
Price, Gov., 541.
Price, J. W., 243-247, 252, 424.
Price, Lt., 658.
Price, Dr. M. F., 462, 464, 467, 470, 472, 476, 486.
Price, T. L., 264.
Priley, A. J., 248.
Printop, J. J., 641.
Proctor, R., 592, 593, 598, 648, 654, 705.
Pruden, Col., 586.
Pugh, Sen., 546.
Pulizzi, Miss B., 641.
Pulizzi, Mrs., 641.
Pulitzer, J., 352.
Pumpkin Creek, 224.
Pyron, May, 744.

Quinby, H. B., 455, 459, 476.

Radcliffe, Dr., 546, 694.
Radford, —, 639.
Rains, Gen., 744.
Ralston & Siddons, 7, 663, 684, 688.
Ralston, J. H., 608, 646, 681, 683.
Ramsay, —, 522.
Ramsey, A., 358.
Rand, C. F., 356, 374.
Randall, C. S., 655.
Randall, E. L., 11, 269, 324, 327, 328.
Randall, G. M., 11.
Randall, S., 396, 397, 400, 433.
Randall, T., 210.
Randolph, —, 543.
Randolph, Sen., 415, 433, 436.
Raney, —, 447.
Ratcliffe, Mrs. N., 153.
Rawlins, J. N., 88, 89, 98.
Rawlston, Capt., 298.
Ray, —, 457.
Ray, Capt., 216, 219.
Reardon, W. W., 365.
Redwood, —, 559.
Reed, —, 290.
Reed, P., 10, 274, 303.
Reed, W., 730.
Reeder, F. W., 73, 74.
Reno, M. A., 549, 550.
Reynolds, E., 360.
Reynolds, St. J., 247-252.
Rhea, J. S., 720.
Rice, B. F., 390.
Rice, E., 11.
Rice, F. R., 71.
Richards, Sergt., 463.
Richards, W. V., 12, 491.
Richardson, F. A., 8.
Richardson, John, 703.
Richardson, Judge, 434.
Richardson, W., 671.
Richardson, W. K., 8.
Richland Valley, 520.
Ridenour, C. H., 9.
Ridgeley, E. R., 8, 738.
Ridley, Corp., 463.
Riles, —, 179.
Riley, Lt., 270, 271.
Riley, O. N., 461.
Ripley, H. L., 471, 480.
Ripley, T. A., 81.
Ritchie, D. F., 360, 363.
Rixey, J. F., 657.
Roach, —, 651.
Roach, W. N., 714.
Robb, Sen., 572.
Robbins, Gen., 406.
Robe, Capt., 460.
Roberts, —, 465.
Roberts, Mrs., 383.
Roberts, W. H., 8.
Robertson, —, 255.
Robertson, B., 535.
Robertson, Dr., 110.
Robertson, T. J., 421.
Robeson, Sec., 547.
Robinson, A. G., 251, 483.
Robinson, G. F., 11, 478.
Robinson, G. T., 350.
Robinson, J., 248.
Robinson, Lt., 226.
Robinson, Dr. T., 641.
Robson, Stuart, 663.
Rockford, A. F., 512.
Rockwell, A. F., 11, 503, 580.
Rodenbough, T. F., 163, 169, 221, 427.
Roe, Lt., 225.
Roessle, —, 554.
Rogers, —, 258, 430, 433, 447, 449.
Rogers, A., 12, 291, 293.

Rogers, A. J., 364, 366.
Rogers, Col., 578.
Rogers, J. F., 610.
Rollins, J. A., 10.
Rollins, Sen., 705.
Romeo, 310.
Rooms, C. M., 471.
Rooney, —, 501.
Rosecrans, W. S., 10, 538.
Rosekrans, J. A., 363, 581, 586.
Roseland, Va., 157.
Ross, C. G., 339.
Ross, Gen., 384.
Ross, J. W., 657.
Ross, S., 344.
Rounds, —, 595.
Rouzer, —, 9.
Ruck, Gov., 578.
Rucker, D. H., 10.
Rudkin, Mrs., 682.
Ruggles, —, 301.
Ruggles, Gen. G. D., 674, 685, 698, 702, 707, 729.
Runkle, B. P., 10, 430.
Rush, Mrs., 504.
Rush, R. H., 70, 85.
Russell, —, 663.
Russell, Maj., 500, 505, 506, 527.
Russell Springs, 266.
Russell, W. T., 648.
Rutherford, A., 345, 355.
Rutherford, A. R., 386.
Rutherford, R. G., 11.
Ryan, Col., 610.
Ryan, Gen., 352, 368, 372.
Ryan, W. S., 81.
Rye Beach, 75.

Sabin, Sen., 554, 555, 557, 574.
Sails, —, 465.
Saks & Co., 6.
Sale, E. O., 574.
Salem Church, 92.
"Sam," 20.
Sampson, G. W., 344.
San Antonio, 530.
San Antonio Evening Light, 499.
San Antonio Express, 8.
San Francisco Chronicle, 9.
San Francisco Examiner, 9.
Sands, —, 572.
Sands, L., 622.
Sanzousi, S. E., 189.
Saratoga, 366.
Sarvis, J. A., 9.
Sarvis, J. M., 8.
Saunders, Miss, 459.
Saunders, Mrs., 632.
Saunders, W. H., 7.
Savage, —, 560.
Savage, Mrs., 560.
Sawyer, P. F., 358, 690.
Saxton, Lt., 235.
Saxton, R., 10.
Scales, —, 472.
Scales, Gov., 403.
Schade, Miss, 641.
Schade, Mrs. H., 641.
Schaffer, —, 595.
Schermerhorn, S. J., 655.
Schmidt, Miss, 703.
Schneider, Capt., 300.
Schneider, T. F., 7.
Schneider, W. F., 682, 687.
Schofield, Col., 508, 670.
Schofield, Gen., 1, 291, 297, 302, 303, 309, 316, 317, 318, 322, 332, 335, 386, 593, 594, 599, 602, 603, 604, 616, 621, 637, 647, 650, 653, 658, 659, 660, 663, 665, 670, 673, 675, 709, 712, 724.
Schreiner, H., 12, 461.
Schull, Col., 504.
Schurz, C., 433.
Schwan, T., 590, 598, 726, 731, 733, 734, 735, 736.
Sclater, T. L., 673.
Scott, Capt., 168, 177, 296.
Scott, Dr., 685, 699.
Scott, D. M., 12, 701.
Scott, D. W., 256.
Scott, G. W., 135.
Scott, Wm. L., 561, 576.
Scott, W. S., 33, 35, 36, 48, 49, 141, 142.
Scripps-McRae Press Association, 8.
Scurry, W. R., 744.
Sedgwick, J., 10, 88.
Segar, J., 156, 157.
Sergeant, J. C., 190.
Selkirk, Maj., 133.
Senior, C. F., 190.
Settle, T., 657, 693.
Seville, Capt., 694.
Seward, F. W., 430, 446.
Seward, W. H., 27, 30, 32, 42, 44, 47, 49, 50, 52, 53, 55, 57, 60, 62, 64, 157, 163, 226.
Sewell, F. D., 71, 72.
Seymour, Gov., 118.
Shade, F., 9.
Shafter, G. W. R., 10, 490, 496, 508, 510, 647, 722, 757.
Sharp, Col., 241.
Sharp, F. D., 12.
Sharp, Gen., 685.
Sharp's Camp, 241.
Sharp's Woods, 206.
Shaw, —, 100, 102.
Shaw, Col., 503.

Shaw, J. B., 512.
Shaw, W. B., 8.
Shawnee Creek, 177.
Shaw's Garden, 562.
Shaws, W. R., 421.
Shear, —, 631.
Sheehy, Miss A., 641.
Sheehy, Mrs. D., 641.
Shehan, Mrs. G., 641.
Schellabarger & Wilson, 7.
Shellabarger, Lt., 285, 298, 301.
Shellaberger, Judge, 541, 590.
Shelton, Mrs., 92, 93.
Shepherd, —, 182.
Shepherd, Corp., 247.
Shepherd, A. R., 370, 392, 393, 408, 412, 413, 433, 480, 572.
Sheppard, Lt., 300.
Sheridan City, Kan., 270, 274, 294.
Sheridan, A., 257, 259, 272, 296.
Sheridan, M., 262, 565.
Sheridan, Gen., 92, 262, 265, 269, 270, 272, 274, 275, 276, 279, 287, 292, 295, 551, 575, 577, 578.
Sherman & Grant, 393, 394.
Sherman, John, 7, 346, 393, 433, 542.
Sherman, J. S., 717.
Sherman, Miss M., 337, 340.
Sherman, W. T., 10, 174, 229, 234, 261, 262, 337, 345, 346, 381, 382, 410, 504, 511, 537, 558, 559, 561, 666.
Sherwood, G. P., 71, 72.
Sherwood, I., 365, 366.
Shields, —, 509.
Shoemaker, L. P., 7.
Shoup, G. L., 7, 679.
Shownbough Creek, 172, 173.
Shurbon, Col., 160.
Shreve, Mrs., 435.
Shriver, E., 347.
Shriver, J. S., 8, 87.
Shrivers, —, 257.
Shroeder, R., 8.
Sibler, J. C., 657.
Sibley, H. H., 744.
Sickles, D. E., 9, 10, 577, 694, 699, 716, 727.
Siggles, Corp., 465, 472.
Sinking Water, 172, 173.
Simmons, Corp., 129.
Simmons, W. M., 467, 473.
Simpson, R. F., 148.
Skimmerhorn's Ranch, 294, 298.
Slack, Col., 583.
Slater, W. H., 386.
Smalley, E. V., 632.
Smart, C., 11.
Smart, Dr. C., 99, 104, 669.
Smeade, J. A., 37.
Smith, A. J., 137, 231-235, 250, 588, 663, 686, 710.
Smith, C. C., 11, 255.
Smith, C. H., 11.
Smith, C. L., 633.
Smith, E., 190.
Smith, E. B., 8.
Smith, E. M., 413.
Smith, Mrs. E. P., 362.
Smith, F., 248.
Smith, J. A., 310, 344.
Smith, J. C., 625.
Smith, J. H., 569, 571.
Smith, J. R., 491, 498, 527, 528, 531, 571.
Smith, J. S., 702.
Smith, L., 598.
Smith, M. A., 656, 719.
Smith, M. L., 392.
Smith, Paymaster, 171.
Smith, R., 11, 588.
Smith, Wm., 10.
Smith, W. M., 366.
Smith, W. W., 8.
Smithers, Lt., 275, 276, 278, 289, 290, 292, 306, 387, 454, 455, 457, 458, 462, 474, 505.
Smithmyer, Col., 690.
Smithsonian Institute, 274.
Smoky Hill, 294.
Smoky River, 266.
Smoot, Miss L., 149.
Smoot, S. S., 421.
Smyth, Gen., 136.
Snell, —, 414.
Snyder, S. W., 68.
Society Army of Potomac, 346, 347.
Solomon City, Kan., 162.
Somborn, E. K., 9.
Somers, P. J., 657.
"Sophie Sparkle," 366.
Sotherland, Wm., 247.
Soule, —, 575, 581.
Soule, Mrs., 575.
South Forks, 247.
Southard, W. J., 433.
Southgate, R. H., 365.
Spaulding, E. J., 162, 552.
Spencer, Capt., 223, 286, 495, 496.
Spencer, G. E., 379, 399, 400, 402, 403, 405, 408, 441.
Spencer, Senr., 412, 413, 415, 442, 445, 451, 452, 457.
Spencer, T. S., Jr., 351, 366.
Sperry, L., 656.
Spinner, F. E., 344, 345, 346, 355, 358, 378, 386, 617.
Spinola, Gen., 583.
Spintie, F., 71.
Spooner, Senr., 696.

"Spotted Horse," 170.
Spottsylvania Court House, 89, 110.
Spriggs, Corp., 237.
Springer, Gen., 400, 585.
Springer, G. H., 252.
Springer, I., 247.
Springer, W. M., 655.
Springfield, Ill., 160.
Spooner, J. C., 7, 718.
Squire, Dr., 235.
Squire, Lt., 576.
Squire, W. C., 621, 651, 722.
St. John's Academy, 569, 570.
St. Louis, Mo., 562, 576, 581.
St. Louis Globe-Democrat, 8.
Stacy, M. H., 120.
Stafford, Father, 644, 649.
Stall, F. M., 247.
Stambaugh, C. B., 226.
Stanford, Sen., 543, 575, 620.
Stanley, Adml., 433, 434, 450.
Stanley, D. M., 468, 469, 473.
Stanton, E. M., 157, 213, 712.
Stanton, F. P., 344, 345, 348, 355, 386.
Stanton, Gov., 541.
Stanton, T. H., 10, 144.
Stanwood, J. R., 74.
Staples, Col., 572, 573, 595.
Starks, —, 501.
Stealey, H. W., 8.
Stealey, O. O., 8.
Stedman, B., 121, 127.
Steedman, J. B., 709.
Steen, E., 258, 269.
Stellwagen, E. J., 611, 613.
Sternberg, Dr., 266, 271, 274, 694.
Sternberg, Mrs., 234.
Sterrett, Rev. Dr., 609.
Stevens, H. C., 8, 702.
Stevens, M. T., 655.
Stevens, T., 271.
Stevenson, A. E., 652.
Stevenson, J. C., 344.
Stewart, —, 433.
Stewart, D., 624.
Stewart, J. N., 675.
Stewart, W. M., 7, 408, 544, 605, 606, 609, 611, 616, 621, 652, 696, 722.
Stewartsville, Mo., 568.
Stierlin, Mrs. M., 641.
Stierlin, W. C., 641.
Stickney, W., 421.
Stinemetz & Co., 6.
Stockbridge, F. B., 574, 583, 585.
Stockbridge, Mrs., 583.
Stockton, —, 640.
Stofer, A. J., 8.
Stoffel, H., 190.
Stone, E. D., 633.
Stoneman, G., 36, 141, 142, 559, 560, 578.
Stoneman, Mrs., 560.
Stouch, G. W. H., 11, 162, 234, 296.
Strang, E. J., 453.
Street, —, 178.
Strong, H., 550, 551, 614.
Stump, Col., 650.
Stuart, J. E. B., 56, 115, 159.
Sturgis, S., 387.
Sturgis, S. J., 319, 322, 323, 327, 328, 329, 331, 335, 355, 426.
Suit, S., 7, 557.
Sullivan, J., 190.
Sullivan, J. K., 356.
Sullivan, Priv., 200, 201.
Sully, A., 275, 276, 277.
Sulzer, Wm., 8, 714.
Summer, E. V., 9.
Summit Springs, 216.
Sunderland, Judge, 544.
Surratt, Mrs., 143.
Sutro Gardens, 561.
Sutton, W., 190.
Swaim, D. G., 503, 513, 534, 535, 541, 698.
Swann, Gov., 434.
Swann, Mrs. Gov., 541.
Swanson, C. S., 720.
Swayne, Col., 67.
Sweet, O. G., 455, 458, 460, 462, 467, 475, 478, 479, 486.
Sweitzer, N. B., 469, 525, 527, 552, 553, 558, 559, 561.
Swett, Judge, 544, 554.
Swisher, J. M., 503, 512.
Swords, Col., 591.
Sykes, Gen., 162.
Sylvan Beach, 595.
Sypher, J. P., 358.

Tabb, Miss L., 638.
Taft, Mrs., 408.
Taft, Sec., 416.
Taggard, S. G., 150.
Talmadge, T. DeW., 574, 697.
Tanner, Corp. J., 593, 669, 700.
Tarsney, T., 563.
Taverner, —, 621.
Taylor, —, 555.
Taylor, A. S., 35, 297, 301.
Taylor, C., 149.
Taylor, Gen. Dick, 744.
Taylor, Hon., 582.
Taylor, J. W., 68.
Taylor, M. K., 481, 482.
Taylor, W. M., 11.
Teel, T. T., 744.
Teller, H. M., 7, 714, 503, 652.
Terrell, C. M., 493, 494, 500, 507, 527,

531.
Terrell, J., 153.
Terrell, Mrs., 559.
Terrett, G. H., 35, 36.
Terrett, W., 149.
Terry, Gen., 407.
Tesson, —, 480, 491.
Tetzner, C., 190.
Theaker, T. C., 344.
Thomas, Col., 229, 571.
Thomas, E., 7.
Thomas, E. H., 608.
Thomas, G. H., 263, 363, 709.
Thomas, H. W., 24, 27, 29, 32, 34, 146, 401.
Thomas, M. M., 641.
Thomas, Miss N., 24.
Thompkins, C. H., 10, 44, 45, 46, 156, 224.
Thompson, C. T., 9.
Thompson, Capt. W., 269, 275, 298, 302, 386.
Thompson, G., 562.
Thompson, J. M., 7, 253, 258, 259, 269.
Thompson, J. W., 692.
Thompson, L., 204.
Thompson, P., 681.
Thompson, Sallie, 484.
Thompson, Sec., 433.
Thompsons, The, 74.
Thornburgh, J. M., 379, 445.
Thornton, Sergt., 237, 244, 247, 673, 698.
Thorpe, Col., 503.
Thurman, Sen., 576, 581.
Thurston, J. M., 7, 714, 718, 738.
Thyson, P., 371, 384.
Tidball, J. C., 92, 97, 105, 108, 160, 514.
Tighe, S., 9.
Tillman, Col., 563, 565.
Tillman, Miss, 503.
Tillotson, W. R., 71.
Tilman, —, 435.
Ting, Shung Yu, 641.
Todd, —, 271.
Todd, H. H., 189.
Toledo Bee, 9.
Tollman, T. M., 490.
Tom Greene Times, 499.
Tompkins, Gen., 414.
Tompkins, J. S., 215.
Tonzalin, A. E., 552.
Torris Ranch, 508.
Towell, J. H., 247, 252.
Towers, L., 387.
Town, F. L., 387.
Townsend, E. D., 87, 144, 214, 315, 332, 342, 403, 449, 578.
Tracy, —, 304.
Tracy, C., 656.
Tracy, D. F., 119.
Tracy, Post Trader, 304.
Trammell, W., 149.
Tremain, Col., 699.
Trippe, P. E., 12, 505, 516, 522, 530.
True, T. E., 11.
Truesdell, Geo., 642.
Tucker, J. R., 417, 418.
Turley, C. W., 148.
Turnbull, J. G., 598.
Turner, Dr., 165-169, 177.
Turner, Sergt. W., 478, 486.
Turner, W., 248.
Turpin, Dr., 368.
Tuttle, L. R., 344, 355, 358, 386.
Tweedale, J., 641, 725.
Twombley, H. V., 366.
Tyler, Gen., 90, 91, 94.
Tyler, Gov., 723.
Tyson, Miss K., 367.

Underwood, J. C., 344, 358.
Union Hotel, 59.
Upshur, Judge, 345, 346.
Upson, C., 477, 502, 509.
Upton's Hill, 44.
Urell, Col., 558.
Utica, N. Y., 117.

Vailant, Judge, 531.
Van Allen, 129.
Van Antwerp, J. S., 9.
Van de Wiele, 387.
Van Dyke, J., 548.
Van Dyke, Mrs., 549.
Van Horn, R. F., 344, 360.
Van Kennan, M., 190.
Van Syckel, Mrs., 641.
Van Valzeh, D. D., 463, 466, 474.
Van Vliet, F., 229.
Van Vliet, S., 11, 522, 527.
Van Voorhis, J., 655.
Van Wyck, C. H., 338, 344, 587, 593.
Van Wyck, G. P., 344.
Van Wycke, Chaplain, 301, 578.
Van Wycke, Mrs., 301, 578.
Vance, Senr., 392, 557.
Vanderbilt, Com., 359, 360, 362, 364, 366.
Vanderbilt, W. H., 543.
Vandererle, Maj., 280.
Vanderling, Maj., 543.
Vanhorn, E., 386.
Vanreypin, Dr., 550.
Viele, Capt., 387.
Viele, H. K., 609, 611.
Viele, J. R. V., 350.
Vienna, 18.

Vilas, Sen., 632.
Vinal, W. H., 12.
Vincent, T. M., 456, 458, 461, 480, 481, 483, 493, 502, 516, 517, 520, 531, 599, 724.
Vincent, T. A., 377.
Virginia Sentinel, 355.
Voigt, A., 614.
Von Zedwitz, Baron, 572.
Voorhis, Mrs. D. T., 641.
Vorhees, Senr., 542, 652.
Vroom, P. B., 11.

Wade, J. A., 729, 730, 738.
Wade, J. F., 501, 502, 504, 505, 506, 515, 516, 517, 518, 519, 522-525, 528, 599.
Wadleigh, B., 379.
Wadsworth, J. S., 10.
Wadsworth, J. W., 720.
Waggaman, H. P., 6.
Waggaman, J. F., 642.
Waggaman, J. T., 6, 573.
Waggaman, T. E., 6.
Wagner, Gen., 556, 557.
Wakefield, W. F., 633.
Wakeman, Sergt., 169.
Walbridge, G. R., 386, 610.
Walker, F., 495, 501, 510, 512, 513.
Walker, F. A., 105.
Walker, Gov., 396, 398, 413.
Walker, J. A., 656, 720.
Wall St. News, 9.
Wall & Stevens, 66.
Wallace, Lt., 234, 285.
Wallace, R., 362.
Wallace, Senr., 401, 433.
Wallingford, Lt., 298, 301.
Walsh, J. H., 350.
Walthal, Senr., 563.
Wamego, 260.
Wandless, Lt., 199.
Ward, —, 385.
Ward, C. R., 351.
Ward, Lt., 507.
Ward, T., 704, 725, 758.
Warder, B. H., 551, 553, 563, 564, 569, 613.
Wardleigh, B., 444, 445.
Wardless, Lt., 183.
Wardwell, D. K., 72, 77, 78, 83.
Warfield, G., 687.
Warner, —, 177.
Warner, B. H., 386, 554, 583.
Warner, V., 720.
Warren, F. E., 7, 654, 705.
Warren, Gen., 94, 102.
Warren, Mrs., 718.
Washburn, E. W., 264.
Washburn, W. D., 652.
Washington Arsenal, 143.
Washington, Geo., 14, 18.
Washington, J. E., 655.
Washington, Miss L., 362.
Washington Post, 8, 9, 587, 589, 596.
Washington Sentinel, 9.
Washington Times, 8, 9.
Wasson, Maj., 495.
Waters, W. E., 480, 481, 482.
Watkin, Miss N., 638.
Watson, —, 522.
Watson, Col., 434.
Watson, Paymaster, 480.
Watterson, H., 416, 418.
Watterson, H. M., 421.
Weaver, F. H., 12, 493, 495.
Weaver's Ranch, 519.
Webb, Gen., 686.
Webb, Mrs., 646.
Webb, W. B., 548, 574.
Webster, A., 53.
Webster, Col., 182.
Webster, C. W., 641.
Wedderburn, —, 408.
Wedgewood, Dr. and Mrs., 571.
Weed, Judge, 578.
Weeks, J. A., 72.
Weeks, Maj., 490, 678.
Weeks, Mrs., 678.
Weidman, Sergt., 210.
Weir, T. B., 240, 256.
Weitzel, Gen., 191.
Welch, Miss, 340.
Welling, Judge, 582.
Wells, H. H., 359, 366.
Wendals, The, 74.
Wendham, Mrs., 72.
Wentworth, Scout, 203, 232.
West, Col., 257, 287.
West, Gen., 546.
West, H. L., 9.
West Lebanon, 76, 77.
West Point, 14, 74.
Westerling, R., 247, 268.
Weston, —, 429, 433.
Weston, J. F., 11, 277.
Whaley, Gen., 84.
Wheatley, —, 371.
Wheatley Bros., 6.
Wheatley, S. E., 574.
Wheaton, S., 458.
Wheeler, Mr. and Mrs., 637.
Wherry, W. W., 671.
Whipple, D., 74, 75.
Whipple, Gen., 74, 76.
Whipple, Lizzie, 75.
Whipple, Willie, 74.
Whistler, J., 120.
Whistler, K. V., 93, 98, 143.
White, Father, 436.
White, Hon., 695.

White, Miss P., 695.
White, W. J., 657.
White River Junction, 77.
Whiten, Lt., 285.
Whitehall, S. R., 12, 491.
Whiting, Col., 638, 698.
Whiting, Miss, 638.
Whitney, Mrs., 575.
Whitney, Sec., 543, 544, 547, 563, 571, 574, 581.
Whittaker, Gen., 531.
Whittemore, T., 11.
Whithorn, —, 583.
Whittlesey, Gen., 411.
Wicks, Col., 241, 242, 251.
Widdecombe, A. C., 64, 355, 383, 571.
Widman, C., 189, 195, 205.
Wigfall, Col., 743.
Wiggins, Dr., 249.
Wiggins, J. V., 641.
Wilcox, O. B., 10, 35, 36, 37, 38, 39, 41, 42, 47, 50, 51, 91, 213.
Wilcox Landing, 96.
Wild Bill, 232, 273.
Wild, Joe, 301.
Wilder, M., 391, 393.
Wilderness, The, 113.
Wiley, J. M., 703.
Willard, C. C., 6.
Willard, Mrs. C., 641.
Wilkins, B., 562, 563, 589, 595, 685, 723.
Williams, A. C., 421.
Williams, Atty. Gen., 56.
Williams, Gen., 398, 399, 415.
Williams, J., 190.
Williams, J. S., 537.
Williams, L., 408.
Williams, R., 10, 228, 628, 631, 729.
Williams, S., 10, 133, 134.
Williams, W. N., 261, 308, 313.
Williamsburg, 59.
Williamson, J. J., 633.
Williamson, Prof., 225.
Willoughby, Judge, 575.
Wilson, —, 254, 291, 415, 436.
Wilson, A. A., 556.
Wilson, Gen., 710, 758.
Wilson, H., 358.
Wilson, Jere, 590, 595.
Wilson, L. P., 81, 92, 94.
Wilson, W. V. S., 421.
Wimer, J. B., 613.
Windom, Sec., 544, 586.
Windsor, D., 148, 585.
Winger, Miss, 641.
Winger, Mrs. B. F., 641.
Winthrop, Maj., 449.
Wisconsin, The, 9.
Wise, G. D., 8, 656.
Wise, M. R., 512, 718.
Wise, R. N., 720, 738.
Wisewell, Col., 82, 85.
Witherell, Miss, 340.
Witmore, Lt., 383.
Wolcott, E. O., 652.
Wolf, Dr., 480.
Wolfe, A., 190.
Wood, F., 366.
Wood, H. C., 11.
Wood, Judge, 544.
Wood, J. H., 622, 710.
Wood, L., 10.
Woodbury, Chas., 540.
Woodbury, Dr., 394.
Woodbury, Gov., 548, 592, 685.
Woodbury, W. A., 72, 76, 77, 78, 80, 542.
Woodfin, Gov., 698.
Woodhull, M., 151.
Woodruff, Dr., 465, 469, 470, 472, 473, 477, 478, 480, 482.
Woodruff, E., 12, 699.
Woods, J. C., 264.
Woods, Miss, 340.
Woodward, S. L., 351, 387.
Wooley, E. J., 252.
Worley, E., 247.
Wormley, 572, 575, 576.
Worth, W. S., 10, 120.
Worthington & Heald, 706.
Wright, —, 336, 356.
Wright, A. B., 656.
Wright, Chaplain, 192.
Wright, G. F., 344, 531.
Wright, H., 10, 101, 365, 578, 579.
Wright, Judge, 391.
Wright, M. B. C., 669.
Wright, M. J., 743.
Wyatt, Col., 182.
Wylie, A., 210.
Wylie, W. P., 344, 356.
Wyman, Maj., 83.

Yard, E. O., 267, 269.
Yard, J. E., 458, 469.
Yates, G. W., 302, 323, 324, 332, 425.
Yeomans, Judge, 690, 700, 703.
Yorktown, 59.
Yost, J., 657.
Young, J. R., 8, 694, 696, 709, 717.
Young, L., 583, 588.
Young, N. C., 626.
Young, P. M. B., 379, 445.
Young, S. B. M., 60, 704, 706, 707, 725, 731, 733, 735, 736, 738, 740.
Young, T., 421.

Zadeck, A., 503.
Zalinski, E., 12.
Zering, Judge, 349, 373, 384, 678.
Zeigler, —, 301.
Zimmerman, G., 189.